

# THE FAMOUS AND RENOVVVED

*Historie of Primaleon of Greece,*

Sonne to the great and mighty Prince

PALMERIN d'OLIVA, Emperour  
of *Constantinople.*

Describing his Knightly deedes of Armes, as also  
the Memorable Adventuress of Prince EDVARD of  
*England*: And continuing the former History of  
PALMENDOS, Brother to the fortunate  
Prince PRIMALEON, &c.

---

The first Booke.

---

*Translated out of French and Italian, into English, by A.M.*



LONDON:  
Printed by THOMAS SNODHAM.  
1619.



THE

AMERICAN

Journal of Science

and the Arts

Vol. 1

No. 1

1801

Published by

W. D. Lockhart

at the

Printers

of the

City





TO THE RIGHT  
Honourable, HENRIE VERE, Earle  
of Oxenford, Vicount Bulbecke, Lord  
*Sandford* and of *Badelesmere*, and  
Lord great Chamberlaine  
of England, &c.



IR, hauing sometime ser-  
ued that most noble Earle  
your Father, of famous  
and desertfull memory;  
and translating diuers Ho-  
nourable Histories into En-  
glish, out of *French*, *Italian*, and other Lan-  
guages, which he graciously pleased to coun-  
tenance with his Noble acceptance: Among  
the embrions of my then younger braine,  
these three seuerall parts of *Primaleon of  
Greece*, were the tribute of my duetie and ser-  
uice to him: VVhich Bookes, hauing long  
time slept in obliuion, and (in a manner)



*The Epistle Dedicatorie.*

quite out of memory : by fauour of these more friendly times, comming once more to be seene on the worlds publike Theater ; in all duety they offer themselues to your Noble patronage : For, you being the true heire to your honourable Fathers matchlesse vertues, and succeeding him in place of degree, and eminency, who should inherit the Fathers Trophies, Monuments and ancient memories, but his truely Noble, hopefull, and vertuous Sonne ? In whom, old Lord *Edward* is still liuing, and cannot die, so long as you breathe.

For his sake then (most honourable Earle) accept of poore *Primaleon*, newly reuiued, and rising from off your Father Hearse, in all humility commeth to kisse your noble hand ; with what further dutifull seruice, wherein you shall please to imploy me.

*Your Honours,*

*euer to be commanded,*

A.M.





## To the Reader.

**R**imaleon of Greece, Sonne  
to the most famous Palmerin  
D'Oliua, Emperour of Con-  
stantinople; hauing long since  
throwne himselfe to the  
world, in three seuerall  
Bookes of his famous Historie, within the com-  
passe of some passed yeares; by what occasion I  
know not, but either thorow negligence in them,  
to whom they appertained, or nice humour of  
times (which I rather credit) they haue long slept  
in obliuion, although sought for, and desired by  
many: But happening now into a more friendly  
hand, and thought vnfit of such forgetfulnesse,  
they come (courteous Reader) once more to in-  
treate thy gentle acceptation, which may incou-  
rage both me and the Printer, to make addition  
of the fourth Booke, the which compleateth the  
whole Historie, to Prince Edward of England,  
and



## To the Reader.

*and that of his Sonne Prince Palmerin, already  
extant to thy view, that so, all the severall parts  
compared together, and ordered as they ought to  
be; they will seeme as a Chronologie of so many  
famous mens lives, and giue thee commendable  
recreation of minde, when weightier occasions  
haue vrged molesting perturbations. Farewell.*

A. M.





# THE FIRST BOOKE OF *Primaleon of Greece:*

Describing his Knightly deeds of Armes, as  
*also the Memorable Aduentures of Prince*  
EDWARD OF ENGLAND: And continu-  
ing the former History of PALMENDOS,  
Brother to the fortunate Prince  
PRIMALEON, &c.

---

## CHAP. I.

How the Ambassadors of *France* came to *Constantinople*, where they were honourably receiued by the Emperour, who hauing heard the effect of their Ambassage, and conferred thereon with the Prince *Arnedes*: affianced him immediatly to his Daughter *Philocrista*, by whose hand the Ambassadors presented the Letters of credence from the noble King their Master.



**I**n the *Hystorie* of *Palmendos*, after which this Booke of *Primaleon* followeth, you haue heard of the loue betwene the Prince *Arnedes* of *France*, and faire *Philocrista*, Daughter to the Emperour *Palmerin*, and how a Courtier was sent to aduertize the King his Father thereof: That he might enjoy the like good fortune, as *Palmendos* had done with his Mistrisse *Francelina*, and thereby



thereby confirme a generall reioycing. The messenger being carefull to dispatch this businesse, made such haste in his journey, as in short time he arrived at the famous Citie of Paris, where the King vnderstanding the will of his Sonne, quickly resolved to conclude these affaires: Electing as chiefe in this Ambassage, the Duke of Orlance, a very wise and prudent Lord, commanding also that the Marquesse Oliuet, and the Counte Peter, (one of the Knights in his Court) should beare him company, with many other Barons so sumptuously accoutred, as evidently declared, how farre the French exceeded all other Nations in magnificence and good parts, whereof at this time we have no leisure to speake. The King having given them his Letters of credence, and instructions concerning the somme of their charge, he deliuered them sundry precious gifts, which he sent to Philocrista and the Prince Arnedes. But befoze their departure, there came a Knight to the Court from the King of Castile, to aduertise Recinde, how his Brother being deceased without issue, all the people very much reioyced, that the Scepter of the Kingdoms should fall to a Prince so balliant.

When the King of France heard these newes by the Gentleman of Spaine, named Pinedo, he made answer how Recinde was gone with his Son Arnedes to Constantinople, where (as he heard by credible intelligence) he daily wonne great honour and renowne. Whereupon, Pinedo determined to pace into Greece with the Ambassadors, and comming to Tollon in Prouence, they embarqued themselves on the Mediterranean Sea; where sailing with winde at will, it was not long befoze they arrived at Constantinople, even at such time as Arnedes was in his wonted passions of loue. No sooner were they entred the Port, and had cast Anchor, but the Duke of Orlance commanded a generall iouissance, in applauding heaven for their happy nauigation: whereof the Emperour being aduertised, he sent to know the cause of this reioycing. When he heard the arrivall of the French Ambassadors, he was right glad thereof, hoping Arnedes would  
now



now recover health by some good tidings : and therefore sent speedily to acquaint him therewith, intreating him to be of good courage, seeing the Lords of his Country were come so happily. It were needlesse to demand if Arnedes were well pleased with these tidings, considering the present cure hee found in one moment hereby, which shewed, that herein consisted the onely medicine for his malady : this made him leave his bed, and goe with Primaleon to the Emperour, who seeing him come so cheerefully, was not a little glad of his good recovery, and said: He thinks (Sir Arnedes) that the arrivall of these French Gentlemen hath revived and very well strengthened you. Well have you said my Lord (answered Arnedes) because it is the onely means of my restoring. Philocrista (who knew full well the death of his amorous desires) rejoyced marvailously at this fortunate occurrence, so that by outward view of her countenance, might easily be discerned the inward content of her heart, and whence proceeded this alteration: whereto (by silence) she betwaxed to the French Prince, what boldly she durst not utter in speech, and whereof he needed no interpreter, but with like signes returned thankful requitall, minding to goe presently to the Porte, to see by whom the King his Father had sent this long expected message. The Emperour commanded many of his Barons to goe with him, for more honourable accompanying the Ambassadors to the Pallace, and in signe of greater favour, Primaleon himselfe went with Arnedes, who sent his dwarfe before, to let them vnderstand his coming to the Port : Whereupon, the Duke of Orleance with his company immediatly landed, where first beholding their yong Prince, they ran bare headed, to kisse his hand, when he having severally embraced them, thus spake to the Duke of Orleance. My noble Cousin, how many pleasures hath your arrivall here enriched me withall, in soth farre more than you can easily thinke on. But tell me (I pray you) ere we passe any further, how fares the King my Noble Lord and Father ? So well as your heart can desire my Lord, answered the Duke, and as one wonderfully long-



ing speedily to see you : wherefore his will is, that making so little stay here as possible you can, you be some hast in returning to your Country of Fraunce. Herein shall I most gladly obey him, replied Arnedes, ere many dayes after this be expired : in meane space, give honour to Primaleon here the Emperours Sonne, who hath vouchsafed to come in person to welcome you.

Primaleon marvelled that these French Lords and Knights so humbled themselves to Arnedes, which made him imagine that he was Sonne to their King : in regard whereof, being the greater kindnes to the Duke of Orleance, and the other Ambassadors, he desired them to resolve him concerning the estate of Arnedes, who hitherto had not disclosed himselfe to any one. My Lord (said the Duke) this young Prince is our Soueraignes Sonne, who in respect of his earnest desire to do service to the Emperour your Father, thought it meetest for him to come unknowne to this Court, and here to remaine so concealed, till he should perceiue his private designs fall out to his owne contentment. Concerning which, the present message committed to our trust by the King his Father, I hope will sort to a good & successfull end ; with the help of him whom I pray so speed be, as herein our enterprise may not be disappointed. In good faith said Primaleon (turning himselfe to the French Prince) I haue very great reason to complaine of you Arnedes, that you would thus long hide your self from me, so although you resolved in coming hither, that no one should know ye, yet you might haue exempted me from that vniuersall number, considering the habitude and secrecy you might boldly haue repased in me, that I should not haue continued so long ignorant of your roial race. My Lord (answered Arnedes embracing him) herein I beseech you hold me excused, in respect that straying so far from the French Court, I determined to do somewhat in actions of Armes, that might be worthy report of my progenie, before my selfe were knowne to any one : And being concealed, I might best doe it, considering no way els could I reach the top of my desire : but any thing



thing wherein I employed my selfe, might rather redound to my disgrace than commendation. Certainly (replied Primaleon) if by deeds of Armes you desire to publish your name, me thinks you should hasten the day of Turney, considering your royall geniture, and thereby expresse your knightly valour and resolution. Ah my Lord (said Arnedes, interrupting him) it pleaseyth you to account me among men of desert, though farre vnworthy am I to be seene in any such assembly. Notwithstanding, if god will may incite forward a generous minde, by puissance to witnesse some part of his strength, I hope I should not be reputed amongst the weakest. No truly (answered Primaleon) but rather amongst the strongest, where honourable victorie will set on your head a triumphall Crowne.

But leave vs these speeches till some better convenient time, and goe we to the Emperour, who will be most ioyfull hearing these newes. So mounting on horse-backe with the Ambassadors, they rode to the Pallace, where gracious entertainment was commanded them by the Emperour. And in this time Pinedo made known to the Prince Arnedes, how he past into Fraunce to finde Recinde, whom now hee came to acquaint with the death of his Brother, and how all the Barons and people of Castile, would willingly accept him for their Lord and King.

Of these tydings was the Frenchman not a little glad, that his Cousin Recinde (whom he loved as himselfe) was heire to the Scepter of Castile: But yet hee was as soory on the other side, because he could heare no report of him, wherefore perswading Pinedo that hee hoped of his short returne, in that the Tourney at his marriage would be a meane thereof, which was published through all the parts of the Empire, he thought it needlesse any further to pursue his search.

Now the Emperour (who in this space had vnderstood the descent of the Prince Arnedes) when he saw him enter the Hall with his Sonne Primaleon, arose from his seat to embrace him, saying: How happens it my Lord Arnedes, that



you would all this while so cunningly dissemble with vs, in shadowing of whence and what you were? wherein you haue done vs great discourtesie, and lost such honour as your vertues deserved. Tell me I pray you, wherefore did yee so conceale your selfe, knowing how happy I would haue thought my selfe to haue vnderstood of you without this sayning?

My Gracious Lord, replied Arnedes, most humbly I intreate you, vse no such wordes in my behalfe, because I know my selfe vnworthy of them, much lesse of the honour I haue receaued in your Countrey, which a better man than I can no way deserue. But neuer could any quiet enter my thoughts, till I beheld the Magnificence of your Court, and that to my poore power I might doe you seruice: poore & slender in truth is it in respect of my good will, which is equall with the most affectionate seruant you haue, among whom I desire your Grace to repute mee, as the man whom no one shall out-goe in zeale and deuotion of minde. And a great discountenance of heauen haue I accounted it, that no occasion hitherto would happen, whereby I might liuely expresse the true affection imprinted in my heart.

It sufficeth (answered the Emperour) what already you haue done, proueth enough to giue you the reputation of one of the best Knights in the world. And as for mee, if I be not depriued of the fauour (considering the lone I beare yee) I shall enermore continue my former opinion, and repute my selfe happy in making alliance with you, when you shall thinke expedient to yeeld thereto.

Arnedes, who saw the passage open, whereby his soule might soonest be conducted to rest, and by him likewise that had the onely key thereof: was maruellously overcome with ioy, when taking the Emperour by the hand, to kisse it in signe of thanks he sayd. Well may I now haunt my selfe to haue attained the height of humane felicitie, being offered by your Grace an alliance so honourable, for which I know not how to shew my selfe thankfull (in discharge of the dutie wherein I stand bound) but onely by continuing your humble vassall,  
and



and day by day to confirme the indissoluble bond, wherein I am everlastingly wrapped by this extraordinarie favour. Notwithstanding, if my unsayned affliction, to remaine your obedient servant (dutifull Sonne, if you please) may stand for an earnest pennie, then I intreat you to accept thereof as I present it, to the end I may hereafter be so readie in performance, as now I am in heart. For even as the greatest Clap of thunder follows the sayrest day, and nothing else in suddenness may be compared thereto: as readie shall I be upon receipt of the verie conjectures of your desires, to satiffie the same, as if I should give attendance vpon commandement.

The Emperour being marvellous glad to heare him vse such honest speeches, gathered very well with what shaft hee was wounded, & that the matter now opened by conference, was but only to seeke a speedie balme or medicine for the hurt received. Hereby he took occasion to let him sit by him, which drew on manie glances still to the same purpose: but among the rest, when the Emperour heard the whole story of Recinde his Cousen, hee could not chuse but greatly wonder thereat. Hereof was Melicia ioyfull beyond measure, because she intirely loved the Spanish Prince: Yet could shee not compare with Philocrista in contentment of spirit, by reason shee wanted the amorous object which she had, nor could she participate in those unspeakable pleasures, wherewith the hearts of the other twaine were specially delighted.

On the morrow, the Emperour caused the Pallace to be richlie adozned with tapestrie of Gold and Silver, and his most sumptuous Jewels to be placed in open shew, that the French Ambassadors might behold his stately Pompe: they likewise comming into the Hall, attyred in their sayrest and costliest habilliments, were received by the Emperour with exceeding Honour, and to him (by sayrest Philocrista) they presented their Letters of credence, the effect wherof hereafter followeth.





The Letter sent from the King of *France*,  
to the Emperour PALMERIN.

To the most high and magnanimous Prince, *Palmerin de Oliua*, Emperour of *Constantinople*, true mirrour of Chivalry: *Lemes*, by the grace of God, King of *France*, wisheth health condigne to his excellent mightinesse.



The assurance given me of the renowne of your generosity (my most deare Brother) which is spred to the very farthest, most barbarous, & hidden regions of this hemisphere: caused me immediatly to dispatch my Ambassadors toward your Majesty, to entreate that you would consent to an alliance, which I have purposed (if you please) between our houses, according to the ordinance of the last will, which the late King of famous memoire my Noble Father (whom God absolute) left me when he paid his mortall tribute to nature. And because I have instructed the bearers hereof, in all the poynts and articles which on our behalfe you are to be acquainted withall, I shall need to vse the lesse discourse by Letter, reposing onely on their sufficiency: Requesting you that in this cause you will give them credit, or what else they shall thinke mete and determinz, concerning the marriage of Arnedes Prince of France, my sonne, as if I were with you my selfe in person: and loke what honour shall be done to them in your Country, I will account it as receiued by my selfe. But least happily you should repute it strange, that the eldest Sonne of so great a house as this, should come to your Court so meanelly attended: therein



## of Primaleon of Greece.

9

I desire yee consider his earnest affection, to accomplish some memorable deed unknowne, whereby you may easily gather, how gladly he would goe beyond, or equall the best.

Your affectionate and perfect friend,  
*The house of France.*

This Letter being read, the Emperour took the Ambassadors into his Chamber, where after he had heard at full the summe of their message : immediatly he called together the Princes and Lords of his private Councell, to let them vnderstand his intent concerning these affaires.

This by their aduise was immediatly confirmed for good, as well to accomplish his promise to the deceased King of France, as also in respect that Arnedes behauiour was so generally commended, being a vertuous Knight, and very forward to Martiall exercise : But above all the rest, Primaleon was most willing and ready in consenting to this alliance, knowing the earnest desire of his Sister, to see her selfe the wife of Arnedes, another Adonis : and for beauty well might Philocrista be resembled to Psyche, or rather (if you will) a second Venus.

The marriage being concluded, on the morrow following they were affianced together, with very stately and magnificent triumphs, so that both in the Pallace, and through the Cittie was nothing but sports and pleasure, to the no little content of the Emperour and Emperesse, as well for the coming and knowledge of Palmendos, as for this lone-knot betwene Philocrista and the royall Prince of France. And now hath Primaleon arme himselfe for knightthode, that hereafter he may bestowe his time in those commendable occasions.

Here the French Authour confesseth his fault, for having intitled the whole booke, the first Booke of Primaleon, both that which goes before, (called by me the History of Palmendos) the name agreeing with the discourse, and this, where  
Primaleons



Primalcons chualrie doth now but begin. His reason is, that the young Prince being verie daintely brought up, and not of yeres to receaue the order of Knighthood, he took occasion (in meane while) to report the braue behanour of his brother Palmendos. But now shall we speake of the gentle Prince himselfe, the onely mirror of honour and Armes, as by reading his History you may perceiue.

## CHAP. II.

How *Primalcon* intreated the Emperour *Palmerin* his Father, in the presence of the French Ambassadors (who prepared themselves to the Grecian ports) that hee would giue him the order of Knighthood. And how the Lord of the enclosed Isle sent him a Shield and a Sword, wherewith hee tooke his Order. And what hee sent to the Emperour, which hee afterward sent to the King *Florendos* his Father, requesting his presence at the mariage of faire *Philocrissa*.



I begin the narration and discourse of the deeds of our *Primalcon*, who in his yongest yeares exercised himselfe so well in vertuous Disciplines (whereof according to his very naturall inclination & desire, he declared himselfe so studious a lover,) as one might iustly name him the true miracle of perfection: So amongst other endowments, for the spirit of wisdom hee might be compared to *Salomon*, for beautie both exteriour and interiour, to the gentle Greeke *Alcibiades*, and for magnanimitie, counsell, Militarie-Strategems, and such like, to valiant *Scipio* the African, or the subtile *Haniball* of Carthage, especially in this time of his youth, when he had not receiued his order of Knighthood.

But now fit time therefore being come, he fell on his knee before his Father, armed with a light Cuiet, which had no other beautie or brauerie then the plaine fashion: which most  
 hee



hee affected for his helpe in fight, and with humble gestures hee intreated one request : The Emperour very willingly made him graunt thereof, as the like hee did to diuers others, who that day demaunded his gracious fauour, seeing him so boantifull in honour of the feast.

My Lord (sayd Primaleon) the request which at this instant I desire your Grace not to denie mee, is, that I may be armed Knight by your hand in this armour, on the day of the feast for the nuptials of Philocrista my sister : for to make the same the more magnificent, I hope to prouide a Tourney worthy the view of your Maestie, whereto I beseech you graunt me license of safe conduct for all Knights whatsoever, because I intend to haue it published in diuers Countries.

This I had graunted (quoth the Emperour) with all my hart, albeit thou hadst not bound mee thereto by promise, because these are things that highly please mee, and very honorable is it to see such solemnities at marriages, especially of such a Princesse as thy Sister is. My Lord (sayd Abenunco to Primaleon) I humbly beseech you to preferre me in this action, for I likewise earnestly desire to receiue my order of Knighthood with you, so please the Emperour to honoꝛ mee with so much fauour. The like request made Arnasin sonne to Duke Ptolome, who was equall with them in youth, fulnesse of yeares, wherewith Primaleon was not a little content.

Immediately were Heralds of armes dispatched into diuers Regions, to publish the Tourney, and the day proposed for the beginning of the sports, which should continue during the feast, with Court-royall openly kept, at the marriage of the Princesse Philocrista: assuring all Knights that pleased to shew themselves there, to be entertained with honour every way equall to desert. Meane while was Arnedes seated by his affianced Mistresse, (more faire and braver adorned, than the daughter of Tindarus, when Paris Alexander was overcome with her loue) they both ioying, yet with modestie and bashfulness, so as neither durst enterprise the hardnes to speake the



the first word: in which mute passions, they rather resembled the two beautilfull starres Castor and Pollux, than humane creatures possessed of life and moving. whereupon Melicia smiling, thus spake to them.

As that mine eyes were so happie, that they could now behold him, for whom my heart endures most passionate martirdom, I would not show such pusillanimitie as you doe, seeming as though you scantly knew each other: why then doe you not give some recreation to your affectionate soules, but stand thus as dead bodies deprived of life? Madame, (answered the Prince) meruaile not to see me silent and dispossessed of speech, in that loue by nature sealed by my lips, for seeing vs ingreater content with the thing moze conforzable to our desires, he took the benefit of speaking from vs, least the one should not please our eares so well as the other doth our hearts. Moreover, I haue till this houre so extreameley desired that, which now I am perswaded is altogether mine, as I shal neuer enjoy any quiet in minde, (so irksome is the thought of time to me) till I may see the Crowne of Fraunce, on the head of faire Philocrista. As for you Madam, be you certaine if my Cousin Recinde as yet liueth, one day to rule the Realme of Castile: for so perfectly doth he loue you, as his returne hether will not belong to conclude this affaire, which for my part, I would be glad to hasten, in regard of the desire I haue to pleasure you both to my power.

At these words Melicia began somewhat modestly to blush, neuertheless being prudent and well advised, she cunningly dissembled this youthfull feminine shame, saying. My Lord, the Prince Recinde is of such a vertuous and gentle nature, and so well his valour and prowess known where he traualleth, as each one ought to reioyce at his good fortune: especially my selfe beyond all other that loue and honoꝝ him, if it be so, that he beares me such good will as you speake of.

These speeches of Melicia so imboldned Arnedes, that now he beganne somewhat to cheare vp himselfe, and entred in to further conference with his Lady, taking of her the first earnest



nest of their loue, which were many dainty kisses, soft touchings, & such like, yet so honestly and comely discharged, as it was no scandall or offence to the beholders, but rather moued them to wish that they would longer continue this agreeable and pleasing behaviour.

Now the Emperour amongst those that were of greatest regard there present, highly esteemed and honoured his sonne Palmendos, in that the chiefest ioy and pleasure of this feast proceeded from him: hereupon he remembered the sealed booke which he sent him, with so many other precious things from the Isle of Delphos, as in the tenth Chapter of Palmendos hath bene declared.

To make knowne therfore to the french Lords the magnanimity and vertues of his sonne Palmendos, he commanded the rich & exquisite chaire (wherein the Idoll sat) to be brought before him, and the booke likewise, which he had caused to be kept in his treasury, amongst matters of greatest account.

To open the booke he made proue againe by many of his Knights, but there was none could come nere it, which hee perceiuing, deliuered it to Palmendos saying, My sonne, make some little proue of this booke, for if you bring not th's labour to end, I am assured we may set our hearts at quiet, for reading or beholding any thing therein contained. Palmendos turning aside his head, and making a lowly reuerence to the Emperour, took the booke from fast the hands of a Knight that endeouored to open it, and with such ease did he open it, as if the same had neuer bene closed before: hereat the Emperour was exceeding ioyfull, and turning towards the Noblemen of France, he could not containe, but needs must expresse before them a most euident signe of fatherly affection to Palmendos. Then taking the booke, he turned over the leaues from one end to another, finding no matter or discourse written therein: only he beheld the figures of two Emperours painted in the midst thereof, the one attired after the greekish manner, holding a shield upon his arme, wherein was the blazon and description of the armes of the Empire: the other was armed

cap a pe



cap a pe after the Turkish guise, with a naked sword in his right hand, wherewith he seemed to menace the Greeke, and with his left hand very furiously hee snatched the shield from his arme.

If the Emperour were highly pleased with Palmendos opening the booke, no doubt, but he greatly marvelled what sinister presage these figures delineated by their shew and fashion, wherefore he said aloud, that these did signifie mighty matters: herupon all the Lords and Knights approached nere him to see the figures, and passing the booke from hand to hand, they all could coniecture nothing but matter of astonishment. But as each one deliuered his opinion, according to such reason as best seemed vnto them: there entred the palace a young Gentleman, in very rich habillments, carrying a shield, and one of the very best swords for Armes that euer Vulcan with his Ciclops hammers could deuise to make: and being come before the Emperour, hee set his knee to the ground, speaking in this manner.

Sir, the Knight of the enclosed Ile, sent me directly to this Court, to kisse your hand on his behalfe, being the hand whom he loueth, honoureth and esteemeth, moze than any other person this day lining vnder the celestiall spheres: Albeit as yet he neuer saw you, neither knowes you, but onely by the renowne of your manhode and generosity, which hath so farre commended you, and gotten such conquest ouer him, as hee cannot by his Magicke Art, Necromancy Cabalist and hidden Philosophy, (wherein he may be named the second Zoroastres,) foresee any thing, that may turne to your grieve or discontent of minde, but he imagineth himselfe bound to let you know thereof. Wherefore that you may made no farther in the depth of doubtfull opinions, which the two figures in this enchanted booke may cumber your thoughts withall: he tels you by me, that as you behold here these Images, euen so (one day) shall the Empire of Greece, & the glory of her good Knights, be abated and destroyed by the enemies of our faith. So that for the sinnes and iniquities of the Christians, God will



will suffer betwene the Greekes and Turkes mortall enuy and hatred, which shall end by a most bloody discomfiture, whereto you and your Sonne Palmendos haue already giuen beginning. Nevertheless, this ruine and decadence shall not happen in your time, neither of him or your posterity, because all their lines (euen to the last day) shall be most glorious and triumphall, not any of your enemies erecting one Trophe ouer them: therefore receiue no grieue at this fatall iudgement, considering we can no way escape the inenitable destiny whereto God hath appoynted vs.

I see well then (replied the Emperour in great heavinesse) that man shall not haue any one intire pleasure in this mortall life.

O soueraigne director of all things, most devoutly I intreat thee, that thou wilt for ever imprint within my soule the true characters of thy holy catholike faith, to the end I may both liue & die thereafter, without any other desire, than to accomplish thy most blessed will. And albeit that Greece (in my time) shall not receiue this wound, yet must it needs maruelously offend and displease me, that so good people (by a false and miscreant Dog) should be so outraged.

Nevertheless, seeing I can no other way redeme it, I sweare and protest before you all, hereafter to be a cruell and capitall enemy to these barbarous and unbelieuing helboands, making them dearely to buy before hand, the infelicity destined to this moane-worthy country. And euen so it came to passe, in that both hee and Palmendos in this Kingdome of Thessalie, did great and infinite dammages to the Turkes, soz ever after there was continually open warres betwene those Nations.

But the Emperour then somewhat mitigating his choller, with a more pleasing countenance and milder termes, thus spake to them about him.

Wherefore should I offend my selfe with such things as we shall neuer behold: I pray you (for all this) let vs not leane the fruition of such pleasures as God hath sent vs at this instant.



Want: for seeing it is his will, that happy successe shall betide the affaires of my time, and they that follow of my posterity likewise, I haue no reason to passionate my selfe, but rather to repute mee the most happy Prince that this day inhabiteth betwene the two Poles.

Therefore I pray you (quoth he to the Messenger) on my behalfe, thanke the Lord of the enclosed Ile your Master, for putting me out of those doubtfull imaginations, striving to vnderstand what these two figures should signifie: assuring him withall, that he hath no friend in this world, who can make more account of his good will than I doe, nor shall hee find any iot lesse in me towards him, when it pleaseth him to make any triall thereof: so breaking off, the Gentleman went a little lower toward Primalcon, who likewise was there present, & thus spake to him: Happy & fortunate Prince, the Lord of the enclosed Ile my master, who loues you as himself, hath sent ye this good sword and rich shield, the two best and most exquisite weapons that at this day are to be found in all the world, and them hee thinkes meete for so valiant a knight as you will prove, aduertising you, that the clouen rocke, being thus separated, as you may behold here figured in this shield, signifieth the partiality and little loue betwene you and her, who in after-time shall make one sole heart of twaine: so that on the day of this reciprocation hapning betwene you, this impregnable rocke shall then remaine intire & closed againe, and without any impeach, to testifie your reconciliation.

Tell your Master from me (answered Primalcon, as one abashed to heare such speeches) that as it hath pleased him to send me this faire present, which I shall well & carefully keepe for his sake: so would I haue him command me any thing wherein I may doe him pleasure, when he shall aduertise me, as the man that may command my uttermost, and whom I highly thanke for his curtesie, albeit I cannot but remaine in pensiuenesse, till I vnderstand more clearly the matters you haue told me.

The time will come (replied the yong Gentleman,) when  
you



you shall know them sufficiently, although at this instant they seeme so hard and obscure to you; and then shall you recompence the service which now you receive from my Master.

Then commanded Primaleon, that one should fetch a rich present for the Lord of the enclosed Isle, in requittall of the excellent Armes he sent him, and another in like manner for the Gentleman that brought them: which immediately was performed in every respect, when the youth (with great reverence taking his leave) returned presently towards the Isle, leaving all the Court merruailing at the newes before rehearsed.

The Emperour and his Barons long looked on the weapons, each one commending the artificiall workmanship of them, and merruailing what the strange seperation of the rock should meane, being thus forgetfulde, that one day it should ioyn together againe, which made the Emperour deliver these words before all there present. I am perswaded wee shall behold great matters of importance, when this halfe divided Rocke shall knit together againe: So that as seemes to mee my Sonne (speaking to Primaleon) for there are reserved many adventures, which none but thou canst effectually finish: Wherein I pray God to be thy director, enduing thee with such strength and hardinesse, as thou mayest honorably make an end of them.

So doe I devoutly pray my selfe (answered Primaleon) else shall I repute all my life very carelesly bestowed, and I unworthy to come in company of so great personages, if I should not resemble (in some good part or other) the noble Lord that begot me: and that I may attaine thereto, it is necessary I should passe through many perillous travells, knowing that without exceeding endeaour, it is impossible to reach such honoꝛ as doth for ever make men to be esteemed. For this may serve me as a most worthy example, yea, and an infallible mirror of all vertues, proceeding from your excellencie so great a president, as not onely hath sweetly conquered the love of your subjects, but gaining likewise a privilege of every



euery ones good will, hath beside constrained the enemy and most barbarous Nations, to admire and honoꝝ you foꝝ all perfections, being the chieftest peece of workmanship that euer Nature made.

These gentle and gracious speeches of the Prince Primaleon, made the Emperour his Father so pleased as possibly might be, hearing from him such honest commendations, yet colourably ayming at a third person, as thencefoꝝth he reputed him very magnanimous, and remembering Achilles, Alexander, Themistocles, and other such valiant Champions, which Greece in former time had brought foꝝth, he began to conceiue some hope, that one day he should see him go beyond all other of his time. Whereupon he gaue commandement, that the weapons sent from the Lord of the enclosed Isle should be very charily layd vp, and foꝝ this cause, if afterward in any place Primaleon would not be knownen, he named himselfe the Knight of the clouen rocke. From that time all the whole day, there passed no other speeches among them, but of the maruailous knowledge of this great Magitian, the Emperour entring into so good opinion of him, as he could neuer forget that the Empire of Greece should be sackt by the Turks, which was a continuall grieue to his heart: yet would he not outwardly deliuer any shew thereof, but with Princely lectures shadowing them still, seemed as pleasant as euer he was before.

Primaleon likewise on the other side was very penſiue, desiring also to know her name, who already by the very words of the yong Gentleman, had inflamed his thoughts with the heauenly fire of Venus: foꝝ till this houre he had no knowledge of amorous passions, but now his heart was so kuelly touched therewith, as there they had taken a perpetuall dwelling place, as you shall perceiue by the following discourse of the History.

But now he fell to make provision with the other knights, giuing order that all things might be ready against the triumph day, which was appoynted foꝝ the Nuptials of his Sister.



Sister. And for the more magnificent gracing thereof, the Emperour greatly desired, to see the King his Father and the Quene his Mother there present, which made him send a post in this behalfe to request them. The like did he to the King of Sparta and Arismena his Aunt, whom he had not seen since their espousals: he sent for King Frisoll also, with the residue of his chiefest friends, that they would honour him with their presence at his Daughters wedding, because soon after he was to depart for France.

The Posteman which the Emperour sent for Macedon, found King Florendos in exceeding pleasure, in that he had married Belcar with Alderina, Daughter to the Duke of Pontus, and as yet the least endured, where Recinde was enforced to abide, at the earnest entreatie of Belcar, who promised afterward to accompany him to Constantinople: So that when the Post arrived there, they were providing to set forward on the way.

Now were the King and Quene not a little joyfull, when they understood that Palmendos was their Nephew, and Philocrista should marry with so great a Prince, as was the son to the King of France: Whereupon they concluded, not to frustrate the Emperours desire, which he had to see them at this solemnity. When the messenger recounted to them, how Arnedes had remained unknown in the Court, without any intent to make himselfe known, untill the Ambassadors of Fraunce arrived there. With whom (quoth hee) there came a Knight of Spaine, that enquired after Recinde, Sonne to the King of Castile, because his eldest brother being deceased, the Subjects of the Realme desired him for their King.

Recinde hearing these newes, being unable longer to endure, delivered forth marvellous sorow for the death of his Brother, saying, that he more desired his life, than all the Kingdomes in the world.

Soundy other mournfull speeches he proceeded in, when the King and Belcar (wondering that two such Knights had so long concealed themselves) reioyced not a little, thinking themselves



themselves happy that they had done such honours to Recinde; with whom they vied many reasons and sweet persuasions, to comfort and put him from his sorrowfull dumps.

The messenger being likewise glad, because he had found the end of the Spanish Knights peregrination, thus spake.

My Lord Recinde, cease these teares, which serue to no purpose for recovering of the thing that is out of all hope of men, but rather to hinder the Castellians, who desire shortly to see you as their Soueraigne Lord and King: For which (me thinks) ye haue greater occasion to thanke God, then thus to torment your selfe, against all reason, considering that the Scepter of Castile, is one of the most rich and honourable in all Europe. And if you meane shortly to see the Prince Arnedes in Constantinople, who is not a little penfue for your cause of heavinesse, you will procure great ioy both in him and the whole Court of the Emperour, because each one doth wish your presence there, especially vpon so good occasion as is now offered.

When Recinde heard the Gentleman vse such speeches, he began to remember himselfe, that now he was to deliuer some Heroicall spectacle, for the better attaining his Lady Melicia, whom, by the sad and certaine newes of his Brothers death he thought the sooner to recover as his owne. Wherefore he determined to make one in this Tourney, and as he resolved on this honourable purpose, many secret discourses combatted with his spirit, which he generally imparting to Belcar, received this answer from him.

My Lord and Brother, although I durst not enterprize to goe so soone to Constantinople, yet will I gladly beare you company, as wel to gratifie you herein, as in any thing else I am able to devise, because you are the man to whom I would haue my nearest thoughts knowne throughout my whole life, with this assurance beside, that you shall not find any man lesse sparing of himselfe in such matters as may be deemed contentine to you.

Seigneur



Seigneur Belcar, answered Recinde, I may well say, that if Fortune heretofore hath tenderly favoured me, entertaining me often with very rigorous tearmes, yet might it be interpreted but as a presage of unspeakable content in future prosperitie: for the joy I take in being of so good account with you, surmounteth all the mishaps that have befallen mee.

So knitting by these courteous entercourses, they purposed to take order for their voyage, each one according to his owne best contriving, desiring the King not to make overmuch haste, because they minded to trauaile together: For Belcar, Recinde, and Tirendos, required to go thither before, meaning to performe some matter of honour, and worthy commendation in the sight of the Emperour, who had neuer seene any deeds of Belcar, and Tirendos, whereto King Florendos agreed very willingly, who notwithstanding he was above threescore yeres old, yet was hee neuertheles of strong nature, able to endure the paine of trauaile.

Now when hee had appoynted every thing in equipage, with a goodly company, hee set on toward Constantinople, whither the Duke of Pontus could not come so soone as hee, for certaine businesse of importance that had befallen him, to the great griefe of the Princesse Alderina, that she should so long be absent from her deare spouse Belcar. So leaue wee them voyaging as time favoured, to speake of such things as happened in the Emperours Court in the meane while.



## CHAP. III.

How *Ozario* intreated *Palmendos* to accomplish the promise he made him, and he (vnwilling to deny him any thing) gaue him *Marencida* to wife, as also the Kingdome of *Tharsus*. And how they both embarqued themselves, with a gallant company of Knights to goe thither : And what hapned the Queene, Mother to *Palmendos*, at their arriuall.

**W**Hile the Horsemen and messengers were thus busied about their charge, the Emperour commanded preparation for the great triumph, leasing his Sonne *Palmendos*, and the French Lords, and entertayning them with all pastimes his hart could deuise, so that the whole Court exercised themselves in nothing els, than in such things as might yeeld greatest pleasure to this honourable assembly.

Among them all that were thus contented, *Ozario* had little minde of pleasure, seeing his Cousin altered from the Lato of Mahomet, wherfore he intreated him according to his promise, that he would giue him the Princesse *Marencida* to wife, with leaue to returne againe to *Tharsus* : which motion highly pleased *Palmendos*, knowing that (by these meanes) the Queene his Mother should heare certaine tidings of him.

*Marencida* on the other side was in no lesse paine than *Ozario*, and albeit the Princesse *Philocrista* euermore comforted her, with such honorable meanes as became her calling : yet could she not fasten vpon any thought of pleasure, but continuing daily solitary, like solitude it selfe, would not come forth of her Chamber, but there all the day steamed forth fountaines of teares, complayning (without ceasing) of her aduersity. Of one thing she might iustly make vaunt, that her eyes were become sources, distilling forth water more cleare than Christall : and if she toke any small pleasure or recreation



recreation, it was onely with Ozalio, who euery houre failed not to visite her.

At length Palmendos went one day to conferre with her, concerning the former determination, of ioyning her in marriage with Ozalio; but so soone as he entred the Chamber, she began to renew her wonted griefes and passions, saying. Alas, Sir Knight, wherefore come you to renew my sorrow, so extreame and insupportable, as death it selfe is ready to seaze on me in this place: I intreat you, seeing the destinies haue sadly appoynted me to this enleesse torment, that you would not bze it the more by the meanes of your presence.

Adam, answered Palmendos, if heretofore I haue procured you any injury or griefe of minde, I hope at this instant to make a small end thereof, by the meanes of an inestimable gift which I meane to bestow vpon you, giuing you the Knight to your husband, who esteemes and loues you as, bene all things in the world. For could the King Ocurites compare with him for valour and vertue, the heauens bearing witnesse of his prowesse and dexterity in Armes, as I know no Gentleman of the Turkish Nation, seeing him once manage deeds of Chivalry, that dare meete him in Tourney or field-battle, without repenting it dearely afterward. Neither could King Ocurites equal him in riches and possessions, enjoying the kingdome of Tharsus, which hereafter shall be his, a state more wealthy than the Province of Culaquin. For this cause (Adam) appease the violence of your passions, and consider, that your comming into this Country will bring ye great honour and felicity, if you please to accept as your lawfull husband the Prince Ozalio my Cousin, whose affectionate diligence you beheld in your service. But should you be so vnmercifull as to refuse him, you may easily kill both life and soule together, a matter too irregular and differing from Ladies reputation, in that by nature they are rather benigne and pittifull, than bloody and cruell, though (very often) ouer-firme in peruerse obstinacy.

Lord Palmendos, quoth Marencida, how is it possible to



condiscend vnto the matter you propound me, but by force well may you guesse (by the small delight I take in being in this Countrey) I will neuer doe this with my good will: albeit Signieur Ozalio seemeth vnto me such a one, as I could not better bestow my loue vpon any, who meriteth more fauour at my hand, than he doth: but alas my fortune hath reduced me into so pittifull tearmes, that I cannot accommodate my selfe to any thing which delighteth my spirits. Notwithstanding, if so it be, that against the good will of your handmaid and captiue, you haue determined to effect this businesse, I pray you before I espouse the Prince Ozalio your Cousin, that I may see the king Ocurites my first husband, to the end, I may aduertize him of my disaster, and of that which I am now forced to doe, being not able by my reasons any way to resist.

Thereunto he I accorde most willingly, answered Palmendos, and addressing his speech to Philocrista, thus he proceeded. Madam, I humbly beseech you after dinner, to take her with you into the Emperours great chamber, to gratifie her in that which she hath lately requested.

So tell it out, after the Infant by constraint had made her to put on her richest habilliments, in which it was a goodly sight to behold her, for she was both faire, and of the best grace. Being come into the presence, where the Emperour was conferring with the king of Thessaly, & with many other Princes and great States, Palmendos commanded by and by to send for the king of Culaquin, who sone after was brought thither, looking so leane, changed, and meager of countenance, that Marcenida did not know him: and had not Palmendos shewed him to her, she could not well haue guessed it to be he. Then she rising vp from a chaire where she sat, went to embrace him, the teares standing in her eyes: when she cryed out. Alas! King Ocurites, which of the Planets haue we prouoked, that doth submit vs both to this sinister fortune and inexplicable mischance, even by the meanes of one onely knight: the same who vanquished and took you prisoner



prisoner in the Levant-seas, hath brought me away by force out of my Countrey, from my Father and friends into this place, where not contented to hold me as his slave; but will moreover (in my despight, give me to another husband. And that which I have received of him as great favour, is this, that he hath onely permitted me to let you understand hereof, to the end I having once tolde you, you may not blame mee hereafter, knowing not for my part how to remedy it otherwise.

Oh, I wish the fatall Goddesses would quickly tread at the third of my life, before I consent by my will to any such occasion. Ah! If it might so well befall me, I should repute my selfe happy, as receiving the onely consentment which I desire, which is to save me from contaminating the exceeding love I bare you: But unfortunate & miserable woman that I am, seeing death sheweth himselfe herein inextorable, I must spend in extreme sorrow the rest of my dayes. Alas, poor King Ocurites who was wont to be so much esteemed off among the Princes and Kings of Turkey, whose prowess and haughty courage did far surpass all the bravest and hardiest Knights of Asia, where are now become thy riches and great estates: who hath dimmed the so signall and famous renowne of thy Heroicall gestes, captivizing both thee and thy layall spouse: How did fortune vngently abandon thee in this manner: Was it ambition and desire of winning honoz, which hath put this slavish chaine about thy necke, placing thee among Gallie-slaves, where it shall be best for thee to die immediately, seeing the Emperour is our mortall and capitall enemy: O divine providence, how hast thou permitted fortune to rebell thus, and to execute against us so enoyme and woful a mischief: Assuredly I can well vaunt that the celestiall bodies have more favoured us, than thou hast bene friendly and gentle towards us.

She uttered many other lamentable discourses, still detesting her accursed life. When the King Ocurites, who had given attentive eare to her (knowing that she was Marcenida)

felt



felt himselfe so confounded, and out of his wits, that he could not pronounce aboue five or sixe such like words : Alas Mahomet ! did it not suffice thee to haue so auerely afflicted me, but thou must reduce into so pittifull and base extremitie, the soule which did not merit the least of all these sorrows, which doth so much the more agrauate my torment : Ah, the most outraged King that euer was borne of his mother, swalloweth down patiently the potion mixt with bitterness, which thou hast prepared for him.

Speaking these words, hee fell his height to the ground, and Marencida fell downe hard by him, where they bled such strange gestures, that some supposed they were stricken with the falling sicknesse, insomuch, that they moued all the standers by to compassion : and the Emperour for his part would willingly haue deliuered them, had he not perceaued Palmendos could not honestly frustrate Ozalio, of the promise which he had made him. By meanes whereof, not to abide beholding them any longer in this pittious Tragedy, he commanded incontinent to recarry Ocurites to his lodging, and Marencida backe into her chamber : where she would willingly haue done that for him (to saue him from death) which Alceste whilom Queene of Thessaly, would only haue enterprised for Admetus her husband, after she vnderstood by the Oracle, that any one of his friends, who would die in his stead, might saue his life, which else in no wise might be preserved.

So great was the hearts grieve Ocurites felt, during his traunce, that refusing to eat or drinke a long time afterwards, he weakened so much his members, and spent his naturall vigour so farre, that his soule was constrained to take leaue of his body : which was interred afterward (by commandement of the Emperour) in a rich tombe ; whereof Marencida neuer knew any thing, for they sought meanes expressely to conceale from her this mischance, fearing lest she should goe after, to keepe him company in the other world, as might be misdoubted by the coniectures gathered of the anguish shee indured,



indured, seeing him in so miserable estate, when she sounded in his presence, as you have read before. And for that Ozalio did sollicite at the length her departure, with all diligence, Palmendos caused two shippes to be made ready with all things necessary, granting him freely his departure (albeit there was much griefe on both sides, for that from their infancy they had bene both brought up together) they gave each other their last adue, not without bedewing their faces with flood of teares, their mindes being touched inwardly with the strict and more than fraternall amity betwene them: so that every one marvelled why he would not for this onely respect renounce Paganisme, as Palmendos had done: which he would surely have done, if the love of Marcenida had not so prevailed with him.

The Emperour gave them many sumptuous presents, to carry from him to the Queene of Tharsus, which being bestowed in fit place on ship-board, he commaunded to hoyle sailes, and so incontinent launched into the maine sea, which was so calme and still, that within few dayes he fell within the coast of Tharsus. So soone as he was arrived in the haven, all the Citty began to make bonfires, and many other tokens of joy, thinking to recover their Lord and Soueraigne Palmendos: But soone after changed their rejoycing into sadness, when they knew certainly Palmendos was so farre from that place, where they thought him to be present, all the people doing nothing els but curse and ban the olde Weldam, who occasioned the losse of so milde and gentle a Prince. At this time lay the Queene very grievously sicke in her bed, for the absence of her sonne Palmendos, so that seeing Ozalio alone enter into the chamber, her heart felt presently such an extreame anguish, that she had neither sinew, veine, artier, nor muscle, which was not deprived of their usuall functions. So that without hearing the Ambassage, which the Emperour committed to Ozalio to offer her with his presents, she died, more sodainly than the thunder-bolt did ever pierce through living body.

This



This honourable Lady having thus accomplished the last law of nature, and yielded before God her mortall homage: Ozalio gaue the principals of the Kingdome to vnderstand of the ordinance of Palmendos his Cousen: whereby vpon calling them together some after the decease of the Quene, he shewed them fast sealed, and so subscribed as they ought to be: by which meanes they all knowing him to be a most sage and valerous Prince, accepted him gladly for their King.

Thus having peaceably inuested himselfe in the kingdome, he married forthwith in great triumph and magnificence, his deare Marencida, who seeing the lone her husband bore her, to encrease more and more every day, conuerted her mourning and sorrow into thankfull gladnes: so that within few days she quite forgot all things past, louing afterward so perfectly the good king Ozalio her second husband, that she had by him many goodly children, many whereof proued very brane and hardy knights.

Thus feasting them whom he tooke from Constantinople, for to accompany him homeward, at length he returned them backe againe, with such newes and rich gifts, which the king Ozalio sent to his Cousin Palmendos, as he (in memorie hereof) continued the same euery yeare following in like manner, for tribute and homage of the high estate, which hee confessed onely to hold of him.

So sooner were the Knights arriued in the Emperours Court, but Palmendos was aduertized of the death of the Quene his Mother: whereupon he grew into great melancholy, and made woefull lamentation, seeming to him that his absence was the principall cause of her death: but he loued Franchelina so ardently, that he could not well busie his spirits in any other thing than in those which he knew might cause her delight and pleasure: wherefore in time he forgot the sorrow which these heauie newes caused, especially feeling himselfe so comforted by his loue, whom we will now leaue to take the gracious pastimes, wherewith those that are newly affianced and wont to solace one another, attending the  
wished



wished day of their Nuptials ; And now returne we unto Rifarano, whom we shall finde yet in the house of the Countesse of Island.

CHAP. IV.

How Rifarano being departed from the Countesse of Island, to goe to the Tourney which was to be held in Constantinople, met with his companion Ledefin, with whom hee fought to reuenge a poore Damsell, whose husband hee had slaine.



Rifarano, who combated Dioll the Earle of Islands brother, if you remember, remained sometime with the Countesse his widow, as well to heale his wounds thoroughly (especially that in the scull of his head, which hee was faine to cauterise, and haue thoroughly searched) as also for the pleasure and grant of amorous fauours, which he receiued daily of her : by meanes whereof he could not leave her, till he was aduertised how the Emperour Palmerin would holde open Court in Constantinople, and of the great triumphs which were there in preparation, to solemnize the alliance and nuptials of the Infant Philocrista with Arnedes, Sonne to the King of Fraunce, and likewise of the Princesse Franchelina with Palmendos. But not to lose so good occasion, to present himselfe in so honourable a company, which he hoped would there meete at this solemne feast, he demaunded license of the Countesse to goe see the Prince Palmendos, at whose hands he had heretofore receiued so much fauour, that he thought he held his life but of him, and the immortall God who might end it when it best pleased him : Whereunto very loath and unwilling she accorded, doubting lest he would not returne againe to her so soone as he had promised, and that in time hee would forget her : for when a thing is farre out of sight, it is the sooner out of remembrance.

And



And the good Lady, the bigger she felt her selfe with childe, so much more did her sorrow redouble: therefore with a very feeble voyce, which did sufficiently demonstrate the trouble of her minde, she prayd him of all loners that he would sometimes remember her, whom his departure left in a wearisome distresse. Against the which I cannot long time hold out, quoth she, but death will present me, vnlesse you purpose speedily to make your returne: and thereby shall I know if you desire to prolong my life or no, which I put altogether into your hands.

Madam, answered Rifarano, so insupportable a paine would it be to me, if I should frustrate you of my speedy returne, for instead of one onely torment (which peradventure I should suffer more easily making mine absence but of small continuance) so intollerable an heart-sorrow might suffocate my soule, bearing say you should conceine a mis-conceit against me: so that I pray you, beliene no object whatsoever which may present it selfe before mine eyes, shall ever be said or seene, that therefore I will deface your Image so liuely figured within my soule: which sufficeth (in my minde) to take away the scruple you may alleadge, that I abandon you willingly: For I assure my selfe you do not thinke so, knowing well the testimony of my loyalty, and perpetuall seruitude towards your excellency, shall alwayes put you out of such feare.

The Prince hauing vndoubtedly assured the Countesse, so returne as speedily as he could possibly, she was a little comforted thereby: and giuing him for a present a most magnificent coate of Armes of greene colour, prayd him to weare it for her sake: Likewise to take one of her Squires with him, to the end she might at all occurrences vnderstand newes of him, for she mis-doubted much he would not returne so soon as she would haue him, as hereafter you shall heare: so that many times she was purposed to take away her owne life, as did sorrowfull Phillis, seeing the terme expired that Demophon should espouse her.

Rifarano



Rifarano being departed from the Countesse, he rode three dayes without finding any aduventure, and on the fourth passing very early nexte vnto a Castell, he sawe before the Gate the Lord thereof dead vpon a bed, couered and cloathed with many clothes of silke, at whose beds-head sat a yong Damzell, making most strange and pittifull lamenting, that the very panting breath of her sighes did well shew in what manner her heart did beat within her breast. All about her were many Damsels and others, whose countenances and piteous cries which they powred forth into the ayre, did plainly bewray the great griefe they had to see this dead corps, the which they made as though they would carry to burial, when Rifarano approached to know what moued them to lament so much, promising them for recompence to work his reuenge according to his power, if in case there were any need to doe it: Then the Damzell (thanking him much for his so gracions and courteous offer) began in this manner to speake to him.

Faire Knight, although my misfortunes be so extreame, that I cannot well imagine whether I liue or no, yet the assurance which I conceiue that you haue taken some pittie of my mishap, will giue me argument to deliuer you the whole discourse: albeit it would be better peradventure I should conceale it, to the end I may no further stirre vp the sorrow and heavinesse seated in my soule.

I know then my Lord, that this my dead husband going yesterday abroad on hunting, met by the way a Knight, whom for his courtesie sake, he brought home to lodge here all night, and (for his better entertainment) commanded me to doe him all the seruice I might deuise, in that he seemed to him to be descended of some great house, albeit hee knew him not before, for he would neuer tell his name, nor whence he was, I hauing therein freely accepted the commandement of my Husband, did him all the honour I could deuise, so that we supped together in great ioy and content: but afterward I perceived he neuer remoued his eyes from off me, which made my hart as cold as yce, when I saw no bodie about vs, for all our  
seruants



seruants were gone to Supper, so soone as they had done seruing vs.

Then the Traitor began to giue some enterprize to the villany which he denieth, so forthwith saying he was going to the Court of the Emperour of Constantinople, to present himselfe at the magnificent Tourney which was prepared for the Nuptials of his Daughter: This was the cause that my husband (for he loued greatly the exercise of Armes) rose sodainly from the table, to command his Squires to haue all his equipage in a readinesse to depart the morrow morning with him: by this occasion the disloyall man finding the time and place fit for his purpose, vnto me these speeches: Truly faire Lady, paragon of the most perfect Damselfs, I thinke it had bene far better for me, neuer to haue entred into your house, than to remaine long time in the paine which I feele, for your excellent beautie hath so raniſhed my hart, that if the balme wherein consisteth the only cure of this wound be not quickly applyed thereunto, I must needs dye, through the violent and too excessive heat which hath set it on fire. Further, he did prosecute his sugred and deceiuing language, when I who could not endure to harken to it, was very wrath with him, saying: It seemeth faire sir, you are a Knight little courteous, and wanting good manners, seeing you will vse such an act against him, who hath done you so much honour.

Madam quoth he againe, thinke not I am come to displease you, nor to procure you any damage, but to saue, garde my selfe from the variable and perillous accidents, into which the darknes of the night doth expose sometimes those who are wandring out of their wayes, so that I pray you not to blame me, nor reprehend me therein of indiscretion, but rather accuse your own Graces, which haue provoked, nay constrained me to vse these tearmes vnto you: no reason being able to ouer sway the impatient desire which tormenteth me: when he had thus said, he put forth his arme to embrace me: whom I resisted with all my might, and being inflamed with an insupportable choller, I rose vp from the table, crying amaine:

In



In an ill houre camst thou hether yesterday, sellon, to commit so great a contempt in these Countreies: I spake these words so loud, that my poore and infortunate husband heard mee easely, who perceiuing the treason of this treacherous wretch: as an enraged person, ran furiously to his armes, menacing him, that he would make him dearely buy his villanie: notwithstanding the wicked villaine, who had then his weapon at his side, hearing him make these threats, set hand quickly to it to stand upon his guard, and before my husband could assaile him: he thrust his sword vp to the hilts with such a violence, that it ranne cleane through his bodie. Which these sorrowfull eyes of mine beholding, I began to cry out like a woman deprived of her wits, and as ill lucke hapned, there was not found one in all the Castell, who had power or courage to take Armes, to reuenge me of this Barbarian, so that the two brethren of my deceased husband, (who are indeed both so hardy Knights, that he had not dared to haue perpetrated this homicide in their presence) took away the day before, all the men of defence with them into the Countrie. By meanes whereof this sellon and cruell murderer, had time ynough to arme himselfe, and to make away from the Castell where (after the massacre) he staid not above a quarter of an houre: in which short space I could not aduertise my neighbours, the place where I dwell being far in the fields, and remote from all other habitations.

Now you haue heard word by word, Sir Knight, the vertie of my disgrace, seeing it hath pleased you to vnderstand it: wherein, beside the disaster of my husband, (which cannot now be remedied.) I account my selfe much dissauored of the heauens and fortune, hauing no meane to finde out one, who will for me enterprise vengeance against the Authour of my totall ruine.

Madame replied Rifarano, I beleue there is not that man who will not affirme him to be a traitour, and you shall finde many Knights, who will combate him vpon this quarrell, of whom I offer my selfe the first, if I may learne what way



he hath taken, and the coate of Armes which he beareth, to the end I may haue some knowledge of him the better : in the meane time, pray vnto God that I may meete with him, if you desire to be reuenged : for to that effect doe I purpose to bend all my forces, or else they shall saile me at my greatest neede.

Faire Knight, a thousand thanks I yeld you, answered the Damsell for your cortisie and good will, the which certes I knew to be no lesse when first you began to speake, which puts me in some good hope, that I shall be reuenged by your hand : and through this meane shall you binde me to so great an obligation towards you, that hardly shall I euer be able to cancell it, if of your grace you doe not accept for satisfaction thereof, the desire that I haue to employ my selfe for you in all honest requestes wherein it shall please you to command me.

This Knight hauing learned the way and the markes, whereby he might discerne him who had slaine his hoste, he tooke leaue of the Damsell all so he blubbered with weeping, that whosoener had sene her, would haue iudged two channels to haue bene made artificiall vpon her cheekes, through the aboundance of teares falling incessantly from her two eyes : He rode all that day without meeting him, but newes he heard at the entring into a forest, that he went that way not farre before him : where being overtaken by night, he purposed to repose himselfe till day. But he could not sleepe a winke, because he fell into a deepe thought, how he might depart after the Tourney, to take his voyage into Almaine towards the Emperour Trincus his Father : herewith was his spirite so disquieted, that he was forced two houres before day to remount on horsebacke : And gallopping as fast as he could, he was gone before the sonne rising foure leagues which they counted from the forest to a little village, where lay that night the Knight whom he sought, enquiring after him of those whom he met, he was aware of him where he was mounting vpon the side of a billocke, not farre from the  
place



place whence he was not a quarter of an houre before dislodged, and went an easie pace: Rifarano well afraid hereof, spurred his horse to overtake him, which hee did before hee was gotten to the foot on the other side of the hill. As soone then as the murderer entred the plaine, and began to set spurres to his horse to goe a little faster, Rifarano called aloud vnto him descending into the bottome: *Hola Sir Knight, tarry: I shall keep you from vaunting to haue slaine traitterously a gentleman, who receiued you with all humanity into his Castell, and that you did a little too rashly rauish your selfe with the lone of his wife.*

When the Knight assailed heard his menacing, he presently turned bziide, and bailing his lance, staid for him courageously, without stirring a foote: for seeing him in company of one onely Squire, he was nothing amazed, but answered him very stoutly: *Knight, you are come to reuenge the death of him, who will make you lose your life: I thinke the therefore it were better for you (if you desire ever to see her againe for whom you resolve to combat me) to withdrawe your selfe from so great an enterpryse, leauing to counterlet the butterfly, who after she hath found the light, can neuer goe from it, till in the end she haue set her selfe on fire.*

We shall quickly see replied then Rifarano, how God can chastice the overweening and arrogancy of Traitors, such as you are, who for the lust of their sensuall appetites, corrupt the inviolate lawes of hospitality: speaking these words, they encountred with such a power, and breaking both their Lances one vpon another, as Rifarano was a little wounded with that of his aduersary, whom he sent in so bad case to the ground, that hee could hardly rise againe. Nevertheless being magnanimous, and could manage Armes well, he quickly put hand to his sword, and thrusting his arme into his shield as soone as he could, he gaue so pesant a blow vpon Rifaranos horse-head, that he made him fall downe dead between his legs; from whom he leapt off nimbly, saying all in rage and choller: *Now I see well your occupation is to betray*



folke, seeing you haue so discourteously slaine my horse, for which I hope to make you pay dearly before you passe.

With these words began Rifarano to strike home, and to beate him in such strange manner: that (being more balliant and stronger made for Armes than his enemy,) within a small space he laid him on the ground at his feet, where seeing him lie a long in a trance, he ran vpon him to giue him the mortall guerdon of his demerits: which he had done, if the Knight (who felt himselfe in extreme perill of his life) had not cryed out, saying: Alas! My Cousen Rifarano, where art thou now, that thou canst not succor me in this necessity wherein I see my selfe? Certaine I assure my selfe, full sorrie wilt thou be, when thou shalt heare tydings of my death. It was Ledefin his companion, who for the cure of his wounds, which he receiued in fighting with Arnedes Prince of France when he slew the Hermite, who would haue parted them (as you haue read before,) retired himselfe into a Nunnerie: Where by meanes of a Religious sister, who did verie well vnderstand the methode of Chirurgerie, he was carefully looked vnto till his perfect recouerie. Notwithstanding, during his cure, the Abbesse who was Daughter of a great Parentage, faire, young, and comely, knowing that he did not budge from the Emperours Court, came oftentimes to visite him; insomuch, that this continuall visitation ingendred some sparkes of amorous passion: the which by little & little kindled in them both in such sort, that it could not be long dissimbled; but Ledefin was constrained (by the way which seemed most commodious vnto him) to discover vnto his Lady the seruitude into which her lone had reduced him, praying her to haue regard to the infirmitie which he felt in hart, farre more corrosiue than that of his outward griefes.

By meanes whereof the young Nunne, who felt her selfe scorched with the like flame, and who in this matter did not desire to be a long time praiued to yeld the keyes of the Porte which was assailed, resolved one day with Ledefin to meete together to parly thereof secretly out of the presence of witnesses



nesses vnrequested to stand by when such a fortreffe is to bee scaled.

Upon which platfourme, at the first encounter were delivered some rude stoccadoes on the assayours side, which the defendant rewarded valiantly with her buckler of p[ro]we: And afterward so often renewed this Alarm, which was expedient to be against a fortreffe, that could not well be wonne at the first proffer (because of the smal breach that one onely blow of Cannon can make:) that the Abbess would willingly haue left her b[ea]n[ti]arie behind, thus to haue managed still the Janelin, and at all times to finde her selfe in such skirmishes: Whereby it fell out that Ledefin (after his recovery) remained in garrison within the Abbie, untill he was so wearie with being every day on horse backe, with his Launce in rest (which for the same purpose he was faine to haue very strong, well pointed, better steeles, and tempered) as he departed to put himselfe in quest of Riferano, of whose absence he was assured, and of the very day that he departed from the Court of the Emperour Palmerin. He resolved to take way for the Almaine as soone as he should finde him: for he meant to returne no more to Constantinople, because of the touch he had serued Arnedes, which he knew well to be made knowne ouer all Greece: but trauesing many clymates without any newes of him whom he sought, he purposed to goe vnkowne to the Raptials of Philocrista, hoping to meete him there, or els in no other region of Europe.

So travelling that way, he met (as you haue read) with the Knight whom he slew in his house: wherein no maruaile though he rashly discovered his vnchaste and lasciuious affect to his wife, for hee was neuer better conditioned: nor was there found in him courtesie, loyaltie, or any other vertue, by the which a man of good behaviour may be esteemed: nor did he euer change this his lewd nature and detestable manner of liuing, till he was enamoured very strangely on one of the Emperour Trineus Daughters, for to please whom he began afterward to be a little more honest ciuillie.



## CHAP. V.

How *Rifarano* knew *Ledefin*, whom he caused afterwards to be cured of his wounds, reprehending him much for his discourtesie: and how they arriued in *Constantinople* vnknowne, and embarqued themselues afterward to go to *Almaine*, where they were honourable entertained by the Emperour *Trinens*; and what befell *Rifarano* afterwards,



On returne to our matter, when *Rifarano* heard the lamentable words of *Ledefin*, he marvelled as though he had entred into some new world, and knowing not what to thinke, demanded him forthwith his name: but *Ledefin* hurt with the fall, and sore assayed with the feare he had to end his life, could not answer him one word. By meanes whereof hee went presently to disarme his head, and asone as hee had perceined him, hee felt within himselfe such a sorrowfull passion, that hee fell downe in a traunce hard by him: which his Squire seeing ran to him to unlace his helmet, for to giue him ayde that he might come to himselfe againe. Sodainely hee cald his speech to him againe, beginning so pittifull a complaint, that by the strange exclamations which hee continued, *Ledefin* at last opened his eyes, and beholding hard by him *Rifarano* his faithfull friend, whom he had called to his succour: we need not aske what astonishment he was in, when he said to him thus.

Deare friend, if now I die presently, my soule shall goe in great ioy to repose in heavenly blisse: seeing I see you before it depart from my body, which seeleth it selfe very sore wounded, by the waight and force of your hand. If so it be (quoth *Rifarano*) that you dye by this encounter, well may I assure you that all the days of my life, no man shall euer see me merry, and demanding whether he felt himselfe so ill, that hee could not goe thence to seeke some cure, he answered him, he should



Should peradventure endure to sit a little on horse-backe, albeit he had brought him but into a very bad taking. Then Rifarano and his Squire disarmed him, and wrapping by his wounds as well as they could, they conducted him unto the next Citie from thence, where they committed him into a Chirurgions hands, who assured them of speedy recovery.

Whereof Rifarano was full glad, but more it chafed him, when each one recounting their fortunes past to one another, understood the outrage offered by Ledefin to the Prince Arnedes. He reprehended and rebuked him greatly therefore, saying, these were not parts becoming knights extracted of so high parentage: and that he reputed it a great indiscretion in him, a more, to love Philocrista being a Christian, and of a Law contrarie to his.

Moreover he blamed much his great impudencie towards the Gentlewoman, whose husband he slew: requesting him in the end very amiably, he would use no more those trickes of youth, so farre distant from the vertuous honesty of an illustrious and generous heart.

Ledefin ashamed to heare him preaching thus on his imperfections: promised to leaue all lewdnes, and to follow such good counsell as it should please him to giue him: And as they had determined of their voyage, they concluded to send Rifaranos Squire to Constantinople, to the Knights who came with them from Persia, to aduertise them, that they should haue the Master of their ship in a readines, to depart without making speech thereof to any man liuing. So the Squire was presently sent away for this purpose, whose arrivall caused great gladnes in the Persians, hauing not a good while before heard any newes of their Masters. Afterward when Ledefin felt himselfe strong enough to endure trauaile with his Armes, and Rifarano had refreshed himselfe well, they came both to Constantinople, where they found no small number of Knights, arrived there before, to shew themselves in the Tourney: at the which they would not be present, fearing it would be some disturbance to their Navigation, but  
D 4                      embarked



qued themselves on the morrow before day, which displeased Rifarano very much, for that he could not take his leave of the Emperour, nor of Palmendos, whom he desired to see above all other.

Wherefore calling to him the Squire of the Countesse who followed him, also he commaunded him before his departure from thence, he should present himselfe before the Emperour, and to tell him that Rifarano recommended himselfe most humbly to the good grace of his maiestie: beseeching him of excuse if he could not come himselfe to doe the message: for that by reason of some businesse which was of great importance he was constrained to depart in all hast, to the end to arrive with more speede in Germanie, and that he would ere long returne to make amends by his humble service, for the Honour which he had receaved in his Court: Then giving him many rich presents as well for himselfe as his Mistress, commaunded him as soon as he had discharged his dutie towards the Emperour, he should returne to his strait, to pray her from him she should not thinke amisse of him, if during his abode with her, he never tolde her the name of his house and linage: For which he would come to make amends, having remayned some few daies in Almaine, whether he was going with Ledefin to see the Emperour Trineus his Father: and that in the meane time she should make account of him, as of the most affectionate servant she might finde in the universall world.

After these speeches the Pilot began to cut with his Ship the spacious plaine of salt waters, leaving upon the shore the Squire very pensive and sorrowfull to abandon thus his Mistress: but after he had called his courage to him, he went to do his embassage to Palmendos, and the Emperour, who was full sorrye for his secret departure, because he would faine have sent Rifarano home to his Father with more honour.

The Countesse of the Island understanding by her Squire that her Paramour was an Infidell, and had already taken his way towards Germanie, she had almost died for sorrow:

So



So that doing afterwards some austere penance for her offence, after the end of nine Moneths, she brought into this world a goodly Sonne, who inherited the Earldome of Sicland after the decease of his mother: and following military Discipline did atchieue vertuously many strange thinges in France, whether he went to see his Father who was Duke of Burgundie, as you shall vnderstand by the discourse of our Historie.

With this Child the Countesse took so great comfort that by little and little she forgot the loue of Rifarano, whom we will now come to finde making saile in the Adriaticke Sea, where he had so happie Nauigation, that within fewe daies he came vpon the coast of Germanie: and casting his ankers in a Porte foure dayes iourney distant from the Emperours Trincus Court, they went thither in compleate armes, except the head.

In briebe being arriued at the Pallace, Rifarano fell on his knees before his Father, demanding his hand to kisse it. The good Prince Trincus who vnderstood long time before, by letters from the Emperour of Greece of his Sonnes arriual in Constantinople, (which he then presently imparted to the Emperesse his wife, who greatly desired to know what they were,) seeing these two strange Knights, mistrusted lest the one should be him: wherof serued for a good testimonie the gladnesse which he shewed in his heart when he saide: Sir Knight to giue you my hand, I may not willingly consent, before I know who you are.

My Lord replied he againe, in places where I am knowne they call mee Rifarano, and this my companion Ledefin, Sonne to the Solden of Persia, and to Zerplura your most affectionate friends.

Then you are thrice welcome quoth the Emperour into the place, where your arriuall ouercommeth mee with gladnes: So said he embracing them, hauing for very toy so nere the teares in his eyes, that he could hardly abstaينه, but some one did fall to the ground, when he began thus.

Ah!



Ab! my sonne, happy may I thinke the perill and danger I past to beget you, seeing that I see you now proued such fruite of my labour, that all my life I shall for my part praise God for so great a grace: but how could you stay so long away, before you would come to see me, considering your valor and Chivalry did much encrease my desire thereunto: Alas, It was the heauen which being enuious and zealous of my blisse, could not permit me to enjoy your presence.

Having done this speech, he welcomed very courteously Ledefin, and in the meane time they had this honest and gracious communication, came in many Nobles, who understood newes of Rifarano, to entertaine him the most Honourably they could: So that the Emperour who knew very well the Emperesse would be most glad of this occurence, taking the two Knights, the one in the right hand, and the other in the left, went to finde her in her Chamber, saying.

Madam, these Princes, the one who is the Soldan of Persiaes sonnes, and the other (ouer whom you haue absolute power to command, come to doe you their humble reverence, and to offer you their seruice in any thing whatsoener, wherein it shall please you to employ them.

Then the Emperesse rising from her chaire ran to embrace them both with great loue, especially Rifarano to whom she said: My sonne, I haue now good occasion to reioyce mee of your presence, and to cherish you as mine owne Childe, seeing you relemble him so naturallie, who following his destiny, gaue you your essence among men, whom I loue aboue mine owne person, with zeale so entire and perfect, that it extendeth and redoundeth far ouer yours.

Madam, quoth Rifarano, nature hath so fully accomplished you with all vertues, that there can proceed from you nothing but a sincere good will, for which I thank you most humbly in mine owne behalfe, albeit it much surpasseth my little merit: which shall cause me to put this kindnes into the number of many others which you haue so well heaped on mee, that all my life I shall finde my selfe much bounden vnto you.

Then



Then hee kist her hand with the honour and reuerence which appertaineth to so high a Ladie, and next did embrace Vernan her eldest sonne, a Prince surely carefully instituted in good manners and vertuous education: which well hee could shew by the gentle entertainment he made him in recognisance of this new fraternitie, albeit he were very young of yeares. Hee held the second place of three male Children, and of two female which they had at one birth: whereof the first liued not long: & because this was not in age marriageable, the alliance of the houses of Almaine with that of Constantinople could not be redoubled, giuing him to Philocrista, whom the Prince of France had neuer other wife espoused; their eldest Daughter of the age of fourtene (called Bellerisa) was very faire, yet not so faire as the younger. But the Emperour caused the two knights to be disarmed, and by and by to inuest two magnificent robes which he gaue them, with manie other rich presents, and likewise to all the Persian knights who came with them, determining as well for their arriual and the marriage of his niece Philocrista, as also for the recognisance of the nere affinitie of Palmendos to make a sumptuous feast, and to hold the eight dayes following open Court: During the which Bellerisa shewed her selfe so quaint and curious to entertaine with gracious discourse her brother Rifarano, that thence forth Ledcan fiering himselfe with her loue, as long as he liued could neuer quite extinguish this fire out of his heart, wherein serued him for a baite the fauour which she shewed him to gratifie her brother, deuising manie times together which gaue some refreshing to his burning feuer.

After a few daies come and gone, the Emperour gaue Rifarano to vnderstand the great pleasure that he toke of his arriual: notwithstanding it would be far greater, when hee should perceiue in him some desire to receaue the holy order of Christianitie: so that quoth hee, if I doe not see you verie quickly to condescend vnto the beile of our faith, I shall thinke you make account to returne into Persia, which  
would



would plunge me in a gulf of griefes, and insupportable sorrowes.

God forbid answered Rifarano, that I should ever cause you to take any displeasure at me: I had rather teare my selfe in a thousand peeces, than not to accomplish that which it pleased you to propound mee: with this answer was the Emperour well apaid, so that to make it to same effect, he went with him on the morrow to the Fount of Baptisme, where by the hand of a discrete Bishop he receaved the first Christian Election, whereat Ledefin took such a griefe, that all that day and the next he could not shew a merry countenance.

Which Bellerifa marking, who honoured and governed him continually, praised him not to take any displeasure at the act of Rifarano his companion: for that when he had not speedily resolved to doe it, his effayme had not bene so great, especially of the Emperour, who thought himselfe much beholding to him, in that he had fulfilled his minde therein. And seeing you love him quoth shee, with so cordiall affection as you say, I marvel much why you doe not the same, being that you know the superiortie of our God doth much abase yours: whom if you will renounce, you neede not doubt but riches, estates, and whatsoever you shall demaund of my Lord and Father, shall want you no more here, than in your owne Kingdome.

If you faire Madame, replied he then, will promise mee one favour, onely for the love of you will I be Baptized incontinent, for the deuotion which giueth me that which I demaund you, constraineth mee to hate already the Pagan Secte.

Surely Seigneur Ledefin, quoth she againe, I should repnte my selfe during and after my life vnsortunate, and unworthy to come into any good company, if to be a meane of so great good, I should refuse any thing which were in my power: assuring me that you will not request of me any thing which may offend the Honour of the one, nor of the other



other of vs two, the which being saued, I will doe my best to satisfie your desire, as much as in me lyeth.

Now may I call my selfe thrice and foure times happy, quoth Ledefin, seeing I see so precious a good so freely offered me, whereof I lost all hope that it would neuer be by me acquired, which I will not demaund of you Madam, untill that you shal see me accomplish my promise, which by this occasion hath willingly made me accept of your commaundement: whereunto to giue some beginning, he said vnto the Emperour, that seeing his Sonne had left the Mahomaticall law, he would doe no lesse than he had done, because their more than fraternall amity might not suffer a diuersity of faith betwene them.

If the gladnesse of the Emperour were great for the conversion of Rifarano, it was doubled so much more, hearing Ledefin vse this faire language: so that remitting his pompe but till the morrow morning onely, hee was receiued into the Catalogue of Christians by the same Bishop, and in the same Fount that Rifarano was, hauing for his Godmother the Empresse, and the Emperour for his Godfather, who when the Ceremony was finished, he spake to him in this manner.

You haue now, my God-sonne, done the act of a vertuous and worthy knight, forsaking the erroneous and detestable Doctrine which you held, to embrace our holy and Catholike religion.

By meanes whereof I will holde and account you hereafter for mine owne proper Sonne, giuing you such Estates in my Countrie whereby you may most honourably liue by, and maintaine your selfe after your owne content.

Ledefin thanked him most humbly, and prayed him not to repute him lesse affectioned to his seruice, then the most loyall and faithfull kinsman or allie, to whom hee had in his race: Whereof the Emperour thanked him, who for this regard ordained to continue a feast throughout all his Court,



Court, and the Emperesse gave the name Trioll vnto Rifara-  
no for the loue of his father, because she would not haue him  
called any more by that name which he brought out of Bar-  
barie. But Ledefin tooke no great care to change his, hauing  
in hand matters which did much more moue his spirit, to the  
which he would assay to giue some tranquillity : so that find-  
ing Bellerifa one houre of the day fit for his purpose, he bled  
this grattous speech to her.

Madam, it seemeth to me I haue obeyed your commande-  
ment, which I reuerence, and will reuerence all my life as  
an oracle, and God graunt you may by this meanes know  
the extreame deuotion I haue to your seruice : This is the  
matter, I would humbly beseech you to call to minde the pro-  
mise you made mee presently thereupon, hauing some pittie  
of an insupportable torment that my afflicted hart hath felt e-  
uer since the first time I saw you. You know the offer that  
the Emperour your Father hath made me of his Grace : as  
touching which I hope not to demand of him any thing els  
but you in marriage, and if so great happines befall me, that  
I be not therein frustrate, I shall reckon my selfe the most  
fortunate knight who euer marched vnder the celestiall Pa-  
chine.

Alas quoth the Damsell, how could you weane so subtilly  
the snare wherein I now see my selfe entrapped : In good  
faith I neuer thought (making you promise) that your cariage  
tended to this end : Nevertheless, seeing you accorded me so  
easily no means matter, which maketh me surely much bound  
en to you, for my part I will acquite my promise, so that we  
doe not transgresse the limits and bounds of honour, which  
I must hold as deare as my life. And to the end to shew by  
a good beginning that I am not ingratifull for your so great  
favour, I accept you for my knight, with assurance to owe  
you hence forth no lesse amitie than to Trioll my Brother :  
Wherein if my Lord and Father command mee any thing  
farther, I shall consent with a very good will to returne you  
the guerdon, with so good will as yours doth merite : we  
may



may well imagine what was the ease and content of Ledefin, knowing there was given (and that by his very Lady) some refrigeration to the burning of his flame : which beganne to line and kindle so lively afterward in Bellarifaes heart, that it was within a while no lesse beherment than that of her lover, who by this meanes became more hardy and courageous than euer hee was before, committing afterward nothing which might staine his honour, but in Jousts & Tournneys which were held in those quarters, he carried away still the greatest part of the honour, as the best Champion next after Trioll, who farre surmounted all those of that Country, therefore both the one and the other were greatly esteemed by the Emperour and the Potentates of Almaine : where we will leave them a while, to passe their time according to the renowne and commendation which they shall win, to recount the Tournneys and great magnificences made in the meane time in Constantinople in attending the Tourney, held at the Nuptials of Palmendos and Franchelina.

# CHAP. VI.

How the Counte *Peter* one of the French Ambassadors, determined to hold eight dayes together continuall Iusts against all commers to *Constantinople*, which he did for the honour and beautie of Ladies, attending the opening of the great Tourney, which *Primaleon* caused to be published before : And how the Duke of *Drante*, vassall to the King of *Theffalie*, was the first who entred the listes against him.



On have vnderstood heretofore how the Emperour *Palmerin*, sent to invite many great Princes and Nobles of Greece, to be at the Nuptials of his Daughter *Philochrista*, wherein the Posts and Messengers did so well their diligence, that in short time after there arrived the greatest  
part



part of the Barons from all Countries vnder his obedience, in the best equiPAGE they could.

Amongst the Princes of Marke, there arrived first, the King of Sparta and the Quene Arismene his wife, Aunt to the Emperour, who brought thither with them one onely Daughter which they had, being not twelue yeares of age, but very beautifull, and of the best grace, called Amandria: Before whom the Emperour came forth to welcome and entertaine them, commanding his Fourriers & Harbingers to marke out for them all the body of the great Scraglia nereſt his quarter: But the Emperour had Philocrista and two other yong daughters, whereof the eldest who was called Florida, betwene thirteene and fourteene yeares of age (certes as faire as the day) resembled very much the Emperesse her mother. Shee after the marriage of Philocrista, was put in her place, being given vnto her many Damſels and the same estate that her sister had, so that she kept the Emperesse alwaies company as did her sister Philocrista before. To be briefe, as for the graces and perfections wherewith nature deemed worthy her gentle and diuine spirit, she was the pearle of honour, the Idea of beauty, and the matchles Paragon of all good grace: ſeing that euen from her infancy she was reputed in sagelle, binacity and quicknes of spirit, a new or second Pallas, being a Princess faire demeanured and well-aduised, shee acquainted her selfe, and grew into such league of amity and louing kindnes with her Cousin Amandria, that they did neuer part company.

At the arrivall of the King of Sparta thither, the Emperour his Nephew conceived a marvellous ioy: The which was redoubled when he vnderſtood that the King his father came accompanied with Belcar and Recinde the future King of Castile, whereof Prince Arnedes was not glad a little, nor the Spanish gentleman who did attend for him in that Court, and the Infant Melissa was most ioyfull of all, for the hope she had to see him quickly her husband.

From diuers other strange Regions and Countries, came  
every



euery day Knights to the Court, where they were all courteously receaued by Primalcon: Especially a great Troupe of Theſſalian Barrons, who came thither to kiſſe theſe Kings hand: and alſo to ſee Palinendos whom they bleſſed, and by their prayers lodged him aboue the heauens: lauding God who gaue them ſuch a Prince ſo Seigneur: whom ſo his part he cheriſhed and honoured in the beſt manner, which contented them moſt of all. Moreover thither came the good Knight Friſoll King of Hungarie, whether could not his Quene accompany him becauſe ſhe was very ſicke: And the Emperour ſtayd but ſo King Florendos his Father, beſore he would begin the feaſt and ſolemnitie of the Nuptials, when the French Embaſſadoys who were there ( ſeeing ſo many Princes and braue Knights gathered together ) pick- ed ſo ward throught deſire of glozy, determined to enterpriſe ſome Martiall exerciſe to paſſe away idlenes. The ſo moſt of whom was the Earle Peter, a very braue and hardy Knight, who loved (as his owne ſoule,) Iſortine the Duke of Sauoyes Daughter: the ſame man whom the Emperour Palmerin vanquiſhed in Gualc, who afterward eſpouſed Lucimine, Daughter to the King of Fraunce: by whom he had three male Childzen very braue knights, and one onely daughter, faire in perfection, whom he cauſed to be brought vp in the Court of his Father in law.

The Earle deſired extreamely to haue her in marriage, and ſo that purpoſe did he maruallous deeds of Armes as her Knight: ſo the great loue that he bare her redoubled his forces, and encreaſed his courage in ſuch ſort that hee was eſteemed one of the beſt Champions of the Kingdome; which was cauſe the King of Fraunce choſe him ſo ſecond Ambaſſadour in this treatie of marriage betwene Arnedes and Philocriſta. Upon a day whiſt the Emperour was conferring with the King of Sparta, this French Earle came to beſeech him in preſence of the aſſiſtance, to giue him leaue to make a cloſe Tilt yeard in the great place of the Pallace, where (if it pleaſed him alſo) he had enterpriſed to abide eight dayes together

C

from



from Sunne to Sunne, maintaining Iust and Combate against all commers, who should come to shew their valours in protection of their Ladies: For that he desired to maintaine her who possessed his heart to be one more accomplished in vertues and graces correspondent to her extreame beauty, than any other, loved or served of any knight, except Philochrista and Francheline, the two glorious Starres of their age.

This did he establish for a Law of the Combate, that all knights vanquished by him, should leane their coats of Armes behinde them hanged vpon a pillar, which he caused to be erected at the end of the Lists, hoping to carry them with him away into Fraunce, if so it fortune that he staid out his eight dayes tourney without giuing over his enterprise: Contrariwise he would leane his to his vanquisher, who could holde out the rest of the prefixed time vnder the honour and defence of the Lady whom he served.

The Emperour who heard the Counte talke thus brauely, was in so profound a thought, calling to minde the happy time that he purchased so much renowne in traversing the Celtique and Belgicke Guale, that he shewed outwardly some apparent token of gladnes: and seeming to be in the Countes thoughts, and to seele the same pleasure which he receiued remembryng the perfections of his Lady, answered him merrily in this sort.

My Lord, I foresee well the paine and trauell which will lie vpon your necke in this charge, and how much courage she giueth you whom you loue so perfectly, that in her fauour you enterprise so knightly an exploit: Whereupon I assure my selfe that beside the praise which shall remaine vnto you, she shall esteeme you much more, considering the great hazard into which you expose your owne person: But that I may condescend vnto your request (albeit I should be very sorry, if I should accord you any thing which might turne you to any hurt) I grant you freely to execute your enterprise therein, and in all other honest and laudable exercises  
of



of Chivalry.

Gracious Lord replied the Counte, as long as my soule shall dwell in this passible body, I will alwaies endenour in all places to manifest the praisse of her merite, according to the small puissance that it hath pleased God to giue me, wholly bowed, yea fatally destinatd to her service: and when my forces shall not answere my heart, which in this respect is inerpugnable: I shall augment onely but the number of those, who cannot bring their drifts about, thanking you in all most humble affection, of the fauour which you shewed me, in giuing me such license in your house.

After these speeches and many other which they had together, the Counte retired himselfe into his lodging: where as sone as he was come, he commaunded that on the morrow they should plant in the place before the Pallace an inclosure which should haue in Diameter and circumference of the Center vnto the ends foure and twenty sathome in latitude, and eight and thirtie in longitude: which was done with high railles in so sufficient proportion, that fife Knights might easily fight together afront, besides he would haue a doore made hard by, where he gaue order to set vp a Tent, a Kitchin with Offices, and all which was necessarie for so sumptuous a recreation. The next day at Sunne rising he armed himselfe at all points, and mounting vpon a double Courser, he came to appeare within the lisses, where were many Knights disarmed to keepe him company, whom he bled very magnificently in the feast. The first man who came within the lisses was the Duke of Drante, vassale to the King of Thessalie, young in age, but lusty and very skilfull in managing Armes, who loued with a singular affection a damsel his subject, faire and maruellous gracious, who finding the doore of the Tilt House, thrust it open with the great end of his Lannce to enter in: therefore sone mounted the Carle on horsebacke, and taking his sword in his hand demaunded the Duke whether he would Iust or Combate with him



I will haue but the Iust quoth the Duke, for that I thinke quickly to make you confesse her whom I loue, to excell in beauty and good grace, the Lady for whom you enterpryse an exploit which seemeth to passe your cunning.

It were a thing almost miraculous, replied the Earle, if with so great reason as I haue to make good mine enterpryse, I should be vanquished by the first assailant. Saying so they went to campe themselves at the two ends of the place, then comming violently to encounter, they shinered both their Launces, and dashing one another with their shields they passed brauely the rest of the cariery: whereof the Earle was very sorry when he cried to his aduersarie, Knight take yet one statte more; for the encounter of this first Iust hauing bene so favourable vnto you, I will see how you will bebaue your selfe in the second: Then shall be seene manifestly the iust occasion I haue to Iust, answered the Duke, taking another Launce, with the which comming contragiously to charge him, he mist his blow in striking, which the Counte did not: but running aright cariery, sent him ouer his horse crouper with a tumbling cast downe to the ground: Saying with a ioyfull courage; Another time venter not with me in the lisses, if you haue no better reason to combat.

To that the Duke answered him nothing; for he found himselfe ashamed to haue boydded the Arlon before Francheline his soueraigne Lady, and many other Lords and Knights, who beheld them through the Pallace windows. But rising vp, he put off gently his Coate of Armes, and afterward being remounted he departed out of the Tilt-yeard, to see whether it pleased God to conduct him: whereof Palmendos had so great remorde, because of the vassalage which he owed vnto the Father of his affianced Lady, that with some apparance of reason, he would haue entred the lisses himselfe to haue reuenged him.

Afterwards there appeared nine or ten Knights, from whom the Counte still carried away the honour and habergions: So that about Sunne setting, when he retired for  
that



that day, he felt himselfe very weary and overpressed with the burthen that he was faine to sustaine: notwithstanding the ioy which ravished his spirits more and more, made him forget the dolour and wearines of his members. Whether came Arnedes with all the French Knights, to feast with him and keepe him company the greatest part of the night: where to stay our selves no longer, the Earle continued six whole daies before he was vanquished of any, doing manuels of Armes, as well at the Joust, as at the Combat of the sword, and making great cheare and banquets to those who visited him: whereof the Emperour marvelled much, no lesse of his prowess and valour, than of his magnificence and sumptuositie, which he continued untill the sequenth day following, when there came thither two Knights, one whereof toke away within few houres from the Earle, all the honour hee had wonne in the former daies, as you shall presently heare.

# CHAP. VII.

How *Belcar*, *Recinde* and *Tyrendos*, being departed from *Constantinople* passed by the Dutchy of *Bort*, where *Tyrendos* vanquished at the Iousts, the Knight who kept a passage out of the Citie for the loue of the Duchesse, and what fell out afterward vpon this occasion.



CC declared a while since how *Belcar*, *Recinde* and *Tyrendos* departed unknowne from *Macedon* to goe to *Constantinople*, and riding great iournies passed by the Dutchy of *Bort*, whereof was Lord an aged and grayheaded father, who in his youthfull yeares loued rest and his delights, better than the Courtly life, or any militarie exercise.

He had two faire Daughters, and one Sonne, esteemed a very ballant Knight, who against his Fathers will was gone to *Constantinople*: and at his second marriage, did this old man take to wife a very yong Lady, exceeding his Daugh-



ters in beantie, whereof a rich and gentle Knight called Dirdan was much enamoured, before and after the Duke had taken her to wife. By meanes whereof knowing there was no better nor more expedient remedie to see her and speake often with her, he contracted great amitie with the Duke her husband, giving him to understand he would be very glad to espouse his youngest daughter comming once to age, if he might please to bestow her on him in marriage.

The Duke who smelt his subtilty a little, would have willingly bebarred him from his house, had it not bin for the scandall which he feared: and on the other side the Duchesse (who being put to choise would not refuse the young and vigorous Champion to take an old and decrepit man to her Husband) seeing him so passionate as he was, albeit she being married before, could no lesse gratifie him, but must by just and reasonable guerdon, loue him againe with the like; which neuerthelesse she dissembled, bidding him many times not to torment himselfe for her, and not to feede his vaine hope, which in the end would deceave him, for it would not haue so good successe as he expected.

Notwithstanding she could neuer dissuade him from his purpose, but resting to the auncient Proverbe which saith thus, (All paine descrieth recompence,) resolved him selfe that if not very quickly, yet at the length he might gather some fruite of his swete Lady, which did not frustrate him by some coniecture which he had some after: for that he hearing her say she would goe willingly to see the Triumphs which were to be held at the marriage of Philocrista at Constantinople, he purposed to shew her some pastime to the end to dissuade her from that affection: and to this end complotted with a Brother and cosen Germaine of his, to gard a passage in the wide field before the Citty where the Duke was resident alwayes.

This Dirdan then having upon this occasion obtained licence of him, who at the instant prayers of his wife & daughters, sometime did walke into the plaine, began to defend the passage: wherein he gat honoz becoming a good Knight, seeing him-



himselfe before her, who augmented the forces of his body by the one halfe : whose iudgement in his fauour, he esteemed more than that of all the rest of the spectators ; who held all no other than a good opinion of his deeds, so that he loued him more than before.

But Belcar and his companions passing by the Citie of this Duke, knowing nothing of the Iusts, Tyrendos who rode before the other somewhat pensue, looked not about till he saw a Squire very nere him, who beganne to charge him that he should not passe any further. Wherefore quoth Tyrendos?

For that replied he, if you goe on still forward, you must Iust against a Knight, who will easily lay you along from your Horse, so that by this meane you shall be forced to leane him behinde, because here is established such a law, and when peraduenture you should dismount him, yet must you encounter two other hardy Knights, therefore you thrust your selfe into great danger.

For all this quoth Tyrendos, I will not ride a step out of my way, and passing on he saw the Tents of the Knight, & also of the Duke, who was in them, with his wife and his daughters, to see the Iust that day.

Dirdan who saw him come a farre off, stood still, minding to giue him the hocke and the branado, and when he perceived him to be nere, he called vnto him. Ho, knight, seeing you will passe this way, you must Iust with mee, for vpon such pact keepe I this strait.

Signieur defendant answered Tyrendos, nothing but the desire I had to breake a Lannce with you, caused me to passe this way. Asone as he had so said, they came so violently to encounter, that Dirdan breaking his staffe in many shiners, and giuing the Assailant a little wound, to the ground fell he straight, where by the grievous and loutish fall hee had, hee found himselfe bruised with his Harnesse : By reason whereof Tyrendos taking his horse by the Bridle, said very lowde.



This horse appertaineth to me by reason of this encounter. Those who were present much marvelled, principally the brother of Dirdan, who chafing monstrously said as he was mounting his horse: Knight thinke not to have done, for you must Joull with me, who will make you pay dearly for the misadventure of my brother.

Well may you, replied Tyrendos misse the same, if it please the diuine bountie but to saue me. As he had done this speech, he gaue into Belcars hand the horse of the banquished Knight, who arrived thither during their alteration, maruellous well apaide seeing his companion behaue himselfe so like a balliant and hardy Knight.

Then running one at another with a fierce carriere, Tyrendos sent his Assailant topstutty, with a vengeance, ouer his horse taile, whose staffe by mishap ranne into his horse head: whereof he presently died betwene his legges, which constrained Tyrendos to leape strait out of the saddle, & mount vp with a trice vpon him which Belcar held by the bridle: which the brother of the two banquished Knights seeing, ran furiously vpon him to charge him, in a great rage, saying they would die in the place, or be reuenged of him for this misfortune: but it was not long before he went to keepe them company vpon the greene grasse, which was dyed red with their owne blood in many places: This made the Duchesse then call to minde the Metamorphosis of Hyacinthus, and Reinde and Belcar to receaue great ioy in their spirits.

Tyrendos then sent by a Page the two Horses of the banquished, to the Duke, who was maruileous glad of the Honour that Dirdan lost in the Joull: and the Knight who had banquished him seeming to him no lesse courteous and humane than valerous and magnanimous, he rose out of his Chaire to entertaine him and his companions, inuiting them to refresh themselves in his house. By meanes whereof when the Duke, Duchesse and all the rest were mounted on Horsebacke, they red straight to the Castell, where the Duke commanded that the Knights should be quickly disarmed, & also that



that they should with all speede dress Tyrendos wounde, to whom every one did great honour: for albeit they knew his companions to be very worthy, beautifull and better proportioned of their persons, yet for some respect, they did esteeme and presume more of Tyrendos.

Then supper time appoaching, the Duke commanded they should cover in a pleasant and delicious garden which layned hard to the Castell, where they were very honourably served with divers dishes of most exquisite and rare viands: and after the repast was taken, the Duchesse with her daughters came in singing and playing vpon Harps, Viols and Lutes, with so excellent a grace, that to heare the sweete harmonie which resounded as well from their cozall mouthes, as their cunning touchings with their white and delicate hands, playing vpon those Ierical instruments, the Knights thought themselves in the Christian fieldes among the nine Muses, Apollo and all the rest of the muscalle consort.

The Knights surely tooke great recreation and pleasure, surpassing almost the capacite of their spirits, in the which if the hands and mouth of the Duchesse were occupied to make such melodie, her eyes did no lesse omit their office to behold Tyrendos, and by that they had well beheld and admired him, at that instant was there a sodaine change made within her heart of the love which she bare to Dirdan, with that which Cupid presented her, vnerpected, on the behalfe of Tyrendos.

And as he well sawe how she perswaded a great while in this contemplation, (the excellency and singularity of her graces pleasing him very much on the other side) was as prompt as she to giue essence to this bargaine of change.

During the accomplishment wherof, the Duke reasoning of many things with Belcar, demanding him in the end who Tyrendos was, perceauing nothing the priuate wound he had already made in the heart of his wife. We are quoth hee Knights of the King of Macedons Court, who goe to the triumph which is published in Constantinople.



I beleue replied the Duke, in all the assembly which shall be here, there will be found few men at Armes who can come nere this, for as much as I can presage, by the proofe I haue seene him make to day. You say true quoth Belcar, and yet you would say more if you knew who he is. The Duchesse who making no semblance, heard all these discourses passe, imagined presently Tyrendos must be some knight of great and illustrious blood, therefore she made greater account of him than before, being thrice happy to haue chaunged Dirdan for him, whom she loved already so ardently that before they parted company, she whispered vnto him very softly these words, so that no body heard her: Faire Knight you must repaire the sorow and grieve you haue procured vs in banquishing these knights of our countrie, whom we must esteeme of. God forbid replied Tyrendos, I should be bozne into this world, to worke you faire Lady the least sparke of displeasure and discontentment that any humaine spirit may lightly receaue: Neuerthelesse if the Planets haue so much disordered me, that I haue giuen you any cause to be sad, I beseech you Madame, to appoint me any penance as you shall know may suffice to blot out this offence, which against my will and before I was a ware I haue committed thereby: then said the Duchesse, I verily beleue you will not faile to accomplish that which your heart commaundeth you to speake, the generousnes whereof I know already: and I pardon as willingly this oversight, as I hope you will accomplish hereafter the liberall offer you make me, to amend it according to my discretion. I thanke you most humbly quoth he then, to grant me so quickly pardon in so great a misdoe as to prouoke the choller of Ladies, which shall cause me to say ever hereafter, to haue found in you courtesie & humanitie, surmounting the forces of my tongue: In recompence whereof assure your selfe Madame in all occasions presented to me for your service, I will imploy my selfe, with such sincerisy of deuotion as I desire to be made known vnto you when it shal please you to giue me full fruition of that felicity,  
which



which I shall repute second to no other, in retaining me for your knight: so much I never offered yet to any Lady living, for that I acknowledge my selfe farre unworthy to serve any Lady.

If so it be, replied the Duchesse, I may well glory to have made this day so precious and inestimable a purchase, gaining him for my knight, who is a very pearle and representation of Mars: wherein I finde my selfe so much beholding unto you, that I see my selfe out of all hope to be ever able to cancell towards you the Obligation of my spirit, if of your favour and grace it do not please you to accept in part of payment and satisfaction thereof, the extreame desire which I have to shew you, in effect, I love you even as the same soule which giveth me comfort, and so hope that you shall reape condigne recompence for the paines you offer to endure for my sake.

These last words she spake so softly that none but he could heare them, and so faire and softly prosecuting their matter, Tyrendos told her that his heart would be very well content, while any accident did fall out to constrain him to make some hode to doe her humble service there.

That would be, answered this lover, the most agreeable thing which I could desire: so that I beseech you depart not hence yet these few dayes, during which time peradventure some opportunity may serve to bring about this businesse.

Tyrendos promised he would (when the Duke prayed them altogether, because he was come in talke to the same point with the others) they would not depart on the morrow: whereunto they consented, to the great contentment of the Duchesse, who shewed by all signes she could devise, to make knowne the extreame love she bare Tyrendos.

And as she busied her selfe the day following, to devise some invention to prolong the sojourning of her lover, behold there entred into the Pallace a woman clothed in blacke, who demanded of the Duke if the knight vanquisher of Dirdan and his companions were in his house; who being shewed

unto



unto him, she fell prostrate at his feet, praying and conluring him by the thing which he loued best in this world, that hee would graunt her one boone.

The Knight hauing accorded this womans request, she began againe, after humble thanks, to say in this manner.

Faire Knight, you haue now promised to goe into a place with me, where I hope by meanes of your valour and prowess (whose fame yesternight came vnto my eares) to finde me remedie for a wrong which the worst of all knights caused mee within these few daies to endure. Tyrendos promised her againe to employ himselfe for her, so that she would remaine content: and seeing he must yet haue another Combat in that quarter, he liked very well this occurrence, which was a meane for him to stay longer nere his deare Mistis, who thereupon was almost ranshed for ioy: but if they two were well pleased, Belcar and Recinde, who would not so iourne there any longer, (to the end they might come before the King Florendos to Constantinople,) were as much displeased when they vnderstood of the iniured Gentlewoman, that Tyrendos must needs abide some few daies longer in that place. Wherefore he prayed them to be going onwards before, saying that he must needs stay there to exploit some act which might make more famous the reputation of his person, assuring them he would not be long after them, & that the great desire which hee had to be at the Triumph, would keepe him from sojourning long in any other place. His companions seeing they could not get him along, thanked the Duke and Duchesse for the good blage & honorable entertainment they had made them, & leaving Tyrendos in Bort, (being a little displeased to separte themselves) they took their iourney straight to Constantinople: whereby the Duke was marvellous glad of this Knights abode with him, misdoubting nothing that he would lie in ambush for his wifes honoz: who hoping to take some pastime in the amorous chase with her new Parramour, made a great deale the better chere to the Gentlewoman, who was cause to retayne him with her:

where



where we will leane them to the liking of their lones, to recount what befotuned Belcar and Recinde after they had parted company.

# CHAP. VIII.

How Belcar and Recinde being arriued in Constantinople vnkowne of any, vanquished the Counte Peter, and continued the law of his Iust, doing maruailes of Armes: and how the Emperour sent Palmendes and Primaleon to know who they were.



Belcar and Recinde perceiving the will of Tiren-des their companion, prayed God to preserve him from all sinister accident, then bidding him adieu, they fell into their way againe: where, in riding many dayes journeyes, they arrived at the last in Constantinople on a Sunday morning, the tenth day of the Iust that Counte Peter enterprised (as you may call to minde) whereof they heard some newes by the way as they came. By meanes whereof they determined before they would make themselves knowne, to prove themselves against him as Knights errant: Belcar prayed his companion to let him have the first course, which hee willingly granted, albeit he could have desired to win the honour or shame first himselfe.

Enteing then into the Citty, they made directly to the Till-parde, where they found the gate fast, by reason the Counte dined then in the company of many Knights with great ioy and sollace, as they were accustomed within his Pavillion: So that being saine to stay the fit houre, they leaned upon their Launces, untill they saw the Emperour take his place on the left hand, to whom the King of Hungary who sat at his side begins to say: My Lord, behold these two Knights who will Iust, how brave they governe themselves on horse-backe.

Truely



Truely brother you say well (quoth he) I believe it will doe a man good to see them at the shooke. When Belcar perceived the Emperoz whom he had not sene long time before, force and courage increased so in his heart, that he purposed to shew this day some pleasure in his house, where because hee was nourished and brought vp in it from his infancy, he knew not King Enfol his father who was with him in company, being brought from Hungary thither in his swadling clouts.

But the Earle seeing the Seignioz & Noblesse in the galleries, caused forthwith his Helmet to be brought, and by and by all his strings, leathers and buckles to be laced and tyed: Then mounting, he commanded the Trumpets & Drums to sound, and to open the Gate of his repaire: Whereinto Belcar being first entred, the Earle asked him, whether hee would Just or fight, I will quoth the Assailant, doe all that I shall know to be necessary, but let vs first Just to see what will follow.

Having thus saluted each other, they encountred with such a fury that Belcar lost his stirrups, and the Earle (breaking in, dashing together the pettrall and the girths of his horse) went mangre his nose to kisse his great grandmother, but he sone got vp againe, being greatly ashamed and vexed, to lose in an instant the honour he had obtained in five dayes.

Sir Knight then quoth Belcar, I haue wone your Coate of Armes, if I be not giuen to misundersstand in declaring me the Law of your enterprize: According to which you must depart this field, which I purpose to garde and defend in my turne as you haue done before me, if some body disappoint me not by force of Armes. My Habillament shall I well giue you (answered the Counte) without departing the Fild, if it be not by Martiall exploit perfozmed by you or some other, which shall force me to doe it. You will seeke your dammage, replied Belcar; neuertheless, seeing you will needs haue it so, remouent hardy, and con me thanke for the curtelle and fauor which I shew you.

Then



Then set the Earle loose to stirrup againe, and in the meane time the Emperour being greatly astonished at the magnanimity of this Knight, saide to the King of Hungarie, he well knew who he was. The two Champions beganne with their swoords a terrible and furious skirmish, helwing one another in so violent and strange manner, that it terrified the beholders to heare them onely: For the Counte through rage and despite which surmounted his reason, laid on without feare, and most desperately.

But his aduersary, who was a little more nimble, and could mannage a little better than hee, did tickle his ribbes with such sound flashes, which easily tamed him at length; so that being weary to make him languish so much, he hitte him in the end a fell stroke vpon his Currier, which laide him in a Round vpon the bare ground, saying: Now Knight must you condiscene by force, to that whereunto you would not accorde by your good will: a thing surely proceeding from your rash presumption, which made you thinke the honour of Chivalry dwelt onely among Frenchmen.

At this spectacle and words smoked the Prince Arnedes, and had it not bene through the indisposition of his person, and that Philocrista would neuer have permitted it, he had endowed his Armes to reuenge the Counte and his Nation of this reproach.

In the same paine and choller were all the rest of the French Nobility, who seeing they could haue none other remedy, lifted vp Earle Peter from his fall, and bare him into his lodging to cause the Surgeons to looke vnto him, and search his wounds.

Belcar who thought in the meane time what he had to doe, took the coate of Armes and giuing it to one of his Pages, commaunded him to beare it from him, and one of his companions, to Melissa the King of Hungaries Daughter: whom they desired to maintaine against all commers, if she would boughse them so much fauour, to let them Combat vnder her feallie.

And



And gave charge moreover to the young-man, to tell the Emperour and those who were about his Maestie, that whosoever would Torney against him, should alwaies finde him ready within the Lists : Where if peradventure hee were vanquished by any of the Challants, the field should remaine to his companion, who should second him therein, which they did desire to do in attending the opening of the generall Triump.

The Page understanding thoroughly his Masters will, went strait to the Pallace, where kneeling before the Emperesse, hee besought her to shew him which of her Ladies was Melissa King Frisols Daughter : wherein being by her gratioously certified, the youth rose up, and with a most lowly reverence began to say in this manner.

Madame Melissa, the Knight who vanquished Earle Ceth, kisseth the hand of your Excellency, and sendeth you by mee this his spoyle, the which he knoweth beseming your worthines, whom he loveth more than any Lady of this company : And although he never saw you, he assureth himselfe never, thelesse, shee for whose love the French Lord fought, is not so perfect in beauty, but she yieldeth and giveth the first place unto you. Adverting you moreover, that he and his companion remaine from this present houre, your most humble and obedient Knights, as hoping (if it please you to doe them so much hono), that they may accomplish the Latine of the Just of Counte Peter under your name) to employ themselves so in this place, that the renowne of your beauty shall flye throughout all climates of the Levant.

Hee that had there scene the comely beauty of Melissa, should not have failed to have judged of the favour of her two Alablaster cheekes, covered with a transparent and fine Latonie, for the shame that seized her, bearing him speake so in her favour : Nor could she answer a word to the young man, she found her selfe so confounded, when the King her Father (who was there with the Emperour) interpreting this Embassage in good part, said unto her : Daughter, I cannot



cannot believe but the Seignour who sendeth you such a present knoweth you; and though it were for no other respect, at least you ought to receive it, and to honour him who sendeth it you, for love of his generous minde.

I know not my Lord (quoth Melissa then) who may be the Knight, whose curtesie seemeth to take this hardnesse, to give a present to a Damzell whom he knoweth not: which notwithstanding, for that it is your pleasure I will accept of it.

You shall advertize your Master (quoth shee to the Page) he greatly mistaketh, to presume so much of my beauty, as to continue the Joust of the Carle for me, who have deserved no such honour at his hand: Nevertheless, I thanke him for his good will; in recompence whereof, if I can doe any thing for him, you shall assure him from mee, I will employ my selfe with as good will, as I pray God to preserve him and his companion also from all incumbrances which may impeach their valiant enterprize; for the small occasion they have to charge so heavy a burthen for so little beauty as mine, makes us feare they will be vanquish't, if their prowesse and dexterity doe not supply this default.

Then the young youth making a low obeysance thanked her for this courteous answer, and took his leave graciously of her: And turning to Duke Eustace, who was next, besought him to tell the Emperour and his company, that whosoever had any desire to Joust against the Knight-vanquisher, and his companion, should appeare upon the Barriers, where he should finde them alwaies ready; which hee did without delay: The Emperour misdoubting one of these Knights to be Belcar, told it incontinent to King Frisol, who assured him the contrary; for that he supposed he had as yet hardly left the company of Florendos.

Now did Belcar all that day nothing but breake staves, for there was no French Knight but came to doe his best against him, hoping every one to revenge the Counte Peter, but the like chance befell them as did to him before: for this

F

Defendant



Defendant was rough, & a very good horseman, which was an inheritance he held from King Frisol his father, who was esteemed one of the best men at Armes of his time. That same day Belcar dismounted beside the Frenchmen about twenty Knights, the most redoubted of the Court: whereat the Emperour wondered much, so that he sent Primaleon to them to know who they were; who gladly did this Embassage with Palmendos; entreating them to repose that night in the Emperours Court, who gaue them such charge, for the great desire he had to know them.

Gentlemen, answered Belcar, desire his Majesty to pardon us this once, for that we cannot leave this place without incurring some blame, being departed from our houses, with full determination to make our selues knowne to none.

This is a point of small curtesie (quoth the Constantino Politan) to refuse the honest offer which the Emperour maketh you, with so simple excuse as you finde now.

And who are you saire Sir, quoth Belcar, (saining not to know him) who tearme us discourteous?

I am Primaleon (replied he) Sonne to the Emperour, who sendeth to intreat you by mee to doe him this honour.

I haue done then (answered the Defendant) because I know you haue not as yet receiued the order of Chivalry: assuring you that for your prayers, nor for the entreaties of the Emperour, shall you pzeuaile further with me than as I told you before.

I will not importune you any further (sayd the young Prince,) then being somewhat offended, and when he had so said, he returned into the Pallace with Palmendos, who was so wroth with this thwart answer, that he purposed on the next morrow to arme himselfe, to the end to chastize his arrogancy.

When the Emperour understood they had disdained to grant his request; he did but laugh at it, saying; they must be let alone in their obstinacie, to see what might be the issue. Nevertheless, Palmendos would be reuenged; and without saying



saying ought to any body, went secretly to endosse the Coate of Armes, in which he banquished the Tourney, which we have described befoze, and came withail with a great Launce in his hand within the Barriers.

So soone as Recinde spide his Armoz, he knew it, and who carried it on his backe; which he let his companion know, requesting him not to Joust against him for the Emperours sake: Whereunto Belcar answered, he could willingly forbear; notwithstanding he ought not to refuse so good occasion to proue his valour against so brane a Knight; for if he dismount at the Joust, quoth hee, I shall not thinke it any shame or dishonour for me, seeing he is the Achilles of our age, with whose valerous exploits all the West resoundeth. When he had done his speech, he did his best endeavour to make him feeble his forces, and running one against the other very roughly, such was their encounter, that Belcar had taken measure of the earth: had he not taken hold of his horse maine. And Palmendos liked not very wel the shooke which he gaue him, but it was needefull for them to breath a little. Then charging a fresh with new Launces (for that the first flew in pieces to their Gauntlets) they met together with so sodain a fury, that they made the ground tremble vnder them, where Belcar found himselfe much bruised, what with the blow and the fall in his Armour. Then Palmendos who lost onely his stirrups, glad of this reuenge, demanded his Hanturgeon, aduising him if he would not fight at the Harpe, to depart the field. Other battell quoth Belcar, seeke not I against thee, for small hope haue I to gaine more honour by the sword, than I haue already at the Joust: and for that also I esteeme & loue thee too well, to make further trypall against thee; knowing right well by this encounter, I should haue but ill spede if I proceeded further. Palmendos hearing him say so, mitigated a good part of his indignation, and taking his Coate of Armes, went directly to the Pallace, where the Emperour and the King of Thesalie, very glad of this act, receiued him with great pleasure, the Emperour saying thus to him:



Some the Knight did wisely, not to accept the Combat of the Warpe against you, otherwise he might have sped ill, considering his successe at the Ioust: Now God grant (I wish it with my heart) that all your future enterprizes may sort to so good and honorable end, as the passed haue receiued a most fortunate and favourable issue.

Palmendos kissing his hands, thanked him humbly for this good wish, then sent he Belcars Sabardine to his faire Francheline, who was not a little glad thereof: therefore she would needs come to disarm him with her own hands, casting about him a faire and rich mantle furd with white sables, for feare he should take colde.

## CHAP. IX.

How *Recinde* continuing the Ioust after *Belcar*, vanquished the Marques of *Penerad*, and a Cosen of his, with many others after them: and how the Prince *Arnedes* his Cosen Iousted against him, which caused the Emperour to come into the field to know who he was.



**B**Elcar seeing Palmendos depart the Listes, rose up very angry for his fall, to retire himselfe to the Carles Pavillion, where *Recinde* was: who galled to the heart for his companions misfortune, purposed to reuenge him if any man appeared within the Barriers: So that being mounted he rode liuely up and downe, when the Marquesse of *Penerad*, (esteemed a good Knight, as defending of the race of the Emperours of Constantinople) came into the field.

He being aduertised, that the two Knights who kept the Ioust after Carle Peter had sent his Coat to *Melissa*, whom he desired extremely to haue in marriage, beganne to beare them a mortall and secret grudge, and purposing to chastize them for their overbold rashnes, came richly armed into the fildes, where without any word speaking, prouoked with raging anger, basting his Lance, he dast his horse sodainely.

which



When Recinde perceauing, set spurs quickly to his like-  
 wise, so furious was their encounter, that the Marques went  
 arse ouer head, ouer his horse head to kisse the ground, taking  
 such a grieuous thulch, that he remained in the place, wag-  
 ging neyther hand nor foote: wherebpon one of his colens,  
 proper and valiant of person, (a heauie man at this accident, in  
 the meane while they carried the Marques into his chamber)  
 ranne speedily to arme himselfe, thinking to reuenge this mis-  
 hap: Bimer was the Marques Colen called, who began to  
 fought in such a heat, that he mist his blow against Recinde,  
 who contrariwise hit him so full a pat, that he sent him easily to  
 take the Marques place: but he rose vp againe lightly, saying  
 to the Defendaut, hee should not thinke to haue yet done with  
 him, seeing he would know how he could handle his sharpe.

At these words the Spanish Prince alighted, and putting  
 his shield on his Arme with a couragious stomack, they began  
 a fierce combat, which for all that was quickly finished: For  
 Recinde being a better warrior and more nimble than his  
 aduersarie, made him recople to the place where he was ban-  
 quished: then pulling off his Gabberdine, left him wounded  
 in many places of his body, among his seruants, who carried  
 him thence into his Colens lodging.

That done he gaue that and the Marques coate to Belcars  
 Page, to beare them to Melissa, beseeching her to accept them,  
 as comming from her most affectionate seruitour, that she  
 might finde vnder the two Tropicks in heauen.

She who was with Philocrista in her Chamber, when  
 the Page came to doe the message, answered thus: I know not  
 what these knights meane to send mee such presents without  
 knowing me: yet saine would I learne their names, & what  
 moueth them to doe it: Madame (quoth the youth,) they are  
 such, that when you shall know them, you shall thinke some  
 great good Fortune will befall you, in being able to doe them  
 any honour, for your part, in recompence of the extreame de-  
 sire that I can assure you they haue to content you in the thing  
 wherein you take any pleasure: For all that, they shall haue



none other thanks of me (replied the Princesse) till I know more: well will I take that which they send me, wherewith I finde my selfe greatly content, albeit farre more should my spirits be satisfied, as you may tell them, if I might vnderstand openly their drift. Few dayes shall passe Madame, quoth the young man, before you see the true end of all: so that I beseech you doe not bere your selfe, but attend the fit houre, which shall be breifely as I hope.

Finishing his speech, he reuerently tooke his leaue of the Ladies, whom hee left very penſiue, and desirous to know who these balliant and curteous Knights might be. In the meane time Recinde who held on his Chualries, Iusted against ten or twelue Assailants: all whom he laid bravelly along, winning by this meanes their Coats, which he caused to be hanged on high vpon the Piller, where Counte Peter hoped to erect his Trophie. After this he tooke his solace and recreation, before any one presented himselfe within the Lists, every one fearing to aduenture against him, whose prowesse and dexterity was so great. Wherebpon Arnedes who felt himselfe better at ease than he was wont, hearing the Emperour say the Defendand might well remaine with the honour of the Iust, seeing that no man entred the field any more, vnsuwered him.

I doe not thinke my Lord, they cease comming for feare of him, for the number of brave & hardy Knights of this Court is not so little that he can long time holde out against them: And hauing thus said, he went presently to fit himselfe with Armes, putting on a Hurrion well tempered with Steele: then came he into the place mounted on a mighty Courser, who did nothing but neigh and foame at the mouth.

When Recinde saw him enter the Barriers, hee discovered him sone by his deuisse, and as he thought how to auoyde Iusting with him, he was forced to set spurres to his horse, because he saw his Cousin Arnedes doe the like: neuerthelesse approaching within the reach of their Lances, he hauked his and would not couch it against him.



By this meanes Arnedes easily broke his staffe, albeit hee could not wagge the Champion an incbe out of the Saddle, so that somewhat abashed to see him doe so, turning bit he incontinent charged vpon him thus: Sir Knight, let vs haue another bout yet, and be no more this curtesie towards him, who will con you no thanks for your fauour: So hee tooke another staffe, & fetching his carriere to run the second time, Recinde did as he had done before: Arnedes by that meanes, or els by choller, missing his assaint, in a great rage threw his Launce to the ground, and setting courageously hand to his sword, sayd to the Knight: Worthy Sir, I desire none to knowe for what reason you will not Iust against me, as well as against the rest.

That you shall neuer vnderstand by my meanes quoth the Spaniard: And farther be well assured, that happen to me what may, I will not couch my Launce against you.

You will tell me then a reason quoth Arnedes, or you shall presently dye of my hand. Such inhumanity shall I neuer see in you, replied Recinde, albeit I had no will to defend my selfe.

By mine honour said Arnedes hastily, you will constrain me to be discourteous indeede, and therefore at your owne perill be it.

I can no longer forbear quoth the Emperour then (who heard this controuersie) but I must needs knowe who are these two Knights now in the field: for mee thinkes I see none other than the true representation of Belcar and Recinde.

When he had thus said, he descended with many Nobles after him, and finding the two Combatants yet in dispute, the one seeking to knowe why his aduersary would not encounter him, the other excusing himselfe that hee might not tell the cause, willed Arnedes to goe aside: And taking Recindes Horse by the Bridle, hee prayed him of all leue that hee would satisfie the great desire hee had to knowe him.



My Lord quoth he I cannot doe it without infringing my faith, therefore I pray you vige me not to be perjurde. As sure you, replied the Emperour, you shall neuer see me depart from hence before I know and looke you in the face: so that by excuses you may not puenalle.

Wherefore I pray you put off your helmet, and thinke in so doing you shall not breake your faith and promise. For Gods sake, replied Recinde, doe not offer to force me in your countrie. This force will I offer you, answered the Emperour, for that in my mind, it stayeth neither your honor nor mine. The knight in a perplexity not knowing what to say further, seeing it was a matter of constraint, held his peace and spake not a word. Then Belcar, who had well heard all the whole circumstance (seeing hee could no longer conceale himselfe, threw instantinent his helmet to the ground, and went to fall on his knees before the Emperour, in kissing whose hands hee said,

My Lord pardon vs if it please you; if wee haue not bene so prompt to obey you as your greatnes requires, for we determined at our departure out of Macedon, to come unknowne into this place, to exployte before your eyes some honourable attempt, wherein you might take some delight & pleasure: Notwithstanding seeing we are frustrate of our intention, hauing perfozmed nothing worthy to giue you contentment, it is the very reason, why wee dissembled our selues vnto your Maicstie: of whom both the one and the other of vs two reputeth himselfe a most happie man, to haue receiued so great honour.

As my deare friends quoth the Emperour then, you be exceeding welcome into my Court, wherein I may well assure my selfe cannot be found two knights, in whom can be found so much animosity as in you onely: but tell me I pray you whether the King my most honourable Father, will come speedily vnto this Citty or no.

My Lord answered Belcar, I am sure it will not be a wake before he arrive here. For he was ready to depart, when I entreated



entreated him to let vs goe befoze to bring you nelues there of. The Emperour maruailous ioyfull of this answere, turning himselfe with a laughing countenance towards the King of Hungary, said vnto him : Brother, receaue to you Belcar your Sonne, whose vertues and noble acts make him so amiable, that euery braue man of good iudgement would be to him instead of a Father in this behalfe.

As the Dominatozs of Greece spake these words, Belcar falling vpon his knees kissed honourably his Father, King Frisols hand, who embraced him with great loue, the trickling teares standing in his eyes, and at length the French Prince seeing his Cosen Recinde in face, ran vnto him with open Armes to giue him hearty embracing, and could not almost speake for extreame gladnesse, which ioyed his heart with now seeing him.

Which the Spaniard perceiuing, alighted quickly from his Horse, to embrace him, and after they had shewed many familiar and louing congies one to another, hee went to doe his dutie to the Emperour, who receiued him most ioyfully, as did likewise all the Lords and Barrons of the Court, whereof the greatest part esteemed themselves very happy if they might come nere to bidde them gently welcome : And while all the beholders were thus glad of this sodaine and unexpected ioy (whereof euery one had a good share) that of Pinedes was so abundant, that it could not be exprested: hauing scene him perfozme the valiant and famous acts, which you haue heretofore vnderstood.

Then toke the Emperour Recinde by the hand, and the King of Hungary his Sonne Belcar, whom they led straight to the Pallace, where being disarmed, they went forward to kisse the Emperesse hand, who entertained them with most kinde speeches.

During which time Melissa who heard them (by reason of the unspeakable ioy which she felt in her minde) shewed in the superficies of her face such a naturall beauty, that it was most admirable to behold.

Full



Full well did the two Knights marke it, when they came to doe reuerence to Philocrista, Francheline, and to her who represented the third Goddess. So that thinking her selfe thrice happy, to haue been known worthy the presents of two so worthy & excellent Princes, embraced many times her brother Belcar amiably: Auertbelesse, with more than a singular affection, and without any meane (as it falleth out many times to those who are stricken with the same Dart that she was) she entertained Recinde, her loyall and perfect louer. And beloued firmly (by that which her Brother sent her when the young-man brought her the first coate of Armes) that shee knew indeed the whole discourse of their secrets: wherein shee found great consolation, shewing oftentimes to her louer by many signes, gracious aspects, and other dumbe Embassages of loue, what was her intention, which Recinde did the like for his part towards her.

In the meane time Belcar was busie in beholding the extreme beauty of Francheline, whereof he was greatly enamored, not without thinking Palmendos a most happy man, to haue wone so much honour in winning her for his wife. And albeit he was well contented with Alderine the onely Lady of his heart, yet he could haue wished to haue had this for his Mistress, which passion could not be so well dissembled, but in embracing Palmendos he must needs tell him in smiling manner: Truly Sir it was for my great good, I was not present at the brydge of Carderie when you arrived there, for obtaining now so easie victorie of me, what would you haue done when your heart was so much pricked forward to purchase so rich a treasure as Francheline is? No maruaile then if you haue shewed that promise vpon me which every man hath manifestly knowne in you, seeing before your eyes a beantie sufficient to make able the most coward and faint-hearted knight that is, to perforce any strange aduenture, were it neuer so hard and difficult.

My deare Cousin replied Palmendos, (being very glad to heare himselfe giuen this worthy commendation by so good a knight



Knigh as Belcar) you are as much bounden as my selfe to the Princesse Francheline, for seeing the desire to conquer, caused you in the garde of the bidge to win the honoz which shal for euer immortalize your fame : Where I was very happy not to meete with you, avoiding the danger thereby of losing my life, which God hath preserved hitherto.

Further would they haue prosecuted these generous speeches, when Arnedes who approached with his Cousin, said : my Lords, leaue off these matters now, seeing that all men see the valour and dexterity of you both, wherewith you Brother Palmendos do make many sick through your heauy and puissant strokes, whereof I shall all my life beare good witness, by that which hapned to me once, which I account no dishonour, seeing it hath pleased God to accomplish you with all Martiall perfection.

At these modest reproches blushed Palmendos a little, when he answered them both in this manner : My Lord, let vs not talke of things that are past among vs, when wee knew not one another, albeit thereby is clearly sene with what valour and Chivalry you were both endued and enriched. So denising together of many aduentures, they returned to the Emperour, who made them kinde entertainment, and likewise King Frisoll, being not able to satiate himselfe with the sight of his Sonne : So that the feast was much encreased by their arriual in this Court ; where we will leaue them, attending the coming of the King and Quene of Macedon (whom the Emperour vnderstood would be there within foure daies,) to recount vnto you what Tyrendos did in the Duke of Borts house.

How



## CHAP. X.

How *Tyrendos* reuenged the Ladie cloathed in blacke, who came into the Duke of *Borts* house, of an iniurie that was done her by a Knight named *Alegon*, and how by this meane the Dutcheile and *Tyrendos* attained to their hearts desire.



The Knight *Tyrendos* desiring with an incredible affection to do some pleasurable service to the Dutcheile of *Bort*, made variance with all his heart in her Castell, hoping to bring quickly some end to his amorous passions: During which he declared once more to her, how since his first arrivall in the plaine, hee was so enamored with her love that hee pretended neuer to forsake her, whereof she was a maruailous glad woman, and much more when he manifested unto her his race.

By meanes whereof making more account of him than she did before, they determined together to giue some solace to their desires, after he had accomplished the promise which he made to the Damosell cloathed in blacke, so that to dispatch quickly hee departed thence a ioyfull man on the next morning, not without the great intreatie of the Duke to returne to his house if his way did lye any thing that way.

In the meane time the Dutcheile gaue one or two presents to the Damosell, and discovering unto her the love which she bare *Tyrendos*, desired her to be carefull of his health, & that she would requite it, which the good Lady promised her frankly: so that taking her leaue of her and her husband, she went her way with the Knight, who demanding her afterward, wherein she had neede of his ayde, she answered him thus.

Know faire Knight that two of my Sons being this other day at the marriage of a sister of a naughty knight called *Alegon*, they got there so great honor in a foystres that the Bridegrome & many others defended against al others, that the wife of *Alegon* (some little kin unto them) did cherish them the more  
102



for that, especially the elder, who was a proper youth and well experienced in seates of war: For this occasion her trayterous husband conceived in his minde a deadly grudge against him, which encreasing more and more, at one time among all other, when he espied him talking with his wife, he fell into a furious choller, so that without any word speaking, he came upon him with his naked sword and slew him cowardly, my poore sonne being disarmed and taken at unawares: And afterwards running upon my other sonne with his attendants, put him incontinent into prison, for feare lest he should reuenge the death of his brother; saying further, he would put him to some cruell death within the prison. But I (sorrowfull & heauy ~~Widdow~~ Widdow, boyde of kinred and friends, who may for me demaund Justice for this iniury done) bearing the same of your Promise, built some hope to be reuenged by your mean, being as assured as I am to dye, my sonnes were innocent, and inured without any reason; and therefore would I most humbly pray you faire Sir, according to the promise you made me, to goe bid him defiance in his Castle, telling him, if he refuse the Combat, you will accuse him of treason before the Emperour. If such be (quoth Tyrendos) the disaster and misadventure of your Children, as you tell me, the homicide it selfe crieth vengeance against the trayterous and fell murderer, who hath perpetrated it; which I hope by Gods aide to make him confesse, promising you to employ my best forces therein, with such a courage, that I will either dye, or else you shall remaine satisfied herein.

The Damsell gaue him great thanks for his good will, and taking two Squiers for guide and company in his iourney, they arrived the third day after about sixe a clocke before the Castle of Alegon: Where Tyrendos bad the Porter certifie his Maister, there was come thither a Knight from the Emperour Palmerins Court, who would speake w<sup>th</sup> him.

Whereof the Seigneur being aduertized, kept to a window ouer the Castle-gate demanding what was his errant, I would willingly desire you (answered Tyrendos) to surcease  
the



the inhumanity which you vse toward a poore widowe, restoring her yongest sonne to her, whom you detaine in prison vniustly; and if you will so doe, I promise to obtaine you pardon for the death of her eldest, whom you slew against all right and reason, otherwise I denounce you the Combat, saying that you haue wronged your honour.

Truely I had not thought replied Alegon, that at the perswasion of a woman, who complaineth without any cause, a Knight had bene so credulous, whom I may suspect of cowardize: assuring you that I haue done but what I ought in reason to doe towards her Childzen, who sought to dishonour me: so that I thinke you will gaine moze to be gone againe vnto the Emperours Court, where you shall finde opportunitie at this present to shew your prowesse, and to brane your bellie full, rather than to enterprise here any thing, which may peradventure cost you deare,

With that he got him from the window ouer his gate, when Tyrendos in a marvellous rage, began to speake many haynous villanies to him, reproaching his cowardlineſſe, and assuring him (if he would not Combat against him) to accuse him of fellonie before the Emperour his soueraigne,

Which being well wayed, Alegon was somewhat afraid, & perswading himselfe it were better to end that quarrell there than before the Emperour, resolved to sally out to Combat him: which he did after he had well harnessed himselfe with Armes and a good courſer, telling his enemy he made little esteeme of his branes, were he the most redoubted Knight of the Emperors Palmerins Court. Upon this contention they comming to encounter with a marvellous fury, Alegon mist his blow, but Tyrendos pearcing his shield and his cuprate, thrust the point of his Lanne so far into his breast, that he ouerturned him shrewdly wounded to the ground, whence the wretch could not so soone rise vp againe, but Tyrendos (who leapt nimbly from his Horse) was at his backe to cut a two quickly the laces of his helmet: then setting the point of his sword at his throat, saide: Thou art  
Dead



dead Alegon, if thou causest not presently to come helther the Knight with his Armes and horse, which thou holdest wrongfully in prison: Gentle Knight cried the vanquished, for Gods sake save my life, and I will obey you willingly in what soever your pleasure is. When he commanded his servants to fetch the prisoner, quickly, with all his militarie equipage, so that the Gayler having set him at libertie, it was not long before he appeared in the place; whereof Tyrendos was glad without measure, when he asked him whether he were him for whom he had Combated: I am the man quoth he who will serve you as long as my soule shall dwell within my body, which you have so well deserved now: And as he thus said, Tyrendos put up his sword into his sheath, then mounting all three to horse, he said to Velican (so was the rescued Knights name) these words.

Let us now Brother depart this place, where I beleue this false and cruell Tyrant will not commit hereafter, so many mischieses as he hath done heretofore, which was most true: for his servants having brought him home to his chamber, and disarmed to search him, they found his wound so great and dangerous, that he lived but three daies afterward; and in the meane time Tyrendos, Velican, and his Mother, arrived in her Castell, which was a delightfull and pleasant house, within tenne mile of the Cittie where the Duchesse of Bort dwelled.

But this Damsel shewed such kinde of cherrishings to her Sonne, that it were impossible to write them, thanking many times the Knight who had rescued him: who having his spirits occupied in nothing but upon the Duchesse, took this Damsell a parte to discover likewise to her his passion, praying her to goe make his excuse to the Duke, so that he did not returne vnto his house, as he promised him at his departure: for that upon some sodaine newes which were brought him, he was faine to make in all hast a voiage to Constantinople.

Howeuer,



Whereupon he prayed her to talke secretly with his wife, to know her intention concerning the conference betwene them in making that plot touching the sad accident of this occurrence, and that in any wise he would stay for her answer in that place, where he would solace himselfe untill she should doe him that fauour.

The damsell assured him to employ her selfe in this so dangerous a message, albeit she were certaine to lose her life, finding her selfe too much bounden and beholding to him, to refuse any thing which he would command or desire: by means whereof, taking her sonne with her, they went straight to the Dukes house, who entertained them very courteously, enquiring earnestly what was become of the Knight, & of the issue of his promise: The which Velican told him from point to point, and after, that which Tyrendos would haue said from him, whereat the good Duke was not a little displeased; for he would willingly haue seene him yet once more in his Castle, as being the man whom he esteemed more than any other Knight of the Countries adioyning to his Duchy.

But the Lady and her sonne aduertised him, that they resolved from thenceforth to liue vnder the protection of his seruice, by reason the little assurance they had elie, where, because of Alegons kindred, whom they feared being very mighty. The Duke ioyfully welcommed the Knight Velican, and the Duchesse entertained his mother for one of her Ladies of honour, and had a singular pleasure in hearing her recount how Tyrendos her loyall Louer, banquished so easily Alegon the murderer.

When the Damsell afterward spied a fit time for their purpose, she imparted to her the principall point of her secret Embassage: Whereupon the Duchesse (who loved him as her owne soule) began to make this sodaine answer: Alas deare sister, the great valour and prowess of Tyrendos maketh mee commit this error against the Duke my husband; for since I first sawe him, my heart felt it selfe so wounded and inflamed with his loue, that it is impossible for  
me



me to endure any longer in this ardent flame, which hath almost dried me up, and left no good humor in me.

Madame, quoth the Damosell, it was well foreseene of you to fire your amorous fante upon so braue a Knight, of whom I can well assure you, for the small time I haue knowne him, in a better place could you not haue bestowed it: and surely the Lord Tyrendos meriteth such reciprocation, were it but for the extreame desire he hath to make you know how his deuotion towards you, surpasseth that of the most affectionate Seruitour of Cupid. So cunningly knew the Damosell to vse her eloquence, with the good will that the Dutchesse bore the Knight, that falling from one matter to another, they conclude so sone as it was night, Velican should goe secretly to fetch and conduct him to the doore of a Garden which layned fast vpon the Dutchesse lodging, by which way he might easily enter into her Chamber, and remaine there hidden as long as they thought good: For that the Dutchesse had two or three faire Chambers, into which neuer any entred but her selfe: in one whereof she made account to keepe Tyrendos as long as she could.

This determination quickly sorted to effect, for Tyrendos pricked forward with such desire as euery one may gesse, came an houre before day to the Garden doore, where attended for him the Damosell, who conuayed him forthwith into the Chamber of the Dutchesse, whom he kist many times sweetly as he was arrived, saying: Now can I say I haue attained the height of the blisse which lone prepareth for his fauourites, and I cannot imagine Madame how I may ever recompence the curtesie and fauour you shew me in receiuing me for your seruant: If it be not to offer you the sincere and most earnest incorruptible affection that I haue to continue your perpetuall slave.

Ten thousand thanks for your good will, answered the Dutchesse: neuertheles if you see now a poore and simple louer forget so much her chastity, as to defile her marriage bed, I beseech you not to assigne the fault vnto me vnsortunate and  
G
desolate



desolate woman, but referre the whole vnto your beauty, prowess and valour, which hath brought me into such a taking, that no reason being able to persuaile over the flaming desire of my heart, which you infused into me when I gave you mine, I am constrained to prostrate mine honour vnto you. Wherein I cannot but mischaunce to finde my selfe so quickly ouer-taken with your love, (regarding the small time I keepe this burning passion in my breast) for to make you know the weight, you see presently how I haue feared nothing which may staine the reputation of a Lady illustrious, and of great renowne.

The Dutchesse persevering in these her curteous Ceremonies, the Damosell beganne to cut her off thus: Mad-dame, it is now time to bring into some harbour the two Barkes so tossed with the amorous storme and tempest: So that to preach is not now required in this place, rather let the Pilots thereof alone to doe the deuoir of their office.

By this meanes Tyrendos hauing well vnderstood the watch-word, set vp the Mast with one hand, and lifted vp the Sailes with the other, then laying downe his Armes of Steele, required in mortall battailes, he helped himselfe with those which are more esteemed betwene two Curtaines, couching himselfe nere the Dutchesse side, where toke some end the anguish of two Louers, who remained in that manner vntill they thought it high time to giue order for the rest of their Navigation, a Chamber was appointed for the knight in a secret corner.

There hee solourned nine or tenne dayes in the greatest pleasure and contentment, that as yet he ever tasted in his life, for the Dutchesse who loved him as dearly as her own selfe, was faire and gracious in perfection: in such sort, that the interruption and discontinuing of this felicity, and pleasure, was a most grieuous thing to both these ballads of Love.

For, fearing least at length this secret mistery would be discovered,



discovered, & the Knight must needs goe out of his sweet and voluntary prison: Albeit the Dutchesse did not much feare her olde and gray-headed Husband, who may be an example to all other, (that every one should seeke his match) lest the other inconvenience happen.

But Tyrendos in taking leave of his Lady, promised undoubtedly to see her againe, which comforted her a little: and afterward in going out of the Garden, he was met by Dirdan, who loving the Lady, as you have before understood, could by no meanes rest or sleepe, but walking all night long about her lodging to be within scent of his Paramour, in the meane while to allay (as he thought) the restless fit of his burning feauer.

He seeing Tyrendos sally forth of the Orchard, was bered to the gall, as every one who hath tasted the bitter fruit of iealousie may perceiue: Insomuch that to know who hee might be, hee drew nere, raging, and grumbling betwene his teeth these words: Ah, a cursed death mayst thou die who comest now from the place, the issue from whence hath wounded & pierced my heart in twaine: with that he would haue layd hand on his choller to slay him: but Tyrendos who had at the instant set hand to his sword, reached him a blow vpon his corcombe, which cleft him downe to the shoulders, continuing his purpose thus: Now shall the martyrdome end, which hath hitherto tormented thee for her, whose shame thou wast unworthy to kisse.

Then making hast to the place where Velican attended him, he mounted strait, and without any other company but this Knight, who would neuer leave him, went directly to Constantinople, where they arrived in good time for the Tourney.

On the morrow morning was Dirdan found dead hard at the Garden doze, whereat was great murmuring, the people saying he was slaine for loue of the Dutchesse, which brought her into some suspicion of her honour.

As soone as she knewe thereof, she quickly deemed who



was the author of this Homicide, Tyrendos her lover, whom she neuer saw afterward, albeit all the rest of her life he was the chiefest darling of her desires.

The Duke who was olde and loued his Lady above measure, neuer enquired further of Dirdans death : nor cared he much what the world might thinke : But misdeemed the Dutchesse had caused him to be dispatcht to banish him for euer her presence, for which deed he esteemed her the more, and had better opinion of her than before; and so we will let them line, the one ioyfull of this perswasion, and the other passing soerie to depart from her sweet lover, whom wee shall finde hereafter in Constantinople at the Tourney, to behaue himselfe better in other Combats.

## CHAP. XI.

How the King *Florendos* arriuing with his Queene *Griana* his wife in *Constantinople*, were most honourably receiued by the Emperour *Palmerin* their Sonne, who met them with a great traine a daies iourney from the Citie : And how *Primaleon*, *Abenuncq* and *Arnafin* receiued the order of Knight-hoode.

**T**he King *Florendos* and his Queene *Griana* being departed from *Macedon*, in the company of the principall Barrons of their Kingdome took by their way all the pastimes they could deuise : But being entred within the bounds of the Empire, they were ioyfully receiued by the Emperours commandement, who had given order to his Subjects for the same effect : as also for that the Queene of *Griana* his Mother was their naturall and Soueraigne Princesse.

All this Troupe being arriued within a daies iourney of *Constantinople*, he came to meete them, accompanied with the greatest part of the Nobles of his Court, with all the honour, and most kinde entertainment, as a Sonne so well brought



brought up as hee, might shew towards his Father and Mother: who having first greeted him, received and cherished Primaleon and Palmendos his Children, who did unto them all the reverence possible to be thought of: The like courtesie bled Arnedes towards them (whom they reputed as their Sonne,) and in like manner all the rest, both Kings and Princes who accompanied the Emperour: So that these interchangeable greetings and welcomes were so long a doing, that they could not reach Constantinople: but took by their rest for that night, in a most pleasant place foure miles distant from the Citty, where the Quene could not fill her eyes with beholding her sonne.

To be brieve, on the morrow they entred the Citty with the greatest ioy, that was euer heard of, the Emperesse, Quene Arimene, the three Infants, and many Ladies of high renowne, who kept them company, being at the first Gate of the Pallace to receive them more Honourable, who entertaining first the King and the Queene, after them came the three Infants to kisse their hands, and then all the other Princes one after another.

These welcomming Ceremonies of the Ladies accomplished, all this Royall companie mounted into the principall Hall of the Sarraglia, where the Emperour late done next to the King his Father, and the Emperesse (bringing her three Daughters with her) next the Quene, who could not satiate her selfe suruaying with an unspeakeable ioy, so Heroicall and Illustrious a crew: In so much that in this profound contemplation, shee could not countermaunde her spirit, but her eyes must shedde some teares for gladnesse, when she thus brake forth.

Lord God, now let mee leave this mortall world when it shall please thee, seeing thou wilt mee this Grace to represent before mine eyes, the things which I so extremely desired to see.

Scant had she finished these few words but the enchanted bird, who was within the auncient chamber of the Emperour,



sent forth two most lamentable screeches, and had not at their comming shewed any signe of ioyfulness, as shee was alwaies accustomed to doe at the arrivall of the Emperours favourites. So that the Emperour (who was very sorrowfull for this presage) gave great heed unto it, with many other Seigneurs who knew the nature of this animall, believing verily by her hoarse chattering, some sinister accident was presaged: But he dissimuled it as well as he might, without shewing any outward appearance, but said instantly to the Quene.

Madame, I beseech you most humbly, let vs not talke in this happy time of recreation, of any thing which may drive vs into melancholly, seeing you being yet farre from death, shall see your selfe long time served and reuerenced of all those who are assistant before you; and therefore doe not dismay your selfe by any thing which may bring you into a vaine and fantasticall opinion.

My sonne replied the Quene then; Death hath this by nature, that there is none living in this world, who can shew himselfe so strong against it, that he may avoide it, our predestination being such, wee cannot prolong or abide it one little minute, whereby ensueth, that for any thing I have now saide, I can neither deferre it, nor hasten it any thing the sooner.

When shee had spoken these words with a very good grace, shee embraced the infant Florida, who seemed unto her the fairest and gracions creature shee had ever scene in her life before, and kissing her sweet cheekes many times she saide.

Faire Daughter, I pray God, he suffer you to live so long as your beauty and sweetnes of feature deserueth, wherein I thinke well, neither maide nor wife can be found, to come once nere your Paragon: Most true was that which the Quene spake: for whosoener beheld this young Princesse, iudged her to be a Venus in beauty, and a Pallas in prudence: But this day they past in great ioy and solace throughout all the Court, and in the evening, Primaaleon besought the Emperour



perour againe, that hee would the next day following, giue him the order of Knighthood, and the same hee entreated him also to doe for Abenuncq and Arnalin Duke Tolomus sonne, which he accorded vnto very willingly.

Therefore on the morrow euery one cloathing himselfe pompeously in rich and sumptuous habits, except Primaleon and his two companions, who watched all that night their Armes within the Chappell, whether the Emperour coming with his father and the other Kings and Princes, there was a solemne Masse begun.

You must vnderstand since the first time that Abenuncq saw Amandria the King of Spartas daughter, hee was so attainted with her loue, that no other thought than of her dwelt within his breast: So that in meane time while the Masse was saying hee resolved to become a Christian, to shew more evidently vnto his Lady and Mistresse, the extreame desire which set him on, and especially to enter the Tourney as her onely Knight, wherein hee hoped to adde vnto his praise, that which he could make good there.

The Masse being ended, hee humbly besought the Emperour, hee might be partaker of the holy Sacrament of Baptisme, before he came to the order of Knighthood: For knowing how much the Law of Christ was more sublimite and in blessednes exceeding that of the Moyses, hee would no longer liue in Paganisme.

Which the Emperour and all the Assistants hearing, were passing glad of his renouncing of Infidelity: So that vncouering his head, the Patriarch of Constantinople did baptize him presently choosing for his Godfather the King Florendos, who commended him greatly for so vertuous an act.

For testimony whereof, he promised Strait to make him so great and puissant a Prince, that hee should haue cause to put in oblivion the estate and riches of his father. Whereof the new Christian returning him humble thanks, the Greekish Monarke turned himselfe towards Primaleon, saying: Son, request of my most honourable father, it would please him to



arme you Knight with his hand, for if I haue purchased some little honour in this world, I can assure you all proceeded from him, who inuested mee first with this honourable degree of Knighthood; which I hope will be augmented more in your person, if it please him to enrich you therewith. And you shall giue it vnto the young Arnalin, and I vnto Abenuncq your companion.

Primaleon hauing heard what the Emperour his Father said, went full ioyfully to kneele before the King his Grandfather, beseeching him he would put on his spurre and giue vnto him his sword of Armes: wherof hee crested himselfe, saying it were better to be done by his Sonnes hand: But the Emperour himselfe and all the other Princes, who were there prayed him so instantly, that in the end he was constrained to condescend therevnto: and giuing him as well his fatherly blessing as the militarie accolade, hee soon made him Knight: the Emperour armed Abenuncq Knight, and afterwards Primaleon himselfe dubbed Arnalin of the same order. The ceremonies were done with so great pompe, that it was none before they departed out of the Chappell: so that the dinner staying for them (after that the Yeoman of the Pantry had covered the Tables rounde) the Squires of the kitchen were not long before they serued in the first service: So comming from Church they went strait to dinner, where the Emperour sat downe with his father, the other Kings and great Lords being serued most honourably, and as such a magnificent Feast becomed so Royall a companie of Princes.

After the tables were taken vp, the Quene Griana and the Emperesse, whose provision was no lesse, came to them with all the rest of the Ladies, so richly attired, that the only aspect of them put some gladnes into the Knights hearts who beheld them; and amongst the rest filled some of their breasts with such amorous and pricking desires, which took so deepe root therein, that they could neuer afterwards be removed thence.

Then



Then beganne the dauncing and other reuelling, in midst whereof the enterlaced interchaungeable talke of many matters: Belcar tooke in the meane time Recinde by the hand, whom hee brought to sit dotene hard by Melissa with this language: Deare Sister I must esteeme great and maruelous the felicity which God hath within this little while sent you, to make you Ladie and Mistresse of one of the most valiant Knights, who liueth vnder the zodiacke, besides he is in all other things, a Prince so accomplished that there are few at this day found to be his like in valour and worldlie riches. He of whom I speake is the Prince Recinde, whom yee see no lesse affectioned towards you with an insire lone, than desirous to shew you the experience: by meane whereof I pray you of all fauour betwene you and me, you will reciprocally lone him, for that he deserveth it, & his vertues of themselves should inuite you thereunto, and I promise you to employ my selfe so well for you both, that with in few dayes your hearts shall finde some ease and content.

The Damosell who was wise and as curteous as might be, abashed a little at her brothers speech, presently made him this answer: You say true Brother, that the Signieur Recinde is vertuous, valiant, and a rich Prince, & I should esteeme my selfe to want manners and grace, not to obey you in that which it pleaseth you to command mee, seeing betwene you two so perfect amitie is confirmed: so that you and hee may be assured all my life I shall reuerence him in such sort, that you shall know with what sincerity thee speaketh, who will remaine perpetually seruant to you both.

Now may I quoth Recinde repute my selfe truly happye aboue all those, who thinke to haue attained the treasure of their felicity. seeing you so prompt Madame, to that which it pleaseth my Lord your Brother to preferre in my fauour, and if I reioyce in any good which God giueth me, it is only but for the hope I haue to make you the Ladie and Mistresse of me and of the kingdome of Spaine.

The Emperour who was a most sage and well aduised Prince,



Prince, casting his eye round about (especially suruaying the qualite of those, who were in any conference with the yong Prince) that it would be a very equall match betwene Recinde and Mehila: insomuch that in time he purposed to put it in effect. Likewise he spied Abenuncq sitting nere Amandria Daughter to the King of Sparta his Uncle whom he pretended also to giue vnto him in marriage, to the end to recompence him therewith, because he had forsaken his Mahomaticall law: and whilest the Emperour had this in his minde Abenuncq bowed her thus.

Onely Madresse of my seruitude, you might see this morning the victorie which loue hath gotten ouer me, making me renounce mine owne proper religion, to take new which is strange vnto me: During which Combat, the poore slave of Cupid so fortified himselfe with your linely and rare beauty, which he shooting off at his eyes hath so imprinted it within his soule, that no other thing were it neuer so highly esteemed can take that place from it.

Nevertheless, if to make sufficient proofe of this magnanimity, finding this precious treasure nere him, it would please you to let him enter into the Tourney as your Knight, (which is the most Soueraignty of his desires) you may well assure your selfe you neuer saw so much hardinesse in a young and new made knight as in him.

If for the loue of me, quoth Amandria then you haue renounced the Pagan law, I am greatly bounden to blesse God, and to thanke you for the good will you beare me, albeit I merit not the least parcell of any such honour, in recompence whereof I might be iudged ingratesfull and too discarteous, if I should refuse the honest request it pleased you to make me, being but newly knighted and issued out of so Royall a house as you doe: Wherefore I am content, and thinke my selfe happy, that in my name you will enter the Listes, wherein I hope you shall winne such honour among the rest, seeing you had so good knowledge and deuotion in your selfe to come to our faith.

Madame



Madame replied he, you onely haue bene the occasion, in that to insinuate my selfe vnto your fauour, I get the knowledge of the Soueraigne God.

For that regard shall I loue you the more quoth she smiling, and will esteeme you ener more than any Knight, which may offer himselfe to mine eyes : in signe whereof there is a ring which shall serue you for a fauour in the Tourney.

This ring replied he, which now I haue by your gift, shall giue me so much force and courage, that when I should haue a thousand lines, I would employ them all one after another, fasten it fast vpon my little finger : so that hauing it in my possession, I shall prize it farre more than the fatal ring of Gyges.

This was the parlie these two new louers had together that day, which made Abenuncq in so great ioy (hauing vnderstood thereby his Ladies will) as he past away merrily that night with the other Knights.

## CHAP. XII.

How the Prince *Arnedes* was espoused vnto *Philocrista*, and *Palmendos* vnto *Francheline*, and afterward lay all foure in fine beds, which the Knight of the *Close-Isle* sent the Emperour with eight Musicians to make them all kinde of harmonious melodie : And how the next day following they opened the great Triumph, wherein *Primaleon* bore away the prize.



Q the morrow which was the day when the Nuptials of *Arnedes* with *Philocrista*, and of *Palmendos* with *Francheline* should be solemnized, came euery one forth richly arrayed, to accompany them to the Church of Saint Mary the round : but before they came thither they staid an houre by the way, so full were the streets and windowes stuffed with Knights, who came thither to the Tourney.

At



At the last they came thither, and presently was there begun a high and solenne Masse by a Bishop, who giving his benediction to the new Spouses finished incontinent the Ceremony which the Greeks had accustomed to use in their Nuptials: then returning to the Hallace in the same order they came, it was past twelve before they came backe thither: by means whereof these new married Princes sitting down to table with the King their Uncle, the Emperour their Father, and the other Kings and Princes, and great Lords there beganne presently a Consort of Musitions to sound of all kinde of Instruments.

In briefe, they so feasted all that day that it were impossible to recount it: afterward bed-time being come, the Quene of Theffaly, and many other Ladies of Honour brought Philocrista to her Chamber, where they layd her in a rich & stately Bed: whose Curtaines and Canope were cloath of Gold, wrought with little figures of Birds, spred cleane ouer with a Couerture of fine crimson Veluet, diapred every wher with great orientall Pearles. The couch (beset round with Imagery of Pearle, in forme of Pomgranets, holding two great & bzane Medails of massie gold) had the foure principall pillars of the Mother of Emraude, wrought in fashion of balbes, border-propped by foure Dragons of greene Marble, planted vpon the bases of Calcidonie, and foot-stalls of Jasper: and vpon the top of the pillars stood foure Sphinges of fine Agate, comming so neere the naturall creatures, that you would haue said there had been nothing in them wanting but the speech.

The like did the Emperesse to Francheline, with many other Ladies in her Chamber, and in a Bed of no lesser stiffe and artifice than that of Philocrista, as comming both out of one mans shop, and from one and the same worke master that made them.

Afterwards did the Emperour and all the other Kings, conduct the Bridegroomes each of them into his Ladies chamber, where leaving them all a lone it was not long, but there hapned a new Metamorphosis to Philocrista, & Francheline,



for that of vertuous maidens they were within a small time translated into most faire and beautifull wiues: Whereof a good testimone to them that beheld it then, was the liuely vermillion blush, which after the sobaine mutation remaine a good while upon their cheeks: During which change of name and not of person, came foure young men from forth their Chamber doores, bringing a Nuptiall Ditty which the knight of the Close-Ile had composed, and sent into the Court at the same time, with the two beds wherein the new-married Princes lay.

I doubt not but some of you perfect Lovers, reading this passage, will wish with some private affection to see your selues nere your Paramours in like loyes as were the foure loyall Lovers, and it were but for the delight which your spirits might take, in remembering these things so rare and precious.

So then the Lord of the Close-Ile louing the Emperour with such entire amity as he did, would needes by skill of his Art make the feast of his Sonne and Daughter more excellent and magnificent, when he sent him the two beddes and a Consort of voyces: who seeing the boiuer fit for their purpose began to sing an Epithalme, thus:

**G**OD *Hymeneus*, chiefe of Nuptiall Rites,  
Yee *Bacchus*, *Cupid*, *Ceres*, *Hymens* powers  
Be present here, ha e hence with all your mights  
All mourning sorrow: Bring vs happy howers:  
And *Flora*, Summers-Queene for our delights,  
Bestrew this Royall Court with choice of flowers.

Your fauours shew to foure Knights Combatant,  
Who try their va ours in the closed field,  
But if the Victor doo his foe supplant,  
Or if the vanquishr be constrain'd to yeeld,

Vpon



Vpon the Conquerours head a Garland plant,  
And him that's toild from further perill sheeld.

Be ye conductors of these valiant Knights,  
That euery one may with his Mistresse fauour:  
Entring the Listes in Armes redoubted Wights,  
To shew their prowesse worthied to haue her,  
At the next Iusting, Tornements and fights,  
Proclaimed by the *Greekish* Emperour.

Permit no worthy favorite to dye,  
Who is a Iuster in this Courtly crue:  
Let none beholde that fatall tragedie,  
Lest all the Court doe his misfortune rue,  
For death alwaies doth part good companie,  
All myrth is dasht when sadnesse doth ensue.

In meane time let no dutie be surceast,  
By helpe of gentle *Cupid* God of Loue:  
To marry many a Nymph this solemne feast,  
Who in this Court doe shine as Starres aboue:  
With haughty Knights who thinke their fortune blest,  
For their sweet fakes aduentures strange to proue.

The Emperours Royall seruitour am I,  
In humble dutie ready to fulfill  
What it shall please his Sacred Maiestie;  
I may not disobay his Royall will:  
From the *Close-Ile* I sent this melodie,  
To honour him set by mine Art and skill.



This Consort of Musicians so harmoniously descanted vpon this Nuptiall of tie, that many yong Damosels, who ran vnto them, like Was to the beaue Time, would needs haue a Coppy thereof, as well because it was partly composed in their fauour as also because the musicke thereof seemed almost diuine, filling the eares of all the hearers with a maruailous content.

If this great courtesie of the Knight of the Close-Ile, was the Emperour passing glad; and for that kindnes and many other, he loued him all the daies of his life : insomuch that hee redoubled the feast vpon this occasion, and would not on the morrow permit the Turney to be opened, nor vntill the third day after : after which we will beginne to recount the glorious exploits, the maruailous and triumphant Iusts of our valiant and hardy Primaleon.

To come then to the beginning of his Martiall chivalries; he commanded his Fathers Ingenour to chuse out in the plaine field a plot wherein he should set vp a Tilt-yard inclosed with high barres and railles, in Longitude and Latitude answering to his Diameter, and in forme Quall, so that at least fise hundred Knights might Combat a-front.

The first day hee purposed to appeare therein himselfe, as the Emperour bid when discovering himselfe to his Father, he was elected to the Empire of Greece : to wit, that within the close fieldes should not enter more than foure hundred knights of choyce, halfe on the one side, and halfe on the other, putting the Imperials with the Strangers altogether pell mell. Where Abenunq, Arnalin, Peynedin and many other valiant Knights were on the one party, and on the other side Belcar, Recinde, with many other gallant Champions of the Kingdome of France, Sparta and Theffalie.

The Emperour and the other Kings hauing dyed, they went with the new Bridegroomes vpon the Scaffolds which were set vp for them in the plaine : & in like manner the Emperesse & the Quene with their two yong Brides vpon theirs, where



where every one placed himselfe as well as he could at their best ease, beheld Primaleon entirely at one of the gates of the Theater, accompanied with all those of his part, and Belcar and Recinde at the other; for there were two houses made, at every one whereof was a Pillar of stone, very rich and sumptuous; upon the top of the one stood the shape of Mars holding in his hand a Globe crowned with an imperiall Diademe; upon the other, that the image of Venus, having her diuine Quiver burning on the one side, and her sonne Cupid on the other, who leaned on her lap.

So did Primaleon giue order they should be made, to the end they might as well perceiue the ingenioulnes of his spirit, as his corporall dexterity. Whither would hee not beare his shield of the Roche-fendue; but his sword he had girded to his thigh, because it was superlative in bountie. Now after that the one and the other side had made a turne about the field, the Clarions, Drums, and Fifes began to sound the Assault: And then might you see this Cavalery hurry one against another with such fury, that it was monozous to behold and beare the encounter, both sides clashing together. Primaleon before he brake his first Lance, dismounted more than halfe a dozen knights, being all awfully wounded, or else in danger of death: When drawing his sword, he began to strike so thicke, that every one gaue him place, auoyding his presence as if it had bene Medusa the terrible Gorgon. By meanes whereof, the Emperour who could discern the good and perfect knights from the other, better than any of the standers by, seeing him so hardy & so spruce, iudged he would one day prove a very good and an accomplished knight, whereof he greatly reioyced, and prayed God to preserve and keepe him from mischance.

Aberuncq albeit he were a little younger than hee, nevertheless made his profession there very well knowne, and that he was the sonne of the good knight Olorick Seldan of Babylon and of Archidiana: Of like valour and hardines shewed himselfe Arnalin the third new created knight: But

Primaleon



Primaleon who bestowed him more than any of the rest, (laying on soe blowes, and so thicke, that it seemed thunder passed the place where he went) behaving himselfe so, that albeit Belcar and Recinde did marvelles in their persons, he done for all that by force of armes his adversaries out of the place of combat, for that one being first gotten forth, all the rest followed him as fast as they could, one at anothers heeles: insomuch that Belcar, Recinde, and some others of their peers, who held out stoutly against him, could not at the length endure the stress of their adversaries, because they would not fight with all extremitie against Primaleon; in the end they were so constrained to relize themselves, and annoyde the Barriers.

The Tourney then being vanquished by Primaleon, he was received by all the Barons of Greece with an incredible ioy, saying with a common voyce, he would be one day more valiant than the Emperour his father, who then returned into the Citie more ioyfull than ever he was before: and giving the honour of the Tourney to Abenuncq; hee said that he well shewed himselfe to descend of so rare and accomplished a Knight, as the Soldan his Father.

But the King Florendos many times embracing Primaleon, with the teares standing in his eyes, prayed the Almighty God that he would to so faire a beginning, give also a better end: Wherefore the young Prince kissed humbly his hand, thanking him for his so favourable a wish.

Afterwards the other knights being arrived at the Pallace, the Emperour honoured greatly Recinde and Belcar, saying, they of purpose suffered themselves to be vanquished, for that they had no lust to fight against the principall of their adversaries: which he spoke to no other end but to comfort them only in the discouragement they took at this misadventure: knowing nevertheless that none in the Troupe could equall themselves in hardinesse & dexterity to Primaleon his Sonne. And for that none of the principall died not, nor was not hurt in this first tourney, the feast was redoubled, which they held afterwards



afterwards the space of fiftene days together with open field for all commers : where in some dayes entred very great troupes of Knights, exployting strange and admirable deedes of Armes. In the which Primaleon being every day present, carried away from all other the honour and prize, as at the first : for albeit Palmendos and Arnedes the new Bridegromes entred twice into battaile with him, and did acts that every one was astonished at, they were forced for all that to geue him the upper hand.

Notwithstanding, let vs speake of a Knight who was slaine during the Triumph, whereupon it fell out that many envied him, afterwards accusing him of Treason, for that hee had assured all Knights who would come unto his Tournies, of safe conduct and returne throughout all the Countries of the Empire.

## CHAP. XIII.

How Perrequin of Duas the King of Polands Sonne, coming to the Tourney at Constantinople to kill Primaleon, and to reuenge Gridonia the Dutchesse of Ormedaes Daughter, was slaine himselfe by the hands of Primaleon.



**N**ardides Duke of Ormeda, being banquished and put to death by the Emperour Palmerin, the which Duke valiantly came to Constantinople to reuenge the two Colens of Tarisius his Brethren, whom the Emperour himselfe and King Frisoll slew with their owne hands, as writeth the Authour of his Historie ; his people returned with these sorrowfull tydings to his Mother and the young Dutchesse his Wife, who made such lamentable complaints and mone for him, that it was a pittifull thing to beholde the issue of so miserable a Tragedie. And to the end to make moze memorable her mourning and funerall ceremonies, she commanded to erect a faire and rich tombe within the Chappell of her Pallace,



Pallace, vpon the which for her last exclamation (after many other honourable Pompes required in such a case) she shed ouer it an infinite company of teares (as if the body so much deplored, had bene therein buried.) But what? Surely he was not there, and I beleue that if she might haue recovered it, she would neuer haue enclosed it vnder that flamine, but rather haue done as Archemesia Quene of Caria, who after the death of Mausolus her husband (for the more honourable interring of him) caused to be builded a magnificent & sumptuous monument, which was afterward called one of the seauen wonders of the world: and neuertheless seeing that edifice finished (which she called Mausolus, after her dead husbands name,) she then iudged it vnworthy to receaue the so pretious and rare treasure of her loue: Therefore she caused to burne the body to cinders, & the said cinders afterward to be aromatized, distilled, and dissolued into water, that she might be her selfe his Sepulchre: sipping by that distillation as the most exquisite potion which she could finde, for alwaies afterwards to conserue in her the integrity of her loue towards him.

Now this young Dutcheesse being euery day after her mourning ready to be brought to Bed, the anguishes and throues which happen to women in that case, came vpon her, at the report of this newes, so that shee was speedily deliuered of a very faire and beautifull Daughter: vnto whom (for that she was borne in a sorrowfull time, and in that Country they call, to lament, or to cry, Gridar) was giuen the name Gridonia.

The old Dutcheesse (who had no other heire but this onely piece) caused her to be carefully brought vp: and with so great diligence that she grew to the sight of the eye, so faire and perfect in all features and lineatures of her visage, that her mother seeing her such a quaint peece, sware she would neuer marrie her, but to him that should reuenge the death Nardides her defunct husband. And vpon this condition did she then presently set downe the marriage of Gridonia,



who comming to the age of fifteene yéeres, was required and demanded of many Princes in marriage. Peruerthelesse when they heard the law and sentence which was to ensue, none would be so hardy as to accept the match.

So radiant and admirable was her beauty, that through all the Countries and Marches round about the Dutchie of Ormedes, they talked of nothing else: By meanes whereof Perrequin of Duas, Sonne to the King of Poland, who was Brother to the Mother of the same Gridonia, hearing a report of so exquisite a beauty, had great desire to see her: Insomuch that he besought the King his Father to give him leave to goe visite the Dutchesse his Aunt, whereunto he easily accorded.

He then commanding to rigge and furnish a good ship with all that might be necessary for such a voyage, soon after took his way to Ormedes: where being with a favourable winde and faire weather arrived, the Dutchesse relapring much at his comming, entertained him very courteously, which Gridonia also knew full well how to doe. She was so courteous and gracious, that Perrequin seeing her so beautifull, comely, and well nurtured, found himselfe in a moment surprized & enamored, swearing on a sudden resolution to marry neuer any other wife but her: which caused him to breake thus with his Aunt:

How hee comming into those Countries to see and serue her in that wherein shee should please any way to employ him, hee felt at the first encounter his heart so praiely ransomed by Gridonia her Daughter, whom if hee were not thought worthy to haue to his wife, hee did thinke hee could not live long afterwards, and so concluding his preamble, besought her most humbly shee would condescend to make her Quéene of Polonia, and that he would procure a dispensation from the Pope. Ah deare Nephew (quoth the Dutchesse then) of this alliance should I be more glad than you, if she and I might in any wise consent thereunto: But hauing sworne long since, neuer to give her in marriage but to him, who should



Should reuenge the death of her defunct father, I may not expose you to so great hazard of your life, the Emperour Palmerin being so mighty and puissant a Prince, that I am halfe in despaire, you will neuer be able to compasse our request.

I will not therefore let, replied Perrequin, to employ my best forces, to the end to practise so iust and reasonable a vengeance: For as well I clearly see, I am but a dead man if I enjoy not my Cousen shortly to wife. If God would so much fauour you then (quoth the Duchesse) that you might bring your purpose to passe, assure your selfe not onely to haue in recompence Gridonia mine onely Daughter to your wife, but my selfe also for your humble and perpetuall servant, with the whole estates and riches that God hath giuen vnto vs both: wherein I shall esteeme my selfe the most happiest of all Key-dames, winning such a sonne in law, as I could not chuse a better if I should seeke one throughout all the inhabitants from the one to the other Pole: So that I beseech the Almighty that he will so direct your actions, that the end may be as prosperous and happy, as I was and desolate widows doe with it. The Knight thanked her courteously for this good affection; and if he were very glad on the one side, he found himselfe farre more pensive, counting with himselfe what was to be done, to conduct so tigglesome an enterprize to an issue: The which being vnderstood by Gridonia, she reioyced as the Louer who could haue bene willing to haue remitted the condition of this vengeance, to the end to hasten sooner the consummation of her marriage; neuerthelesse, she would not gainsay or strine against that which her Mother and Grandmother had resolved therein.

As Perrequin was in profound consideration how to lay this Ambush, being able to deuise no meane, which might seeme easie enough to effect it with safegarde of his soule and body, hee had newes by certaine Merchants who came from Constantinople, of the Fauste which Primaleon had published throughout the Empire: whereupon he conceiued exceeding gladnes, hoping to goe thither quicklie, and vnder pretence of



Yousting, in that ioyfull spectacle, to kill Primaleon by treacherie.

So declaring to the Duchesse and Gridonia amply his desire (after he vnderstood they would be very well satisfied with Primaleons death, as being the thing which would much trouble and disturbe the Emperours Court) purposed to depart speedily, accompanied with fiftene Knights of choise, whom he gave to vnderstand all the points of his conspiracy: But when he came to take his leaue of the Duchesse and her Daughter, they could not preuaile so much over their weak & feminine nature, but must plainly shew by apparant tokens the sorrow & discontent which this departure did cause their spirits, especially Gridonia, who for all the demonstration of her anguish, prayde the Soueraigne aboue to safegard & preserve him from mortall danger, for that the Emperour and his people were in all their affaires most fortunate. Perrequin comforted her as well as he could, and seeing the teares distilling from her faire eyes, deemed himselfe beloued of her vnsaignedly, which increased so much the more his force and courage: then embarking himselfe, and setting saile, hee arriued ere long after in the Realme of Constantinople, where hee commanded to strike saile to goe a Shore, and Camped himselfe in the Plaine as did the other Knights.

It was the first day of Primaleons Yousts, when the Polonian vnderstood by all men that he did maruellous acts of Chivalry, behauing himselfe like a Hector in middelt of the field: which was a cooling to him, fearing least he should not easily haue his will of him. Yet he encouraged himselfe, and prayed his fiftene confederates to bend their eyes and heart onely vpon Primaleon, caring not a rush for the rest, and that he would doe the like to set him quickly packing out of this world, in such sort that this night he would not go to the Pallace for feare lest the inchaunted Birde should reueale by some token the plot of his treason: the nature of that creature being well knowne thzough out all the Countries and Frontiers of the Empire.

On



On the morrow, arming himselfe with a rich and costly  
Harnesse, hee entred with fiftene Knights within the field,  
being shewed unto Primaleon by the deuise of his Armes,  
whom he knew otherwise before hee had bene long within  
the Barriers by his great Provelse: For so soone as the Cla-  
rions and Trumpets had sounded the Alarme, hee began to  
doe strange and marueilous deeds of Armes.

Which the two Knights of Parrequin seeing, they crept  
nere him before hee was aware, and had hee not had his cu-  
ret of proofe well tempered with the finest Steele, they had  
wounded him sore.

Nevertheless, hee who felt himselfe thus outraged, as a  
Lion assailed with two blood-hounds, turned towards them  
full of furious chollar, and reaching either of them a downe-  
right knocke vpon the Helmet, sent them soone to the ground.

Then began Primaleon to sell a fight, skirmishing on the  
right hand and on the left, that Perrequin could no longer suf-  
fer this brane, but taking a Lance, without euer speaking  
word, ran with all his force at his backe behinde, so that hee  
made him lose his Stirrops, and piercing his Armour, scratch  
his flesh a little.

You neede not demaund whether Primaleon found himself  
more ashamed of this encounter, than sorry not to know who  
might be the Knight who set vpon him in this cowardly sort:  
So that turning bridle he after him braguely beating, him lusti-  
ly. In the meane while Perrequin stood not still but did the like  
to him, as he who desired nothing els but to make him quickly  
lose his life. Recinde who perceiued this sharpe and cruell  
battell, stepping betwene them parted them for that time:  
and on the morrow also when they renewed the like: Whereat  
Perrequin grew wrath, that he might not haue his will, albeit  
he feared much the sturdy and heauy blowes of his aduersary.  
Then began Primaleon to take it in dudgeon finding him al-  
waies before him offering such fashion of Combat, feeling ra-  
ther a mortal & bloody fight, than an exercise of ioy & pastime,  
whereof he swore to be reuenged of him, if hee encountred



him any more in the Tourney : which fell out even so : for that vpon the morrow seeing him with his Launce in his rest to come amaine vpon him, snatcht another out of his Squires hands quickly, saying, alowd in great indignation. Discourteous knight, I know not who you are, who filled with such a fury and malice against mee will not suffer me to be one minute of an houre at quiet. Neuerthelesse I will see now whether I can vncase this fellow, who thinks to dispatch him, who neuer (as farre as hee knoweth) offended him in his life.

Finishing these speeches, hee went to charge him with his sword, which he thrust so right into the middell of his breast, that it ranne more then a fote and a halfe crosse through his shoulders, and at that instant sent him as dead as a Dogge to the ground, prosecuting his talke thus.

Now shalt thou leane mee mauer thy mallice, who hast dogde mee so these three dayes, that I could neuer keepe thee from behinde or befoze mee: Then in great hardines hurrying into the thickest of the presse, he charged them so couragiously of all sides, that ere long he forced all his aduersaries to turne their backs.

To make a short abridgement, hee got alwaies the honour of the victory, as long as the Tourney lasted, whereof the Emperour and all the Nobles of Greece were passing ioyfull of his generosity, valour and Chivalrie. But let vs now befoze wee conclude this first part of our History, see what good lucke befell the Spanish Prince, who hath lately left the Ioules, to Court his faire Lady Melissa.



## CHAP. XI.

How *Recinde* hauing espoused *Melissa*, returned into *Spaine*, *Arnedes* into *France* with *Philocrista*, and all the other Kings and Princes into their Kingdomes, except King *Florendos* and Queene *Griana*, who died in *Constantinople*, to the great sorrow and mourning of the Emperour and all his Court.

**W**ho might euer be able to recount the great magnificence and meruailous things which were done during the feast of *Philocrista* and *Francheline*? Surely the sumptuosity thereof seemed so pompous, and the seates of Armes so admirable, that to describe them well, they surpass the eloquent tongues of *Demosthenes* or *Cicero*: For there was present so great a number of brave and valiant knights, that you would haue iudged the whole assemble, to haue bene the choise and flower of all the men at Armes in the whole world.

But above all *Recinde* made his valour well knowne there, for the earnest desire which prouoked him to do his best endeavour in some thing which might the more commend him to his deare and best-beloued *Melissa*: Therefore the Emperour, who esteemed him highly, told the King of *Hungarie*, that he should get a good *Donne* in law, if he purposed to giue him his Daughter in marriage. King *Frisoll* answered, hee would be very willing of this alliance, and causing his Son *Belcar*, *Recindes* great friend, to be sent for, demaunded him his aduise, and what coniecture he had concerning his will in this matter: Whereupon making answer, that it was the most affectionate point of the *Castilians* honour: he began thus to set this busines abroach.

Lord *Recinde* your valour and chivalrie sheweth it selfe so Heroicall among this Illustrious Troupe, that I see you



as much as my Sonne Primaleon: so that to acquite my selfe in part of satisfaction of the good turnes I owe you, having done mee this great Honour, to come and visite me in my house, I am content to giue you for wife Melissa my niece, Daughter to so Honourable a King, as is my Brother of Hungarie: As for the perfections of the Infant, seeing you know and see them every day your selfe, I will not labour to dilate further upon her praise, seeming to mee that the amitie betwene you and my Sonne Belcar should be farre more insepable when the accomplishment of this alliance should be consummate.

The Knight most attentively giuing eare to the Emperours talke, bowed himselfe with a lowly reverence to kisse his hand, and likewise King Frisols, accepting him for his father, and reputing himselfe for the happiest Spanish Knight that ever set saile toward the Fennes of Meotis, for that he alone had compassed such a marriage: the which was solemnized the morrow after with so much pompe and a new supply of Tourneying & Tilting, that Primaleon had leasure inough to shew his singular prowesse & valour: nor hapned there any thing during all these Triumphes, which disquieted the Emperour in minde but the death of Perrequin, knowing that he was not the least of his faction, for otherwise he would not haue cared so much for it.

When all the feasts were finished, the Emperour gave many presents to many Knights, sending them home most ioyfull men into their owne houses and countries. And in the meane while he shewed good cheare, & countenance, Arnedes solicited by his Ambassadors, demanded leave to returne in, to France with his wife Philocrista, and so likewise did Recinde with his.

The Greekish Dominatoz denied them not their suites, but bestowed great riches upon his Daughter, to the end he should goe most honourable into Fraunce, and in like manner to Melissahis niece. Then he commanded to rigge out a flect of ships well furnished with all things necessary for  
such



such a voyage. The King Florendos gave moreover manie rich and pretious Jewels to his neeces : the King of Hungarie not forgetting to doe the like to his Daughter, with whom hee sent a certaine number of his Knights, to accompany and sauegard her home. And if the Emperesse became very sad at the departure of her two Daughters, no lesse was the griefe of the two Princesse: But for that they went away gallantly married to their content, they easily forgot all sorowes past. Euery one then taking their leaues, they betooke themselves to the salt water, and so well were they fauoured by Zoylus & Neptune, that with a prosperous gale and a calme Sea, they soone arrived in the Coasts of Prouence : where Recinde bidding adew his cosens Arnedes & Philocrista, followed the rest of his voyage with Melissa. And commaunding to singe towards the Straite of Gibraltar (which lieth betwene the two mountaines, Calpe and Abylas, at this day called the pillars of Hercules, because the one of them in Spaine and the other in Barbarie, were long since by him seperated, to navigate from the Ocean Sea into the Mediterranean) came to land in the citie of Ciuill, where he was most honourably receiued: From thence he tooke his iourney towards his Citie Toledo, where the King his Father sojournd, who was passing glad of his arrivall : most of all when hee heard the reputation hee had gotten in feates of Armes : Insomuch that going from his Pallace to entertaine them lovingly he could no forbear weeping, seeing him in so good disposition: and Melissa his Wife so sage, beautifull and vertuous: So at the first, he Fatherly embraced them both, and after that hee had welcomed them with a thousand welcomes, hee led them both into his lodging, purposing quickly to solemnize the Marriage in his Court : which he did, and afterwards liberally bestowed many presents vpon the Greekes and Hungarians which came to accompany Melissa, who retained all berie well pleased from him towards King Frisoll their Soueraigne. But the Princesse Philocrista was receiued with no lesse sumptuosity by the King of Fraunce and all other  
Dukes



Dukes, Marqueses, Earles and Barrons of that Kingdome, where they helde many Tournes for her new and ioyfull entrance: wherein purchased great honour Arnaldus Duke Tolomus Sonne, and Peynedin, hee who rescued so branely the French Prince, when Ledsin slew the Hermite in combatting him, as you may yet be-  
 rie well remember: Yet did hee nothing in comparison of Tyrendos, who would needes goe along with this new married couple, to conduct them into Gaule: For that falling there in loue with a very faire and beautifull Princesse nere Cousin to Prince Arnedes, and shee likewise being inamo-  
 red of him, did meruailous things in Armes to get her further fauour: Insomuch that the King, and the Prince his Sonne perceiuing their Loues, married them together, some after: and gaue them so great Treasure for a dowrie, that the feast being ended, they returned all to Constanti-  
 nople, feeling the liberalitie and bountie of the King of Fraunce.

But to returne to the order of our Historie, the Emperour remayned almost alone by reason of the departure of the new married Princes, and of so many other Knights which did accompany them: Likewise the King of Thessalie took his leave of him, to the end to goe visite a little his Kingdome, where Palmendos and Francheline, were most Honourably recei-  
 ued with great signes of ioy and gladnesse. And the King liued thre yeares there onelie after his returne: After whose death immediately was the Knight Palmendos Crowned: who by meanes of his valour and prowesse, enlarged great-  
 ly the confines and demaynes of his Kingdome: waging con-  
 tinuall war against the Turkes, hauing conquest in many battailes, skirmishes and assaults of Citties.

Like hostilitie receiued that nation by Belcar, who inconti-  
 nent after the Tournay and all their Feasts were finished in Constantinople, departed thence to returne to Durace: where as soone as hee had solemnely celebrated his royall  
 Nuptials, hee set forth on foote an innumerable and brate  
 host



Wost to goe against these Infidels, and to reuenge himselfe  
for faire Laurena.

In like manner every one of the other great Princes which  
came to Constantinople tooke their way homeward towards  
their Countries : Especially King Frisoll and the King of  
Sparta ; and very willingly would the King Florendos haue  
returned into Macedon, had it not bene for the Emperour,  
who besought him heartily to tarry a little longer with him :  
Nevertheless, many dayes were not come and gone, before  
the good old Prince found himselfe cast downe with a grievous  
sickness, wherewith by reason hee was already drooping and  
decrepit, he died within one moneth afterward. The Queene  
Griana seeing him abandoned by the Physicians, and out of all  
hope euer to recover againe, fell also sicke with the sorrow and  
griefe shee tooke for him, and a maruallous thing it was, that  
these two both rendring their tribute vnto nature, left on one  
day this mortall and transitory life.

The Emperour and the Emperesse conceiued such inward  
griefe and anguish at this occurrence, that through the conti-  
nuall teares wherewith they bewailed them, or through the  
abundance of melancholy humors which stult their braines,  
they made account to goe keepe them company in the other  
world : Yet for all that, afterward recomforting themselves  
as well as they might, they caused them to be both buried in  
a rich and most stately Tombe, with great funerall Pompe &  
Ceremonies. And though this Court had a long time before  
continued in solace and gladnes, yet was it now as farre in  
mourning and griefe, after this death, without any token of  
loy or mirth at all. So that Primaleon all this time of mour-  
ning and heauie cheare, gaue himselfe to nothing but hun-  
ting and hauking, retaining many brave Knights with him,  
who alwaies kept him company which way soeuer he went.

How



## CHAP. XV.

How after that the Dutchesse of *Ormeda* had knowledge of *Perrequins* death, her Daughter *Gridonia* made an oath neuer to marry with any man, if first he did not reuenge her vpon *Primaleon* of *Greece*: and for what occasion the Castell of the *Roc-fendu* was builded, whereinto the old Dutchesse with *Gridonia* retiring themselves, how as they rested themselves hard by a faire Fountaine, there issued out of a Forrest a Lyon, which put all their traine to flight, and the Princesses in great feare.



**P**errequin being slaine, the greatest part of the knights who beheld him in this lamentable taking, being alwaies at his side, alighted straight, complaining greatly for his so great disaster: but knowing his life irrevocable, blamed him without any feare, who had separated it from his body, the which they took vp and conuayed out of the field. And after long lamentation and shedding of many teares ouer it, they did most honourably bury it in an Abbey that stood in the suburbs of the Citie.

Some after, without any longourneying there, they embarked themselves againe, and set saile to the first Port of *Ormeda*, not daring to returne into *Poland*; so that the Dutchesse and her Daughter had sone the newes of this mishap: At the comming whereof, it were impossible to recount the sorrow and wailing that they made; but especially *Gridonia*, who loued *Perrequin* with a most perfect love: By meanes whereof she bowed and sware an oath in presence of many, neuer to accept of any other man for her husband, but him onely who should giue her for an earnest of her marriage *Primaleons* head: And if shee and her mother made great mourning for the death of *Perrequin* their kinsman; it was nothing in respect of that of the King his father, and of all the Kings.



Kingdome of Poland, hauing knowledge of this mischance.

It fortuned that many Princes afterward sending to the Dutchesse to demaund Gridonia in marriage, when they vnderstode the conditions, they doubted greatly whether they might euer be able to accomplish it or no: At best some forced not for all that to prosecute their demaund, menacing the Mother, that if she would not giue them her Daughter with a good will, they would ere long take her away by force: And the principall who vsed these threatnings was the Prince of Clarence, a most proude and arrogant knight. Insomuch that the good Lady fearing lest for this shee would come to make warre vpon her, sent both her Daughter and the olde Dutchesse her Mother vnto one of her Castels called the Rocfendu, which the great Grandfather of Gridonia had caused to be builded in forme of a Fortresse, for this occasion.

This ancient Duke had an elder sister, who fell in loue with a yong man, sonne to the Steward of his house, a youth very beautifull and wise, and so excessive was the passion of her loue, that she was constrained to discouer vnto him the affection of her heart. The yong Gentleman who shewed not himselfe slow to chace in this amorous Parke, vanquished with the beauty and prouocation of his Lady, loued her so extreamely, that to come to the point, she felt her belly to swell by this deede; wherein she vsed such cunning to couer the matter (after the example of the poore deceived Nymph Calisto, for feare she had of the Goddesse Diana) that when her prefixed time was expired, she was deliuered of a most faire daughter, none liuing being priuy thereof, except one waiting Gentlewoman, to whom she did impart the secret, by whom this Princesse sent away this Babe to the yong Gentleman who was father thereof, who receiuing it as soon as it was brought, straight wates went with it vnto the top of a little mountaine not far from the Citie of Ormeds, where full soze against his will he was constrained to commit it to the hands of Fortune, to auoyde the scandall and dishonour which might haue come thereby.

And



And so the end this little Baby should not be found out of any person, hee laid it downe a good way within a thicket of bushes and brambles, neare unto a cleare fountaine, whose water distilled from a high rocke which ever shadowed it: But the true director of all things would not permit this innocent and new borne Creature, dying without Baptisme should beare the sinnes of her Parents, but ordained for it a sweet meanes of comfort, as presently you shall heare.

At the toppe of the hill there dwelt an old Hermit, leading a holy life in a little Cell which hee had built as well as hee might best for his purpose betwene two open rockes, separated onely by one Cleft, through the which day might easily be seene to appeare on both sides, wherein it seemed nature had done her endeavour to cleane them expressly with her owne hand.

This holy man descending from his Cell (as his custome was) to draw water at the Fountaine, heard the crying and moane of one whom he thought surely not to be borne long time before, and approaching the place where she was layd, moved with pity, took her in his Armes to carry her with him into his Hermitage, praying God of his goodnes to preserve it from death: Afterward baptizing it, and giving it to name Poncia, hee nourished it with the milke of a Hindc, which came every day into his Cane, having by good fortune not long before that time sated there the place.

So the good olde Father brought her up carefully, and she growing daily more and more became very beautifull and gracious in the appearance of her person: In such manner that the venerable Hermite instructed her very well, teaching her above all things how she should serve and honour God. Thus when she came to thirtene or fouretene yeares of age, then the religious old man departing this mortal life, passed into life everlasting, and left behinde him this comfortlesse young Hermitesse in the austere desert: Nevertheless this unfortunate little soule being sage and well brought up, commended her selve devoutly unto God, that it would please him



him to take her into his protection, which did not faile her of his pittifull aide and succour, neuer refused to any which craue it at his hands: for that the Duke her vnkle delighting much in hunting, vpon a day made a meeting at the fote of this mountaine: where it fortuned by chance that all the hunters dispearsing themselves in the woods to discover some game, a Hart, by the opening of some dogges being put vp, made way before the Duke (who at that time was accompanied but with one onely Squire) after which he galloped his horse, thinking to giue her a turne by the swiftnesse of his horse gallop. Notwithstanding the fearefull fauene seeing it selfe pursued so nere, neuer stayed till it was at the Fountaine, where the Hermite was wont to fetch water: and there breathing a little, whipt presently into the hole wherein Poncia was: for it was one of the Fawns of the Hinde which had suckled her, and so much as it knew her well, and suffered her to handle it gently, it did quickly also leape into her lappe with his two fore-feet.

The Duke who pursued it to the very mouth of the cave, alighted some from his horse, and entred the cave with his naked sword in hand, wherewith Poncia was sore afraide, and dismayed at so strange a sight, because that since she had any knowledge or remembrance, she as yet had neuer scene any other person in this world but the good Hermite now dead, ha- uing neuer in her life gone further abroad, than to the Fountaine which was at the Forrest side. If the maiden were abashed, the Duke was no lesse in a great maruaile, when putting by his sword into his scabberd he thus spake to her.

For thy loue my Darling will I spare to kill this Hart, which I haue taken so great paine to chase hither: But tell me of curtisse, who brought you hither into this desert? But for that she made him no answer, he approaching somewhat nere, and taking her by her Lilly-white hands, he held and handled them gently, knowing well by their fashion, that the Virgin was come of some high and noble blood, by meanes whereof; finding her a little strange by reason of the feare  
 which



which might haue sealed her heart, he beganne to shew her all curtesies he could then deuise: so that after a little the young Hermite she emboldened her selfe to answer him in this sort:

Faire Lord, I cannot tell what hath moued you to come into this place, to affright, and to put almost out of her wits a pious creature dedicated to the seruice of God, seeing that you seeme to me a man of a farre diuers and strange manner than was my Father who lieth a sleepe behinde this Altar, & is the onely person of this world, that I euer saw in my life untill this present houre.

I cannot tell who begat thee quoth the Duke, well I can assure thee that thy beauty hath so ravished my heart, that I account it a most happie houre wherein I haue pursued thy little Fatone hither: and know that I am Lord of all this Countrie, who desire to doe thee some great good, if thou canst resolue to credit me in the thing which I shall tell thee. Seeing it hath pleased God replied Pancia to guide me into this Hermitage, I beseech you permit not that any wrong bee offered to mine honour: Feare not daunger said the Duke, but you shall be greatly loued and tended of me.

The God of heauen graunt it quoth the young Maide, that it may be according to the decre of his diuine pleasure: The grace this Mayden had in her honest talke, pearced so deepe into the heart of the Duke, that what by promise, by flattery, or otherwise, before an houre was past, & hee appeased the Arise of his passion, making her of a mayden dedicated to Pallas, a wise ready to offer the Selson or Girdle to Venus, to present him her seruice, whereof he was the gladdest man that might be: Neuerthelesse well betinking with himselfe afterwards what was best for him to do, (for that he was already married) purposed to build in the same place a strong and indissoluble Castell, there to keepe her within it, with all the pleasure and contentment that her heart might desire, For this cause hee sent word by his Squire to the Hunters, who chased in the wood, that they should euery may returne into the Cillie:



**Cittie :** And hauing shewed to him the Hermits Daugh-  
ter, and afterwards letting him to vnderstand his determi-  
nation, commanded him to cause his Mason to come  
thither, with a number of workemen to build a Fortresse in  
that same place : Whereunto his Squire gaue present or-  
der, and returned with many rich robes for the young Dam-  
sell into the Cell, wherein none euer entred but himselfe  
alone, all the rest remayning vnder Tents which hee had  
pitched before that same place. From which the Duke  
would seldom depart, until he saw the Castell finished, which  
hee had caused to be builded vpon that clouen Rock, where-  
of it bore the name continually afterwards, and was one of  
the strongest and sayrest in all that Countrie, for the Sea in-  
vironed it on the one side, and on the other side was a most  
steep and inaccessible Rocke, except onely on that side where  
the fountaine was.

Wherein did the Duke enclose his Loue Poncia, the  
which when her time was come, she brought him forth a ver-  
ry faire and goodlie Sonne, who was afterwards Grandfa-  
ther of Nardides, Father of Gridonia, & of the two Knights  
whom the Emperour and King Frisoll slew in a Combat  
which they had together : But these Loue trickes could not  
so well be concealed, but the Dutchesse had intelligence there-  
of : who seeing her selfe so much contemned by her Husband,  
died for griefe and rage : Whereupon it fell out that for  
the intire loue which the Duke bare to the Childe which hee  
had by Poncia, hee espoused her afterward in second Marri-  
age, living together in great pleasure and ioy, until the la-  
tie end of his dayes, when he knew that shee was his owne  
Peere.

Now to this Castell retired Gridonia with the olde Dut-  
chesse, for feare she had of the Prince of Clarence, and arri-  
uing at the Fountaine (for that it was both a pleasant and a  
delightfull place) she would haue saies gone downe to it to re-  
fresh her selfe : But she was not so soone let downe vpon the  
brinke of it, but the remembrance of her dead friend Perrequin  
comming



comming in her thoughts, renewed in her pittifull and lamentable bewailing of his death, for that fortune favoured so much the Emperour Palmerin, who slew first the Duke Nardides her Father, and Primaleon afterwards this her Cosen, with whom she hoped to passe ioyfully the rest of her life: Meane while she made these strange complaints (which might prouoke almost the unreasonable and insensible creatures to compassion) behold there rushed out of the wood a huge and furious Lyon, roaring so terribly that all the company of gentlewomen being wonderfull scared, every one got away as well as they could: leaving with her only the good old Dutches who was not able to runne away as the others did. Wee need not make question, how great might be the feare of a simple and timorous Damsell, as of Gridonia, who supposed vndoubtedly that to be the last houre of her life. Yet perceauing this Lyon to come right vpon her, shee some perceaued the contrarie, for that hee began to saune vpon her with his pawes, and to play with his taile, as though hee had bene familiarly brought vp with her all his life, in such sort that hee put his head into her lappe, and beginning gently to licke her hands, made her as much amazed, as if shee had seene befoze her eyes some new and strange wonder: Wherefoze by little and little assuring her selfe of the tamenesse of this brut beast, shee stroked her hand vpon his head, flattering him in most gentle and louing manner: wherein the Lyon seemed to haue so great pleasure, that Gridonia and her Grandmo, ther putting away all feare, called to them againe their company, which was dispersed in the Forrest: And though some of them came backe greatly ashamed to haue thus abandoned the two Ladies in their greatest necessitie, yet she was moze ioyfull to see this beast so louing and tame, meruayling much that a Lyon by nature cruell and sauge, should be made so milde and gentle befoze Ladies, to whom no, to any of their Damsels and waiting gentlewomen he neuer shewed himselfe furious no, angry: but vnto all Knights who did approach vnto the Infant, & vnto others whom he knew not, he did alwaies  
 some



some displeasure, either hee scratcht them with his pawes, or kild them outright. Glad then without all comparison was Gridonia of this good fortune, and lead this Lion with her into her Castle, where hee would neuer forsake the sight of her: In such sort that shee still led him with her owne hand, and from thence forthward hee was a sure gardian of her person, being very tame, quiet and familiar with all the servants of her house, euen as it had bene some little Dogge, which seemed a most rare and strange thing to all thole in the Countries round about which had knowledge thereof.

## CHAP. XVI.

How *Valido* the King of *Bohemiaes* sonne, hearing the renowne of *Gridoniaes* beauty, came to see her in the Castell of the *Clouen-Rocke*, and how hoping to haue her in marriage, hee went to Combat with *Primaleon* in *Constantinople*, where he was by his hands slaine out-right.



After Gridonia then being within her Castell of the *Clouen-Rocke*, the Dutchesse her Mother who remained at *Ormeda*, for the gouernement and administration of Justice in her Countries, had diuers times messengers sent from diuers Princes which did demaund her in marriage; as well for her superexcellant beauty and good grace, as for that they hoped she should one day inherite the Kingdome of *Polonia*, because of her mother the Kings sister, who neuer had any Children but *Perrequin*, whom *Primaleon* slew in his Tourney: yet when they vnderstood with what condition they should marry this Princesse, many did sarcease to make any moze earnest suite, fearing the perill of death which might ensue.

But the King of *Bohemia*, the same who tooke *Diarres* and *Cardonia*, whom the Emperour deliuered afterwards (as you may haue read in this History) had two male children, the



youngest whereof, named Valido, who was a valiant and hardy Knight, hearing the renown spread abroad of the great beauty of Gridonia, departed his fathers kingdom, accompanied with many brave Knights, to take his voiage towards Ormeda: Where being arrived, he was honourably received by the Dutchesse, unto whom, after hee had a little refreshed himselfe and his traine, he thus imparted at large his minde.

Madame, to the end you should not be ignorant of the chiefest cause of my coming into this Country, know ye that I being prouoked with an incredible desire to do you service, am departed the Kingdom of Bohemia (the proper place of my natiuitie) where the King my father happily swayeth the Scepter at this present day, vpon this confidence, that you knowing the sincere affection which I haue to obey you in all things, will not refuse to accept me freely for your salue in Law: And albeit, that I do not repute my selfe at this present very rich in earthly riches, hauing as yet my father liuing, yet may I well vaunt to be in heart and good will to serue and defend you from your enemies, a man more forward than any other Prince of Europe: For this occasion I pray you graunt me in marriage your Daughter Gridonia, whom I shall be able to uphold in her honours better than any other Knight that at this day liueth.

Faire Knight, replied then the Dutchesse, to giue you my Daughter to wife could I well be content, if by any meanes it might be, knowing very well the illustrious blood from whence you descend: Notwithstanding she hath sworn neuer to marry with any but with him, who for the Jewels of her marriage, shall first present her with the head of Primaleon of Greece, sonne to Constantino the Politane Emperour.

This is no small demand quoth the Knight againe, albeit when I should haue some toll and reasonable occasion, I would embolden my selfe so farre, as to dare to goe to deafe him at his owne home to effect the same. I will tell you  
occa-



occasion good ynough, said the Lady then; you should know that in a Tourney which he caused to be published at the Request of his sister Philocrista, he gave safe conduct to all comers, when for all that he slew feloniously (as if it had bene in a mortall Combate fought at all defiance) Perrequin of Duas, sonne to the King of Polland my Brother, who entred the Lists onely to the end to assaye himselfe against him: So that by good reason you may vpon this death accuse him of felony and disloyalty.

Madame answered hee, that is not sufficient to vrge this euill act vpon him: because the Knight who entred into a Tourney is as the man that playeth at Dice, who before he sit himselfe downe to play, must make account that hee may sometimes lose and sometimes winne: Euen so the true Knight should appeare within the Lists in hazard to leaue his life there behinde him, as soone as to bring it away with him againe.

Notwithstanding, seeing that I haue no better occasion, I will combat him, alleadging that hee slew him in anger and mallice which prouoked him therunto: Whereupon I doe assure my selfe that hee trusting in Prowesse and reputation, will answer me arrogantly, and prouoke mee with some inuious words which will giue mee more apparant reason to combat him.

And to the end that you shall know I speake nothing with my mouth which my heart forethinketh not; I promise to depart incontinently hence, and to take my voyage to Constantinople, where if I dye in the battell, it shall be for me a perpetuall honour and praise, to dye for so perfect a Lady as Gridonia is: and if I chauce to vanquish mine enemy, I shall purchase the most exquisite and rare treasure that Nature might present me on this earth. True it is Madame, that I would greatly desire that it would please you of curtesie to let me see the Princesse your Daughter before my departure, for that hauing once impzinted her liuely beauty within my heart, shee shall double augment my force and courage.



That will I not refuse you said the Dutchesse, but I accord unto you with all my heart, yet not without aduertising you before hand, that you shal put your selfe in great perill of your life, by reason of a Lyon which guardeth her continually, the which ware so fierce and cruell so soone as he perceiuet any Knights come neare my Daughter.

For all that will not I let to goe see answered then Valido, hoping I shall well enough defend my selfe if the beast come to assaile me. Having then taken this resolution, the Dutchesse sent with him, one of the Gentlemen of her house, with expresse commandement not to suffer any other to enter with in the Castell but this Knight onely: where when he came afterwards, and that Gridonia knew that it was the King of Bohemiaes Sonne, who would goe to combat Primalcon for her Loue, she commanded to bring him vp into her chamber. Which the Prince vnderstanding, he tooke bravelly his buckler in one hand, & his naked sword in the other, then entered he without any feare like a hardie and valiant Champion: But the Lyon seeing him approach in this equipage, began to grum and snarle, lifting vp his head furiously out of the Damoisels lappe, where he was wont for the most part to repose it. Nevertheless she held him back by great force, by a lease made of gold-twist which held by a rich collar buckled to his necke: & for that Gridonia was not strong enough to stay him, Valido came full vpon him with his brandished sword to strike him, but shee cried vnto him that he should not doe it except hee would die, and that he should depart onely out of the Chamber, and they would finde meanes to speake together.

The Bohemian did doe so much willingly, and much as he had the Infant to keepe her Lyon from running after him, yet by stroaking and making much of him, she shut him vp within a great Chamber, wherein seeing himselfe thus imprisoned, he began to roare in so strange manner, that hee made all those who heard him soe afraid: Whereat Gridonia was so vexed, that going out of her Chamber to speake with the Knight, shee spake but thus much.



Fayre Knight, my mishap and disaster will not permit me at this present to haue any long talke with you: therefore I beseech the Almighty so to strengthen your arme against Primaleon, that you may make him pay dearly for his treason, wherein I remaining satisfied, shall repute my selfe a most Fortunate woman to be reuenged by meanes of the best knight, who euer put foote in Aitrop.

So much astonished and ravisht with her great beaultie was Valido, that hardly could he answere one bare word, but fearing to be accounted lumpish and of small discretion, hee hazarded to break silence in this manner: Madams soe should the heauens punish mee, and Fortune should shew it selfe too malicious against mee, if seeing so rare and perfect a Paragon as is your personage, I should not employ my body and strength to their bittermosts, to reuenge you of the wrongs which are offered you: for that hee should be very blinde and deuolde of natural reason who hauing once seene your selfe, he should not iudge you unworthie of aduersity, and for so much as you cannot stay here any while, taking my leaue of you, I will now presently depart, hoping neuer to rest quietly in my bed untill I haue brought this mine enterprize to a good passe.

God be your guide and conduct, replied Gridonia, and so direct your actions, that you may obtaine a triumphant victorie ouer your enemy: to the end hee may haue no more occasion to redouble the anguish which he hath so linckly imprinted in my soule And vpon this point giuing him the last adieu, she retired strait to her Lyon whom shee could not abate to heare make such terrible roaring: which seemed to euery one to signifie some great meruaile: Likewise Valido returned to the Duchesse very pensive and doubtfull to obtaine for his wife so beautifull a Damosell: insomuch that licencing all the Knights who accompanied him vnto this place to depart, he tooke along with him but two onely, the one being sonne to the Earle Marco (the same whom the Emperour Palmerin slew because he accused Diartes and Cardonia of treason) to reuenge himselfe of the Emperour, picked forward Valdo

berie



very much to pursue his point, & the other who was Diartes Sonne, would willingly haue hindred him, for that it angred him to the very death, that in his company should be any ambush plotted against the Emperour, in such sort that the Prince of Bohemia went accompanied with two persons contrarying one another in desire, whereof he knew nothing.

Afterwards imbarking himselfe hee had so prosperous a gale, that within few dayes he came to rest within the ha- uen of Constantinople, where hee disimbarked, being well appointed with his two Knights both disarmed: and being arriued before the Pallace, hee sent the Emperour word hee was a Knight who required safe conduct into his Court, be- cause he came thither to desie his Sonne vpon a treason which he had committed: who being aduertized thereof, meruay- led greatly that any man would be so hardie to come to accuse him of that whereof he neuer thought, much lesse euer put in effect, especially being an act of a Traytor, which was the vice he euer had in greatest detestation.

But the Emperour being grane and well aduised, ima- gined incontinent that it proceeded but of the death of Perre- quin, for the which he was a sorrowfull man, by meanes whereof he thus schooled Primaleon.

My Sonne, let vs consider the difference whereupon this Knight purpoeth to accuse you, wherein for ought he can say vnto you, answere him not arrogantly, nor with the least iniurious word, for as much as there is nothing more ill belee- ming Princes and Knights descended of noble houses, than to be discourteous and vile speeches: Hearken what he shall say vnto you, and answere him honestly, alleadging what you shall best thinke meete for the iustifying of your innocen- cie: For oftentimes the proud language giueth occasion of inuicement to the aduersarie, & in battaile the best Cham- pions are knowne to be vanquishers in deedes, and not con- tenders in words.

My reuerend Lord and Father answered Primaleon, in whatsoeuer it shall please you to commaund me, will I ne-  
uer



ner whilst I line disobey your will. At this instant Valido entering the great Chamber, bowed not himselfe towards the Emperour, so much felt he himselfe troubled and perplexed with this Battaille : but looking round about him a pretty while (after he had a little cooled his choller) he drew nere vnto the throne where the Emperour sate, making vnto him this speeche.

All ouer the globe of the earth, is your generous courage, Noble Emperour of Constantinople, well knowne & made famous, since the time when, as a wandring Knight you passed like a pilgrime ouer the greatest part thereof, seeking news of your Father, whom as yet you know not : And since you haue bene placed in this honour and highnes of estate, no man can say you haue done the least iniustice to great, small, or meane, which thing I forsaiking on mine owne behalfe, I haue bene so bold as to come hither to demand a Combat, hoping for good or bad which may befall mee, I shall haue no wrong offered mee herein.

So much I say, for that I come to complaine of Primaleon your Sonne, touching the death of Perrequin of Duas, whom hee slew in a Tourney, wherein hee would needes be present to honour the more the feast of your Children, trusting hee will not denie, but that vpon the assurance which hee gaue to every one, hee hath massacred him verie treacherously : And you Primaleon if you heare this, I know not what excuse you may alledge against mee, who both a-nough it to your face that it was done in Treason against him.

Primaleon who gaue attentive eare to these iniurious speeches, rose vp with many other Knights and Barons answering him thus : Good Sir, it seemeth you are very ill-advised to come to seeke his revenge, who following his fatal and unluckie destiny, ended his dayes here in a Tourney, wherein I doe not denie but that I slew him with my owne sword, vpon the like assurance as you doe name at this present, because of his disloyalty :

For



For during the space of three moneths together, I could never get me ridde of him, but still I found him before me or behind me at my backe, with full intention to haue slaine mee by his owne hands: But God the onely searcher of hearts, who knew well his diuillish malice, fauoured mee so much that I prevented him before the execution of his treacherous designe, giuing him that measure which he would haue offered vnto mee. Notwithstanding if you haue so hot a desire to combat me vpon this point as you make semblance, behold I am readie to enter the Lisses when it shall please you, to the end I may by my best endeavour shew to all the world that the quarrell is false, and wrongfully vndertaken on your behalfe.

This contented me wonderfull well-replied Valido to see you not to refuse the combat, which shall be a sufficient witness before all, that the truth is such as your conscience can well tell.

Then Primaleon fell on his knees before the Emperour, demanding leaue of him to enter the Combat for this effect: and afterwards in token that he accepted the Combat, hee presented him a gloue, which hee tooke at his hands very sore against his will, being ignorant which of the two had the better right on their side: for if hee had perceined the least smooke of the peruerse and malicious intent of Perrequin, hee would neuer haue mistrusted that his Sonne should be vanquished. Which the Bohemian Prince seeing (to shew hee was verie glad of this acceptation) did reach vnto him one of the lappes of his Harnesse, which the Emperour tooke also: Deputing presently the Dukes Ptholomey and Eustace for Judges and Marshals of the field: to the end they should with all equitie maintaine the right of both the Combatants.

These Dukes who stirred not from the Emperours Court, to obey their Masters commandement, conducted Valido incontinently within the Barriers, where they encamped themselves on the one side: meane while Primaleon Armed himselfe, who for that hee was of a middle stature, but  
otherwise



otherwise very well proportioned in his members, did manage himselfe with a wonderfull dexterity both on foote and on horse backe, and soone had his Armourers fitted him carefully in all p[ar]ces, so that he came lightly to present himselfe before his father, who spake unto him in this manner : My sonne, I pray God above to preserve you from death in this conflict, and to manifest thereby, that you are not culpable of this wilfull murder which they lay to your charge.

Sir (quoth he) I can well assure you, that what I did, was done but with great reason, knowing before that hee sought nothing more than to have slaine mee, for this cause I hope, hee who knoweth that I proceeded not with any malicious intent, will exempt me from death, if hee see that my life be as yet necessary.

Having ended these speeches, hee kissed his hands, which embraced him quickly, then mounting on horse-backe, he took his way towards the Barriers, accompanied with many other Seignieurs on foote : And in the meane while Valido who felt his heart boyle in a vehement beate to finish victoriously this enterprise, calling to minde the beauty of Gridonia, said, that a small time should his enemy stand before him : Who after place was made by the Partials, within the running place came with a fury, his Lance couched in his rest upon the Bohemian, who basling his Lance in like manner, brake it to the handle without ever moving the Constantino Politane out of his saddle : where also this Assailant lost his stirrups at the attaint of his, and was also a little hurt on the right side. Nevertheless, being an active and a skillfull knight in Armes, hee seated himselfe quickly againe in his saddle, and began fiercely to lay upon Primaleon, with his sword, but he who excelled him farre in prowess and dexterity, being ashamed hee had not at the first encounter made him kisse the ground, beganne to helpe him with such fell and heavy blowes, that within a while, every one perceived who would heare away the victory. And hee himselfe knowing that his enemy (who lost his blood by great drops) wared fee-  
ble



ble in sight of enery one, hee gaue him such a mighty backe stroke vpon his Burrian, that he cleue a-two both his head and head peece downe to his shoulders, in such manner that presently falling vnder his horse-fete, Primaleon spake these words aloud: see what you are come so farre to seeke, then making cleane his sword, hee put it vp into his scabbard, and the Judges brought him forth of the Lists with great ioy.

Of this victoꝝ was the Emperour and all the other Lords of the Court marvellous ioyfull, seeing so evidently the verity of this false accusation: By meanes whereof, causing Primaleon to be disarmed, and afterwards dressed of some wounds which he had receiued of his aduersary, commanded the vanquished Knight to be fetcht out of the Barriers, and to be honourably entered.

But the two Gentlemen who came in his company, made a maruelous lamentation for his death, especially the sonne of the Earle Marcus, who in bewailing him uttered strange things; so that by this meanes the Emperour knowing that Valido was, sent for the Knights, saying thus: I meruaile very much how the King of Bohemia, whom I held for my friend, hath permitted that his Sonne should come into my Court to doe here an exploit, whose sorrowfull issue hath so greatly griued me, which if I had foreseene, and knowne him as now I doe, to be the accuser of my sonne, I should by no meanes haue granted him this combat, as you may well assure him from me.

Sir (answered then the sonne of Diartes) willingly will I obey your commandement, euen as I desire also to doe you my best service, wherein when you shall know the loue I beare you, you will not say that I came hither of my owne accord with Valido, but full sore against my will, and also the King my Master not knowing any thing of his intention in this case.

When the Emperour vnderstode that this Knight was Diartes Sonne, hee made him many kinde offers, thanking him for the good-will he bare him.

And



And then the Sonne of the Earle Marcus (being vexed with extreme anger to the gill) could not forbear to speake thus much.

Emperour of Greece, fortune hath bene to you too favourable, since you slew the Earle my Father, a thing which I cannot beare patiently, albeit I hope one day to see my selfe revenged for his death.

He had no sooner spoken these words, but for his best advantage he quickly departed out of the Pallace, because that many setting hands to their swords would have had him by the eares, had not the Emperour commaunded them not to stirre after him, but let him goe whether hee thought good, which was strait to the Haven with his companion, where embarking in Validoes Shippe, they returned into Bohemia, to tell the King the sorrowfull newes of his Sonne: Whereupon hee conceived great hatred against Gridonia, blaming her for the principall occasion of this his death, for the which mischance she was no lesse sorrowfull than he could be for his life.

CHAP. XVII.

How *Lurcon* a Gyant, Sonne to *Dormagrus*, whom the Emperour slew in deliuering the Damosell *Esmerinda*, came to defie *Primaleon* vppon the same quarrell as *Valido* had done before, and what successe befell vnto him after his defiance.



**L** Rome there dwelt (long since) a Gyant whose name was *Lurcon*, whom the Emperour *Palmerin* slew to deliuer the Damosell *Esmerinda*, as you may at large read in the first beginning of this History. This *Lurcon* being esteemed a very braue knight, was not miſhapen, nor so inhumane and



and sauage as the other Giants, but a man very active and courteous amongst his friends, and euen when the Nurse carried him in her armes who had giuen him sucke euer since his fathers death: after the which, he recovered by force of Armes the Castles which they kept from him in his minority, and vowed neuer to marrie before he had reuenged so great wrong offered him: So he began to make so cruell warre vpon Crispin the husband of Elmerinda, that hee kept him at home within doores from walking too far abroad in the fields: and now hee entred into the eight yeare of his knighthood, when Perrequin dyed, seeking to accomplish his promise to Gridonia.

Of whom on a day hauing vnderstande the discourse, imagining presently with himselfe, none could fetch Primaleon about better then hee, nor sooner enioy the Lady, so that reioycing greatly in himselfe vpon this conclusion, hee cared not at all to goe to see the Dutchesse nor her Daughter, hoping to haue her to wife by force or free will.

Wherevpon hee imbarqued himselfe in a Frigot, rigged with all necessaries to saile vnto Constantinople; where being arrived in safety, hee sone sent a Squire to the Emperour to demand a safe conduct for him to come into his Court to combat with Primaleon; which if he should refuse him, he would make his haunts abroad, how hee durst not graunt it for feare he had of him.

When the Emperour heard the Gentleman talke in this manner, he began to be very angry, iudging presently that he came to continue the accusation which Valido began; therefore he answered him thus:

Tell your Master againe from me, that when I shall grant him the assurance which he demaundeth at my hands, it shall be but to chastize him for his pride and arrogant speeches, which are more vsed in Giants mouthes, than in any other mens, being often the cause they worke their owne ruine and confusion by.

Then spake diuers Barrons who were there present, Sir,  
vnder



under reuerence of your Maieſty, it ſeemeth vnto vs that this Combat is by no meanes to be permitted, for ſo much in that of the Bohemian Prince all the world knew manifeſtly the truth of the matter from the falſe and vntrue accuſation which he preferred touching the death of Perrequin: ſo that you ſhould rather ſeeme to puniſh the pride and preſumption of Lurcon, than to afford him any ſafe conduct vpon ſo ſmall appearance of truth.

In the meane time whileſt this was bruited through the Court, Primaleon returning from hunting, who wondered greatly to heare ſuch a murmuring ſtirre: whereof when he heard the occaſion hee waxed a little angry, as enery one might perceiue by theſe words which hee ſpake to his Father.

I wonder much Sir that you being a Prince who hath paſſed his youth through infinite occurrences ſuch as this, you will cleane to the opinion of your knights, who ſeeme to haue feare of a beaſt, being an enemy to Man: wherein I beſeech you of your eſpeciall fauour, that you will ſuffer rather your Sonne to dye, than the leaſt act of cowardize ſhould be objected vnto him: Give (I pray you) permission to him to Combat with me, and to all thoſe hereafter who ſhall come to deſie me vpon this quarrell: For I truſt in God hee will ayde me, as him, who neuer thought to haue offended herein by my will.

The Emperour perceauing the magnanimity of his Son, and that hee ſpake with ſome reaſon, cauſed all thoſe who were in talke of this Combat to be ſilent, anſwering him thus.

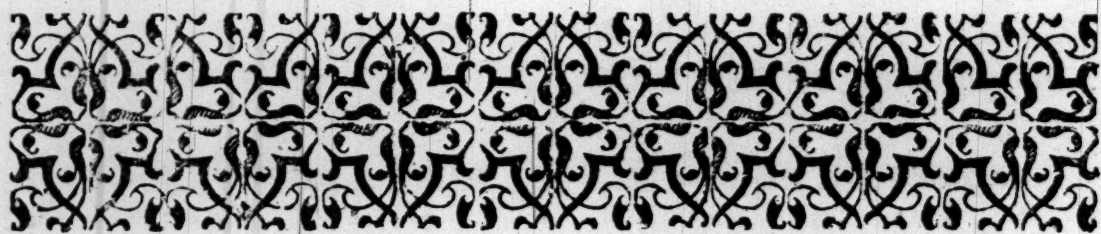
Deare Sonne, the zeale and vnſpakeable Fatherly loue which I beare you, hath conſtrained mee to anſwere you as you haue done: Neuertheleſſe for euer hereafter I will aſſure you I will not ſtand vpon reaſoning in the like difference: Then turning himſelfe towards the Squire, hee bad him goe backe to tell his Maſter, that he might come ſafely and vnder his protection, when as he thought good.

¶

Which



Which when the Giant vnderſtoode, because it was already late, would in no wise that evening goe on shore, but being made priuie of all that which hapned in the Pallace vpon this sodaine, did but laugh and make a scoffe thereat, saying: that if Primaleon did shew himselfe hardy and of great courage, it would stand him in good ſtæde on the morrow, before the conflict was ended, so that to prouoke him the more, & to the end he should not faile to enter the field with him, he sent his Squire backe incontinent with a letter of defiance, which he wrote with great expedition, to this effect.



A Letter of defiance written by the Giant  
*Lurcon, to Primaleon of Greece.*



**L**O the Primaleon of Greece, the most foolish and cowardly defender of Tourneys, the Giant Lurcon, Sonne to Dermaquus, who will eternize his renowne by thy death, sendeth this defiance: for so much as the Heauens hauing favoured thee so much, as to make thee be borne of Noble and Royall blood, thou hast Rayned that famous marke of nature, beside all the reputation which thou mayest hereafter atchieue in military discipline, beginning thy exercise by a most absurd, dishonourable, and villanous murder. I meane by the death of the gentle Knight Perrequin of Duas, Sonne to the puissant King of Poland, whom thou slewest cowardly in the Tourney which thou heldest at the marriage of thy Sister, where he would faine be present the more to honour her person, assuring my selfe



selfe thou shalt not dare to deny (to confesse manifestly the treason) but that thou hast shamefully and treacherously massacred him vnder the pretence of the assurance which thou gavest to all commiers : Wherein I know not what excuse thou mayest pretend, except it be a speedy and liberall offer to give in recompence and satisfaction of his life the head of him who hath committed so disloyall an oversight : The which I am now come to fetch, to offer it vp vnto her who demandeth vengeance therfore : aduising thee that when with thy good will thou wouldest not consent to so iust and reasonable a thing, I hope to constrain thee by force of Armes, if thou hast so much courage as to enter the close field with me, there to try it out by single combat.

So soone as this defiance was quickly read ouer by Primaleon, he returned to the Squire who brought the same, whom very roughly and in great choller he answered, that if it had not bene so late, he would very willingly haue combatted his Master that night without any longer attendance : Whereupon the Emperour his Father gaue him aduise by diuers perswasive reasons, that things are not to be done vpon the heate of blood : And therfore it should be the best way to see a little what the Grant would say further.

But the Empresse and her Daughters being troubled without measure by the remembrance thereof, could not all that night once close their eyes to take a little sleepe : And no lesse was the inconuenience of the continuall disturbance, which did importunately molest and trouble the Emperours spirit, quite contrary to Primaleons, who for all that did not forbear his sleepe neuer a whit the more, but took his rest well enough as he was before accustomed, arming himselfe very strongly betimes on the morrow morning, being as merry and iocund as if he should haue gone but to runne at the King, for the fauour and loue of some amiable and beautifull Lady.



But the Gyant as soon as the day appeared went a shoare, and mounting vpon a strong and mighty horse, armed at all poynts except the head, took his way with his Page toward the Citie: where, by reason of the brute of the arrivall of this monster, which was already spread abroad every where, both little and great came about him to see him, so that being marvellously affraid of the sight of his person, they praide earnestly that their Prince might obtaine victorie against this monster: the same did in like manner the knights of the court, who were in great doubt of Primaleons life, seeing before them so deformed and huge an aduersary: neuertheless the Emperour, who was accustomed to talke with such Colosses and skar-babes, being but lumps of flesh without any agilitie of spirit or body, made light account of him, and would willingly have accepted the Combat himselfe to have eased his Sonne Primaleon: But as he discoursed thus with himselfe, behold Lurcon arrived before him, who beguneth with this abrupt speech to him alowde.

Emperour of Constantinople, I rather wish thy ruine than the ruine of any other man that lieth vnder the celestiall Globe, for that thou slewest both my Father and brother, two, the very flowers of Chinalrie, wherefore I haue ever since felt an extreame anguish in my heart, because I could neuer finde any meanes to be reuenged of so cruell an homicide. Notwithstanding, seeing I haue obtained the way, I hope soon to end my sorrow, if thy Sonne resolve to fight with me vpon the contents of my defiance, touching a sellonie and a treason, which I stand vpon, to make him confesse before he escape my hands this day. Truly Knight (quoth Primaleon) I am resolved to fight presently the combat which thou demandest to reuenge his death, without giving thee any reason how or wherefore I slew him, seeing I haue given to him account sufficient already, who not willing to content himselfe therewith, I haue made him buy the refusall deare, as I hope to pay thee for thy paines which thou hast taken to come so farre to this place.

Here



Merie glad was the Giant Lurcon, seeing Primaleon ready  
 to enter the Barriers with him, into which the Emperour  
 commanded the Duke of Pera, & the Earle of Redon to con-  
 duct him, and to assure him from all men except from this ene-  
 mie: in the meane time there remained not almost any per-  
 son within the Cittie which came not thither to beholde this  
 Battaille, every man devoutly praying him in whose hands  
 are all victozies, to shew fauour to their Prince, for whom  
 they had been in great dispaire, were it not for the confidence  
 they had, that he would not forsake him in this necessitie:  
 as in him who neuer abandoneth nor reiecteth those who ar-  
 ming themselves with true faith, doe build their sure hope on  
 his refuge.

The Giant then after he had laced and buckled the strings  
 of his head-piece, took a strong launce in his hand, and seeing  
 his enemy come armed, conceived so great pleasure, that  
 flourishing his Launce he thus began: This staffe imbued  
 to day in the blood of my aduersarie, shall take vengeance on  
 that fellow who hath with his, pearced the bosome of mine  
 ancestors.

Hold thy tongue for shame great animal, quoth Primale-  
 on, holde thy tongue, and cease to vaunt thy presumptuous  
 beastiality, till thou seest thy selfe vanquisher, for then is the  
 haire to bragge and not before: Then the Judges seeing these  
 two Combatants in good will each one to do his best for him-  
 selfe, they departed the Barriers, and presently the signe of  
 the assault being sounded by the Trumpets, the knights en-  
 counted with such furie, that they mist their attaintes: For  
 the height of Lurcon constraining him to carrie his Launce  
 lower against Primaleon, than if he had bene of his stature,  
 so that he could hit him but onely the hippe, where pearcing  
 his Armour he scratcht his skinne a little: But the Constani-  
 tino Politane, who came full vpon him with a right carriere  
 with his Launce ranne him cleane through the cuirasse into  
 the bellie, so they dashed their shields and rapt their bodies to-  
 gether, in such sort that they both smoaked at it: In this en-



counter the Giants Horse had such a shouldring, that he could goe afterwards but vpon three legges: by meanes whercof feeling the heauie burden which hee had vpon his backe, hee kept such a capering, rearing and flinging, that he layd his loutish Master vpon the bare ground: who in falling did so entangle one of his feete in his stirrups, that his horse traid him a long time from place to place: Which Primaleon seeing, ran vpon him with his naked sword in his hand, and before he could get by againe, hee gaue him so sound a blowe vpon his legge, that he cut the bone almost quite a two: wher-at he made so horrible a noyse, that hee terrified all the assistants, but not him, who bewee him with the Demitoe, which the Knight of the Closed-Ile had sent him, which he so layd on then with all his might vpon his Helmet, that cutting a two the strings thereof, hee shewd quickly his bare head: Wherevpon Lurcon fell into so intollerable a phrenzie, that being vnable to defend himselfe from the fell blowes of his aduersarie, he purposed to gripe him by the body, thinking to dispatch him that way: But soe all that Primaleon kept himselfe at the point of his sword, and with a backe stroke vpon the Thazard, feld him as dead as a Dog to the ground, saying: It is now time that thou mayest erect thy Trophies to Pallas and Mars, for the victories they haue sent thee, and not before thou hadst combatted, as not long since thou didst haunt to doe.

It were very difficult to recount the ioy and gladnesse that euery one conceined, seeing the happy successe of this spectacle: The which to the end to make it publike knowne abread, the Judges and Martials of the field perceiving the Gyant to haue breathed his last, did accompany Primaleon with victorious acclamations vnto the Pallace, where they presented him to the Emperour, who receaued him with great and exceeding ioy.

Then came forth the Emperesse and her Daughters to entertaine him, as if he had bene newly arriued from some forraigne Country, praissing & blessing God for so happy a victory,



toise, the which beganne to bring some comfort and reioy-  
cing to the Court, which was before all in dumps, very sad  
and mournesfull for the death of King Florendos & his Queene  
Griana, Father and mother to the Emperour.

Afterwards there arrived manie knights to Combat Pri-  
malcon vpon the same quarrell, but it cost them all deare,  
as being those who defended a wrong quarrell, the Prince be-  
hauing himselfe every day more balliant then other: where-  
of the Greekes reputed themselves most happle men, to haue  
after the emperour so grane & balliant a Prince for their Seig-  
neur: wherefore from diuers Countiees were presented him  
many good offers to marrie a wisse, the which he would accept  
of in no wise, for the little desire hee had to marrie so young:  
But let vs discourse a little of the great perils and traualles  
that another knight made him endure, who came to Con-  
stantinople to defie him vpon the same pretended treason of  
the Polonians death, as you shall in the next Chapter heare  
more at large.

# CHAP. XVIII.

How Prince *Edward*, the eldest Sonne to the King of  
*England*, was enamored of faire *Gridonia*, seeing her picture  
against a wall, and how hee was afterward conducted by a  
strange aduenture into a Monasterie of Nunnes, and what  
befell him there in the meane time hee was within the Nun-  
nerie.

**K**ING *Fredericke* of *England*, brother to *Agriola*  
Empresse of *Almaine*, had by his wife ma-  
nie Male Children, the eldest whereof called  
Prince *Edward*, was no lesse accomplished and  
excellent in the exercise of Armes, than verie  
well-hartered in most ciuill and good manners, and in all



other laudable, vertuous, and honest things : So that hauing receaued the order of Knighthood, hee held daily Ioustings & Tournoyes, to exercise and make himselfe skillfull in militarie profession : And soz as much as hee delighted also in hunting, one of the brassest Knights called Robert, sent him a faire dog which hee recovered of a woman who was a great Magician, as you shall vnderstand hereafter.

Then Knight Robert being in the prime of his youth had a great desire to see the aduentures of the world, by meanes whereof embarking himselfe among other Marchante, who went to trafficke and to sell Armes in Turkis, being tossed by tempest and foule weather on Sea, came to an anchor in the Iland of Malfada, where they were all enchanted except him onely, who pleased much the Ladie of the Ile. Whereupon it fortunied that hee liued there in verie great pleasure about the space of two yeres, at the end whereof calling to minde vpon a time his owne countrie, hee seicht a great sigh from his breast, so that this Fayrie who neuer was far from him, desired to know the cause of that sigh, vnto whom hee revealed the whole matter.

Certainely faire Sir, quoth Malfada then, seeing you finde it not best to dwell any longer with me, I am content that you depart as soon as it shall please you, to the end to take your iourney where you may finde better entertainment than here: And soz that I haue loued you extreamely, I will present you a shippe verie well rigged, with all things needfull for your commodious nauigation vnto your owne Countrie.

Then thousand thanks I giue you Madame, replied Robert, soz the good will you beare me: and albeit I doe not merite the least part of this fauour, yet will I not cease to remaine yours perpetually bounden, & a great deale the more, if you refuse not to giue me this Dog which I would craue at your hands.

Surely I should be very ingratfull and little courteous quoth the Fayrie, if I should denie you so small a thing, albeit, that heretofore this beast hath bene a Giant, Lord of the  
Ile



He of Efcania : who that I may in few words recount his  
 Histoꝝ, desiring at eightene yeares of age (when he recea-  
 ued his Knighthood) to do some feats of Armes in the world,  
 imbarqued himselfe néere his owne house for the same pur-  
 pose : And such was his fortune, that a great Storme which  
 rose vpon the Sea, cast him a shore in this Iland, where pre-  
 sently he found himselfe enchanted vnder the forme of this  
 Beast that you see, which I giue you also freely, as a thing  
 wherewith you may helpe your selfe at your néede, and shall  
 be peraduenture some time occasion for you to call to minde  
 the remembrance of me, which I recommend vnto you in as  
 much as you haue knowne the singular and perfect loue I doe  
 beare you.

After many accustomed embracings Robert toke his leaue  
 of Malfada, thanking her againe for his Dogge, to whom (for  
 that the G yant of whom he had once the forme, was called  
 Maiortes, and for that he was also the greatest of all that I-  
 land) he gaue the same name of Maiortes, and afterwards  
 setting saile towards England passed by hard passages, where  
 his Dog stood him in very good stead.

But in the meane season whilst Prince Edward was so  
 highly esteemed in his fathers Kingdome, the Knight Robert  
 fell sicke, who knowing the end of his dayes were at hand,  
 purposed to make him inheritor of his Dog, as the person of  
 all the English Nation whom he knew worthy of such a pre-  
 sent; and sent the Dog to him by a Squire of his, beseeching  
 him to take him alwaies with him in company, and that he  
 would not neglect him, in that he would make great account  
 of him one day when he knew his qualities better.

The yong Prince was wonderfull glad of this Dog, when  
 making as much of him as might be, he shewed himselfe so  
 louing and gentle, as if he had brought him bp from a little  
 whelp: therefore he sent in recompence of this Dog great  
 riches to the Knight Robert, who in the meane season passed  
 out of this world into the other.

Euer the Prince would haue Maiortes at his side, whom  
 he



he loved as a humane creature: But farre more he esteemed him, knowing the wondrous things hee did in hunting, to which sport he lead him forth many dayes.

During which idle and pleasant life, it befeltoned him bp on a day, to see a thing which caused him afterwards to haue innumerable trauels: For that the Knight his Father delighting much to build as well Castels as other pleasant and delightful houses, did about all his most sumptuous buildings, cause to be builded with all magnificency one sumptuous Pallace, whither he was wont to goe to take his disport with the Queene his wife.

It fortuned that amongst many maister workemen who did worke in this new building, there was a Painter of Ormeda, who by chaunce was present at the Fountaine, when Gridonia was met there by the Lyon, who to the end hee might at his ease fully behold the fauour of the Prince, hee followed her into the Castell with others that were there, for those of that profession are very desirous to see the Idea of so perfect beauty, with whose lineament and perfect feature, they may helpe themselves in their portraictures.

And for that hee found not any store of worke to employ himselfe in the City of Ormeda, he resolved to goe seek in other Countries. So that being arriued in England, after hee had gotten acquaintance to be knowne, hee tooke charge to paint this goodly Pallace, which the King caused to be built nere his chiefe Citie.

Wherein among many excellent things which hee inuented there by his Art and skill, hauing as yet fresh in his memory the beautie of Gridonia, hee portrayed her so truly that she seemed a liuing creature, seeming euer to them which beheld her, that shee would open her mouth to speake vnto them, and there hee set her in a place as it were in a prison, scituate vpon a Rocke, and a Lyon couched vpon the skyrte of her Coate, holding his head betwene this Ladies hands, who did gentily stroke his head and all the rest of his body.

Prince



Prince Edward who went much abroad to hunt, came oftentimes to make his meeting in this place, where beholding upon a time the worke of this Painter, saw there amongst other things, Gridonia painted as you have heard: And wondering in himselfe at so admirable beauty (especially to see a Lyon rest so peaceably nere a woman) could not chuse but call for the Painter unto him, saying; I pray the interprete unto me a little the meaning of this picture, and how a Lyon may be made so tame, that one may see him couched so still nere a Damosell; for that it seemeth to mee to be a thing fit rather for little Dogges, than for such savage beasts which are cruell and ravenous by nature.

You say very true, quoth the Painter, but know yee my Lord, that in the world are many strange things, among the which, I sweare unto you by him that giveth us life, to have seene with mine owne proper eyes, the true modell of this my peece, among living creatures.

When he began to make discourse unto him of the estate and perfections of this Princesse: Whereat the Knight remained much amazed and troubled in minde, but answered him thus:

It is a very rare example that a beast without reason (as this especially) hath so much foresight, as to know the valour and bounty of a Lady so well accomplished, and that shee presumeth in her selfe to recover the head of Primaleon for the earnest of her marriage.

The Painter affirmed to him againe, it was true which hee had in words recounted to him.

Whereupon Prince Edward began to behold a little better than he did before his worke, and because he reputed him one of the best Artists that as yet he had ever seene to handle Pensill, hee viewed with much diligence, and remarked so exactly many times the lineature and grace of Gridoniaes countenance, disputing in himselfe whether shee might be so faire a creature as he saw her painted & coloured in that place, that from thenceforth he fell into a more vehement alteration:

For



For that the little blinded god, who lay in ambush for him, during this his contemplation, shot off out of his Quire so sharpe and piercing an Arrowe against him, that wounding him to the heart, this wound caused in him so strange a passion, that for to finde remedy for it he purposed to seeke all meanes which might take away his paine, and to eschew no trauell whatsoeuer, in going to that place where he thought he might recouer her.

The Prince then considering, that to purchase this Lady he must needs combat with Primaleon, thought he should commit too soule an oversight, seeing the amity so long continued betwene their Fathers : Peruerthelesse for all that he thought with himselfe hee would not surcease, Palmerin hauing heretofore taken away by force from his Grandfathers house the Princesse Agriola his Aunt; and that vnder the pretext of reuenging that injury (after the example of the faire Troian, who instead of Hesiene his Aunt, stole away the wife of King Menelaus in Greece) hee had good occasion to goe to combat the Constantino Politane.

Vpon this conflict of opinions which came to trouble his minde, he cast himselfe vpon a bed, where sighing without ceasing, he thus complained to himselfe.

Alas Gridonia, how much had it bene better for the ease of mine afflicted heart neuer to haue heard thee named, nor seen the portraitt of thy face before my eyes : whose sight hath in so small time penetrated so deepe into my breast, and weakened my members in such sort, that they cannot well preuaile to performe the true duty of their office : Wherein if by the onely object of thy image I seele so exceeding torment, what will it then doe, when I shall inderde see the naturall and liuely composition of such a peerlesse Paragon of Nature : Ah, it is expedient for all that, that I put my selfe in learch to finde thee out to the end that in seeing thee in deed, I may giue some refrigeration to this my burning and new flame : For if the savage and inhumane creatures forgetting their fiercenes, yelde themselues so meeke and gentle in thy presence,



presence, what shall he doe who hath some knowledge of humane reason : Certes albeit I were sure to end my life, yet must I employ for thy sake my person with all the goods and estates that I haue giuen mee, seeing thou art so worthy a creature: which I thinke the heauens haue revealed vnto mee as it were by a fatall oracle, to the end that thou shouldst be mine, and I thine perpetually. To attaine vnto which point, I promise thee to refuse no aduenture nor perrillous attempt which may present it selfe to make mee refuse it : Considering that by how much more knights are issued of noble blood and illustrious linage, by so much more it becometh them to enterprise more generous and herosicall acts. And to this may inuite thee the example of Arnedes Prince of Fraunce, who for the loue of Philocrista Daughter to the Emperour of Constantinople, departed from his Fathers Kingdome, and in like manner Recinde Prince of Spaine for Melissa the King of Hungaries Daughter : I then being of no lesse house than the one or the other of these two Princes my neighbours, it becometh mee to follow their steppes in the like enterprise.

So long time was the spirit of this young knight so busied in making such like discourses, that being not able to forbear, hee lost not onely all appetite to eate, and desire to sleepe, but also therewithall all pleasure of hunting, wherein hee had so much delighted before : In such sort that hauing none occasion neyther to beare nor to see any recreation, hee shunned the companie of those whom hee knew desirous to be neare him to make him merrie and pleasant.

One onely content he enjoyed during these his anguishes, which was to set himselfe before the Image of Gridonia, whose infinite beautie so raiuid the vigilance of his eyes, that it did constrain his tongue to reason with it, even as if he had bene hard by her proper person : being otherwise neuer satisfied to deuise with the painter of the graces of this Princesse.



It chanced vpon a day, that being wearied with this sorrowe and wauering of minde, he went forth into a wood which lay ned hard vpon the ditch of his Pallace (where he passed the greatest part of the time of his passion) without taking with him any more weapons but his rapier by his side: So that walking vp and down, he sat him downe vnder a broad and thicke beech tree, to ruminare as his fancie moued him of such things which might giue him some contentment. And after hee had long time mused with himselfe, bethinking by what meanes he might best goe to Gridonia, hee cast vp his eyes, which he had before fixed on the ground, as it falleth out many times to a man that is perplexed & irresolute in minde to doe, whereby he espied neare him a wood-man who would binde a burthen of wood together in a little string, so that being vexed with some thing els, and to see him lose his time he said.

Thou ignorant villaine, I perceiue it proceedeth of thy great blockishnesse or froward nature, that thou dost labour in vaine after this impossibilitie: whereupon it seemeth to me that thou shouldest leaue the wood behinde, or els if thou wilt carrie it away to haue a longer cord to binde it withall.

The peasant who heard himselfe mis-called, turning himselfe and looking behinde him answered, Prince Edward thou dost behold very neare my follie, who canst not take heede of thine owne which toucheth thee a little nearer. I tell thee that even as thou seest me lose my labour in binding this burden of sticks, even so shalt thou find it fall out with you in all the troubles that you shall undertake for her who reserveth herselfe for a better knight than you.

When the Prince heard these speeches, setting hand to his sword, he ran instantly after this wisard, saying in a great rage: In an euill houre for thy part great clothe camest thou ener to publish so neare me so foule a lie: For that in the circuite of the round world is there no Prince who doth deserue her better than my selfe, who loue her so perfectly that no liuing creature is able to attaine to the height of my love.

The



The wood-man who heard him speake in such a rage, ran away as fast as he could through the woods, and Prince Edward after him with speed: notwithstanding hee was not farre gone before an Armed Knight came right upon him being mounted upon a very lustie and brane Horse, saying unto him thus.

Gentleman, let the peasant goe, otherwise you are but a dead man. Rather shalt thou lose thy life, answered the English-man, than I will not be reuenged of him who hath injured me, thus villainously: Now advise thy selfe if thou wilt defend him. Yes indeede replied the Knight, and yet I will craue none advantage at thy hands.

After these words he alighted from his horse, and seeing his enemye disarmed, he would not draw his sword, but closed with him, which Prince Edward did in like manner, and so they tug'd a good while together. In the end fortune would so much fauour the Prince that he laid his enemye a long, & setting his knee vpon his breast, hee cut a two the strings of his Helmet, thinking presently to cut off his head, but as he was about to doe it, he perceaued it was a very faire woman: so that marueiling much at this accident he rose vp incontinent, being in great admiration. Faire Lord then ganne the Damsell, admire not to see now a woman in Armes, seeing that there haue bin, and as yet are some, which are couragious and warlike, and take it not in disdain that you haue fought against one of them, for Achilles esteemed that one of his most signall victories which he obtained against Panchasilie, the Queene of the Amazonians: and the valiant Mithridates King of Pontus, neuer craved better aide than that of Hippocratea his wedded wife: the which being in mans attire after the Persian manner, did enter into all dangers vnto which her husband did aduenture himselfe, during the war which hee had against Pompeius. So much I say because I see you make a wonder at this strange noueltie: Neuerthelesse if you will graunt me but one boone, I will conduct you into a place where you shall see things farre moze admirable than these.

Urry



Very willingly will I accord thee whatsoener it shall please thee to demand at my hands, answered the Knight vnto hir, for the great desires sake which I haue to follow strange adventures.

Mount then replied the Damsell vpon my Horse, and come presently away with me. But Prince Edward would first goe fetch his Armes, and make his people priue to his departure, to the end they should not trouble themselves to seeke after him: Then the Ladie told him, that to compasse their attempt, it was expedient for them to set forward of their iourney forthwith. So then hee mounted vpon a Courser, and she vpon a palfrie which attended not farre from thence. Fieue dayes iourney they made, and met nothing which might hinder them in their way, and vpon a Saturday morning they arrived at a faire Cloister of Nunnes built vpon the top of a high Mountaine in a very solitarie place. There did the Damsell cause this Knight to alight, whom she lead afterwards into a faire Chamber, where the Abbesse and all her Nunnes came to entertaine him, when his guide began to utter these speeches vnto him.

Faire Knight, know that in this Monasterie there is a most strange and marvellous adventure, which as they say cannot be ended but by one of the best Knights of this age: for that you are reputed one of those whom the celestall planets haue adozned with so manie excellent graces in preheminance of Chualrie, we haue hope that you will bring it to a finall end.

Know within the precinct of this Religious house is enclosed a very faire Orchard, planted with diuers sorts of fruit trees, which in their seasons doe bring forth their fruits in abundance, and within the whole compasse of our Couent is there not more delightfull a place then that, except on the north side, from whence out of a fearefull cave every Saturday about twylight there cometh forth a most hideous & ill favoured old woman, bearing a rich Faulchion in her hand, wherewith she striketh flitting, when she meeteth by chance  
with



with any Religious ~~fr~~ <sup>fr</sup> ~~one~~, so furiously that she sendeth her quicklie to the ground, in such sort that the poore wretch can, not rise againe, nor a long time after get out of that traunce, so much doth she feele her selfe astonished with the blowes this fiend of hell giueth her: Which done, she returneth into her Cell lamenting in most strange manner: And I tell you faire Knight, that a great number of valiant Knights haue come thither, thinking to follow her and see the place of her residence, towards which none can approach nearer than ten paces, but he is immediatly repulled very strongly: so that we haue no hope euer to see an end of this aduventure, vntill you accomplish it now. For this cause haue I brought you thither, hearing by report in diuers places that your prowesse & valour doth excede farre, that of the most hardiest Knights of all the West.

Madame replied Prince Edward then, it falleth out sometimes, that many Knights which are esteemed hardie and valiant Champions, shew in the end the contrarie to this vulgar opinion: and vpon mee first of all may such an example be shewed. Notwithstanding seeing I finde my selfe brought vnto this place, I will not let to proue what I can do in the aduventure, whereof I haue heard so great speech, towards the which I feeling my selfe endued with that force & strength which is expedient for him to haue who shall finish it, I shall presume to be so hardie as to march my selfe: yet if so that I be not able now to bring it about, I will onely leaue, as others haue done, the honour thereof to him for whom it is reserved.



## CHAP. XIX.

How Prince *Edward* entred the Caue, where hee vanquished a Knight, who would haue kept him out of the gate of the Pallace which was there within: And how passing further in, hee found two Gentlemen within a Marble Sepulchre, whom hee deliuered out of strange paine, and the sequele.



**I**n the houre of Euening-tide approaching, Prince Edward armed himselfe carefully with a Harneſſe that a Knight who had bene there to proue himselfe in the aduenture of the Caue, had left behinde him in the Abbey: then being brought into the Orchard by the Damosell, and by one of the Nunnes, hee put himselfe nere the mouth of this hole, where hee stayed not long before the old trot came forth, and quickly poſt in againe, ſeeing the English Prince before her eyes: who was not slow to follow her in, when ſhe caſting her armes about his necke, by no force or ſtrength that hee could ble, could he ever ſtay her nor once loſe her from him: but ſtil the farther he went in, ſo much more did his labour & paine increaſe and torment him: for that finding the farther he was in, the way more darke and obſcure, it ſeemed vnto him that ſome bodie ſtrooke him on euery ſide pushing him backwards to make him recople: But hee who was magnanimous, enduring this paine, thumping and thruſting, without ever letting goe the old trot, came at the laſt into a great Pallace very ſumptuouſly wrought and ſet forth. Then the old woman crying for ayde, there came a Knight vpon him very richly armed, bearing a ſhield vpon his arme, whereon were painted two Damſels, wherof the one which appeared very beautifull, held betwene her hands a Hart wounded, which the other that had a baile vpon her face, made ſemblant to take away from her by force.

Helpe



Helpe me then cried the old woman (withall presenting him the sword) against this knight who will take from mee by force the rarest Jewell in this world, which hee is not worthy so much as to looke upon. Whereupon hee began to speake unto the Prince in this manner,

Sir knight, let the Lady alone, and deale with me, who hope to chastise you quickly, for this your great presumption, by which you haue bene so hardy and bolde as to enter into this place in despite of me. I am very glad quoth Prince Edward to haue to doe with thee, seeing the small honour a man may purchase to vanquish a woman, being but a feeble creature by nature, and of small resistance.

After these speeches they begonne a terrible fray, in the which albeit the Prince charged his enemy with many sel & strange knocks, for the ardent zeale hee had to finish this aduenture; his aduersarie neuerthelesse hauing in his hand the best sword which was to be found in the circuite of the earth, deliuered few blowes but made the maile of his harnesse or shield upon his arme to bow: By reason whereof Prince Edward seeing his life in great perrill (knowing not well what to doe) resolved to put this Battaille in hazard: so that couering himselfe as well as he could with his buckler, he cared not to endure two or three blowes of his enemy to come to gripes, which he did, so that the knight which found himselfe a little wearie, hauing not strength enough to hold tug with him, was constrained to fall with him to the ground: where it fell out so well on the English knights side that hee was vppermost; notwithstanding being out of breath, hee could hardly winde himselfe from his aduersarie, who by reason of his lumpish & heauy fall: sounded vnder the Prince, who seeing him in that passion would not wrong him further, than to ceaze upon his sword: then looking round about him, hee perceaued at that instant how the old woman vanished away behinde a little iron doore.

He resolved to follow her, to know what might be the event of his aduenture, seeing by the cleare brightnesse of a



cleare glasse-window some light within the next Chamber, which did prouoke him the rather: vpon this occasion putting on the vanquished knights Armes, to play the surest part, they fitted him so fast as if they had bin sozged for his backe: Moreouer he took his shield, which he beganne to behold with great admiration, and feeling afterward his force and courage to encrease double, entred without feare into the next roome: In the midst thereof he was aware of a faire Sepulcher of Marble, whose couering was so high and so much seperated from the sides, that a man might easily behold all that was within.

In this place he heard some body make such a fearefull noyse, that approaching softly nere it to know what strange matter it might be, hee saw two armed Knights, who being couched flat vpon their bellies did cruelly wound one another with daggers which each one of them held betwene their hands. Whereupon hauing compassion of so much blood inhumanely spilt vnder them, by the wounds which they gaue themselves without ceasing, he rested a while perplexed what he should best doe in so tragicall a spectacle. In fine, beseeching the diuine prouidence to aide him to pacifie them, he pushed the couering of the Sepulcher off with such a violence, that it remained vncouered: which before that neuer any other Knight had bene able to doe, but hee as Primaleon, who was more valiant than himselfe. The two Knights seeing the heavy Marble throwne downe, which had a long time kept them locked fast in the Sepulcher, rose vpon their feete incontinent, and after they were come forth, they cast themselves downe at Prince Edwards feete, saying, Renowned and extolled be thou euer, worthy Prince, who with such prowesse and magnanimity, hast deliuered vs now at the last from the intollerable Tyranny which we both haue long endured, the which wee know right well could neuer be brought to end, but by the valour of one of the best Knights who was euer borne in the Country of England.

Know



Know faire Lord, it is a long time that wee were in this paine, & that we descend of the most Royal blood of the English Nation, as I will recount vnto you, saying you haue deliuered vs out of this torment.

At this strange accident the Prince much meruailed, especially for that these two personages as soone as they were out of the Sepulcher had receaued the perfect healing of their wounds, and that of so cruell enemies, they were so soone become peaceable friends: so that taking them both by the hands, he made them stand by: saying, my deare brethren, happy may I tearme my selfe at this present, to haue freed you from this mortall passion, offering my selfe beside to pursue your further deliuerance, if peraduenture any further encombzance molest you: Likewise to continue your perpetual friend in all places where you shall know my small power may stand you in any neede, beseeching you to make relation to me of your hard aduenture, the History whereof I would willingly enjoy.

Thus began one of them, we are brethren, and sonnes to the Duke of North-wales, and to the sister of the King Prince Edward, in the house of whom (for he loued vs both as his owne children) we were brought vp from our infancy. But after ward as our euill fortune would, knowing nothing one of anothers loue, wee were both enamored onely by the fame and renowne of the Duke of Borsaes Daughter, esteemed at that time the sayrest and most vertuous Lady of the Westerne world. Now in a Tourney being held at a certaine time in honour of her at this Dukes principall Pallace, we purposed both to be present at it in good equipage of furnitures, to the end the better to enter into grace with this Princesse: So that her father (being a wise and learned Magistrian) knowing our nerenes of lignage with the King, entertained vs most honorably into his house: And after that we had seene the Damosell in face, the flame which from day to day consumed the force and vigour of our vitall spirits did augment in such strange manner, that had not the hope bene



which fed vs with future fruition of ease, we had made both some lamentable and tragicall end, being ignorant one of anothers persuite, and aduising it for the best, neuer to make one another priuy to our loues. Both of vs perfozmed marueilous feats in this Tourney to incline this Princesse to loue vs the more, wherein I exceeded my brother, because I was his elder by birth: So that hauing by this meanes more opportunity to speake vnto her, I made her priuy to my desire, wherupon there succeeded such a conclusion betwene vs, that she assured mee she would accept me onely for her husband: Then I aduentured my selfe to speake vnto the Duke her father, who answered mee he had already promised her to the Earle of Brabant: Which answere made me in such a rage, that I had almost runne mad for spight.

Nevertheless, for the last refuge which I hoped to finde in this my frenzy, I prayed the Damiell to heare me a word or two in secret: Wherunto she answered me, that I should come the very same euening into her Chamber by a little doore which was seldome times opened, where she would be ready to heare what I would say vnto her.

The appointed houre being come, I would in no wise suffer so good opportunity to slip my hands, without reaping that sweet fruit which might restore the heart, to the which all other liquors seemed gall and bitterneesse: But sone clasping on mine Armes, I went strait to the doore with my priuy watchword, in the most secret wise which might be possible. Yet I could not carry my selfe thither so well, but my brother, who began to misse out my drift (as it falleth out sundry times, reasonlesse causeth to coniecture things which haue small appearance of truth) arming himselfe forthwith in like manner, came sily to the very place where I staid for the opening of the doore, and without making himselfe knowne vnto me, began to let dine at me, saying he would take order I should neuer attaine that whereunto I did aspire.

When seeing to defend my selfe, whether I would or not, I must needs in that great extremity doe my deuoyre as well



as I could, in the meane time the Duke who heard our cople, came vnto vs with many of his seruants, exclaiming in a great rage: How now disloyall knights, goe ye about to dishonour mee with so great an infamie? I assure you I shall make you full dearly buy this so great presumption. He presently working by his Art of Negromancie, made vs both remaine as dead at the very instant: and being in this traunce sodainely transported into this place, hee enclosed vs fast within the Sepulcher, with this chaunce of words, yee combat to dishonour mee and my Daughter, well, continue hardly your battell, till a knight of your race may by his generous courage come to part you.

When he had thus said, he banished from our presence, and we remained there in a wonderfull rage, striking one at another, as you haue seene euen vnto this present, so that wee know not how long this deadly quarrel and malice betwene vs hath lasted: and the extreamest point of the distaster vnto which this sozcerie did binde vs, was in that we could not dye by any of those stabbes and wounds which we receaued one of another.

Maruellous things are these which you tell mee quoth the Prince, and know that it is now a long time since the Duke inchaunted you here, because Prince Edward, of whom yee spake, was my great Grandfather: Peruerthelesse, let vs depart out of this place to goe a while some whether else to refresh vs all three together: And as he set his foote vpon the threshold of the doore of his Chamber, he spied an old woman which thus said vnto him.

Faire knight, long time before you were bozne, did the Duke of Borsia know, by meane of his knowledge, your valour and magnanimity, and how you should finish this aduensure: therefore left you the sword which you haue gotten, and keepe it well as being of that vertue as I assure you it hath few fellows at this day, especially for as much as if you shall hold it in your right hand, no enchantment shall ever be able to hurt you.



In like manner is the shield which you haue there wonne, most wonderfull and most rare, for that you shall see the discourses of all your life portrayed out most lively therein: the which notwithstanding you shall neuer know but by proceſſe of time, following the destiny, wherunto God submitteth you euen from your birth day: so that hauing now accomplished that which was by great learning foreseene & directed in this adventure you may goe hence, when it shall seeme good vnto you: And for that the two Knights who goe with you, cannot long time remaine in this world, counsaile and admonish them to remember the mercie of God, who by his diuine grace hath giuen you power to deliuer them from the misery and calamity wherein they haue remainned these many yeares last past.

The old woman hauing spoken thus much, vanished away, wherat the Prince was amazed, which making far greater account of the sword and shield than he did before, hee departed out at the doore with his companions: And seeing no more the Pallace wherein he had fought with the Knight of the Cane, nor the armes which were giuen him at the Monastrie, his admiration was much more redoubled: Yet as hee came backe he found the way to be very darke and obscure, which as hee came was as cleare & lightsome, as at the mouth of the hole, where being arrived they got out easily without any disturbance, and from thence forth was it for ever shut vp, the Pallace dissolved into smoake, and all the enchantments thereof vndone and brought to finall end.

Afterwards walking together towards the Garden-gate, there met them the Abbesse and her Nunnes, who entertayned the Prince with ioy and the greatest gratulation that might be, merueilling much at the two companions whom hee brought with him: which caused the Abbesse to demand who they were, and who had giuen him the Armes shee saw him bring on his backe out of the Cane.

Madame quoth he, these two Gentlemen say they are two Brethren and Knights descended of noble race, who by the  
great



great skill of the Duke of Borſa, were enclosed faſt in the place from whence I haue now deliuered them out of a torment farre worſe than the cruelleſt torture which they might endure. The Armes which you ſee, I haue conquered from a Knight, who would haue kept from mee the entrance of a Pallace, where combating with him vpon that reſuſall, I changed mine Armes, being helmed and pace-meale broken for theſe which you ſee, but in ſtead thereof will I leane you my Sword, for a teſtimony of the affection I haue to giue you farre greater things when the time ſhall come: For that Sword which I haue gotten of the olde woman will I carry with me vnto the Kings Court, whither I hope by the helpe of God ſpeedily to conduct theſe Knights.

That may you not well doe quoth the Damaſell who ga- ded him into this place, beſore you accompliſh firſt that which you haue already promiſed me: Well may theſe two Knights in the meane time in this place attend your returne, which will be in very ſhort ſpace, as I hope.

Prince Edward answered he would goe with her willingly, into what place ſoener it ſhould pleaſe her to bring him: Neuertheleſſe, being already late in the evening they departed not that night out of the Monaſtery: Where the Lady Abbeſſe and her ſiſters could not ſatiſſie themſelues to feaſt the Prince and the two Knights, the which at their inſtant prayer, made once moze vnto them the whole diſcouſe of their Hiſtozie, after that they had all ſupped meſt daintily.

The morrow morning Prince Edward roſe at the poyn- of day-bzeake, and departed alone with the Damaſell, lea- uing the two brethren among the Nunnes in the Conent, where the Abbeſſe made them good cheare for his ſake, and kept ve- ry carefully the ſword which he gaue her, wherebpon it ſor- tuned afterward that he being King, he augmented much the reuenues of this Nunnerie, remembering the promiſe which he made to the Abbeſſe, and to all the religious Nunnes her ſiſters.

How



## CHAP. XX.

How Prince *Edward* was brought by the Damosell into the house of the Duke of *Borsa*, where her sister thought to enchaunt him to make him marry a Niece of hers being Daughter to the Duke, who was enamoured of him, onely by the great fame which was bruted of his valour, and what ensued thereupon.



This Damosell who guided the English Prince, waited in the house of the Duke of *Borsa*, Phebe to her son whom her Father enchaunted the two Brethren within the sepulchre: the which was afterwards married with the Earle of *Brabant*, unto whom hee had promised her, as you haue read before.

But this Duke had onely one Sonne and one Daughter, which were his joy, excelling farre in beautie all others of that country, so which cause her father loved her a great deale the dearer: so that more carefully to haue her nurtured in all feminine ciuility, he caused her to be brought vp in the house of a sister of his being a widow, a most prudent Lady, being very learned, and well scene in the Art of Magicke and secret Philosophie, a profession very peculiar to the most part of their family.

This Dukes Daughter called *Rene*, hearing the famous report of the generous valour of Prince *Edward*, so publike-ly talked of in the mouth of all men, fell so farre in love with him, without euer seeing him, that she became wonderfull pensive and melancholy: and by reason of the continuall teares and complaints which without ceasing she powzed out to the winde, when she could secretly retire her selfe into her Chamber apart, to ease the passion of her minde a little, she so defaced her beauty in few dayes, that the Duke her Father toke notice thereof.

Where-



Whereupon hearing her sometimes to fetch deepe sighes, earnestly requested his sister (for beloued his Daughter entirely) to sound by some subtille meanes from whence this her melancholy sadness might proceede.

Whereunto the good Lady made reply, how she had not as yet perceiued any such matter, notwithstanding she would worke so wisely, that she would learne the truth. And from thence going straight to her Pées Chamber, she found her continuing her daily complaints: So that sitting downe by her, she began to pray and console her, that she would no longer conceale the cause of her griefe: then the young Damosell with a bashfull and blushing countenance answered her with these wordes.

Madame, I know not what to answer you in this case, but that I am the most unfortunate and distressed Damosell that was euer borne vnder the celestiall Sphære seeing that I haue imprinted in my heart a thing that redounneth more to my totall ruine, than to the least iot of any contentment, whose issue will be my speedy death, which shall bring an end to my detestable and low-to languishing life. When she proceeded to tell how she loued with a most vehement and excessive flame Prince Edward of England, who would be the onely cause that she should speedily see her selfe dissolved to dust and ashes, soasmuch it seemed altogether impossible euer to haue any fruition of her desire, because the Prince and she were not of equall estates. The Aunt who saw her in such a pittifull taking, would not prolong her further torment, but presently began thus vnto her. Dære Péece, I pray you governe your selfe with some constancy of minde in this passion, and in the meane time blot out of your minde this impossibility, which you alledge for the principall poynnt of your anguish: for I promise you so to imploy my Art, that the Knight (who will loue you ere long, more than any liuing creature,) shall arrive in this place to espouse you: So great and unspeakable was the ioy of Rene, that taking her Aunt about the necke, shee embraced and kissed her many times, saying.



O my sweet Aunt, if you procure me now this blisse and felicity (inferiour to none in this world) you may well haunt, and say you haue deliuered a sorrowfull and desolate Piece of yours out of the most intricate Laberinth which euer was deuised in this earth, yea, if it were that which Dedalus invented to artificially in Creete, to include the insatiable Minotaur.

My loving Piece, take you no care (replied the Lady) but haue a little patience, that all things may be done in their due time. With that shee departed from the Chamber to conferre this businesse with the Duke her brother, without whose priuy consent she would in no wise begin to set this worke a-broach: and discoursing to him at large the whole matter, tolde him what hope she had to carry this businesse so circumspcctly, that ere long Prince Edward should wed his daughter: so that after their conclusion, she went to turne ouer her books of Negromancy, where she found that the Knight was farre in lone already with Gridonia: notwithstanding hoping to crosse and renake his affection by her Magicke, shee dispatcht away immediately the Damosell of whom you haue declared before, to bring him vnto Borla: True it is, she commanded her not to leade him vnto the aduenture of the Cloyster, but whether she conducted him her selfe, because of a sister of hers who was a Nunne in that place, from whence departing together (as you haue read before in the former Chapter) in two dayes he arrived at the Citty of Borla: But before the Knight did enter into the Citty, the Damosell prayed him to stay for her a while in a Hermitage nere the Suburbes, till she returned from doing a message to her Mistres, who was very willing so to doe: And hee abiding with the Hermit, she went to the Infant Rene, who right glad of his arrivall, trickt by her selfe most richly to entertaine her Lover, sending backe with spæde the messenger to conduct him secretly into her Chamber.

She being quickly arrined at the Hermitage saith thus to the Knight: Sir, you must leaue your horse here, and come on  
foule



soote with me, who will bring you into a place, whether you shall finde your selfe a glad man to be arrived.

I assure thee, quoth the Prince then, that I be not deceived nor circumvented by you in any thing.

Alas, Renowned Prince, the Heavens forbidde, that I should ever seeke to entrap my Liege and Soueraigne in any ambush: I pray you onely come with me, assuredly, and without any feare of ill encounter, vpon condition (if it should fall out otherwise by my meanes) I will be reputed the most false and disloyallest woman that ever guided knight into any vnknowne place.

Being put in this assurance of safegard by his guide, hee went on faire and softly his pace by that false gate (before which the two brethren long since fell together by the eares) euen till hee came within the Chamber of Rene: where as soone as they were entred, quickly was the doore well barred: Whereupon by fortune Prince Edward called to minde that which appeared vnto him in the wood, and moreover that which the old woman foretold him touching the vertue of his sword.

By meanes whereof, mistrusting some inchantment, hee speedily set his hand vpon it, and then marched towards the Infant, which he saw so beautifull and so pompously attired, that any knight would haue taken great pleasure in her sight onely: And so he came without his Helmet on his head, with so magnificent and rich Armour vpon his backe, hee pleased the Damosell so much, that rising vp from her seate she came to prostrate her selfe at his fete, saying.

Prince Edward, assuredly I was out of hope with my selfe, that the heavens would fauour me so much, as to make these mine eyes beholde you, which haue shed so many teares to deploze my future calamitie, if it please not you to succour me: Whereby my heart hath bene by an impatient desire prouoked to rage and exclaime against fortune, which hauing blowne your renowne vnto mine eares, would frustrate my sight of so rare a creature.

Post



Notwithstanding, now my lucke is so prosperous, as to make me the happiest Damsell of all Europe, seeing the paines you take to visite me, I perceiue well that not without great reason it hath made me altogether the slave and captiue of your loue.

The Knight greatly maruailing no lesse at the singular beautie of this Damsell, than to heare her vse such eloquent and cunning tearmes, tooke her by the hand to lift her from the ground, and to seate her in her chaire againe, nere vnto which, the Damsell who was the messenger befoze, hauing already set another, the instant caused the Prince to sit downe hard by her side, renuing the former talke in this courteous manner.

Faire Lord, know you, I am Daughter to the Duke of Borfa, one of your most faithfull vassails, who hearing the bruit of your generous actions, on euery side publisht round about vs, began so extreamely to loue you, that I forgot the very loue which I bare vnto my selfe: Whereof shall be a good testimony the extreame passions which you shall vnderstand doe daily debilitate my life that dependeth onely but vpon your humanity: the which I hope to see so pittifull toward me, that it shall haue compassion of the grieuous angusties, which without intermission doe assaile mee, with more painefull torment than that which King Phalaris caused Perillus to endure within the Brassen Ball, which he himselfe invented for the cruell torturing of others: And I assure you renowned Prince, I could not in any other Knight of base condition haue knowne how to ground so much hope as I haue now in you, and therefore I pray you to haue regard to the reason and carriage hereof with all good and sound iudgement.

Madame, replied the Prince, I cannot imagine the meane to exempt from you the recognizance wherein I find my selfe bounden to you, considering the good will, which of your grace you beare me, without any merit on my part: Nevertheless, if death doe not preuent the affection which I haue to shew  
you



you how it is not to an ungratefull person, or one of small power, to whom you addeſſe your ſelfe, I will be ſuch munificence and liberality towards you and your Father, that you ſhal haue chiefest cauſe of any living in this kingdome to giue me thanks.

And beleeue me (ſweet Lady) if I had knowne your will (ſetting apart all mine owne affaires) I had come ere now vnto you to doe you all the ſervice I could poſſibly haue done, yet not with intent to obtaine of you any thing which might ſtaine your honour, or abate that vertue which I ſee ſhining in you, as doth Virgo the maiden ſigne in the Zodiacke of the heauens: For ſomuch as thereunto could bee neuer conſent who ſhal thinke himſelfe all his liſe time to be your loyall and obedient ſervant: Thus much I ſay, becauſe I may not haue you in marriage to be my wife, my heart being bowed in another place.

Albeit, to aſſure you of my ſincere and true affection towards you, there is nothing ſo difficult or hard to be accompliſhed, which it ſhal pleaſe you to command me, but I will execute moſt willingly, in the beſt ſort which I may or ſhal be able to deuſe.

Judge yee whether the Lady were perplexed and greatly troubled in her minde or no, hearing the reſolution of the Knight (whoſe minde was onely fixed and eſtabliſhed on Gridonia) ſo ſo much as her very ſpeech which ſhe loſt for a while, ſhewed evidently a moſt true and perfect token of her ſufferance.

Which her Aunt perceiving, who in the meane time employed her beſt ſkill to bring her in grace with the Prince, was ſore offended to ſee her in ſuch a ſwoone. Knowing alſo that ſhe laboured in vaine, by reaſon of the ſword which he lately got in the Caſe, ſhe came into the Chamber where they were together, ſaying:

Prince Edward, ſo favourable are the heauens vnto you, that they will happily conduct you to the end of all your enterpriſes, except of that one which you haue ſo liuely now  
imprinted



imprinted in your breast. For the Lady which you purpose to  
 serve with infinite paines and trauels, is long since dedicated  
 to a more accomplished Knight than your selfe: So that as I  
 thinke you should doe well to leane that way which shall be  
 so hard for you to keepe, to take this which hath no difficulty  
 nor disturbance in it.

That I cannot doe by my own consent quoth the Prince,  
 hauing already surrendered the conquest of my liberty into a  
 place, whence, when I would I cannot well call it backe at  
 my pleasure: Wherefore I beseech you of all fauour make  
 me vnderstand so much as I perceiue you know, and withall  
 who shall be that so fortunate knight who shall goe before me  
 in the frustion of the Princesse Gridonia. Nay seeing you  
 haue no pittie (replied the Enchantres) of this faire Lady  
 whom you see almost life-lesse in your presence, I am not  
 purposed to tell you things wherein you may take delight, but  
 rather not to drowne my selfe in sorowes, seeing you before  
 mine eyes, I will presently depart out of this Chamber: with  
 that she went her wayes, leauing the yore louer in a Sea of  
 teares, continuing her exclamations with lamentable sighes,  
 thinking to moue her Narcissus to some compassion: But he  
 who cared little for these fantasies, supposing what was said  
 of Gridonia, was spoken onely to winne him from her lone,  
 he comforted the Damsell as well as he could, telling her now  
 hee would conferre with her Father, and if he would conde-  
 scend thereinto, he would come thither ere it were long to  
 marrie her.

In the meane time her Aunt went to speake with the Duke  
 her Brother, with whom, after she had giuen him to vnder-  
 stand that her wit was not sufficient to worke Prince Edward  
 to this passe, she aduised him to goe accompanied with twen-  
 ty Knights armed into his Daughters chamber: Where lai-  
 ning himselfe ignorant of the matter, and shewing himselfe  
 sore displeased against them both, he should ceaze vpon his bo-  
 dy and put him in prison, and so they might worke their mat-  
 ters as they listed.

The



The Duke then putting in practise this stratagem, came with twenty men all in armes vnto the chamber dore, where, into he first entred all alone, making marvellous signes of admiration, began thus to say. Alas, what a hainous thing doe I see: Am I awake, or doe I dreaming behold this illusion? Ah, I had thought to haue had a vertuous, honest and chaste maiden to my Daughter, more shamesfast and modest, than any other in these Northern Regions, & now am I frustrated of mine opinion: for I see before mine owne eyes she is more bitious than euer was Temiramis or Messalina. Surely, I may doe well to make them both lye in prison in the most cruel torment that may be inuented, seeing they haue shamefully dishonoured me and all my posterity. Enter then and come in my Knights to lay hands vpon this murdering Willard, to the end I may know who hee is and who hath counsailed him to enter so rashly into my house, for all those who are culpable and in any wise confederate in this misdeed, I shall make them pay dearelie for it by a most miserable and shamefull end. With that he stept out of the Chamber dore to let in his Champions, who being come in, did nothing animate nor terrifie the English Prince, who setting hand to his sword and with an inuincible stomack putting his shield on his arme saluted them thus.

Come now hardly who dare carry me to prison, and I shall shew him, how he can defend himselfe who perceaueth himselfe so cowardly compass in round with a troupe of thœues by treason: but I meruaile not if the Duke cause me to be serued thus, seeing that from all antiquitie this house hath bene a very sinke of trecherous traitors and vile persons. With those words he deliuered a Knight who was gathering within him such a fell blow, that he made him presently dead, take measure of the earth with all his whole length: And albeit hee had his head disarmed, yet for all that hee shewed such valour, and laid about him so furiously, that hee had almost massacred them all, had not the Dukes sister gone to worke with her magick spels as you shall heare: She forthwith darkened all the light of the Chamber, making a sulphurous



and obscure ayre, moze darke, than hell it selfe, in stead thereof: then deliucting forth the Knights with the Lady Rene (who would willingly haue bin in his place who was dead) she shut Prince Edward fast within the Chamber vntill the morrow morning when she saw seauen of the Dukes Squiers lying along on the ground one slaine outright, & other sixe soze wounded. Now could not the Duke tell what he were best to doe with him, because if he should deliuer him, it seemed to him, but to haften to shamefull a death for himselfe, & if he should keepe him any longer in his house, it would but encourage him to forgethinke all meanes to put him to moze cruell torment, so that he passed the night in this conflict, vntill the morrow morning when an auncient Knight reprehending him sharply because he suffered himselfe to be gouerned by women, counsailed him to cause prince Edward to be secretly conuayed out of his house by the same Damosell which guided him thither. The Duke who liked well of this aduise, called the Damosell who had bene the messenger to bring him, vnto whom after he had shewed some signes of great heavines, hee made this spech.

It grieueth me much, that my sisters pretence hath not sorted to so good effect as she expected, and for so much as you are the cause, hauing conducted the Knight into the aduventure of the Cloyster, where hee hath conquered such a ietwell which safe-gardeth him from all her enchantments, needs must you your selfe get him by subtille meanes from hence, saying you onely haue meanes to save his life, and for you should thinke your selfe greatly culpable of his death, if it should chaunce to happen, vpon the assurance which you gaue him bringing him into my house, you will willingly let him free from hence into the fields, if he will promise you neuer to seeke any reuenge of the Duke, nor of any of his family.

Herunto willingly condescended the Damosell, when departing from the Duke, trembling like an shaken lease, she came to the Chamber where Prince Edward was, who was studying how he might break open the doore to reuenge him on them who would come against him: She prostrating her selfe before



besore him, with the teares in her eyes, beginneth thus.

Noble Prince, great is the occasion which I haue now to complaine of fortune, for I hauing brought you into this house vnder a pretext of the extreame loue which my Mistris beareth you, they haue deuised a cruell and most shamefull death for vs all three: for you especially whom the Duke hath surprised with his Daughter, whom albeit he should pardon the hainousnesse of the thing, which he supposeth falsely to haue bene acted, knowing you should die innocently, will pierce her owne bosome with some sword, or else will inuent some new kinde of death, as did Portia, the Daughter of Cato, when she heard of the death of her husband Brutus. As for me you may well thinke, my Lord the Duke enquiring of the head of this occurrence, as he beginneth already to doe most exactly, finding out at last my private practises (which I protest before you I neuer went about to carry to any euill end) I shall be most sharply punished of vs all three: Neuerthelesse, yet if I dye, will I not surcease (as being the onely person of vs three that haue most worthily deserued to die for it) to employ my selfe in some subtille intentions to make vs escape this imminent perrill, so that you will assure me neuer to seeke any reuenge for the offence which hath bene offered you in this place: Wherefore I beseech you great Lord, most humbly to grant me generall remission, to the end that declaring it to the Duke at the time of my death, he may be moued by compassion to pardon me also himselfe: and this is the meanes whereby we may peraduenture save our liues from the mortal punishment which they prepare for vs euery day. So well knew the Damsell to colour her speeches, that she wonne the mercy of the Prince, who answered her thus.

Faire maiden for the loue of Rene, who surely meritteth much more at my hands, I doe willingly pardon this iniurie to the Duke and to all his familie, albeit it is one of the most vilest outrages which might be offered to any knight: And albeit the death which they determine to make vs die be horrible and cruell, yet I should take mine in very good part, if I might execute vpon those varlets who would



lay hands on me, such a massacre as they deserue: Perceiue-  
 lesse seeing the occasion presents it selfe, to auoyd this scandall  
 I am content to follow it, so that no greater damage may en-  
 sue. As my Lord replied the Damsell, I giue you leave to  
 shew your surie on me the very first of all, if ener I bring you  
 into any further perill, with that she kiss his hand, and letting  
 him forth by the same doore he came in at, she conducted him  
 to the Hermitage, where taking leaue one of another, the  
 Knight tooke his way toward the Cloister, being most ioyfull  
 of the vertue of his sword which he had purchased there: but  
 very sorrowfull and pensiue for the words which the Dukes  
 sister told him, which he also saw to haue some relation to the  
 presage of the figures painted vpon his shield. Afterward be-  
 ing arrived at the Abbey after the entertainements & welcom-  
 mings accustomed, taking the two knights whom he had de-  
 liuered a long with him in company, he returned strait vnto  
 the Court of the King his father, who for that he could heare  
 no newes of him was in great heauines and melancholly, the  
 which at his arrivall was all changed into great ioy and glad-  
 nes, when embracing him, he thus began to welcome him.

My deare sonne, I cannot sufficiently wonder how yee de-  
 parted without making me any thing at all p[ro]p[er] to your in-  
 tent. My Lord & father, (answered the young Prince) I beseech  
 you to pardon me, for so much as I was forced soe against my  
 will so to doe, and then he recounted vnto him the brauado of  
 the Damsell in the wood, who carried him after ward to proue  
 his valour in the adventure of the Punnery, where he deliue-  
 red also these two, with the whole discourse of their History.

Whereat all those who heard him wondred greatly: and  
 especially the King his father, who being filled with an un-  
 speakable ioy, welcomed them in the best manner vnto his  
 Court, and with kinde speeches embraced them, whereby they  
 thanking him in most humble manner, bowed themselues ve-  
 ry low to kisse his hand: so that after this royall entertainment  
 they had great honour done them by all those of the Court:  
 who could not be satisfied with beholding them, but did extoll  
 vnto the heauens the inuincible valour of their deliuerer. The  
 Duke



Duke of North-Males, the very same who was at that time Successor to their Father, came to visite them as his nearest kinsmen, with many other Knights and Lords of his blood, wherof they were wonderfull ioyfull, especially to see themselves in the place where they were brought up in their tender age and yet not knowing any one body of all those whom they beheld there. And after they had made some abode in this Court for the love of the King and of Prince Edward his Sonne, so soone as he departed they went their waies also to seek themselves religious men within the Monastery of the Cane, where they bowed the small residue of their liues vnto the seruice of God. The King and all the great Lords of his Court, beheld with much admiration the rich sword, and all the rest of the Princes armes, esteeming the knowledge of the auncient Duke of Borsia to be most wonderfull, who had inuented so cunning masters in his house: where to returne to the Lady Rene, after she saw her hope desperate, she besought her Father to make her a Nunne in the Monastery which had bene cause of her disaster, protesting neuer to loue any other Knight but he: Whereunto her Father easily condescended, because this Abbie was within the Country vnder his obedience, and long before founded by his aunccestors.

In this place the Damsell liuing at her great ease, felt euerie day more and more some accesse of the languishing passion which shee indured for her deare and perpetuall friend Prince Edward: who after hee was Crowned King of England, knowing of the austere life she lead after his refusall, came to see her as farre as the Convent was from him, where hee bestowed great riches on it, for the love of her and of the Abbess, who by meanes of his sword which he left there, remembered his promise.

The English Prince though greatly esteemed of his father, & of all the Lords and Barrons of the Realme, he made small account of that reputation, for that his spirit was rather buied to seeke out the meanes how he might secretly depart to goe follow strange aduentures, by the which hee might finde out her, whom he loued more than himselfe.



In the meane time, hee tooke his chiefest delight, to visite many times her images representation, vnto the which hee discoursed and recounted the extreame affection he bare her, as if he had bene in presence of the liuing creature, and by this meane tooke he some comfort, when vpon a day fortune presented before his eyes a fit opportunity to depart and to goe whether soeuer he desired, which was in this manner. When he was walking vpon the bankes of the Thames nere London, he spied a vessell laden with merchandize arriue, which a rich Merchant of Hungarie accompanied with diners others, had laden together to sell and to traffique, by whom vnderstanding whence the ship was (for he knew long before how the Duchy of Ormeda bordered vpon the kingdome of Hungarie) aduised himselfe that he might secretly depart with this ship, when it should be ready to set saile towards the North.

By this occasion being returned into his Chamber (purposing to get his munition in a readines) calleth assoz a Page of his who was very faithfull, named Clawde, of whom hee demaunded if hee knew not the Master of the ship with whom he had spoken: Who made answere he did: then hee told him further, how hee must needs make a voyage into Hungarie and to Constantinople, about matters of great importance: And because this ship sailed directly into those Countries, hee commaunded him to certifie the Pilot how a Knight who desired to passe into Hungarie, would giue him willingly what he would demaund, if he would speedily make for those parts.

The Prince made no creature priuy to his departure, for that he meant to carry no moze company along with him, but his man Clawde onely, and Maiortes for to make him pastime by the way.

Claudius, thoroughly vnderstanding his Masters minde, went to the ship, where hee concluded with the Master, and appointed the time for their departing, and deliuering him money to prouide necessary furniture, hee returned backe to his Lord and told him all, who was very ioyfull of this opportunity. And as secretly as he could by night hee caused his  
armes



armies to be carried aboarde the ship, with such sea-provision as was necessary for his voyage, and after that the Merchant had made good sale of all his merchandize Prince Edward embarked himselfe with his man Clowde, and his Dogge Maiortes onely.

The King and the Quene missing Prince Edward at their uprising, for he was accustomed to salute them, were in great heaviness for him, and yet supposing he had but absented himselfe from the Court for a while, they comforted themselves herein, being well assured wheresoever he was in the world, hee would make his valour and prowesse knowne. Nevertheless, commanding to seeke for him throughout their whole Kingdome, where being not heard of, they supposed he was travelled into some farre Climate, whereto they prayed devoutly unto the diuine Maieesty to preserve him from all misfortune and distresse.

# CHAP. XXI.

How Prince Edward sayling towards the Coast of Hungarie, he tooke, within a ship of Mores which assailed him, Zerphira Daughter to the Souldan of Persia, whom he sent to dwell with the faire Gridonia, and of her entertainment when she came at the Cloue-Rocken where Gridonia dwelt.



Prince Edward sayling in the North-sea, concealed himselfe as much as hee possibly might, lest hee should be descried of any: but arriuing nere the Coast of Hungrie, there rose a contrary winde to the course they held, so that they were constrained to strike all their sailes, and their vessel going soure dases at the mercie and furie of the tempest, the first day that the tempest began to cease, and the sea began to be calme, they discovered a farre off floating a Brigandine of Mores, within which was Zerphira Daughter to the Souldan of Persia, and to the faire Princessse Zerphira, her whom the Emperour Palmerin loved so tenderly in his yong yeares.



This Lady being sister to Ledeſin, for her rare and great beauty was demanded in marriage by the king of India, unto whom the Soldan ſent her with wonderfull and infinite riches, being accompanied with the brother of the ſaid king of India, a moſt magnanimous and valiant Knight, who came into Perſia ſo accoꝝd the articles of this marriage. Whee as the ſtoꝝme & tempeſt had parted all his other beſſels, came alone toſſed to and fro with the huge waues, when he deſcꝛted the Hungarians to be Chꝛiſtians: Whereupon commanding his Pilots they ſhould put ſoꝝth all their cloꝝth to ſetch in their ſhip, they grappled with them ere long afterward. For all his Marriners were very expert in ſea affaires, and eſpecially in Piracie, as hauing bene all for the moſt part choſen out of the cunningeſt Roners & Pirates which might be found out. The Merchants who perceiued by the flags and pendants of their beſſell, that they were infidels, began to cry out ſoꝝ ayde: whereupon the Prince who heard that noyſe, laced on his Helmet incontinent, and mounted vpon the hatches, where hee found many Moꝝes who had already hurt his Marriners. When he knew they were Infidels, (his courage riſing at an inſtant was redoubled in valour) he began to lay vpon them ſo conragiouſly, that with the firſt blow he hit with his good ſwoꝝd he ſent one into the other woꝝld, ſaying in a great rage, If it pleaſe the almighty to haue pittie on vs this day, I hope you ſhal not make vs ſo ſome priſoners noꝝ ſlaues as ye ween, at the leaſt it will coſt ſome of you deere befoꝝe yee bring our ſeete into the chaines. Which the brother of the Indian King perceiuing, ſoꝝ that he entred then the ſhip, came vpon him with a great bzannery, whom the English Prince receiued with ſome ſhewd ſlaſhes of his ſwoꝝd: and beginning to helo one another in furious manner, ſoꝝ that Prince Edward was moꝝe nimble and better ſkilled than the Moꝝe, putting him out of paine to receiue the triumphant crowne of his ſea-victory, he made him ſpeedily goe giue account of his Paganisme befoꝝe the helliſh Lucifer: For whom the other Knights of his ſeet being very heauy and ſozowfull, came compaſſing him round about to lay vpon him on all ſides.

Then



Then the English Prince knowing hee must either dye shamefully, or defend himselfe from these miscreants, spared none of his force, but like vnto a Bull assailed with many Mastiues, did so drine them all before him, that not one euer could approach him, but hee made him feelee the smart of his sword, remaining dead or wounded, or else forced to lye astonished on the ground: which his good Dog Maiortes perceiuing ran vpon them to teare them in pieces.

The Merchants who thought themselves vtterly vndone, seeing at the first encounter how valiantly Prince Edward behaued himselfe against his aduersaries, ran in Armes to succour him, by meanes whereof they shewed such valour, that within a small while there remained not a Moze within Zerphiracs Barke, who felt not the edge of the sword, and was incontinent throwne headlong into the waves of the sea, which happened to few of the Christians: Prince Edward and some few of the passengers were hurt a little, but had no dangerous nor mortall wound.

Afterwards the Knight and the Master of the Ship being entred into the Mozes Brigandine, they found within a Cabin nere vnto the bottome of the vessell the Lady Zerphira, most sumptuously attired with some other Damosels, pouring forth many strange and lamentable complaints, where aboue the rest one might easily heare the young Princesse, as her amongst them all, whom the disaster of this conflict touched nearest. Peruertbelesse Prince Edward had no sooner espied her, but he iudged the Lady to be issued of great blood, and to be Mistresse of the rest, as excellling them all in beauty, and in brauery, therefore he approached nere to comfort her. But so it was, the one vnderstood not the language of the other, for Zerphira besought him to kill her, as he had done her people, and the Prince intreated her to let him vnderstand something touching her affaires: Whereupon a Marriner (whose life the Knight had saved because hee could speake diuers languages) answered how she was the Soldan of Persiaes Daughter, who sent her then to the King of India, who had demanded her in marriage.



Of this newes was the Prince very ioyfull, especially hearing him say she descended of so illustrious & noble a race, for the hope he had to lend her for a present to Gridonia, in such sort, that causing her to be put in good comfort by the Marri-ner his Interpreter, he commanded him to aduertize her how she was in the power of a Knight, who upon his life would not permit the least dishonour in the world to be done unto her. And the young Princesse being willing to know whether hee were allied by blood to the Emperour of Constantinople, because she would willingly haue made an end of her sorrow and griefe, Prince Edward answered her incontinent, that he was not: Nevertheless, she should not want any thing shee desired, and that hee purposed to send her into a place where shee should finde the greatest content her heart might require.

As accursed and vnsortunate that I am, cried she then out, I doubted greatly that fortune would not be so gentle and so favourable unto me, as to make me fall into the hands of any Knight who were issued out of that so noble and generous race of Palmerin de Oliua: Notwithstanding seeing without doubt it is an ineuitable extremity, I must patiently yield my selfe his humble captiue, beseeching him I may finde so much curtesie in him, as once did my mother in the like accident receaue of the so redoubted Prince Palmerin de Oliua.

Prince Edward hauing vnderstode by the Moore the Interpreter what the Lady said, and accompanied it with so heavy a sigh, he tooke the charge of her himselfe, saying to the Master of the Ship, that of all the booty they had taken, he demanded nothing else for his share but this Damosell. So Prince Edward lead away into his Chamber, the Princesse Zerphira with foure of her principall Damselfs onely, who carried with them their rings and Iewels, giving the rest of the pillage to the Marchant and his companions, then proceeding in their voyage, the Knight called to minde how there were diuers Christians within his Ship, who did him seruice with great reuerence, whereupon mistrusting lest they should know him, hee tooke aside a little the Master of the Shippe, saying,



saying thus vnto him : My friend, I perceiue you know who I am, whereby men may thinke great simplicity in mee to conceale my selfe hereafter : Understand therefore that I departed out of the King my Fathers Court, with an vnspokeable desire to come to see as well the good knights which are in the Court of King Frisoll, as also in that of the Emperour of Constantinople, therefore I must request you not to manifest me to any one, considering that what I doe now is for some good respect : And to the end we may auoyde the inconvenience which might ensue by the enquiry made of me, you shall doe me hereafter the least honour you can, reputing mee but for a simple and poore wandring knight whom you shall call the knight of the Dog, and say I am of some farre Nation to you vnknowne, who wandring through the world to seeke strange aduentures, and arriuing at the King of Englands Court, sojourned there a while with Prince Edward his sonne, with whom I was so well acquainted, that he would haue kept mee there a long time with him, whereby it cometh to passe that I can better speake that language than any other, yea than mine owne naturall tongue : And if ye doe so, I will rewarde you so that you shall thinke it a blessed houre wherein you first met me.

Sir replied the Marchant, you haue already done me more grace than I shall euer be able hereafter to deserue at your hands, which may well assure you, I shall not dare to disclose you, seeing the great care and diligence you your selfe vse, not to be descryed of any whatsoener : And whereas there are others beside in this Marke, who know you aswell as I doe, I will make them all come before you to the end they may promise not to make knowne your name, but when and to whom you shall please.

So it fell out, when they arriued afterward with great gladnesse at Arriace, which was the place of the birth and dwelling of the chiefe Merchant who was owner of the Shippe, being a little very strong and of good defence, situate in the Kingdome of Hungarie, on one side confining with the Countreies of the Souleian of Nicca. There came  
they



they into a Haven, and for the Merchant was rich and had a faire house, hee took the Knight with him into it, who would needs bring along Zerphira with him, leading her by the arme, where they were honourably entertained by the Merchants wife, who at their arrivall understood secretly by meanes of her husband the discourse of the Voyage.

But all those of his ship having purchased by the helpe of the Knight of the dog great riches from the Infidels, the bruit thereof came quickly to the eares of this Lady: who found her selfe at that instant in a wofull case, because King Frisoll went about by his power to take from her this Cittie to fortifie it, as being the next frontier to the Mores Country: And also because her deceased husband had rebelled in his time against Netrides his Father, when after the conquest of this Kingdome hee sought to invest himselfe with the principall Citties, wherein no man gaine-said him, but he onely who died in that revolt.

Under this pretext then sent King Frisoll for this Lady to come unto him, to dispossesse her of the Cittie, promising nevertheless to recompence her in good sort: But she who had but one onely Sonne, as yet a tender youth and under age, would not exchange it for any other Cittie of his Kingdome, as well by reason that hers was well seated for all kinde of commodities, as also for that she saw all her subjects and inhabitants growne very rich and wealthy: Now this Lady having no more but eight dayes remayning when she was to appeare before the King (when Prince Edward arrived at Arriace) and having not as yet found out any that durst appeare to answer for her, she waxed very sad, being in perplexity, knowing not what was best to be done in this case, but when she understood of the promise and magnanimity of the Knight of the Dog bruted abroad, she sent incontinent for the worthy Merchant to come to her Castell, who arrived there soone after, with two hand-maids of Zerphiraes, which fell to his share, whom he presented unto her, and declared unto her as much as you have read before: wherewith she had her minde so troubled, that she lost almost both her sence,  
and



and reason, and therefore she prayed him to moue the Knight to haue some compassion of her wofull distresse. Whereupon he protesting vnto her of a troth the great curtesie and generousnes of Prince Edward, she made no further enquire, but being accompanied with the Marchant and with some of her Damisels, she went presently to him, and falling downe prostrate before him, thus she began.

Renowned Knight, if the affliction of any poore desolate widow, hath ever found place of pittie in your noble minde, I beseech you now vouchsafe to regard mee in the necessity wherein I am. After she had vnsolded the whole matter vnto him, the Prince made her this answer.

Madam, as I am very sorie for your sadnesse and cause of melancholy: So, on the other side I am very glad that so good an occasion doth offer it selfe now, to make you know the desire I haue had ever since mine Infancy, to helpe and succour to my small power all Ladies, who would employ me, and especially those who feele themselves oppressed, and destitute of ayde and counsell. And for this cause will I willingly present my selfe before your King, making him to vnderstand, that corrupting the inuiolable lawes of Justice, hee doth you wrong and great iniustice, to take your Citty away from you by force and authoritie. And if there be any Knight in his Court will maintaine the contrary, I hope shortly to make him confesse it by force of Armes. Thus much he said for that hee knew before how Belcar one of King Frisols Sonnes was lately married with Alderine the Duke of Pontus Daughter, and brought away his wife into Hungary, where vpon that occasion they held great Feasts and Tourneys: so that growing vpon this quarrell in this contention with him, or with the Prince Dutreus, and killing him in single combat hee hoped to doe acceptable service to his Lady Gridonia, being this house nere allyed to that of Constantinople.

The Lady thanking him for this honest and courteous offer, tolde him, that if it pleased him to beare her company, she feared nothing, and that leauing her Sonne vnder good & sure

garde,



garde, she purposed to depart very soone with some number of knights for her safer conduct. Whereunto the knight answered that hee was ready at any time whensoever she pleased. And therefore shee caused good order to be taken for all things which might be needfull in this voyage, desiring before her departure, to get into her possession for the knights sake the Damels of Zerphira, which remained still in the Marchants hands, paying for euery one of them a reasonable ran-some according to their estate.

All that night was Prince Edward very sad, for hee could not resolve with himselfe, whether he should first goe to Gridonia to present vnto her the Lady Zerphira, or whether hee should passe vnto Constantinople, to end the combat with Primaleon. In fine after many resolutions he concluded that with himselfe, which hee put in execution very early on the morrow morning, for he came to request the Marchant his Boast that it would please him to command a sonne of his, called Diazan, to goe doe an errand for him as farre as the Clouen-Rocke, wherein he was more willingly obeyed, than he could command: then went he straight to the Ladies chamber, whom he tolde that he would send her to an excellent Lady who would honour her, and vse her with all courtesie, and he besought her to be willing to goe, hoping to come to visite her there ere long, and to bring her such newes, which should giue her no occasion to repent her going thither.

The young Princesse albeit this offer went nere her heart, answered him neuerthelesse in this manner: Sir, it is great reason, that as your prisoner and captiue I should obey your request without any contradiction, knowing they arise from the sincere and honest loue which it pleaseth you to beare me, albeit I am sure I shall neuer be able to merit it on my behalfe; neuerthelesse I beseech you to cause my Damels to be called hither, vnto whom if it please you I will speake some few words before my departure. Most willingly will I cause it to be done replied the knight: So he caused them to come into her Chamber forthwith, where these young Damosels seeing their Mistresse in strange manner to hate her owne life  
in



in deplozing and bewailing her infortunate disaster, they beganne altogether to make such a strange and pittifull complaint, that the Knight was constrained to separte them, and some after to send away Diazan with the Lady Zerphira, towards the Castell of the Clouen-Rocke, to present her to the Princeesse Gridonia from a knight unknowne, with a letter whose tenour followeth in these words.



Prince Edwards Letter to the Princeesse Gridonia.



**I**n the rarest Paragon of Princeesses, the Lady Gridonia, the onely Phoenix of her time, future Quene of Polonia, and lawfull heire of the Duchy of Ormeda, a Knight who desireth to serue her perpetually, sendeth greeting; kissing with all cortisie the hand of her Excellency. The perfect Idea of your neuer perishing beauty, accompanied with so many other singuler gifts of grace, which the celestiall prouidence doth distribute equally to diuers persons, hath so dimmed the clere seeing eyes of her burning and vnquenchable beames, that the Artizan in portraying of his liueliest peeces helpeth him with your diuine lineatures, as it were beauty it selfe descended into these lower Regions to be scene amongst vs: Such an example scene with mine eyes, besides the testimony of another strange accident, haue (as it were a fatall arrow) so lively pierced my breast, that I can take no rest, but in travelling to aspire vnto that, which should giue me the sweet fruition of so precious a rarenes of fortune: which is onely to reuenge the death of Perrequin of Duas your Cousen, vpon the false traitour and felonious homicide Primaleon of Greece. Continuing which tranquillity of spirit by trauaile of my body, I sailed merrily towards Constantinople, and for the same effect, when by great fortune I met a Brigandine of Mores tossed by tempest of weather in the North-sea, which would haue taken me prisoner: But  
the



the favourable Heauens constraining these mine enemies to passe the edge of my Sword, hath safe-garded and reserved me to the end to be your comforter, and the reuenger of your iust quarrell. For assurance whereof in attending that happy season, I send you in Hostage a Damsell issued of great parentage, whom I found within the Barke of those miscreant Mozes, whom so I pray you to vse and entertaine as you shall know her vertue and Princely demeanour both deserue, as well in regard of the anguish which she shall suffer perceiving her selfe thus captiue, as also in respect of the sincere and perfect amity which she will shew vnto you all her life time.

He who hath not his match in good will to doe  
your Ladiship all dutifull seruice.

So then departed Diazan with Zerphira, and all her iewels, accompanied with many Merchants who conuayed them very willingly, and holding on their iourney, they arrived at the Castle of the Clouen-Rocke, where after they had given Gridonia to vnderstand that there was a Damsell which they had brought her in the behalfe of a Knight. Incontinent the Draw-bridges were all let downe, and the great gates set wide open.

When Diazan tooke the Lady by the hand, to leade her straight into the Chamber of the Princesse, who seeing her so richly attired, and so courteous to doe her honour and reuerence, supposed she must needs be extracted from some high & illustrious Lignage: wherefore she came to welcome and to entertaine her honourably: and perceiving that the Lyon (which neuer stirred from her, began to fawne vpon her, she said aloud, Sister I cannot beloeue, but that this Lyon knoweth you, considering the amiable looks and great entertainment he sheweth you, which as yet I haue neuer seene him doe to any, since he was with me.

Zerphira vnderstood nothing she spake, but stedfastly beholding her excellent & perfect beauty, reputing her selfe most happy to be come into the power and custody of so gentle and

rare



rare a Princeſſe. Neuertheleſſe, Diazan who underſtood her well, ſpeaking for her, ſet one knee on the ground and made this anſwere.

Madame, I beleue indeed your Lyon neuer ſaw this Dame, ſell beſore, becauſe ſhe cometh now from a ſtrange Land, farre diſtant from theſe Countries, but he preſageth the great deſire which the Knight who ſent her vnto you, hath to doe you ſeruiſe, and alſo can iudge of the worth of this Princeſſe, being Daughter to the Souldan of Perſia, ſoſomuch, as the Lyon by nature (as being King among the ſoure-footed Beaſts) doth know perfectly the illuſtrious and royall blond. So hee proceeded to declare the Embaſſage which Prince Edward gaue him in charge to deliuer by word of mouth, beſide the letter which hee had already giuen to her hand, praiſing him in valour & curteſie aboue all the knights to whom the ſoure Elements had euer lent any influence of harmonickall conſtitution: And told her mozeouer, how he cauſed himſelfe to be called the Knight of the Dog, by reaſon of a very great and faire Dog that he carried along with him, which was of ſo good knowledge, that he ayded and ſuccoured him greatly in his neceſſities.

My good friend, replied the Princeſſe Gridonia, I make no doubt but that the Knight of the Dog is both magnanimous and of great proweſſe, ſeing that without knowing me he hath had this remembrance of me, wherein I pray I may haue the fauour, that according to his merit I may returne him his due guerdon and reward, and giue him ſo much power and ſtrength, as by his happy victorie he may chace from my heart the languiſhing and bitter ſorrow which hath ceazed it a long time. And for a teſtimonie of the love and dutie I doe owe him reciprocally, I take and accept this Lady (his preſent) in the place and ſtead of a ſiſter, and a good friend: and ſo will I loue and honour her, as if we were both bozne of one wombe.

For this acceptation and courteſie did Diazan thanke her moſt humbly, kiſſing her hand, then did he interprete to the Lady what ſhe had ſaid: whereat Zerphira bowing her ſelfe



very low, did give her also thanks for her part : and then did Gridonia take her by the hand to make her sit downe by her, praying her to be of good cheare, and to say what pastime she liked ; all which Diazan tolde unto her as well as hee could. When she perceived so much honour done unto her in eating & drinking alwaies with Gridonia, wherewith she greatly comforted her selfe, and drove away all irksomnesse of the place, not that she could in any wise forget her adverse and sinister fortune : Nevertheless, she neuer shewed any evident token thereof, but very wisely dissembled it, wherewith Gridonia marvelled not a little, but much more at her great riches and Jewels which she carried about with her.

Diazan after he had rewarded the Marchants of Arriace with a good summe, sent them away home to their houses, because hee meant to abide there to serve the Lady Zerphira, whom he advertized, by the way, to take heed least she should speake any thing in favour of the Emperour of Constantino-ple to Gridonia, nor to shew by any token or signe that she loved him, or any of his stocke or kindred : Which she, who was wise, took for so good a forewarning, that she was never heard in her presence to speake any thing in commendation of that Family.

## CHAP. XXII.

How the Knight of the Dog presented himselfe with the Lady of *Arriace* before King *Frisol*, who at his entreaty let the widdow alone with her Citie, and how afterwards hee got the best in a Tourney which was held in his Court, and what fell out by occasion thereof.



Diazan being departed with the Lady Zerphira, Prince Edward, and the Lady of Arriace, accompanied with some Knights whom they took for their safe conduct, took their journey towards King Frisols Court, so that arriving there the third day after about evening, the Knight



A knight being in his compleat armour except his head-péece and gantlets onely, led the Lady by the hand, enen vp to the Chamber of p̄sence : For in this place did the King recreate himselfe with his Childzen, and with many other Lords, who were come thither of purpose to see and welcome Belcar, not long time befoze arriued from Durace : And there was besides the Quēne his Mother, accompanied with Esquiuela and Alderine, the wiues of Pitreus and Belcar his two Sonnes, with many other Ladies, sporting themselves together, euery one according to their pleasure. The King seeing the Lady come in, knew p̄sently she was Lady of Arriace, and beholding the physiognomy and honest countenance of the Knight, iudged with himselfe he descended from some high and great linage : when the Lady prostrating her selfe at his fete, thus began to frame her complaint.

Great King, it hath pleased you to summon me to appeare befoze your royall Maestie, to the end that vnder the colour of fortification and assurance of your Kingdome, you may dispossesse me of my towne of Arriace, because it is situate vpon the frontier confining vpon the Mozes, your enemies, from whom ye suppose putting therein sure garde and good garrison, to shut vp all passage that way, and to cut off the hostile invasion which they might otherwile make into your Maesties dominions, wherein I maruell much that you addressse your selfe to me, being but a poore widdow, rather than to any other of your vassalles, to vse such rigour and extremity towards them : considering if you alledge that my Sonne is too young to keepe quarter, and to hold so dangerous a passage, I will answer you, this reason seemeth not sufficient to execute iniustice towards him, but rather ought you as his King and soueraigne Lord, to take him into your protection and safegard. Nor can you finde iustly any fault that my Citie is not well guarded and fortified, seeing I ordinarily keepe in pay a great number of knights and souldiers, who do not neglect their dutie and diligence, aswell in placing Sentinels and Scouts by day and night, within and without my wals, as likewise in maintaining al other things which are requisite



for a frontire towne: besides every one may presume, that in losing of it I should most of all be endamaged, as being deprived of the principall Citie of my demaine, which I will not exchange for any other which you shall offer me in recompence to have it. This I am come to let you understand, hoping to finde some pittie and compassion in a Prince so full of clemencie as you are, otherwise I would never have presumed to have bene so bold to appeare before your presence, assuring my selfe if you cause the charters of your Royalty to be exactly looked over, you shall finde it appertaineth not to you by any bassellage, but hath alwaies bene the chiefe Citie belonging to the whole stocke of mine ancestors.

The King having given good eare to the speech of the Lady, perceined the Knight whom she brought thither came to defend her in her last combate, if she should stand in neede: And so much as hee seemed unto him a very resolute and sufficient man to maintaine her quarrell, which was not grounded on her part upon any light occasion: By reason whereof hee somewhat repented himselfe that hee had caused her to be summoned upon that businesse, albeit to see what the Knight would say, hee made her this answer. Lady, there needeth not many words: doe you determine to render into my hands speedily your Towne; or shall I send to surprize it by force, and give you no other recompence, but that which your Sonne hath inherited from his Father, which is to be a disloyall traitor to his King?

A renowned King, then said the Lady, what is that which these mine eares have now heard? Surely Sir, you may doe your pleasure, because you are our King and Prince, but if I were as good a Knight as I am a woman, I would make good against the hardiest Knight of your Court, that my deceased husband neuer committed any treason in his life. Moreover, if my Sonne be wrongfully deprived of the Citie, which by hereditarie succession appertaineth unto him, we shall have violence and not iustice offered unto us, I will doe iustice, and that which I ought to doe, replied he: and I will see who will contradict me therein. Then Prince Edward

who



who had hitherto remained silent without any word speaking, addrested himselfe towards the King, saying: I cannot but much marvaile of you, O King of Hungarie, hauing heard heretofore the renowne of your ballant and maruailous feates of armes, blowne abroad into the world with perpetuall fame and praise, that ye will now vpon so small an occasion obscure and dimme it. For vnderstanding well the discourse of this affaire, it seemeth to mee that rather vpon some malice and grudge which you haue conceiued against this Lady, than otherwise, vpon any iust and apparant reason you will put her from her right. In so much that I must of fauour intreat you, that you will not suffer your selfe to be carried away with enuie, nor be blinded by couetousnesse, seeing she will sweare vnto you, to be for euer hereafter your loyall vassalle, as heretofore she hath euer bene, and to keepe so strong a garde within Arriace, that you shall not neede to trouble your selfe, but remaine content in all tranquillitie and peace, for that if you refuse this reasonable condition which she offereth you, I shall be constrained to say you doe her wrong, with intention to make it good by single combate against whomsoever would maintaine the contrary. Belcar who was of great courage, standing then by with many other Lords who were present, answered him as it were in choller, Knight, you come very presumptuously and arrogantly into this place, not respecting in what manner ye speake before a King, whom I suppose you gesse hath no children nere him, who dare qualifie your pride: you shall not be denied the combate if you so saine desire it, and the Lady shall sustaine more damage in this her comming with you in her company (for your sake) than she shall get profit.

I know not who you are (replied the Prince) who giue so discourteous language vnto a stranger, vnto whom you ought to harken attentiuely in their demands. Indeede I heard before I came into this Countrey, that the King was both ballant and active in feats of Armes, whom his Sonnes did second and imitate very nere. Nor was I ignorant hee had many other brare knights in his Court, which notwithstanding



standing could not debarre mee from undertaking willingly the protection and defence of this Lady, so that if ye will vpon her quarrell enter the combat with me, I am ready to goe into the field, vpon condition, if you be by me vanquished, the King shall neuer lay further claime to the Lady, nor to none of hers for the Citie of Arriace.

Belcar accepted with a very good will the battell vpon the same condition, and gaue him to vnderstand who hee was. Whereat the Knight of the Dog was most glad: For all this, the King would not hazard his Sonne to perill of death, but commanding him to sit downe againe in his place, told them he would in no wise agree vnto this battell, because he was already resolved to doe that which the Ladies Knight had entreated him to: So that Belcar having seated himselfe againe, in a great chafe, the King turned himselfe towards Prince Edward, with this language. Gentleman, for your sake haue I freed the Towne of Arriace vnto this Lady, conditionally she shall sweare to keepe it safe, with a sufficient garrison of Souldiers able to defend it, & that neither she nor her Sonne shall hereafter be rebels to my Crowne, and that you shall do one pleasure for me beside.

Most willingly will I employ my selfe in whatsoever it shall please you to command me (replied the Prince) so it be not to reucale my name, otherwise repusing the grace and fauour that you haue shewed to this Lady, as if I had receiued it my selfe. Then directing his speech to the Lady, he willed her to kisse the Kings hand, the Assistants who saw how secretly he kept himselfe, not bowing to doe the like, they presumed hee was some Knight descended of high Parentage. In the meane time Belcar and the Englishman were in some contention, but the Queene who took pittie of the Lady of Arriaces teares, besought the King not to procure the death of her Son by this meanes, so that for many respects he gaue the Lady her content, who swore solemnely vnto him to obserue all that he propounded her faithfully: and to send him also her Sonne vnto his house, to be brought vp to serue his Maiessty. King Erikoll requested the Knight to sojourne in his Court vntill the



the next Sunday, to shew him some Chivalrie in a Tourney which should be held there, whereunto he answered he would willingly abide with him, albeit he had great affaires to doe in another place. And hereupon the King commanding they should goe to disarme him in a faire Chamber of the Castell, the Knight thanked him greatly for that courtesie, excusing himselfe that he would not leave the Lady of Arriace. Whereupon the King commanded his Harbingers to see them very well lodged without his Pallace.

Every body stood gazing upon Maiortes the Dog, which Claudius lead in a lease, marvelling much at his height and goodly proportion, amongst whom were many that did much desire to have him; and above all was the Earle of Oregua, a great hunter and chaser in Forrests, was earnest to have him. Wherefore repoting himselfe a hardy Knight, he determined to lay an ambush for Prince Edward to take him away by violence, as you shall understand. But the Lady being a very ioyfull woman to see her businesse have so happy issue, would not depart untill the Tourney were finished, which her Knight also purposed to attend, who in the meane time was sore offended with himselfe that he combatteth not Belcar, because that slaying him in battell, hee thought to doe great pleasure to Gridonia, who hated mortally the partakers and lovers of the Emperour her capitall enemy.

But the King and all the Lords there present, had no other talke but of him, so that Belcar who felt himselfe somewhat displeased hearing all the praise poured upon him, said thus much in all their hearings; The houre approacheth when we shall see what hee can doe: Notwithstanding I marvell much of you my Lord (looking upon his Father) that you suffered your selfe so soon to be overcome with words. I have done it son (replied the King) to prevent the perill of your life, having no better right on my side, and let me heare no more, for good Knights ought to be honoured and maintained by Princes. After this commandement this plea came no more in question, but every one provided to make himselfe brave against the Tourney, attending with an incredible desire to see



how the Knight of the Dog would behaue himselfe. Sunday being once come, the King went accompanied with his Barons, and the Quene attended by her Ladies to the Scaffold, and presently the place of the Iusts was opened. where were many knights both on one side and other, and the Duke of Borfa and the Earle of Oregua held vpon one side, being both very valiant Champions. At the first encounter many knights were seene goe to the ground, then beginning to strike one vpon another edgeling, flailing, and poynt wise, making such noyse as if a crue of Smiths had bene beating vpon their Anvils. But King Frisoll looked about on every side, thinking to know the English Prince, who hearing say that the Skirmish was already begun (supposing some one or other of the Kings Sonnes would be within the Lists) he came thither accompanied with certaine knights of the Ladies: so that seeing the Courtiers at the point of carrying away the victory, he purposed to relieue the feebler side, and putting spurs to his horse, before he brake his Lance, he laid many a knight along, then setting hand to his sword he did marvellous things: By this meanes many Courtiers knew him, who came to proue themselves against him. Amongst others, the Earle of Oregua coming very nere him lent him two sound blowes with his Mace, for which he took sodaine reuenge by one blow which Prince Edward crossed him ouer his Helmet, wherewith being sore hurt he fell to the ground. Surely quoth the King then, who beheld the conflict, I perceiue now that which my heart did presage vnto me, of the prowess of the knight of the Dog to be true, things which euery one my iudges aswell as I, by his honorable feates of armes, which do aduance him far aboue all those of the whole troope. And as he vttered these speeches, behold Belcar and his brother Ditreus entred the lists vnknewne, & for they said they would not be seene in the Tourney that day, to the end to auoid as much as might be the clamor of the bulgar sort, as soone as the Nobility were placed on the scaffolds, they secretly armed themselves to thrust in among the crowd, as being no better than knights onely: where being arrined, Belcar ran his

Launce



Launce couched with great fury against the Knight of the Dog, who seeing him come with such a powder, attended him covered with his shield: whereupon hee received one assault, wherewith had it not bin for the hand of the Armozer, who fatally tempered it, Prince Edward had bin in danger of his life. Then began they to charge one another with invincible courage, nevertheless their conflict continued not long: because the English knight who excelled Belcar in chivalrie, feeling himselfe somewhat moved, lighted so fell a knock upon his Helmet, that he cleft it a two, and wounded him deepe in his head, so that hee was constrained to fall astonied to the ground. When the Prince of Hungarie saw his brother Belcar lie so wounded, and the Courtiers overthrowne, hee ran as a mad man against Prince Edward with so terrible a force, that his blow glauncing within the plates of his ponlozons under his shield, he gaue him a little wound in his arme, but he went not from the place to vaunt himselfe thereof, for the Knight of the Dog reached him two so sound blowes upon his left shoulder betwene his Habergion and his head-piece, that he sent him to keepe his brother company. Afterward he brught his aduersaries in such sort, that he made them all giue way to saue themselves: and seeing himselfe victorious, being very weary, and ouer travelled, hee retired himselfe into his lodging, where he was by the Lady and her Knights disarmed, and his wound carefully looked vnto. Meane while the King, who knew nothing of his sonnes disaster, shewed himselfe to be very ioyfull to see that which he presumed of the Knight of the Dog to be in effect most true: and supposed thereby he had done very well not to graunt his sonne Belcar the combat against him: nevertheless being arrived at the Pallace, & finding them both in so ill pickle, he changed his sodaine ioy into sorrow, saying: Alas, I deserue this well, who did my selfe intreate the knight to attend the Tourney, to procure me this mischief: now let him goe his wayes, and let no man be so hardie as to disturbe and bere him.

The English Prince, vnderstanding how Diereus and his brother were wonderful ill at ease, though the wounds which they



they receiued at his Land, was the gladdest man in the world, for the respect which you haue heard before : and considering how it was not very good to solourne any longer in this court, requested the Lady to take her leaue of the King, and that it would please him to pardon him if he abode no longer there : which she did most willingly, not without great enquiry of the King, to know who her knight might be, wherein the good Lady being not able to satisfie him any otherwise, but that a Merchant of Arriace had taken him into his ship in England as a passenger, she took her leaue of him to returne home to her owne house, towards which the knight of the dog would needs accompany her a good part onward of her way : whereof the Carle of Oregua being aduertized who hated him mortally, for that he had bene dismounted by him in the Tourney : Desiring also with an extreme affection, to get his faire Dog Maiortes from him, encouraged a brother of his, who was both a valiant and a hardy champion, to sake to be reuenged of him, alledging he durst not leaue the Court without incurring great displeasure. He framed so cunning a speech, that he sent his brother after Prince Edward with xx. knights very well appointed and armed, praying him not to assault him, untill he had intelligence by his spies, that he had taken his last leaue of the Lady. And then taking good opportunity they might massacre him, getting into their possession as soone as they could the Dog. They followed him untill the second dayes journey when he took his farewell of the Lady with these faire speeches. Madame, will it please you to excuse me, if I beare you company no further : for having matter of importance to be done in an other part, I see I must needs take my journey thither where my businesse lieth. Moreover, I hope now you shall doe well enough without my aide, being almost at your home, where ye shall lue hereafter in all peace at your hearts ease.

The Lady who saw him speake in earnest, finding her self greatly beholding to him, could not by any entreaty with draw him from his voyage : the which they would very willingly haue done, at the least to haue gotten his company but



but vnto her Citie, to haue feasted him there, and to haue bestowed on him some presents befitting his estate: wherfore taking her leaue with teares in her eyes, she offered him a rich Jewell, which he would in no wise accept, onely he recommended the Merchant vnto her who brought him out of England, vpon whom afterwards for his sake she bestowed many great fauours: so will we suffer her in great ioy & contentment to goe home to her Citie, to tell what befell Prince Edward after he was departed from her company.

### CHAP. XXII.

How Prince Edward vanquished the twentie Knights whom the Earle of Oreguacs brother had laid in ambush to kill him, and to make away his Dogge: and how afterward he was brought by strange aduenture into a Cave, where he dreamed a terrible dreame, and the sequell thereof.



**T**he Knight of the Dog bidding the Lady of Arriace adieu, took his way towards Constantinople, when the Earle of Oreguacs brother who followed him by the sea, had aduertisement thereof by one of his spies, that was alwaies at his elbow: by whose meanes learning perfectly what way he was to passe, he ride a great pace to overtake him by a little path which lead into a wood, hard by which he was to passe: where ambushing his xx. Knights, he went before, to the end that descrying him a farre off he might make him full in the teeth, to make him indure the charge of his ambuscado. In briefe, behold he commeth his soft and easie pace, as he who had a great iourney to make, when the Earles brother, who marched already against him, measuring by his eye how far he had to go to the place of the Ambush, eased a little the pace of his horse, to make him full in the same place: where being arrived he thus began. Knight, is it not you, who now goe from the King of Hungaries Court, with so good pennyworths of the offences & outrages which ye haue there committed: I assure you I will saue you a labour from going far  
this



this wayes to make your baunts thereof. It is I whom it concerneth replied Prince Edward to save you from this reproach of treason which might be laid hereafter in your dish to your shame and dishonour, which I hope to doe at this present by the aide of him, unto whom all iniustice is odious and detestable. With that he came and charged his Lance with such a powder against the Carles brother, that piercing him cleane through the body, he had no neede to call for a Surgeon to dresse his wounds, which the twenty Knights in ambush (who had already compassed him in round that he might not flee from them any wayes) perceiving, ran two or three upon him at once, the one whereof failed his stroke, and winding himselfe aside at the attaint of the other, he hit the third which came creeping after them with such a sound blow upon the pate, that he sent him from his saddle betwene his horse heeles, wherein falling downe he burst his neck.

Then the English Prince, seeing himselfe in extreame danger of life, made choise rather to lose it ballantly, than to save it by cowardly flight, so that in a moment his courage came to him in such sort, that he made his adversaries well know they had sought him out but for their owne hurt: For as a furious Lyon hee made such a bloody massacre of them, as the very grasse being greene before, & now all stained with their goare blood did give sufficient testimony thereof. But whilst he stood so inclosed with a great troupe of them, the rest flew upon his man Clawdus, saying to him, let goe the Dog Rascall, or else thou shalt dye presently. I will let him slip indeede (quoth the Page) but it shall be small for your advantage: Before he had well spoken these words, letting slip one end of the Lease, he let Maiorres loose amongst them: the Dog spying his Master in that perrill, ran so furiously to bite the horses that made front against him, pulling out with his teeth their buttocks and flanks, that they were forced to alight from his backs: Then began he to play the diuel amongst them, fastning his sharpe talues in the places which he saw unarmed, bringing the flesh still away with him, untill the greatest part of the twenty Knights were dead or wounded in the place.



place, the rest betooke them to their heeles as fast as they could run, because Maiortes had made such worke of their hoxses, that they could not stand them in any stead, such was the rage and fury of this Dog, that whosoener had beheld him tearing the flesh of their hoxses, and pulling their armour in peeces, might easily haue remembred the Bractian Dogs, whom they fedde with the flesh and blood of men, to the end to make them more fierce and eager against their enemies.

Prince Edward for his part receiued but two or three little wounds, so cure which he went into a little City not far from thence into a rich Surgeons house, who bled him very respectiuelly during the time of his mallady, which lasted but few dayes, because none of his wounds were dangerous at all, but being healed and closed vp, he purposed to betake himselfe againe to his former iourney with his man Clawdus & Maiortes his good Dog, whom hee loved and made more account of than before. Already was the greatest part of the day spent, before Prince Edward had made an end of the conflict which you haue heard recited, wherof the Earle of Oregua being aduertized by one of those who saued himself by his heeles, hee was ready to die through rage and despight: and causing the bodies of his Brethren and the other flaine Knights to be enterred, could not tell how to conceale this ignominious oversight (as in like case the true Judge of all, doth permit such hainous disloyalties to be quickly made knowne) but the bruit came to the Kings eare: Who forthwith imprisoned him as a transgressor of his commandement, thereby to manifest vnto the world his own innocency in this treason, considering the coniectures which might be gathered by the hard measure which his two wounded sonnes receiued at the hands of this stranger: Which deed if it caused him to be highly honoured throughout all his Kingdome, no lesse did euery one commend the prowesse and valour of the Knight of the Dog, who being recovered of his wounds, as ye haue lately read, tooke leaue of his Host to prosecute his intended voyage. And travelling five dayes space along the sea Coast, on the sixt he entred into a forrest, and found not all that



that whole day any Cabbin or Tent wherein to make his repose, but one onely olde house where some shepheards had set vp a lodge covered with thatch, so that he was constrained to lodge therein all that night with Claudiu his Page, who led along with him his Dogge: neuerthelesse before any sleepe could close vs his eyes, he saw from a corner wherein he was couched vpon a little straw, comming into that homely Cell, two goodly yong Stags, casting forth of their eyes an admirable glittering, whom as soone as Maiorres espied, he started vp forthwith, as if he would haue rusht vpon them furiously. But it fel out to the contrary, for they went out againe all three one after another, as quietly as if they had beene brought vp in one house together all their life time: so that the Prince no lesse astonished with this new accident, than desirous to see the end which would follow thereof, went forth of the Sheepe-coate for the same purpose, and beholding the three beasts run very louingly and quietly into the wood together, he said. Aluredly, it would much bere me if I should lose in this sort the Dogge, which I haue heretofore so well kept: therefore Claudiu bring me my horse, that I may goe after to save him if I can. He had not scarce spoken the word, but the Page was come with his horse, vpon which mounting he was sone in the same way which he saw they had taken: and albeit he galloped amaine, yet could he neuer overtake them, and neuerthelesse he neuer lost the sight of them. So that following them all night long, being very glad to see them trip so louingly together before him, yet was he far more ioyful when he perceiued them hide themselves within the narrow mouth of a Cane, where he being arriued, leauing his horse with his Page who followed him, entred in presently after them with his good sword in his hand. So far went he within that darke hole vnder ground, that he at the last drem nere to a goodly rich Pallace, opening hard vnto a most pleasant garden, planted round with all sorts of fruit trees: betwixt which he saw many channels running with cleare streames, comming all forth of a most sumptuous and magnificent fontaine, whose basen of fine Jasper stone, was supported by three Harpies of  
 Diemall



**O**rientall Chrysolite. There Prince Edward encouraged himselfe to go on: and as he went a little further, he found vnder a Pavillion of cloth of Gold, a most beautifull & goodly Lady sitting betwix the two Stags, and his Dog iust ouer against her: of whom the Knight being, before them immediately was made a wonderful Metamorphosis, for they became two yong men, very richly attired, vnto whom the Prince drawing nêr, being greatly amazed of that sodaine transmutation, they began to shew great reuerence vnto him, and the Lady by and by fell vpon her knees, saying: Noble Knight, by the thing yee loue best in this world, we beseech you pardon vs, if with this trouble and discale of minde we haue caused you to come so farre, for it hath not bin without good occasion, considering the long time wee haue attended you heere: And yee may be vndoubtedly assured not to suffer any euill in this place, rather we shall serue you here as him, who ought to be obliuious vnto vs, that which God and nature had for vs after the death of our father. Behold heere your Dogge whom my Brethren brought into this place, not to the end to steale him from you, but to cause you onely to come into this place. Prince Edward hauing heard the Damselfe speake, whom in the meane time he tooke vp from the ground by the hand, appeased his choller, and answered her thus.

**M**adame, assuredly I was in very great care, fearing to lose this Dog, which I loue more than ye can imagin: notwithstanding, standing seeing I haue recovered him, I pardon you willingly wherein soeuer you say yee haue offended me: and if yee can deuise whercin I may imploy my best indenours to doe you good in that which they detain from you wrongfully, I shall as willingly doe it, as any Knight whom ye may finde within the circute of the Horizon, or in the whole center of the world. When the Damselfe thanked him most humbly, and taking him by the hand, lead him to sit downe by her in a Chaire, where the two yong men disarmed him: then brought they him out victuals to breake his fast, and (after he had well eaten and satisfied his hunger) they prayed him to lay downe his head vpon a rich pillow, which they laid for him vpon the side of a seat, there



there to repose himselfe, which he did willingly, being very weary with the travell which he had endured the night before wherein he neuer slept winke. The Lady couering his legs with a Scarlet Mantle furd with Woluerings, he fell asleepe presently, & in the meane time the two brethren went to fetch Claudius, who staled with his Horse looking for him as yet at the mouth of the Cane. After that the English Prince had slept a while, hee awaked sodainely out of his sleepe, being sore affrighted with a terrible dreame which he had dreamed: It seemed to him to arriue at Constantinople to besiege Primaleon, where entring into the City he met a Lyon, and a fierce Lyonnesse, issued forth and ramped against him, tearing away the forepart of his Vanbergion, so that making a wound bigger and bigger in his brest ins against his heart, it seemed to him that his soule did presently depart out of his body. And as he thought, beside that, the Lion and he being furiously in fight together, hee could in no wise preuaile to vanquish, nor defend himselfe from him: Which caused him in a great fright to start out of his sleepe, saying: I trust I shall receive no shame or dishonour in the battell which I hope to haue against Primaleon: with that Olymba rose vp (for so was the Lady called sitting at his side) saying. Sir I know not what may giue you occasion to awake so sorrowfull if it be not some dreame, which ye know better than I, men account but false, and abscine imaginations: for when they should preface and foretell to credulous persons some token of suture occurrences, ye are not ignorant that the noble and generous mindes must passe through many strange and hard aduentures: you say true Madame, replied the Knight, seeing that to finde you in this place with your Brethren lately transformed, I reputed a thing most strange and merueilous: wherefore I beseech you declare vnto me the whole discourse, Sir, replied Olymba, most willingly will I obey you in this request since that it pleaseth you to vnderstand our great disaster.

Know ye, that we are all three children of the deceased Souldan of Nicea, the same who dyed by the most disloyall and tyrannous



tyrannous mischance that euer was heard of : for this good  
 prince our Father, being by nature meeke and gentle, loved  
 most dearely a yonger brother that he had, called Gelon, who  
 neuer shewed him any part of reciprocall loue againe, for  
 from day to day he sought all meanes to kill him, to enstate  
 himselfe wholly with his estate and Welgnoyes, which fell  
 out unhappily, as they were both together hunting abroad :  
 For my father vpon a time making an assembly neare vn-  
 to a thicke brake, wherein his hunters had enclosed a great  
 wilde Boare, and spread the toyle about it, to shew him some  
 pastime, the traptour seeing himselfe neare to my father, with  
 thre or foure onely of his faction, as he espyed him in a strait  
 passage, beset euery way round about with thicke bushes (by  
 which way he doubted the boare would issue) he thrust at him  
 behind his backe a very sharpe Iaueline (which he carried in  
 his hand) with such violence, that it ranne him cleane thorow  
 the body, being constrained at that very instant to fall from his  
 horse backe to the ground, in the selfe same place : so that the  
 Boare comming foaming and grinding his teeth in furious  
 manner, tore and rent in peeces the carcasle already dead, the  
 cruell murderer our Uncle, making the world beleue how  
 the Boare had slayne him, and would haue done the like to  
 him, had he not shifted himselfe a litle aside : yet some hun-  
 ters who saw very well the contrary, durst neuer open their  
 mouthes, so much they feared lest some mischief would be  
 done them, if they should make any speech thereof. This la-  
 mentable murder being committed, he went strait to Nicca,  
 where inuesting himselfe with the whole Cūare, in lesse then  
 fiftene dayes he proclaymed himselfe Soldane, without any  
 contradiction, my brethren and I being too little to resist so  
 damnable a creature: and yet for all that the cruell and blou-  
 dy minded monster would haue slayne vs then in our youth,  
 had it not ben for the aide of a Knight called Osmaquin, very  
 learned in Art Magicke and Negromantie, who by the ver-  
 tue of his secret Philosophy did fore-tell to our father, that he  
 should take heed of Gelon his yonger brother, vnto whom he  
 gave no credit, whereby this mischief hapned vnto him. But



the good old man as soone as our father was deceased, conducted vs thre into this place, where by means of his knowledge he built these goodly magnificences which you see, and dwelt here about foure yeares, bling vs as his owne children; but at the end of that terme, he fell into a grievous and contagious mallady, with the which fearing to infect vs (knowing assuredly he should then die) would not in any wise we should frequent nere him: but vpon a time, feeling himselfe at the very last extremity of his life, he caused vs to come before him, saying: My children, sorrow ye not for my death, seeing that God being pittifull and mercifull, will remember you before it be long: For a Christian Knight issued of royall blood, reuenging the death of your father, shall re-establish you in the goods which are wrongfully detained from you, and you shall know him by a faire Dog which he hath, being farre better than he is supposed to be, insomuch as it is a man, and a very valiant Knight. In the end, he commanded vs hauing once met you, to passe with you to Constantinople, where he foretold vs you should receiue a wound in Combat, whereof you should neuer be cured all your life time, albeit it should be to your honour and immortall renowne. For the better direction of which voyage, and to auoid all shipwrack in this navigation, he told vs we should find a frigot ready rigged with all things necessary not farre from this place: then giuing vs many other wholesome admonitions, for want of his breath which began to faile him, he yelded his soule vnto him who demanded it, in this same place. Now my brethren haue issued forth diuers times, to see if they might finde you, and now I reioyce it is not in vaine, because the Dog which Ofmaquin told vs of, makes me beleue all the rest will proue as true as this. You recount to me great matters (quoth the Knight then) I pray the Heauens heartily they may haue a happy end, that I may reuenge you of so foule a treason: Mine aduice being to goe as soone as may be towards Constantinople, where the great affection I haue to see the aduenture which is reserved for me, maketh me thinke euery houre a yeare. Then the yong men bowing themselves very low



to do, and doing their obeysance to the Knight, thus spake to him. Noble Prince, Since by fadall destiny it falleth to your hap to relene vs out of this misery, we hope also our valour will be some moze advantage to vs, in receiuing the order of Knighthood from your hand, which I do humbly kisse at this present, quoth the Elder called Mosderin, in remembrance of the perpetuall seruice which you shall alwayes haue at mine hands: the like did the yonger, named Bellager. Prince Edward embraced them both, & was very glad to see Claudius his Page there also, that he might make moze spede away: So, comming forth of the Cauer, he mounted the Lady behind himselfe, and Mosderin vpon Claudius horse, and his Page behinde him (for Bellager would goe on foote) so they began faire and softly to set forthward throught a forrest. And because they could not that euening reach the Sea coast, they rested within a wood, in a very thicke place, all couered and beset with trees full of leaues and greene boughs, where the knight could not sleepe one winke, so much was his minde troubled thinking of Maiortes, whom the damsell had told him to be a man, and of the other things which Osmaquin had prophesied of him, which did all iampe right with the imagination of his dreame: wherein, till day, his thoughts were still occupied: then they remounted on horse backe, and marching along the Sea coast, they came at last to a little Creeke lying betwene two rockes, where they found the frigot at an anchor, wherinto they went all aboard.

In this vessel were two little Chambers eyther of them garnished with a fine bed, and with whatsoeuer provision was requisite for such a voyage: therein was also found two rich Armors barnished blacke, with two very faire swordes for the young Gentlemen, which Osmaquin had layd in that place before he died, together with much treasure of the Soldane their father, foreknowing well by meanes of his Art, what would ensue after their fathers decease. So soone as the young men spied these Armours, they besought Prince Edward to arme them Knights before they set sayle, wherunto hee most willingly condescended: and causing them to



endosse the Armour, he buckled on the spurres unto them both, and gyrded both their swords unto their sides, giuing them the gentle accolade, with these kinde speeches; I pray the Heauens to make you as good Knights as your Aspect and Physiognomy both prognosticate, that the prowesse and valour which shall hereafter apparantly procede from you, may deface the want of this act, not accomplished according to the ceremonies requisite in the honour of Chivalry.

When they had thus receiued the order of Knighthode, they hoysed sayles, and without ener setting eye of any other ship, they rowed so long, as that within a while they found themselves in the maine Sea: where the Lady Olymba was so glad, seeing her two brethren knighted, that she could not giue so diligent attendance vpon Prince Edward. So that sayling with a prosperous and a calme Sea, they came to rest within the coast of Thrace, whence Prince Edward descriing Constantinople a great way off, his heart beganne to rise, not knowing what fortune would befall him in that Citty. And so, that he would not directly put into the Haven, they anchored in a little gulfe about some five miles off, where neuer ships vsed to ride, and yet thither banded some poore Fishermen, who dwelt not farre off.

As they were all gotten on shoare: My friends, quoth Prince Edward to the young Gentlemen, I must of necessity goe vnto Constantinople, where I do hope to haue the combate graunted mee against Primaleon of Greece, sonne to the Emperour Palmerin, for in dede for none other cause am I come into these climates: wherein if Fortune so much fauour me, that I may escape with my life, I promise you to be here againe shortly, to aide you with all my power: and if I die, ending my life in this combat, heauens graunt you may speedily recouer your estate and possession. Therefore my aduice is, that you abide here to accompany the Lady your sister, for I am determined to passe thither alone, as I came when you first found me out.

When Olymba heard the Prince speak in this maner, she began to fetch a deep sigh, saying: Ah noble sir, heauens forbid



forbid your death should be so todayne, I hope assuredly, you shall returne victorious in this battell, therefore trouble not your selfe with any of these thoughts and cares, but have your trust in God onely, who shall be your protector. When Bellager interrupting this her speech, requested the knight that he would not for any thing in the world abandon him, whereby he might not see the end of this combate, so that he must needs goe along, and Mosderin, who would sayne have made the same voyage, was fayne to keep his sister company: where we will leave them to bring the two knights unto the Citty of Constantinople.

### CHAP. XXIII.

How Prince *Edward* being arrived in *Constantinople* to defie *Primaleon* vpon the death of *Perrequin* of *Dnas*, found himselfe surprized with the amorous and gracious beauty of the Lady *Florida* the Emperours daughter: and how he and *Primaleon* fighting afterward a Combate at all extremities, were by her parted, and what fell out thereupon.

**P**rince *Edward* and *Bellager* having taken their way to *Constantinople*, had not travelled above two miles, but they met with many knights who were walking abroad in the fields: For this place being very pleasant and of great recreation, the Emperour would needs shew some pastime of hunting to *Torques sonne* unto *Toman* of *Griesca* and of *Romata*, him whom hee had before deliuered out of the hands and dangerous assaults of the *Souldan* of *Persia*. This *Torques* a most gallant Gentleman and very active in feats of Armes, pricked on with the spurre of vertue to win renowne among the best knights, bearing every day such high commendation of those in the Emperours Court surpassing the most valiantest knights in all Europe and Asia, he besought his father vpon a time, he would giue him leaue to goe thither to see them.



Whereunto he most willingly gaue his consent, and the rather because the good Prince Palmerin was one of the greatest friends he had, a thing which might easily be iudged by the sumptuous and honourable entertainment which he made his Son at his arrivall, unto whom Primaleon opened the secret gates of his amity, loue, and faithfull friendship, in such sort, that they were neuer shut unto him after wards.

Now by this time Prince Edward being come iust to the place where was pitched the Emperours Tent (who was then walking abroad with his Emperesse along by a little fresh streame which was very nere unto that place, Primaleon and Torques, with the Lady Florida, & diners other Ladies walking after them) was somewhat amazed for a time; but at the last he asked a Squire who it was.

Sir (quoth hee) it is the Emperour of Constantinople, who came hither yesterday to take his disport and pleasure in the Chase: Accompanied with the Prince of Griesca, who arrived but this other day within his Court. And if you be a stranger in this place (as it seemeth to me you are) I will presently shew you the Emperour if you know him not, and behold where he is himselfe in person walking with the Emperesse.

Right ioyfull was the knight of the Dog to behold the Emperour, and approaching nere, he did not alight at all from his horse, to shew that he came not to doe him any service. But a little he bowed himselfe to his horse mane, saying: Sir, of your fauor I would request you, it may please you to shew me if Primaleon your Sonne be in this troupe or no, for that before you I will desse him vpon the death of a knight whom he treacherously slew in his tourney. Aye me (quoth the Emperour, then being somewhat offended) when will this demand haue an end: I tell you knight, that both you and all these who shall come to take this reuenge, seeme to me ill aduised, since the truth of the act is so manifestly knowne. But the Prince who saw him speake thus in choller, being not able to containe within his heart the burning zeale which prouoked him so farre, he was forced to reply vpon his former words,



words, thus : Sir, I did not thinke to receiue so sharpe an answer from so benigne and courteous a Prince as you are, neuerthelesse to vse no superfluitie of speech, you shall know from me, that if Perrequin of Duas haue not bene yet anenged, the small courage of those who came hither for that purpose hath bene the cause thereof, as I hope ere long to shew you, if you will grant mee the combat against your Sonne. I will see, replied the Emperour, what you can performe moze than others who haue entred the field vpon this quarrell, whom I iudge as expert knights as your selfe.

At that word Prince Edward thought great scozne, and at that time, Primaleon and Torques, who led betwixen them faire Florida by the hands, arrived at the place where this expostulation was made, and comming in the same manner all three nere vnto the knight, Primaleon who knew what the matter was before, saluted him thus. My friend, I am Primaleon, would you any thing with me : I sought but reuenge, replied the English Prince, for the death of Perrequin of Duas, whom ye slew cowardly. It sufficeth (quoth the Constantinopolitan) hereupon you shall haue the combat with me, which shall not be deferred any longer, than till I can arme my selfe : For Heauen forbid that such stains and reproaches imposed to mine honour, should ener be deferred to farther dispute, and longer procelle of time to decide them. O heauy hap sayd the Lady Florida, what unreasonable defiances are these : I neuer heard of any demand moze impudent, and moze inconsiderately propounded than this, since that so often the truth hereof hath bene tryed, as every one can tell, and I can not imagine what other good on those knights pretend to haue, who come to reuenge this death vpon my brother, but onely to end my dayes, without any shew of other honest reason. Shee ending her exclamation, turned towards Prince Edward her faire eyes, bedewed with teares, which distilled from them, through the vehemencie of the anguish which she felt in her breast, seeing her brother whom she loued as her owne soule, so chafed, and so earnest to performe the battell. The gracious and pittifull regarde



of these two glittering starres, wounded in a moment, the heart of the Knight in such manner, that losing almost all sense, he cleane forgot Gridonia also, and the passion of this his Greene and new wound was so vehement, that he found no Physician who could vnderstand the methed of his cure, except the very same from whom his wound was inflicted. Alas, what might he then doe? Surely, willingly would he haue desisted with his honour from this battell, onely to the end to haue done some acceptable seruice to the Princess Florida, whereby to haue gotten some accessse to be neare vnto her. But what, Primaleon his aduersary departed to the end to goe arme himselfe, and the Lady more than his mortall enemy (for without dying, all her forces failed her, and her very sinewes did shrinke for feare) He retired her selfe incontinent with the Campeesse into her tent. Alas, the poore desolate louer remayned as it were ranshed and in a trance, thinking vpon the dreame which he had within the cane of Osmaquin, and on the words which Olymba had told him: Likewise he called to minde the two figures pictured vpon his shield, and of that which the Duke of Borsaes sister, and the Peasant in the wood had forewarned him of. All these things comming into his imagination, made him so perplexed and irresolute, as he could not tell what to doe. It seeming vnto him, that some of these things whereof hee was so many times forewarned, beganne to be true indeede. And on the other side, considering the high renowne of Florida, and from whence she descended, he sawe many reasons which did inuite him to loue her above Gridonia, whom hee had not as yet euer seene, nor promised any other thing but onely by his Letter to combat Primaleon, to do her seruice, to that he sayd within himselfe: O you vncontrouled deuentres, admirable are your euents? Who is able to overthrow the things which are by you established? Certainly, nothing Creature. But if I may atchiene the fruition of mine vn hoped for desire, which hath now assayed me, I shall haue none occasion to complaine of Fortune: Wherin (to make my first assay) eyther I will suffer my owne selfe to be



he vanquished in this combat, or else I will imploy all the forces which nature hath now lent me, to overthrow Primaleon, and it behoueth me to doe my best, least I appeare to be of small valour in presence of so faire a Lady, for if it be in my power to kill her brother, and I for her love save his life, shall I not thereby purchase her grace and amity? Thus while the knight of the Dog had these imaginations in his head, Primaleon who had made hast in arming him self in Constantinople, returned mounted upon a courser, when the Emperour mitigating his sodaine indignation against the knight, began to view him better, and iudging by his very looke some excellent thing in him, commending him highly, and Ballager likewise who accompanied him thether: then casting his eye toward Cladius and his faire Dog Maiortes, marvelled much more what he was, so that Primaleon being arrived, the Emperour his father vied this speech vnto him. Sonne, take heed ye behaue your selfe valiantly in this battell, for your enemy seemeth to be both magnanimious and generous. My gracious Lord and Father, replied Primaleon, it shall stand him then in good stead, seeing he commeth to sustaine a quarrell so vniust and repugnant to all reason. Then the Emperour who saw them both in a readines to doe their deuotres, commanded the Earle of Rhedon Captaine of his Pensioners, that assembling all his Guard with their halberts, he should make a round in forme of a close field, wherein none should dare to stir from his place, nor speak any word: & so was there made a great circle furnished with the guard standing arme in arme one by another, except on that side of the Emperours tent, to the end both he & the Emperesse, & their daughter, might easily behold this combat. The Dukes Eustace and Ptolomey were appointed for iudges, who brought them both within the lists, and equally without any fauour distributed to them the Sonne. Then placing themselves at the one side of the circle, & causing the words of the assault to be giuen by the Herald, the knights, who had great desire to come together, displaced themselves to fetch their carrere as fast as they could gallop one at another, with so great a violence, that the very earth seemed



to shake vnder them at their encounter, which was such, that breaking their Launces one against the other, they went both roundly ouer their bozle croupers to the ground, either of them being wounded a little. But the desire to banqueth & the shame they receiued in being both cast out of their saddles, (Primeleon before Torques, and prince Edward in presence of Florida, whom hee imagined had still her eye vpon him) made them make quicke speed to recover themselves, and imbracing with an inuincible courage their shields, they began a most fierce fight with their swords, being right exquisite & singular good. Wherewith belabouring each other hotly, in a short space they covered the ground round about them with the peeces of their shields, and with the broken plates of their armour, so that at euery blow they stroke, they neuer lighted on any place or touch, but presently the blood followed to the ground, the beholders affirming they neuer saw the like cruell combat, doubting still who should beare away the victorie.

The two knights having a long time buckled thus together without perceiuing any vantage one of another, felt themselves very feeble, by reason of the great heate which they incurred vnder their harnes, and also for the small intermission they tooke to continue this hot and fearefull fight of their first assault. Wherefore they returned from choler, to repose and breath themselves a while, when the emperesse seeing her sonne in so euill a case cryed out to the Emperour, saying: Alas my Lord, what a disastrous mischiefe is this? Will ye permit that I beholde the mortall issue of so tragicke a spectacle? As heauens forbid, for if Primeleon die, I shall presently beare him companie: If then either lone of a childe or a wife may finde any place in the heart of a father & husband, I humbly intreate you haue pittie on vs both, considering the great danger wherein he is now, and the extreme anguish which I feele, which ye may some remedie, by praying them to proceede no further in this their deadly fight. Willingly would I accord, quoth the Emperour, were it not for the shame and dishonour which thereby would fall vpon my head, for the world would then say, I had done it expressly fearing my sonne should be overcome



ouercome in the battaile: albeit I perceiue no signe of advantage that the one hath ouer the other, assuring you that by the death of two so valiant knights, the world should receiue great losse; rather let your daughter Florida goe to intreate them, for her sake that they would end and desist this combat, and doubtlesse I suppose they will sooner surcease it for her than for any other, and by this meane shall I auoid the slander of being tared thereof by mine enemies.

Scant had the Emperour spoken these words but the Emperes who seemed greatly to feare the death of Primaleon, for this effect sent the Lady her daughter, accompanied with many damels, who comming with all speede vnto the knights who began their assault more furiously than before, called vnto them aloud. Stay your hands my Lords, stay I beseech ye, & heare me a little what I would intreate ye to doe for me. Then Prince Edward seeing her before him who had wounded his heart, could not lift up his arme to strike a blow, feeling himselfe bereft againe of all his forces, which caused him to retire backwards a little, when Primaleon chafing with indignation against his sister, spake to her very hastily: Sister Florida, what meane ye: get ye gone from hence presently, and let vs pursue our assault, for I will die in the place, or I will make him die who hath put me to this plunge. Deare brother, replied the Lady, I beseech ye aboue all fauours that ye will euer do me, desist the desire ye haue to finish this combat, wherein I thinke your enemy so currions, that he for his part will be content to agree for my sake. Then turning toward prince Edward, Noble Knight, quoth she, albeit I know my selfe of smal merit, yet must I needs request yee by the duty ye owe to knightdome (which is to haue compassion of all Ladies) and by the zeale and sincere affection ye beare to her whom ye loue most, to absolue your aduersarie as touching this difference, which I may no longer indure to behold so bloudily tried betwene ye, so inuincible seemeth vnto me the high valour and extreame prowesse of ye both. And if for my sake ye doe any thing herein, I shall haue cause to say, I haue found more fauour and curtesie in a stranger, than in mine owne naturall brother:



brother : which shall not be without reward, when it shall please, ye to employ me in any thing wherein I may manifest my good will to requite this undeserued curtesie at your hands. The knight seeing with what grace his sweet enemy intreated him, reputed himselfe more than happie by this opportunity to finde meanes to doe some thing which might please her, so that he framed her this answer : Madame, ingratfull and boide of all worth, should I be, if I should denie so faire a Lady as your selfe the thing ye demand of me, wherefore for your sweet sake, who deserue much more then may euer come from me, I absolute Primaleon of the controuersie for which we entred the combat, or else exceeding my selfe banquished by him, I giue him the honour of the battell.

Kepe it for your selfe, quoth Primaleon then, for since it is not mine by right, I will not touch my selfe therewith. Wherefore sister Florida get ye hence speedily, or ye will make mee shew my selfe discourteous towards ye, for I will not haue this knight to make his vaunts how he brought mee to this bay. Doe then your pleasure replied the Lady, neuertheless I will neuer giue way that ye shall strike one another any more, because too lamentable will be the end of this battell if ye be let alone. Hap what may, quoth Primaleon, we will finish it now, seeing we haue begun, and with that he approached to his enemy, vnto whom hee let vntoe a puissant blow, which he warded with his shield, for all which he neuer put hand to his sword to strike againe, or to reuenge himselfe, which the Emperour perceiuing, departed from his pavillion in great indignation against his sonne, whom he came to pull by the arme out of the field saying : What indignitie doe ye make your sister intreat, refusing her a thing which a knight of a strange Countie (who neuer saw her before) hath with all curtesie granted her ? This act in my opinion, is not heroicall and laudable but base and ridiculous : Goe and disarm your selfe quickly, and know ye haue highly displeased mee. And ye sir knight withdraw your selfe on Gods name whether it shall seme best vnto ye, and soy to haue purchased this day so great reputation at my handes, ( as well in feats of arms,



armes, as in courtesie) above all the knights I ever saw.

Wonderfull glad were the Spectators of this worthy act of the Emperour, & doubtles prince Edward himselfe knew full well already the force and dexterity of his enemy, whom the two Judges were faine with all their might to leade out of the field into his tent to disarm him. But he was in such a rage and extreame madnesse with himselfe, that doe what ever they could, in an houre they were not able to apply any plaister vnto his wounds. And in the meane time the faire Princesse Florida withdrew her selfe towards prince Edward, to the end to paye him many thanks for the great love and favour he had shewed her, presenting him many worthy offers, and amongst other spake to him these few words. Brave knight, I haue found such courtesie in you, that whilst my soule shall make habitation in this passible bodie, I shall remember the great grace ye haue shewed me this day: for con- digne thanks due vnto ye therefore, the heauens graunt me so much fauour that some occasion may present it selfe vnto me, wherein I may haue meane to testifie that in effect, which I cannot in words sufficiently explaine vnto you. Longer would she faine haue discoursed with prince Edward, (for loue discovered already both to the one and the other a fatall li- king) if the Emperesse had not gone her selfe to see her sonne dressed, by meanes whereof she giving him a gracious fare- well (such at the least did he interpret it) take her leaue of her sweet louer. Who seeing her depart so on a sodaine from him, without any leasure to answer her, was so perplexed as he knew not well what to doe nor say, vntill that his page Clau- dius and Bellager coming towards him brought his horse; as it were awaked out of a sound sleepe, he mounted inconti- nently on horse backe, taking backe the same way to the place where he left Olymba & Melderin: as he trauelled thither, Bel- lager who was no lesse astonished of the bloody battell which he saw him fight, then of his great valour and prowesse, as they were on their way, spake to him in this manner. Sir you haue shewed at the request of the princesse a great token of your milde disposition towards Primaleon. Companion  
quoth



(quoth the p<sup>r</sup>ince) I know not what I should answer thee, but that he is one of the most valiant and skillfull knights I euer sawe in my life, nevertheless much more did the delicate beauty and the eloquent tongue of the Lady his sister brye me, than did his heavy and sound blowes, or all the skill of his fight, whereby he can so advantageously helpe himselfe. Bellager hearing the English p<sup>r</sup>ince speake with so great affection, began to smile a little, when he prosecuted his point, saying: Surely I beleve the cruell wound which Osmaquin prophessed you should receive there, is indeede no other thing but the extreame beautie of the p<sup>r</sup>inces, which I should never have imagined to have him so rare, had I not seene her with mine eyes. Then Prince Edward saying further that nature had made her so matchlesse a paragon onely to plague him, prayed him to w<sup>a</sup>sh by his wounds a little, (for he lost much blood) which he and Claudius did as well as they could, untill they came to their lodging where they arrived very late, for whom Olymba and Molderin were in great griefe, knowing not well what was become of them, or what successe they had. When afterwards they sawe Prince Edward, they entertained him with unspeakeable joy, asking him many times how he did: Ah Madame, quoth he, better had it bene for me neuer to have stirred from hence this day, for so much as I have seene a thing which hath cruelly wounded me, nay rather hath brought me into more than a mortall martyrdomme. Take no care for that replied the Lady Olymba, because she who hath wounded you, shall her selfe apply the true and soveraigne plaister to your griefe. With that she disarmed him with her owne hands, then spreading singular b<sup>r</sup>uantes which Osmaquin left her, upon his wounds, she caused him to lay him downe in the richest bed within the Frigot, where he slept soundly, not without great neede: and in the meane time Bellager recounted the successe of the battell unto his brethren, commending him highly. In fine, advising with themselves what they were best to doe, according to the ordinance which Osmaquin had left them, they sayled with so good a gale all that night, that about day they found themselves



selues in Morania, a citie situate within the seigniorie of the  
 souldan of Nicea, where dwelled at the same time a brother  
 of the wise Osmaquin, a very gallant knight, and the princi-  
 pall man in that place, whereof the princeesse Olymba being  
 very glad, she went as soone as she was vp, to visite prince  
 Edward, demanding of him how he did. Very well madame  
 quoth he, of all my outward wounds, but very ill in one which  
 I haue inward. There will be as well remedy found for that  
 as for the other, replied the damsell, and I tell you that your  
 desires shall haue a most happie end: for to obtaine the which,  
 as time shall serue, I will shew you the way which ye may  
 keepe, so that now at this present ye stand in neede of nothing  
 but refreshing, and to make you strong, to the end ye may  
 speedily succour vs, for we are already in one of the townes  
 of the Souldan our vnkle, where dwelleth Osmaquins brother,  
 in whom we repose great confidence, as one of the princi-  
 pall seruants of the Souldan, and our best friend. Madamie;  
 replied the knight, it shall be in you to command me, and  
 in me to obey ye vntill death. I giue a thousand thanks, quoth  
 the damsell, albeit for my life I shall not dare to vnder-  
 stand towards you, seeing it is I whom it nerely concer-  
 neth to doe ye the best service, I can. Notwithstanding set-  
 ting aside all circumstances for this present, it shall please  
 you to vnderstand, how we three haue, whilst ye three were  
 a sleepe, fully resolu'd and made absolute determination con-  
 cerning that which we are come to doe in this place, accor-  
 ding to the instructions which Osmaquin left vs at his death.  
 And wee haue thought it best, that Bellager should goe at-  
 tired like a Merchant vnto Maruin (so is the knight named)  
 to vnderstand of him how wee must behaue our selues to  
 proceede in this our business. This aduise was well liked of  
 by Prince Edward, therefore Bellager apparelled like a  
 ciuill Merchant, with a Cotte, went into the towne  
 as farre as Maruins house, vnto which euery one bee met  
 directed him easily. As soone as hee was gotten vnto his  
 house, after salutations, hee gaue him to vnderstand  
 how he had a secret message to deliuer vnto him,  
 which



which no man might heare but himselfe. So withdrawing themselves alone into a chamber, Bellager revealed unto him who he was, & how by the appointment of his brother they came thither, accompanied with a balliant christian knight, to recover their estate. When Maruin understood the matter (seeing Bellager so goodly and balliant a Gentleman) he was marvellous glad, and thus he spake. My dread soveraigne Lordes, ye be most heartily welcome unto my house, as those who shall want nothing which I may doe for ye, to reestablish ye in your owne estate, & as sone as the evening shall come, see that you, your sister, and all the other who accompany them, come secretly into this place, where I will keepe you untill I impart your arrivall unto some others who have like desire as I have to do you good, to the end we may devise together how to bring this our enterprize about. Bellager having received this advertisement went directly towards the companie who attended his coming backe, so that as sone as the houre of night was come, which Maruin and he had agreed upon, then all went a shoure to a place where they found one of his sonnes who waited there for them, of purpose to guide them the way. And presently the Barke wherein they came, vanished out of sight & was never scene afterwards. They being all safe arrived at the house, & lodged in the most commodious place thereof, where none of the servants did frequent, when Maruin saw his fittest time, he went to visite them, weeping for joy to see them. Then having given such courteous entertainment to Prince Edward as becomed a man of his calling, he used such care in all things to do him good that within a short space he cured him of his wounds. But let us suffer them to rest a little, while Maruin worke his exploits with other his complices, and make an end of the first booke of Primaleon, whose heroficall feates of armes are continued in the second part. No lesse profitable then pleasant, to delight the readers with a number of Amorous and Martiall discourses, the like never read of in any History before.

FINIS.



# THE FAMOUS AND RENOWNED

*Historie of Primaleon of Greece,*

Sonne to the great and mighty Prince

PALMERIN d'OLIVA, Emperour  
of *Constantinople*.

Shewing the strange and admirable adventures  
of *Primaleon*, and his strange passions in loue, to the  
Lady GRIDONIA; as also the many troubles which  
befell Prince EDWARD of *England*, in the loue  
of Lady FLERIDA, daughter to the  
Emperour *Palmerin d'Oliua*.

---

The second Booke.

---

*Translated out of French and Italian, into English, by A.M.*



LONDON:  
Printed by THOMAS SNODHAM.  
1619.









TO THE RIGHT  
Honourable, HENRIE VERE, Earle  
of Oxenford, Vicount Bulbecke, Lord  
*Sandford*, and of *Badelesmere*, and  
Lord great Chamberlaine  
of *England*, &c.

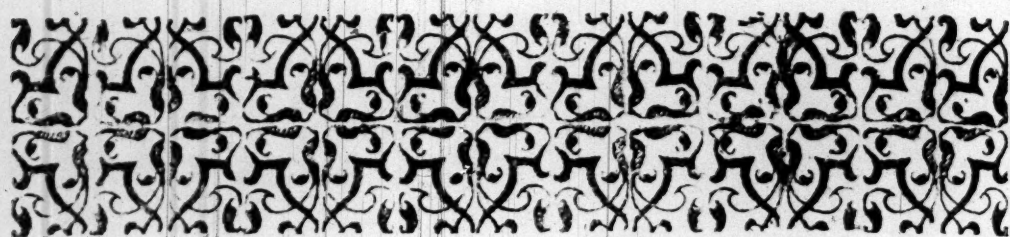


Here we brake off (right Honourable) in the first part of this famous History, we begin now to succede and goe on in the second, with much variety of rare inuention, and discourses highly prouoking to pleasure : And with the same vnspotted affection, as at first it was presented to your most Noble Father, it commeth now (in all duetie) to you, his worthy Sonne, with the very same hope of gracious acceptance, as then it found in true essence.

*Your Honours,*  
*ouer to be commanded,*

A.M.





## OF THE WORKE and Translation.

**I***F in opinion of iudiciall wit,  
Primaleons /weet Inuention well deserue :  
Then he (no lesse) which hath translated it,  
Which doth his sense , his forme, his phrase ob-  
(serue.*

*And in true method of his home-borne stile,  
( Following the fashion of a French conceate )  
Hath brought him heere into this famous Ile,  
Where but a Stranger, now hath made his seate.  
He liues a Prince, and comming in this sort,  
Shall to his Countrey of your fame report.*

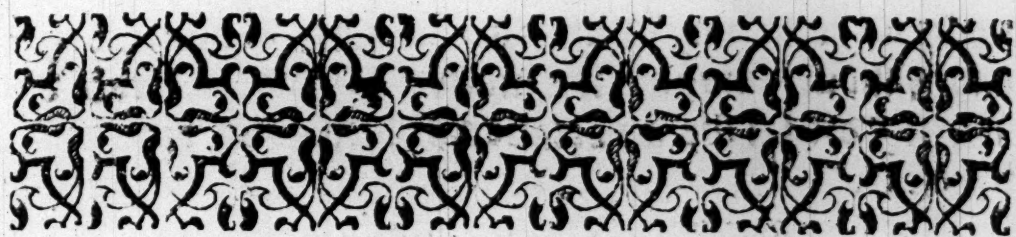
M. D.

Kn  
hir



ons  
(bin  
to k  
whi





# The second Booke of Primaleon of Greece, Sonne to *Palmerin d'Oliua*, the Renowned Emperour of *Constantinople*.

## CHAP. I.

How *Primaleon* betooke himselfe to seeke for the Knight of the *Dogge*, after hee had combated with him, and what happened to him on the way.

**N**otwithstanding the perswasions of the Emperour, the Empresse, and all the Barons there present, Primaleons hart was growne big, nor could he longer with-hold himselfe, but thus he spake vnto the Emperour. If you carry any remembrance of your herocall actions, and if desire I should appeare to be your sonne, methinks you might spare this sending of Ladies vnto me, to keepe and hinder me from the honour of the Combate, which I haue had with that most worthy Knight: for I  
A 3 make



## 2 The second Booke of the History

make no reckoning of others, inferior to him in valour, and I should imagine it a matter of speciall disgrace unto me, if I did let slip an occasion of such great renowne offered me.

The Emperour perceiuing him so highly moued, was sorry, and sayd, That he would returne into the City: so the Tents were taken vp, and all repayzed to Constantinople, where when they arrived, Primaleon was committed to the charge of diuers expert Chirurgions. And about mid-night, his thoughts still sating on this conceit, yet anger, being alone with his Dwarf, he purposed to depart, and bestow all the paines he could devise, to find again the knight his enemy, wherfore he said to the dwarf: It becometh thee now to doe me an especiall pleasure: get secretly out for me a good horse, and another for thy selfe, because I will haue thee beare mee company: bring also the armour which I made this other day, with my shield of the diuided Roche, for I will depart from hence shortly vnknowne.

The Dwarf bestirred himselfe to execute this charge, albeit very much against his minde, seeing his Lord was so sore wounded. But all things being prepared, and he very well armed, thus with his Dwarf he left the City, enduring great griefe and sorrow in his minde, because he knew not what way the knight of the Dogge had taken. When it was day, he enquired still after him, yet all to no purpose, for the knight went not that way. So travelling thus till night, he felt himselfe very faint by reason of his hurts, as also because he had eaten nothing all that day, at last a knight returning from the chase met him, and demanded why he rode so pensiuely. Sir (answered he) it grieues mee that my fortune is so hard, as not to finde a knight I am in quest of: besides, certayne wounds I haue receiued on my body, doe somewhat enfeeble and make mee weary. When the knight intreated him, that he would goe along with him vnto his Castell being nere at



at hand, where he should be cherished and his hurts recovered.

Primaleon (who at this time stood in great neede of this kindenesse) went with him; and after he was unarm'd, the Knights wife came to see his wounds, for she was well scene in the Art of Physicke, and she tolde him, that needs he must rest there some few dayes, otherwise he could not be holpen, but his wounds would bring his life in danger. Hereat he grieved not a little, in regarde of his desire to finde out the Knight of the Dogge: Nevertheless, he was enforced to abide there, his hurts were so painefull to him, and by these meanes he escaped the Knights, who by the Emperours commandement were sent to seeke after him, when from the Physicians he heard of his sonnes departure: but thus much he doubted before, which afterward followed, wherefore (quoth he) if his stomacke be so great, his folly shall neuer make me offended, and seeing he is gone without taking leave, the perill be his owne, for mine it shall not be. The Emperesse took his departure very grievously, & very faine would haue sent to recall him againe, but the Emperour forbade it, which made his kindred impute the fault in him, that he suffered Primaleon to be accused by so many Knights, in a matter so cleare and apparent.

Diuers Knights of the Court followed to bring him backe againe, amongst whom were Abenunco and Torques, sonne to King Toman of Grisque, who bowed neuer to rest untill they had found him. But what successe they had, shall hereafter be declared. Primaleon was constrained to abide within the Castell tenne dayes, in which time, he was so carefully tended, as afterwards he felt himselfe strong enough to set forward on his way. Wherefore, thanking the Knight and his Lady for the kindenesse they had shewed him, (which afterwards by better knowing them, he gratefully requited) he left them, and rode eight dayes together in deepe displeasure, search-



ing here and there for his adversary, but could attaine to no tidings of him. At length, being come one day into a pleasant place neare to a little wood, he alighted to refresh himselfe; and after he had sed upon such provision as his dwarfe brought with him, he purposed to take a nappe, laying his head upon his Helmet.

Some after there arived three Knights armed, who seeing him asleepe, they came to the dwarfe that slept not, and sayd: Tell vs (thou wretched creature) what the knight is that takes his ease so securely in this place? The dwarfe somewhat angry at this proude demaund, answered: You shall know nothing of me, because you haue nothing at all to doe therewith. Ah thou that art scant a peece of a man! (quoth one of them) art thou so proude? And as he was thus speaking, he smote the dwarfe with the great butte end of his Lance (in such manner) as he feeling the paine thereof, cryed out so loude that Primaleon awaked: who beholding his dwarfe to be wounded upon the head, he quickly clapt on his Helmet, and in great choller mounted himselfe on horse-backe. All the three Knights that had derided the dwarfe and his maister, seeing him so ready prepared, ranne against him with their Launces in their rests: but Primaleon gaue one of them such a sound entertainment, as he had no need of any Chirurgeon to help him. Afterward, drawing forth his sword, he layd such loades upon an other of them, as he made him to tumble headlong from his horse. The third mis doubting the issue of this exploit; betooke himselfe to flight, and Primaleon made after him, but could not overtake him. In the meane space, three other knights arived in the place where the dwarfe abode.

Of these five knights, who were going to succour one of their kindred, there was two brethren, one came in company of the three first, and the other was among these three last: who finding his brother lying slaine there on the ground, was ready himselfe to die with sorrow and griefe:



griefe : and inquiring of his companion that lay there wounded , what he was that had slaine his brother , as one overcome with extremitie of rage, aided by one of his owne company , he got by his brothers dead body before him on his horse : and then remounting him that lay there wounded , he haled the dwarfe along after him by the lockes , bowing to make a bone-fire of him , and in this manner came they to the Castell, before the gate whereof they erected a gibbet, there to hang the dwarfe, and were ready to put fire vnderneath to burne him withall.

Primaleon, who all this while could not reach his man that fled, returned againe, and finding neyther his dwarfe, nor the Knights that he had left there lying hurt on the ground, being (withall) not able to imagine what should be become of them , he fell into exceeding discontentment, saying : If any man hath slaine my dwarfe, I will be so reuenged on him , as he shall haue cause neuer to forget it. Now, because there were diuers wayes into the wood, he wist not which way to take , which made him bere like a man beside himselfe . Upon these proceedings hee saue a young Gentleman come towards him , vpon a Palfrey well adorned , of whom he demaunded, if he had not met certaine wounded Knights, that led along a dwarfe with them . Sir (quoth he) if you please to graunt me but one request I shall make, I wil conduct you to the place where they are : Primaleon made him promise thereof. Then the Gentleman turning his horse about , and the Knight after him ; they had not ridden past a league and a halfe, but they were at the Castell of the two brethren , where they found them binding the dwarfe to hang him, hauing already made a great fire vnder the gibbet wherewith to burne him alive.

All this while the dwarfe cryed out aloud , still calling on his Master Primaleon : But when Primaleon beheld this , he gaue the spurs to his horse , placing his Asse ready, and when he was come neare to them he said:

Let



Let goe my Dwarfes, villaines, or you are but dead men. Thus speaking, he smote the fellow that held him, and passing on the other side, made him let fall the dead knight to the ground, and joining them together with his lance, he slew another of them, so that all the rest made apace towards the Castell. The knight who was brother unto him that was slaine, placed his Launce to encounter Primaleon, who met him with such a forcible welcome, as he sent him to measure his length upon the earth; which was the cause that the rest fled to hide themselves in the Castell.

By this time the young gentleman was got on foote to unbinde the Dwarfes, to whom Primaleon sayd: Be of good cheare (my friend) how dost thou? Well my good Lord (quoth he) now I see you: but let us quickly be gone hence, for I would no more be so afraid. Along then (answered the Prince) seeing these wretches now can not make their bannis of any worse blage to thee then already thou hast suffered. The gentleman bound up the Dwarfes hurt received on his head, and causing him afterwards to mount on horse-backe, they all three returned from thence. Brother (quoth Primaleon then to the gentleman) you have done me so great a pleasure, in helping me to recover my Dwarfes, as I know not how ever I shall be able to requite it: wherefore demand now what may stand with your good liking, and assure your selfe, that I will graunt it you. My Lord (answered he) the boon and favour I craue of you, is, that you would entertaine me as your vassalle, for I am desirous to doe you service while I live.

The Knight willingly condescended, without further knowledge of him, for this was he that brought him to Constantinople the Shield of the cloven Roke, and sonne to the Lord of the Inclosed Ile, whom he had now expressly sent to doe service to Primaleon, well knowing, that by him he should attaine to great good and advancement.

Sir



Sir (quoth Parente) for (so was the young gentleman named) henceforth I am yours; and in all places where you goe, will I follow you: but if it please you, tell mee (I pray you) whom you seeke after. Then Primaleon discoursed vnto him the whole matter at large; which when he had heard, he thus replied. Know (my Lord) that notwithstanding all the pains you take, yet shal you not finde that Knight in Greece. And when he demanded the truth hereof, and how he came to the knowledge of what he had sayd: he thus proceeded, saying as though he knew not Primaleon.

My Lord, what I haue sayd, I gather by such signes as your selfe haue shewed me; first, that the Knight tearmeth himselfe, the Knight of the Dogge; next, I vnderstand, that he is in the kingdome of Hungarie, where he hath performed great deedes of Armes in a Tourney: and some say, that he hath wounded Belcar, sonne to the Hungarian King, the Prince his brother, and diuers other beside. Moreover, I heare he should goe combate with Primaleon the Emperours sonne, for the lone of Gridonia the Dutchesse daughter of Ormeda, the very fairest Lady in all the world; who craueth reuenge for the death of her father slaine by the Emperour. And for that cause she hath taken an oathe, neuer to marry with any husband, but he that can reuenge this injury for her. Now the Knight of the Dogge, he is as worthy a man as euer was heard of, who conquering Primaleon, will carry the head of her enemy to Ormeda, to the end he may espouse the branteous Gridonia.

Truely (answered Primaleon) then will the Knight haue somewhat to doe; and I wonder Primaleon should be so carelesse of himselfe, as not to warrant and defend his head against any that comes for it. But we shall heare more newes hereof in the Dutchy of Ormeda, because he hath already fought with Primaleon, and neyther of them could overcome the other. Whereupon the Emperour  
caused



caused them to be parted, and at this instant am I in pursuite of him, because I intend to revenge Primaleons injury. But I wish you may not find him (replied Purenre) for he is a man of wonderfull valour. Talke no more to me thereof (sayd Primaleon) for you doe but anger me: rather tell me if you haue sene that Lady, who is cause of the danger, whereto two so worthy Knights haue opposed themselves, because I neuer heard any thing of her. I neuer sawe her (answered Purenre) but often haue I heard, that for beauty, the world containeth not her equall. Primaleon astonished at these words, could all that day thinke on nothing else but on Gridonia, and the Knight of the Dogge, also what he might be, that should be thought worthy to haue her in marriage, she being of so exquisite and rare beauty.

That night he lodged in a poore labouring mans house in the wood, where when he had sitten a while, untill the dwarfe and Purenre had prepared supper, he beganne to meditate on many matters: especially, whether he should goe to the Dutchy of Ormeda, or no, to seeke the Knight of the Dogge, whom to see againe and combate, he so much desired. And as he continued in these doubts, at the same house there arriued a knight richly armed, there to passe the night away, with other good company: he being vnarmed, and his supper not ready, went also abroad to walke by himselle a while.

CHAP.



CHAP. II.

How *Primaleon* vnderstoode by *Gibber* all the historie and discourse concerning *Gridonia*, entering into a deepe conceit for the loue of her, with intent to see and giue her succor against the Countie of *Clarence*, who would haue her perforce.



**H**is Knight was Lord of the Isle of Domea, issued of Noble Parentage, as being descended from the Emperours of Almanie : he was of great stature, but hard-fauored and crump shouldered, vpon which cause he was called *Gibber* : for his other dispositions, he was merry and pleasant, more hardy and courageous in words, then ballant in dedes. Now, because he greatly delighted in the beauty of Ladies, when he heard of the singular perfections of *Gridonia*, he came into the Dutchy of Ormeda, hoping to make her his wife. And in such sort he behaued himselfe toward the Dutchesse, that she shewed him her daughter in her Castell, and to compasse the meanes of seeing her, the Lyon was faine to be bidden for a time, as the like before was vsed toward *Valido*. *Gibber* perceiuing her so faire, with great boldnesse, made immediate promise of bringing *Primaleons* head to her.

Now when he returned thence, his thoughts so hampered on the beauty he had sene, as he became both weake and sickly : notwithstanding he held on his way, till now his fortune was to meete with *Primaleon*, who marvelled not a little at his desozmitie : and hauing saluted him, he thus beganne.



I am very glad (sir knight) my good hap was to meete you here, to know if you can resolute me in a matter I would gladly demand. Primaleon made answer, that willingly he would doe it, if it remained in his power. I would vnderstand then (quoth he) if you haue heard whether Primaleon, senne to the Emperour of Constantinople be in the Court of his father, or no, and whether as yet he hath not bene banquished by any knight, for the loue of the fairest Lady this day liuing in the world. If the case stand so already with him, extreme griefe and despaire will shortly be the death of me; because, if I might die by the hand of Primaleon, for the loue and seraice of that Lady, my soule would most contentedly depart into the other world. Primaleon seeing a man so misshapen, thus passionate for the loue of so faire a Lady, smiling, answered thus: In sooth sir I will tell you, that no long time since, my selfe was at Constantinople, to seeke a knight whom I cannot yet meet withall: he combated with Primaleon about the same cause and quarrell which (as I suppose) is the reason of your travell; and because the Emperour made them to be seperated, Primaleon (being desirous to have an end thereof) was somewhat offended, and thereupon he secretly departed from the Court, not one man knowing whither he is gone; albeit some doe imagine he is at Macedon, others thinke him to be in the kingdome of Sparta, with his Aunt. As for me, I journey toward the realme of Hungarie, in quest of the knight you heard me speake of, who hath else where done great matters in a Tournymment, dealing very hardly with Belcar and his brother, which makes me desirous to be revenged on him if I might, but it seemeth (for ought that I can perceiue) that neither you nor I can bring our intents to any good purpose.

Wherby Sir, (answered Gibber) you haue told me very great matters, it grieues me that Primaleon is not to be found, for gladly would I haue tryed my force against him,



him, to reuenge the Lady whose like the world hath not. Now haue I no other way or meane, whereby to present my selfe againe before her, but this onely: I vnderstand that the Prince of Clarence makes a great power against her, to ruinate the Dutchie of Ormeda, thereby to seize her, because the Dutchesse will not giue him her daughter Gridonia to wife. Wherefore now Ile turne bzide that way, to yeeld her soccour in this warre, and so excuse my selfe by the directions you haue giuen me, in that Primaleon is not to be found. *Belæue mæ sir* (answered Primaleon) you are happy in finding so apt an occasion, whereby you may doe seruice to her whom you loue: so to tell you the truth, should you meete with Primaleon, certainly it would endanger your life. But in the way of courtesie, I pray you tell me, what is that Gridonia? and also discourse her beauty that puts you to this travell, and wherefore she beares Primaleon such hatred, as nothing will pacifie her, but his head.

What would you sir (quoth Gibber) that I should tell all this? It was hard fortune for me that ever I beheld her beauty, which is so admirable as my tongue is no way sufficiently able to expresse the very least part thereof, as also her high deserts: for shee was made as a Phoenix amongst all other Ladies in the whole world. Oft haue I heard her talked of, before I saw her, and at what time I left my Country for her seruice, then I found so certainly, that her perfections deserued much more then was reported, and that she is beyond the utmost I can speake of her. Then grew he on in rehearfall, how shee was in the Castle of the Clouen-Rocke, wherefore the Castle was so called, and was guarded by a Lion: saying moreover, that shee hated Primaleon, in regard he had slaine Perrequin of Duas her cousin, as also, because it was said, he should be her husband, and so that (beside) the Emperour slew her father.

Primaleon tooke great pleasure in hearing all this, and while



While Gibber held on his tale, he became desirous to goe along with him thither, to the end he might aide the Dutchesse against the Prince of Clarence, and afterwards to see Gridonia if possibly he might; learning himselfe the Knight of the Clowen Roche as much for her loue, and the description figured on his Shield, as also because he would travell unknowne. Then after Gibber had finished his discourse, he spake to him on this manner: Trust me (Sir Knight) be she so faire as you have reported, you ought to forsake all affayres whatsoener for her service and succour: for if her freedome be taken from her, shee shall lose more then shee can gaine by being reuenged on Primaleon. And seeing it hath happened I should thus meet with you, I would (so it pleased you to like thereof) both accompany and assist you as much as lies in me: for so shall I compasse two benefits at once, first in helping Gridonia, who is so iniuriously assaulted; next, I may hap (if it be possible for me) to finde the knight I doe seeke. Gibber highly thanked him, and was very glad to haue his company, saying, that where his owne man-hood failed, he might supply that want, by reason his countenance shewed him to be brave and aduenturous. I will doe for you what possibly I may, replied Primaleon, because I discern a so great a spirit in you, as to hope you may enjoy so sweet and faire a creature.

Believe me sir (quoth Gibber) albeit I am none of the handsomest, I intend not to forsake the duetie of a good and leuall seruant, equalling my selfe that way with the best knight in the world; and for this cause onely I did mount my hopes and affections to so high a pitch. As Primaleon was about to commend his resolution, their Squires called them to supper, so they sate both downe at one table, feeding together with merry and friendly conference: Gibber shewing himselfe very pleasantly disposed, and not a little pleased with so kinde a companion. Afterward, they withdrew themselves to rest, and being



in bed, Gibber beganne to consider of his happy encountering this Knight, soze-casting in his thoughts what was to be perfourmed: then sodainely altering to other imaginations, he applyed all his coniectures to the beaultie of Gridonia: On the other side, Primaleon was in wonderfull passions for her lone, seeming to beholde her there present with him, hauing heard so many speake so liberally of her: Wherfore, imagining he spake to her selfe, thus he beganne.

Madame, I beseech you to giue place vnto your admired courtlee, excludng from your heart the anger and disdayne conceined against me: For mine owne part, I promise to doe you so good seruice, as shall make amends for any wrong done you. Now am I glad of my departing from Constantinople, seeing I haue heard so happy tidings of you, which had I knowne before, whenas for your sake onely so many Knights came to combate me: Certainly, I would rather haue sought after you my selfe, and in the place of my head, haue presented you the whole Empire of Constantinople, or rather this very head to please you withall: And may I escape with life, I will satisfie you in such sort, as no one shall be able to doe the like. Ah thou Knight of the enclosed Ile (whose knowledge is so exceeding) Heauen bouchsafe that once I may haue a sight of thee. These, and other such like speeches bled he to himselfe, so that all the night long he took no rest: but when it was day, they left their beds, and Gibber demaunded of him, if yet he continued his intent to keepe him company: He holde thereof (quoth Primaleon) for I repent not the promise I made to you yester night: When in good time let vs set forward, and do our endeavour so effectually, as what we intend may take answerable successe.

As they were mounting on horse backe, Gibber was amazed, beholding Primaleons Shield, and sayd: Knight, what doe I see there, the Clouen Roke painted vpon your Shield: in friendship I pray you tell mee, wherfore you beare that Deuice: If it be for Gridonias lone, you shall

B

not



not goe along in any company, because I will haue none with me that beareth affection to her : but if I will it were so, I should account of you as my mortall enemy. Very vnkinde-ly were it, that we two together should appoer e before her, you being yong and faire, I hard fauoured and mis-shapen : therefore tell me the truth, and dissemble not. Primalcon beganne to laugh, seeing Gibber so offended, and thus spake. Neuer stand you in doubt of me, for though you would haue none of my company, yet you see I am desirous of yours : and by the faith of a Knight, I protest vnto you, that when this Shield was made, I had no knowledge of Gridonia, nor did I euer heare her named, for you are the first that tolde me of her : I am descended of a kindred, who do beare the name of a Clouen Rocks, and when yester night I heard you talke of a Castle so called, it pleased me not a little, especially seeing Gridonia is Lady thereof, to whom (for your sake) I purpose to offer my seruice, but farre be such presumption from me, to loue her, I being a Knight so simply descended. Thanked be the Heauens, quoth Gibber, for now I am somewhat better pacified then I was: and I hope you will doe for me such seruice to the Lady, as shall be sufficient to gaine me her loue.

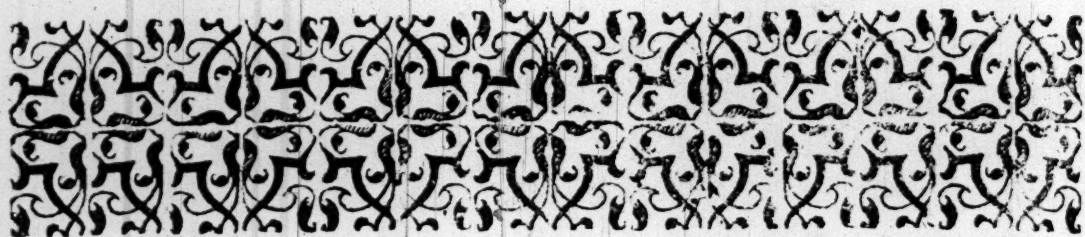
If she be wise, quoth then the Dwarfie, you will hardly compasse the thing you looke for : you and I are nothing worth in Loues affaires. Dost thou (answered Gibber in choller) equall mee with so vile a thing as thy selfe : Were it not in regarde of thy Maister, I would seperate thy bodie immediately in twaine : I am a Knight, and of good parts, what though I am deformed : mine honour is not thereby impayred. We shall see that in this warre, said the Dwarfie, it may be you are endewd with greater gifts than I tole of, and your valour deserves no slender estimation, being so hardy as to deale with Primalcon whom you enquire after. I would performe against him (answerd this huge Knight) as much as lyeth in me to doe, and if I were vanquished, his gaine should not be ouer great, because I was conquered  
by



by Gridonia before: therefore talke no more heron to me, if thou wilt goe along with vs, doe, if not, be gone. Primaleon commaunded his Dwarfie to be silent, and behaue himselfe as courteously toward the Knight, as to him his Father: willing him moreover, that whenas they came before Gridonia, he should report the loue which Gibber bare vnto her. What will I not doe, replied the Dwarfie, for I should but beguile her, therefore I had rather hold my peace.

In these and such like pleasant deuises they spent the time, Primaleon being vnable to remoue Gridonia from his cogitations, imagining the iourney would be wonderous long, till he came where he might haue a sight of her. Yet so well they preuailed in their daily trauell, that leauing Greece they coasted the Kingdome of Hungarie, and comming into those parts belonging to the County of Bronze, cousin to the prince of Clarence, they were aduertised how the warre proceeded, and that the Prince greatly endamaged the Dutchie of Ormeda, taking forcibly all such places as yelded not to him, hauing many good Knights and Giants of Romania his partakers, whereof (for the most part) himselfe was Lord, being also accompanied with the Countie of Bronze. When newes was brought them, that one of the Counties brethren, who was a very good Knight, went to serue the Prince with fiftie Launces, which made Primaleon and Gibber thenceforward to stand vpon their guard, for preventing of all inconueniences might happen to them: and riding one day in a faire field before a Castell, they espyed the Counties brother, and his fiftie Knights with him.





## CHAP. III.

How *Primaleon* and *Gibber* slew the Countie of *Bronzes* brother, with his fiftie Knights : their entrance into *Ormeda*, and what conference they had with the Dut-  
chelle after their arriuall there.



Soone as *Ardiles* (for so was the Counties brother named) sawe the two Knights, giving his Horse the spurres, he made toward them, to see what they were, and addressing himselfe to *Primaleon* (who rode foremost) sayd: Who is your guide, and whither goe you? What have you to doe therewith? answered *Primaleon*. If you come in fa-  
vour of the Prince of Clarence, sayd *Ardiles*, you may then beare me company, and I will doe you all the honour I can devise: but if you come to succour the Dut-  
chelle of *Ormeda*, you die all, except you yeld as prisoners. We will preserve our selves well enough from falling into any such inconveni-  
ence, replied *Primaleon*, We are all friends to the Dut-  
chelle, resolved to doe our best for her defence, and revenge the inurians wrongs offered her, saying flatly, you are vil-  
laines and traitours, in opposing your selves against her. In an ill houre hast thou chosen (quoth *Ardiles*) to speake thus audaciously, for forthwith shalt thou beholde what recom-  
pence thou gainest in ayding the Dutchelle.

Thus saying, hee touched his staffe against *Primaleon*, who received him on his Shield, in such manner, as *Ardiles*  
Launce



Launce flew by into the ayre in peeces : but so bravely did he entertaine him with his owne, that it pierced quite thorow him, and he fell downe dead to the ground. When the fiftie Knights beheld this, placing their Lances on their Rests, they came all gallopping together : to whom Gibber, and eight Knights more of his company lately come to him, valiantly opposed themselves. Primaleon having gotten his Lance out of Ardiles body, welcomed another therewith, as he was sent to beare the other companie : When drawing forth his sword, he entred amongst them, laying about him with such admirable courage, as happie was he could first make him any way. Gibber met one of his enemies so furiously, as he sent him headlong to the earth, and by reason that he brake not his Staffe in this encounter, giving the spurs to his horse, amongst the rest he pressedeth : When the Cousin to Ardiles making against him, they met with such vigour together, as Gibber was cast out of his Saddle, but the others Shield and Cosslet was so pierced thorow, that the blowe passed even to the quicke flesh.

When Ardiles cousin saw his adversary on the ground, he thought to runne on him and kill him as he lay : But Primaleon being by, and perceiving his intent, stepped before him quickly, and with his sword gave him such a kinde salutation upon the Helmet, as both his head and it fell in two parts to the ground. Afterward he got Gibber mounted agayne, and then with the ayde of the other eight Knights, with the rest of the fiftie, they dealt so valiantly, as the most part of them remayned dead in that place, the rest fled to save themselves in the Castell. As for Gibbers eight Knights, there was no more but three of them slayne : and Primaleon saith would have had them carryed thence, to burie them in the nearest convenient place they could finde : But Gibber was in such a fearefull quandarie, dreading worse fortune than yet had happened, as he made not any reckoning of burying them, nor



could be perswaded to tarry there any longer. Primalcon perceiving Gibber was so afraid, in a great laughter sayd, I would gladly have these bodie's carryed hence dreadlesse of any danger: but seeing you make such haste to be gone, on then, you shall not tarry for me. I have noted your behaviour well enough, answered Gibber, being by you delivered, when I was in no meane perill: therefore bide, if you please, for I will not.

Thus merrily conversing they rode so farre that day, as they entred into the Duchy of Ormeda, where finding a place that they well liked, they stayed to rest themselves, because Gibber was weary and wanted rescecion. And when they perceived how fearefull the Countrey people were of this warre, Primalcon encouraged them, saying, that they should have no cause to feare, for the Heavens were on the Dutchesse side, and shee would be succoured by so many good Knights, as the Prince of Clarence would repent his bolde enterpryse. While there they abode, they heard that the Dutchesse had great strength in Ormeda, and that shee stayed for the assistance of the Duke of Montecell, a young gallant Knight, who hoped to have Gridonia in marriage. Whereupon they thought it best to loyter there no longer, but upon horse backe they mounted, and made such speede, that on a Saturday at night they arrived in Ormeda, where they beheld the fields well planted with pavillions. Then Gibber sent word to the Dutchesse, that he was returned to ayde her in this warre, desiring she would affoord him a convenient place for lodging, which she very readily performed.

The next day, Gibber and Primalcon (being both armed, and covered with rich Mantles) went to see the Dutchesse: each one hardely noting Primalcon, who went as boldly, as if hee had bene in Constantinople. And questionlesse he was of very great spirit, thus at adventure to put himselfe amongst his enemies: for had he bene knowne, all the men in the world could not have saved



ned his life. The Dutchesse gaue kinde welcome to Gibber, highly thanking him for these paines bestowed in her service.

Madame, quoth he, much more would I doe for your sake, and here haue I brought vnto you a Knight, that beareth the name of the Clouen Roche; I can not thinke but he is your Kinsman. But this (good Lady) I dare assure you, that he alone in this warre will more auaille you, then many ether Knights how worthy soener they seme: for my selfe haue seene him performe such admirable chivalrie, as well may be wondered at, but not be equalled. Then hee declared the vanquishing of Ardiles the Countie brother, with euerie circumstance of the former aduventure.

Beloeue me (quoth the Dutchesse) you haue brought me most pleasing newes, that so good a Knight vouchsafeth his paynes for my defence: how happy would my Daughter thinke her selfe, if he were of her Parentage, because she hath none of her kindred that will maintaine her cause. As thus she spake, she gaue forth her armes to embrace him, continuing on her speeches on this manner: Sir Knight, tell me I pray you heartily, whether you are descended from the House of my Lord the Duke Nardides, or no, and if your coming into this Countrey, be to ayde and helpe me and my distressed Daughter: Primaleon stepping forth reuerently before her, answered in this manner.

To tell you the troth Madame, I know not whether I am of the Dukes discent you named, or not, albeit I am called the Knight of the Clouen Roche: But this I can assure you, that the onlie cause of my coming hither, is to doe you service and succour against such enemies, as (by report) haue highly wronged you. Courteous sir Knight (quoth shee) thanks to the Heauens, for this your worthy deserving: for now I evidently see that you are of our kindred, because you take such compassion on



me and my Daughter. Every good Knight (sayd hee) ought to doe as much, and therefore Madame doubt you not the Prince of Clarence; hee who would perforce have that which willingly is not to be granted, Heauen hath vengeance in store for such arrogance and presumption. Well haue you sayd, answered the Dutchesse, for neuer will I giue my daughter to any other, then he that shall reuenge her cause on Primalcon, sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople: and I beseech the Heauens, that they would soone send hither such a Knight, as is able to execute this desired vengeance, so after ward (by accomplishing her marriage) to ridde my selfe of this care and heauinesse. I hope Madame, quoth he, that long you shall not remayne in this perplexitie.

And so conferring farther on the warre, she sayd, that she carried but for the Duke of Montduelles company, who had faithfully promised to giue her assistance. Gibber then answered, he would send into his Island, whence men should come to giue her ayde: for which kinde offer the Dutchesse thanking him, he entreated her to saunour him so much, as to permit him goe doe his duty to Gridonia, the rather, because he would shew her this new come Knight. The Dutchesse was well contented therewith, and calling a Squire vnto her, sayd: Goe you along with these Knights hère to my Daughter, and say from me to the Keeper of the Clouen Rocke Castell, that he must permit them to see my Daughter. And taking the Squire aside, she charged him to will Gridonia secretly, to shew all the honour shee could deuise to the Knight of the Clouen Rocke, in regarde of his valour, and because he came thither onely for her defence. So tooke the Knights their leaue of the Dutchesse, not a little glad of their high good fortune: But going first vnto their lodgings, Gibber dispatched a Messenger into his Country, to assemble all the Knights that possible might be, and thither to conuoc them in his behalfe.

Afterward



Afterward they walked to the Castell, being no other-  
wise armed then with their swords, having verie rich  
mantles wrapped about them: neyther had they any o-  
ther companie, than the Dutchesse Squire, & Primaleons  
Dwarfe, whose master was so glad that he should now  
see Gridonia, as hee walked so ravisshed within himselfe,  
that hee neuer minded what that the Dwarfe held with  
Gibber. It was now late when they arrived at the  
Castell, where the Squire hauing deliuered his message  
to the keeper thereof, he went to aduertise Gridonia of the  
Dutchesse charge: when shee demanding, what knight  
that was of the clouen Roke: That know not I (quoth  
the keeper) albeit I can assure y<sup>e</sup>, he is one of the goodliest  
and most curteous knights that I ever beheld. Then  
the Lady replied, let him enter when you please: where-  
upon the Squire brought this answer to the knights,  
who as yet had bene no farther admitted than the Castell  
Gate.

CHAP.



## CHAP. IIII.

How the two Knights *Primaleon* and *Gibber* entred the Castell of the Clouen-rocke : what the Lyon did, and of the speeches which passed betweene them and faire *Gridonia*.



**A**n the meane while, the Lady had caused the Lyon to be shut vp in a chamber, because he should not hurt the knights, & then went & took her place in the great hall, as likewise did the old Dutcheſſe her Grandmother and the Lady Zerphira: who demaunded of her, whether he whom the Squire had brought her tydings of, should be her Knight or no: whereto she answered, that she knew not, but I wot well (quoth she) we shall ſone perceiue what valour is in the man. When the Knights were entred, the Castell keeper accompanied them into the hall, where (because it was night) many Torches were lighted, which made *Gridonia* ſeeme very wonderous beautifull.

Shee aroſe to receiue them, and taking the one in one hand, & his companion in the other, cauſed them ſit downe on each ſide of her. Who can expreſſe the ſurpaſſing ioy of theſe two Knights at this inſtant? *Gibber* felt in his ſoule extreame contentment, by ſeeing himſelfe ſeated ſo neere *Gridonia*: and *Primaleon* was ſo raviſhed with her rare & ſingular beautie, exceeding all the reports hee had befoze heard of her, as he ſate like a man quite beſide himſelfe, without power to ſpeake, or making offer of one word, wherefoze *Gibber* began thus to diſcourſe.

Behold me Madame, who haue brought you here this Knight in lieu of *Primaleons* head, whercof I made you promiſe:



promise: assuring ye that he is more able to doe it than any I know, because he is a man so excellent at Armes, as no Primaleon or any other Knight in the world may be compared to him. This may somewhat serue to qualifie your conceined displeasure against me, by failing in my promises perfourmance, the Prince of Clarence who hath so wronged your estate, and endangered your Countrey, being onely cause thereof. But as I was in trauaile. I chanced to heare of this warre, as also the cause procuring the same: so being then about matter of your seruice, I thought good first to returne and giue you aide, and afterwarde to follow in quest of Primaleon your enemye. Sir Knight replied Gridonia, I hartly thanke ye for your good will, the rather because ye haue brought hither this Knight, if he prove so valiant as you haue reported: yet had you done me a far greater pleasure, if you had brought me the head of Primaleon, which aboue all things else in the world I most desire. For how can I any longer expect this revenge, seeing Fortune hereto hath bene so much against it? These words shee bitcred with a beebement sigh & teares trickling down her cheeks abundantly.

Thus held she on conferring with them, but with great paine and anguish of minde because the Lyon (that was shut vp) roared so extreamely, as the noyse in hearing seemed very dreadfull: and with his fete hee beate so strongly against the doore, as he made it flye open: and leauing the chamber, came forth into the hall. Primaleon seeing him comming, started vp on his fete, and very boldly set hand to his sword: but Gibber was in such feare, as he got him out of the doore, not being so hardie as to tarry by it. Gridonia was exceeding sorrowfull, doubting least the Lyon would doe some harme to the Knight of the cloven-foote: whom the beast no sooner beheld but hee presently went to him and fawned on him the louingliest that euer was seene, crouching downe at his fete, and like (a little dogge) flapped his taile about his legges.

Primaleon



## 24 The second Booke of the History

Primalcon, who had his sword readie to haue smitten him, perceiuing how kindly the beast bled him, said to himselfe: Well wottest thou belike, what desire I haue to doe thy Mistresse seruice, because thou shewest thy selfe so louing and genile: would God thee were as kinde to me as thou art, and that her bigour were changed into the like benignitie. So putting vp his sword againe, he began to clap and make much of the Lyon, who rose and set his fete on his breast, kissing and licking him, and then lay downe at his fete againe.

Questienelle, quoth Gridonia, this is verie meruaylous, and the behaviour of the Lyon doth not a little amaze me: for since he hath bene here with me, there neuer came any stranger hither, but he would rise so angrily against him as I haue had much labour to with hold him from doing harme.

Madame, answered the Knight, Lyons are indued with great vnderstanding, and it appeares this beast well knowes that amongst all them desirous to doe you seruice, there hardlie hath come any one, whose affection might be equalled with my zeale to serue and honoꝝ you, I know no other reason els why he should be so gentle to me.

I imagine Sir Knight (quoth she) that you are nêrely allied vnto mee some way or other, because you beare name of the cloven Roche. I can say nothing therein sweet Madame (quoth he) marie for the other matter before alleadged, well wot I, that my heart neuer longd for any thing so much, as to be at your commaund and seruice, especially in this war, threatening such danger to y<sup>e</sup>. I assure you sir, said she, so soone as I beheld y<sup>e</sup>, my heart reioyced, and I hope in God, that you will reuenge my cause of my enemies. While thus they discoursed, Gibber (very fearefully) returned into the Hall, and when the Lyon saw him comming, hee began to grinne at him: but Primalcon gently checking him with his hand, was the



the meane that thence forthward, he harmed not any knight : whereat each one greatly meruailed , not knowing whence the reason hereof proceeded.

When Gridonia sawe Gibber so dismayed, shee could not refraine from laughing, and said. Sir Knight, I see you were afrayde of my Lyon, but pardon mee I pray yee, for I caused him to be lockt vp : marie hee was so strong, that he broke the locks of the place where hee was enclosed onely to come to this Knight, whom hee bleth more louingly, than ever I saw him doe any, which is be- rie strange to me, for I neuer beheld him doe so to any be- fore, except this Lord by mee. Therefore I know not what to say or thinke hereof, onely this I conceiue, that the coming of this Knight is for my great good and ad- uantage.

Madame, answered Gibber, the Knight of the clouen. Rocke hath made amends for my shamefull fault, and I may say, he hath saved my life now the second time : for although it be to my dishonour, yet will I not spare to speake the truth, I know withall good Madame, that louing you more dearly than mine owne heart, I ought not to extoll any person in your presence : yet such account and reckoning doe I make of him, as I take my selfe hap- py in being daily defended by him, therefore the more boldly doe I speake of his worth in your hearing, because I hope you will recompence his poore hearts trauaile, and all dangers he shall suffer in doing you service, as for my selfe, I expect no reward, till I haue performed the pro- mise I made yee. God graunt yee may so doe, replied Gridonia, but I doubt you will hardly bring your purpose to passe : because the traytor Primaleon is a Knight har- die, and knowes well enough how to defend himselfe. Therefore would I were dead, that so many good knights might not perish for my sake, and gladly would I coun- sell you ( if ye beare me such affection as yee professe ) that yee would refraine from so perillous an enterprise, which  
ye



ye may giue ouer when ye please, and yet incurte no blame from me. Having thus spoken, shee turned to Primaleon, smiling after a courteous manner, & told him the foolish conceit of Gibber, who hoped to enioy her in marriage. But when Primaleon heard her call him Traitor, his minde was troubled: yet suddenly altering that humour, by vertue of her most heavenly aspect, hee admired her heynous indignation conceaued against him, who loued her beyond all other in the world, and fell into these speeches. Madame, sir Gibber is of such spirit, & loues you so perfectly, that whatsoeuer paine he imployeth in your seruice, will be most pleasing and agréable to him, therefore I perswade my selfe, he will neuer giue ouer till hee finde Primaleon: marie it is doubtfull what his successe shall be, because I feare his foe will not proue the weakest: though I haue heard by many knights that Primaleon is accused of blame for killing of Perrequin, for my selfe, I firmly beleue he vled no treason, when by chaunce of fight he ouercame him in the Tourney, which is a hap incident to any one: therefore if it be my lucke to fight with him, I will seeke some other reason than this whereby to vanquish him. Noble knight quoth Gridonia, I pray yee speake not in fauour of Primaleon, for if yee doe, I shall die with griefe. God forbid, quoth shee, that my words should be so offensive: but to make amends for this trespassse, I promise, if Gibber falle in your reuenge: that I will neuer cease, till I haue deliuered his head into your hands, which I will not performe, as hoping to merite the especiall benefite preferred for him who can execute this vengeance, but onely to doe such seruice as may stand with your liking, Heauen fauour me, said shee, to performe this promise, but I am so vnfortunate, as griefe and torment is rather assigned for me, than any comfort and content: in regard whereof, I could wish no man to aduenture this daunger, for much better it is, that a Ladie of so small reckoning as my selfe should miscarrie, than so many



many good Knights, whose service may advantage the whole world. At these words she fetched such vehement sighes, as Primaleon took great compassion on her and said. Lady, doe not thus torment your minde, for you must thinke your selfe to be so reckoned and esteemed, as all Knights whatsoener ought vnder take your service, and were the warre concluded, heauen will so smile on your other affaires, as you shall be at quiet from any disturbance. I hope so too quoth she. All this while Gibber conferred with the old Dutchesse, because hee durst not talke to Gridonia, by reason of his former foyle receaued: and Primaleon marueiling at so great a beauty, said within himselfe, that except he obtained her, he might well wish he had neuer seene her.

When Gridonia turning toward Zerphira, asked her if this were the Knight that sent her thither. No Madame, quoth shee, yet he somewhat resembles him in beautie and disposition, for the other is a very goodly man. I would gladly know, said Gridonia what is become of him, for we shall now haue great neede of his helpe. If hee be so valiant as you say he is. I can doe no lesse replied Zerphira, but wish hee may die an euill death, for his crueltie shewed to them which were in my companie. Then Primaleon desired to know of what Knight they talked. The Knight of the Dog (answered Gridonia) as I vnderstand he calles himselfe, for I neuer saw him: hee sent mee this Ladie of great Parantage, whom hee took vpon the Sea, and gaue me to know withall, that hee travelled to Constantinople to Combat Primaleon in my cause. I know not what prouokes him hereto, neither what fortune hath befallen him: but heauen I pray to prosper him, for the good will it serues hee beares mee.

Madame, said Primaleon, hee shall not greatly haunt if I can possibly hinder it, the same Knight seeke I, for a displeasure hee hath done mee, and I can assure you, hee hath Combatted with Primaleon, without Conquest got eyther of other for (as I heard) the



the Emperour caused them to be parted, wherefore he dares not come to shew himselfe in your sight, which grieues me not a little, because I would so gladly find him.

What dinell is that Primaleon, quoth Gridonia, of whom I haue heard so many meruailles? Say, if the Knight of the Dogge cannot vanquish him, I will neuer expect that any other shall doe it. Say not so madame, replied Primaleon, for there be many hardier Knights in the world than hee: But if it stand with your liking, I pray yee tell mee what Lady this is which hee hath sent yee. Then Gridonia declared what shee was, and how the Knight of the Dog slew all her men on the Sea, and so tooke her. Such are the sports of Fortune, said Primaleon, who many times abaseth them that are of greatest birth: and this Lady seemes to be the Daughter of no meane Prince, albeit I haue no knowledge of her, yet her misadventure neede be the lesse displeasing to her, happening to the hands of one so faire and gracious as you are. And Lady, quoth he, shaping his speeches to Zerphira, grieue not your selfe ouermuch, in seeing Fortune so bent against yee, for Ladies of high descent, in deepest extremities shoulde shew most height of spirit, referring themselves to his sole prouidence, that euermore in neede will soonest assist them. I vnderstand, that in the Court of the Allemaigne Emperour, you haue a Brother named Ledefin, did hee but know of your distresse, right soone would he come to giue yee succour. The Lady Zerphira, who all the while that Gridonia declared her misfortune, did nothing but lament, hauing her heart shut vp in extremitie of passion: she began to take courage & comfort her selfe, when she heard of her brother by this knight, who so laboured to perswade her, imagining him a friend to Ledefin, as by his gentle language she gathered, which somewhat reuiued her hope, that she one day shoulde enjoy her former liberty, whereon she thus began. Sir knight, for the good encouragement I haue receaued by your words, I pray God to make you as happie, as I am vnfortunate,



fortunate : True it is, that I have a Brother called Ledefin, of whom no tydings ha'v bene heard since he left his countrie, but understanding by you that he liveth, my heart is not so much afflicted as before, but in better sort qualified. Therefore, Sir Knight, I com-  
 tesse my selfe highly bound and beholding to yee, as much  
 for the good newes ye told mee, as also, because you hate  
 the Knight of the Dogge, for which, I love and esteeme  
 yee more than any man in the world. Primaleon cour-  
 teously thanked her, and in requitall of her kindnes, made  
 offer of his service, being glad to know shee was the Si-  
 ster of Ledefin : but much more was his hope, by her, to  
 spee of Gridonia, which least it might appeare by open  
 suspicion, hee gave over, and conferred no longer with her.

Gridonia had so entertained the Knight of the clowen-  
 rocke, in her conceit, as shee tooke great delight to sit and  
 talke with him : which made her hold on discoursing, un-  
 till the Dutchesse thus brake her off. Daughter (quoth  
 shee) it is high time that these Knights should goe take  
 their rest, yee may see them againe to morrow before they  
 depart. Then be it so, replied Gridonia : but Primaleon  
 desired no other rest, then still to be in her presence : ne-  
 vertheles, needs must hee goe thence with Gibber, who  
 held the Castell keeper talke till they came to the Pallace.  
 The Lyon went on with Primaleon, and never would  
 go from his side, whereat Gridonia and all the rest mer-  
 vailed, highly esteeming the Knights hardinesse, that ne-  
 ver appalled at the Lyons coming to him. A very ho-  
 nourable supper was prepared for them, but they could  
 eate little or nothing : because Gibber well perceived,  
 that in vaine hee had taken so much paine for Gridonias  
 love, and Primaleon (on the other side) was so forward  
 in his affection, as he had no will eyther to eate or drinke.

The tables being withdrawne, and they conducted  
 into a goodly chamber, where stood two sumptuous beds,  
 the Lyon still followed and would not away : which not



## 30 The second Booke of the History

a little pleased Primaleon to behold, though Gibber was greatly offended thereat, saying: Some wicked death be-  
 tide this Lyon, that hath bene the cause of my shame and  
 disgrace. Ah thou gentle Knight of the clouen Rocke,  
 what now remaines for me to doe, seeing Gridonia makes  
 no such account of me as heretofore shee was wont? Ah  
 say not so (replied Primaleon) neither lacke your ser-  
 uice to her, for I am perswaded she is not so unkinde or  
 ingratfull, but that your paines shall haue answerable  
 recompence: and whatsoever countenance shee bleth to-  
 ward ye, let it appeare in you that you take all in good part,  
 though I must confesse, you haue reason to be peniue for  
 her loue. You say very true sir, answered the Dwarf, for  
 God hath bestowed incomparable beauty on her, which  
 he may well gaze on, but I doubt very hardly inioy, as al-  
 so whether he be valiant and strong enough to fight with  
 Primaleon, thereby to make this Lady his wife. I feare  
 some knight of greater spirit than hee, must undertake  
 that taske. It were honour enough for him, to receiue a  
 good counterblow or two from the others lance, such as  
 might well chastise and teach him, what it is to crake and  
 boast, for amorous fits doe but meanely agree with men of  
 his metfall, he might doe well then to forbear, and shew  
 himselfe wise in following my counsel. I pray thee (quoth  
 Gibber) giue ouer thy prating, and let me sleepe, trouble  
 mee not with such fallies, which thou seest I digest with  
 great patience: for I see whence the cause of my harme in-  
 issueth, let it then suffice thee that I am not ignorant of it.  
 Primaleon commaunded the Dwarf to hold his peace, al-  
 beit hee tooke pleasure in his merrie kinde of language.  
 When they were in bed, Gibber began to despaire, thin-  
 king on the comely shape and great valor of the knight of  
 the clouen Rocke, which might cause him to lose the thing  
 he most desired: yet contrariwise, hee reposed especiall  
 trust in his vertue and loyalty. Now Primaleon private-  
 ly debated with himselfe: what meane was most exped-  
 ent



ent for him, whereby to attaine to the height of his enter-  
prise, & therefore he often thus conferred with himselfe. Ah  
Primaleon, why hast thou cast thy affection on a Lady,  
who is so deadly an enemy to thee: how canst thou appeale  
the extreame displeasure shee hath conceived against thee?  
Is it possible for thee so to alter her, as to gaine the least  
part of her good opinion, when she shall vnderstand what  
e who thou art? Courage Primaleon thou maist performe  
such seruices for her, as (will she or no) shall plead pardon  
for thee, & discharge thee of the offence committed against  
her, which yet is so deep ingrauen in her hart. Sweet Lady,  
be not so unkind & cruell to him that dearly loues ye, & for  
your sake will so imploy himselfe, as you shall forget any  
iniury conceived, inttling him in the rank of your knights  
and faithfull seruants. But wretch that I am, to make  
these doubts before last cause is giuen, considering what  
hope the Lord of the enclosed Isle sent me: that when our  
hearts shall be conformed, this diuided Rocke figured on  
my shield, shall likewise be ioyned in one. I hope he sent  
me not that message, but vpon some speciall occasion, be-  
cause he is a man in Arts so deeply experimented: if ther-  
fore meane while I endure affliction, my patience must be  
the greater, and let me count my selfe happy, in the only  
knowledge of her. Yet ere I giue ouer, I meane to doe so  
much, as either by friendship or force she shall be mine: and  
not one longer hath she, but he dyes the death in gainlaying  
me, except it be Gibber, of whom I need make no recko-  
ning, then Gridonia is mine, and neuer shall shee haue any  
other, because no Knight shall so well deserue her.

In this contentment he betook himselfe to rest, sleeping  
all night very quietly: but Gibber did nothing but sigh all  
the night long, shedding such abundance of teares, as on  
the morrow when they beheld his eyes so red and swoln,  
they could not but wonder at his exceeding foolishnes. Be-  
ing vp and readie, they went to the Pallace, to take their  
leane of the Ladie, who as yet was not come forth of her



chamber: because she had all that night held conference with the Lady Zerphira, concerning the Knight of the Clouen Rocks, saying, she had neuer seen a more goodly and gallant Knight, and privately entercoursing with her owne thoughts, she thus spake to her selfe. I hope this worthie man will cause my contentment, & reuenge my wrong vpon Primaleon, for some great matter is contained in my Lyons knowing him: therefore shall I reckon my selfe the most happie Lady of the world, if he be descended of high Parentage, as his beauty and behaviour amply declares him to be.

The young virgin Zerphira, who imagined this Knight some friend of her Brothers, and that by his meanes she might recover her liberty, praised and commended him very much, and being aduertised that they were attending in the Hall, she went forth to them, saying. Brave Knights, Gridonia intreats y<sup>e</sup> to hold her excused as yet, for she sends mee to tell y<sup>e</sup>, shee will be here immediately: then taking Primaleon by the hand, and walking aside with him, shee thus began.

Sir, by the faith you owe to God, I desire y<sup>e</sup> tell me if you be acquainted with my Brother Ledefin: because if you know where he abydeth is, I would intreate y<sup>e</sup> to deliuer him a message on my behalfe. Understand gentle Madame, quoth hee, that I loue and so esteeme of Ledefin, as if hee were mine owne Brother, assuring y<sup>e</sup>, that I will doe to him whatsoener you shall please to commaund mee, as being a seruice much desired by my selfe: whereon I make y<sup>e</sup> this promise, to take such charge of your affaires, as (were they mine owne) I would not be more carefull of them, then neuer trouble your selfe any further, for did y<sup>e</sup> know who I am, you would both beleene what I say, and remaine certaine to be shortly incountered. Ah would God, quoth shee, I might thinke my selfe so happie, as that you were of the Emperors blood, then should I be assured to re-  
uer



ver my former state and freedom. Madam, said hee, I pray ye make no further inquiry, to know any more than yet you doe, it shall suffice if you but remember me.

While thus they conversed, Gridonia came forth of her chamber, accompanied with such grace and beauntie, as it was wonderous to behold her so faire and gracions. Then Primaleon doing very humble reverence to her, thus spake: Madam, Sir Gibber and I desire to returne to the Dutchesse, who happily stands in some neede of vs: Wherefore I beseech ye remember vs in your prayers, the better able shall we be to doe you service. That will not I faile to doe, quoth she, and with all my heart, hoping through his assistance, to whom I direct my prayers, I shall some way or other requite this kindnes, offering your lives to such danger (for my sake) as is now threatned against ye. It is a great favour and blessing to vs, said hee, that we may enter the battaile as your Knights. A little fauor, quoth she, desertlesse on my behalfe you should doe me such good, therefore proceeding of your owne benigne curtesies. Gibber stood in a verie solemne quandarie, and gaue such looks on the Lady, as it seemed very fire sparkled from his eyes: which Gridonia marveiled at, and thinking hee was somewhat offended, shee drew nearer to comfort him, falling into these speeches. I pray ye sit tell me, if in ought I haue displeased ye, because ye stand thus musing, and vouchsafe me not one word: If it be so that I haue given the cause, I gladly would intreat pardon, for certainly I account well of you, and in you repose all my hope: let mee then see what you will doe in the battell for my sake, into which I would haue you enter as my Knight. Thus speaking, shee tooke Primaleon by the hand, turning her selfe about with a very sweet and gracions smile. These words caused in Gibber exceeding contentment, and Primaleons ioy on the other side was unspeakeable, when hee felt the faire and delicate hand of Gridonia, which made



him (in conceit) to flout the foolish Knight his arrivall.

Well quoth Gibber, now am I shadowed with your grace and favour, no doubt hereafter is to be made what I will doe, I could be content to be at the Combat even now. So tooke he his leave and Primaleon likewise, with whom the Lyon went to the Castell gate, and then returned into the Pallace againe: whereat each one wondered, not knowing what to say or thinke thereof. Gridonia was verie sad for their departure, but Zerphira glad and ioyfull, by the last words the Knight spake vnto her, when as he willed her but to remember him: wherefore shee had no other talke with Gridonia, but altogether of him, whom incessantly she extolled, saying, he could not but be descended of great Parentage. Gridonia was of like opinion, marie her desire tended withall, to know what he might be: whereon shee suddenly sent to aduertise her mother of all that had hapned, but principally of that which the Lyon had done.

#### CHAP. V.

How the Knights found the Dutchesse in great pen-siuenes, what conference *Primaleon* had with her, one-ly to encourage her, and what aduise shee her selfe gaue concerning the warre.



At when the Knights came to Ormeda, they found the Dutchesse very sad and pensive, for newes before was brought her, that the Prince of Clarence, insulted farre on her countrie, and mainly proceeded on with his forces: & as (*Primaleon* thought to have heartened her) she prevented him in this manner. Alas Sir Knight blame me not to be in great affliction, because now I know not what to doe, or how to dispose of my selfe: considering how many good and hardie Knights shall hazard their liues through my Daughters occasion, which makes me  
repent



repent the promise that she & I have made, for it will be impossible for us to be reneged on Primaleon, so it had bene as good to have yielded to her marriage. Madame, quoth he, I desire ye not to be of that opinion, for you are provided of so many good knights, as I am certaine they will make the Prince repent, that thus hee enterprised to warre against you. While they held on this conference, what was most expedient now to be done, a knight entered, who saluting the Dutchesse said: that on the morrow the Duke of Monteuell would there arrive, bringing with him many hardy knights for her defence. These tidings comforted the Dutchesse very much, whereon shee gave commandement to her subiects, that they should all be readie prepared, to meete the Duke upon his entrance. So on the next morrow, hee was entertained with great honour, and infinite kindnes, the Dutchesse appointing his lodging in the Palace: because she desired to loyne her daughter in marriage with him, in regard he was rich, of great birth, and a very good knight. Now because thither was likewise come many other gallant knights, both in favour of the Dutchesse, and for the love they bare to Gridonia: the chiefe and principall amongst them assembled together, to determine on what was most convenient to be done, Gibber making one in this consort with Primaleon in his companie. They debated on manie matters, which were posited for and fro, but resolved on nothing: all which time Primaleon spake not a word, but noted the Duke, who seemed to him a good and valiant knight, but withall verie proud and audacious. When he heard that he would not goe seek the enemy, but intended to bide halfe a day delaying in Ormeda, as fearefull of the charge, hee could no longer forbear, but thus spake. I wonder at you sir, who seemes to be a hardie knight, that notwithstanding ye should be so inconsiderate as to deliver such bad counsell, to our hinderance & advantage of the enemy. For in my conceit, seeing here are



## 36 The second Booke of the History

so many good Knights, we should doe them great wrong, by impeaching their forwardnes, whose mindes I see are inflamed with honourable desire, to meet the foe, & abide the spoyle he makes in the Ladies countrie. Wee thinke we should all make forth couragiously against him, to let him vnderstand that he hath done ill: which (the Heauens saying vs) we will do, seeing the right is on our side.

When the Duke heards these words, he looked on Primaleon, and going to the Dutchesse, said. Madame, I praye, tell mee vnsainedly, what Knight this is, so hardie, to speake in this manner to mee: If he enter the battaile with such spirit and courage as he makes shew of, I shall hold and esteeme him a gallant man. Sir quoth she, this is a hardie Knight, and of our kindred, who indeede will doe much more (I am perswaded) than hee speaketh: I thinke very well of his aduice, and repute it expedient to be followed, that the Prince may perceiue wee feare him not, or stand in doubt of any thing he can doe: for oftentimes it hath bene seene, a couragious assault hath caused a sodaine victorie. Well said the Duke, seeing the Knight speaks for you, & is your kinsman, at this time I will be silent: for in regard his aduise & counsell is so pleasing to you, I am content it shall take place, and we will depart hence when you please: neuertheles, thence forward he bare secret hatred to Primaleon. Now were these Knights diuided into bands, the Duke being Colonell of them, & Gibber with another Knight of Ormeda, were chiefe of the Dutchesse people: with them went Primaleon, and the remainder of them that were come in her cause, who were deuised likewise into foure other bands.

The Dutchesse with some small number of Knights, remained behinde for the defence of the Citie, all the rest departed, with full intent to banquish or lose their liues. When wee beheld them going, she lifted vp her hands to heauen, desiring God to be their fore-guide: but  
when



When Gibber and Primaleon came to take their leave of her, she could not refraine from teares, and embracing them, sayd to the Knight of the Clouen Rocke: My deare friend and brother, the Heauens (I hope) will be your protector: for I confesse my selfe much beholding to you, remayning in good hope and comfort by your kinde speeches. Madame (quoth he) such is my confidence in him, who neuer failes, that you shall shortly vnderstand by good effects, the great desire I haue to do you seruice.

So when the Dutchesse had commanded them all needfull things, as horse, armour, and a rich pavilion for them both, they set forward: the people of Ormeda travelling very merily, because the Knight of the Clouen Rocke was in their company. And after they hadourneyd foure days together, they heard that the Prince was preparing to meet them: whereupon they chose a meete place wherein to encampe themselves, there they concluded to expect the Enemy, and still came to them daily fresh supplies both of horse and foote, whereby the Dutchessees army greatly increased.

CHAP.



## CHAP. VI.

How the Battell went forward, wherein *Primalcon* slew a Giant and the Prince of *Clarence*, by meanes whereof the victorie was obtayned: whereon the Duke of *Monteuell* conceiued such enuy and hatred against him, as hee revolted, and was wounded.



After the Prince of *Clarence* had heard how the Duke of *Monteuell* came against him with a puissant Armie: hee made no great reckoning thereof, because he imagined himselfe strong enough, and the King of *Bohemia* (who hated the Dutchesse, for the opinion he had, that she caused the death of his son *Valido*) had sent him likewise great ayde and assistance. Besides all this, hee had with him *Orsilo* the Giant, Lord of the Castle of *Maluc*, and a neare kinsman to *Lurcon*, who was slaine in *Constantinople*, by the hand of *Primalcon*.

The Prince thus hauing a very mighty armie, enflamed with rage hee came to *Mallega*, where the Duke of *Monteuell* was encamped: to whom he sent this message by a Herald, that he should with speed retorne to his countrey, and giue ouer to aide or assist the Dutchesse, otherwise he would meete him in the field the next day, and trie if hee durst maintaine her cause, or no.

The Duke being a man of very high spirit, was exceedingly offended at this insolent message, and thus answered the Herald. Retorne and tell the Prince, that I haue taken better aduice in my coming hither, than for anie  
Dread



head of him, so shamefully to goe backe agayne vnto my Countrey, as vanquished with the terrour of his threatening words: therefore I gladly accept his offer for to morrow, and ere the fight be ended betwene vs, I will cause him to make amends for the wrong he hath done the Dutchesse. When the Prince vnderstood this answer, he was very angry, and sayd. I will make him dearly repent this arrogancie, I thinke Gridonias beantie made him answer thus boldely, but I'll set such a rate on it, as he shall neuer be able to reach.

Then gaue he commaundement to all his people, that they shoulde be all ready at an houres warning, because he would suddenly set thence, and be in sight of the Enemye an houre before day. The Duke on the contrary side made like preparation of his men, encouraging them with good speeches to the battell: where Primaleon and Gibber (perceiving that it was for the Dutchessees behoofe) did all whatsoener the Duke enioyned them: albeit they well noted his malice against them, for if Gibber had put himselfe forward with his Company, he would still command him backe: all which he patiently endured for Gridonias sake.

The Duke made his vanguard of two Companies, which were commaunded by two hardy Knights, and behinde them came the Dutchessees people of Ormeda among whom were Primaleon and Gibber: and in the Rearward came himselfe, with his owne power. The Prince had placed in his vanguard, the Countie brother to Ardiles: Wherefore, so soone as it was day light, and they sawe themselves so neare each other, they marched on to ioyn battell, each side valiantly encouraging themselves to doe their duty.

Pontell, who was one of the Captaines of the Dukes two foremost Companies, beganne the onset with such valour of minde, as he and his trayne bare very many vnto the earth, laying on loades without pittie or mercie. The Countie (being verie valiant) came forth against him  
very



very proud and boldy, and in such sort behaved himselfe, as Pontell and his Company had sustained the worst: but that the other Company came to his succour, wherein were diuers tryed and hardy Knights, who well could skill how to intreate their enemies. Primaleon being nere and observing the behauiour on both sides, thought the time long till he might shuffle amongst them, and seeing his Troupe in likelihoode of danger, by reason that the Countie stucke to it so mainely: Sir Knight (quoth he to Margard his Captayne) what will you doe? why presse you not on with vs to the fight? These wordes made him set forward with such furie, as he enforced them to recople and giue ground apace, such admirable deedes did Primaleon performe, defending still his goodly companion Gibber: but they that felt his heauie strokes, were glad to make him way, and shrowd themselves amongst the giant Orfiloes company.

This huge monster beholding his men retire, stirred vp with choller, entred the battell, where he did such exploitcs, as his people regained the field they had lost before, and the Dukes side began to withdraw themselves, fearing the dreadfull blowes of the Giant. Nor could Primaleon cause them to abide by it, which made him (in a rage) snatch a Lance forth of Purences hand and his Squire, that he might goe encounter the Giant, who layed on enerie side about him lustily with his Courtlar, as none durst endure neare him, and after a Knight he makes so fast as he could. But Primaleon getting before him, said: Guard thy selfe from me, or I shall presently doe thee dead. With these wordes he ran against him so puissantly, as his Lance pierced quite thorow him, albeit he was armed with a better good Collet: and he sent him to the earth with such a power, as his fall seemed like to the downe-cast of a huge Tower.

Then Primaleon rode with his horse foure or five times ouer the Giants belly, and afterward shouldzed in among  
the



the thickest throngs : by means whereof, the Dukes  
knights recovered heart afresh, and more than fiftie fell  
upon the Giant, not giving over untill they had quite dis-  
patched him. When they sawe themselves delivered of so  
mighty and terrible an enemy, the more boldly they ven-  
tured in among the other, where Gibber laboured so much  
as possibly he could to purchase honour, that recitall there-  
of might be made to Gridonia. Neuerthelesse he kept him-  
selfe still nere to Primaleon, to be sure of his helpe if he stood  
in any neede. The Countie, who (to rest himselfe a while)  
had bene a little aside, perceiuing his people beganne to  
flee, returned into the battaile, where by chance he mette  
with Gibber, whom he would haue seised on : now by rea-  
son he was befoze very sore wounded, Gibber with much  
adoe, in the end slew him.

When the prince of Clarence heard that the Giant was  
slaine, in whom he reposed more trust than in all the rest,  
he waxed exceeding cholericke, and sodainely rushed into  
the fight with the rest of his Troupes : who did such hurt  
to the contrary part, as had not the Duke of Monteuell  
come to their rescue, they stood in perill to be utterly over-  
throwne: so on both sides was made a very great laughter.  
The Prince was in such a furious rage, as he made pub-  
lique testimonie what valour remayned in him. The like  
did the Duke, and now it was mid time of the day, when  
it could hardly be discerned which side had most advantage.

In the end, the Prince singled forth the Duke, and ney-  
ther inferiour to the other in extremitie of vexation, they  
encountred together: but the Duke was sent to the ground  
in such a plight, as but for the present helpe of men, who  
with much adoe got him on horse backe againe, he had re-  
mayned there dead in that place. This made the Prince to  
encourage on his people brauely, saying: We must eyther  
die or overcome : which wordes did so reuiue theyr des-  
payring hope, as once more they made their Enemies re-  
tyme. Primaleon, who had fought so long, as now he had  
great



great neede to rest himselfe a while, seeing the men on his side beginne to runne away, rusht sodainely into the battell againe, performing such admirable deedes of Chivalrie, as the Enemy (not able to endure his sharpe assaults) gave place, and fled away mainly befoze him.

Then spake a Knight to the Prince, saying: But for this Knight, who performeth such deedes of Armes, as are to be wondered at, long time since had you gotten the honour of the field, for doubtlesse he is the buckler and defence of all his followers. The Heavens neuer helpe me (replied the prince) if he answer not deere for the wrong he hath done me. As he was uttering these words, he took a very strong Lance forth of his Pages hand, and ran against Prima-leon, whom well he knew by his rich armour, and who had also provided a fresh Lance to encounter him, perceiving that if he might be slaine, the fight were fully ended. The Prince (running over-lost) lighted on Primaleons horse, but he gave the Prince so sound an entertainment, as his Lance passing quite thorow his body, he fell dead unto the ground: and Primaleons horse being slaine, many began to buckle against him, but he couragiously recovering himselfe, advanced his shield, and despite their hearts, made them give him way.

At this instant Gibber stood him in good stead, for he calling for ayde, got an hundred of the Dutcheless Knights presently thither, who beating backe the Princes troopes, one belonging to the Dutcheesse, immediately alighted, saying: Brave Knight of the Clouen Rocke, heere mount on this horse, for better I perish than such a one as you, whose losse would be inestimable in respect of mine. Prima-leon bravely thanked him, and took good note of him, because he would know him: so being mounted on horse backe againe, he willed the Knight to withdraw himselfe from the fight: and beholding that the Prince was slaine, encouraged his men, giving such a sharpe assault on them that withstode them, as the Enemies seeing they? Gene-  
rall



all dead, presently yielded themselves to flight.

Primaleon and Gibber would no further pursue them, but being Masters of the field, entered the Princes Pavilion to rest themselves, and have they wounds looked vnto. Very glad was Primaleon, to see that Gibber had so safe and sound escaped in the battell, wherefore catching him in his armes, he sayd, I am glad to see how worthily this day you haue borne your selfe, great shame were it for Gridonia, if she should not requite your high deserving: where-to he answered, This may be rather sayd of you Sir Knight than me, for she may well blesse the day and houre when first she saw you: and I account my selfe happy for bringing you to her. Then the Chirurgions came and dressed they wounds.

Now the Duke, who had done nothing in this battell worthy any honour, pursued the Enemies a good way, till he perceined it drew to be late, when he called his men together, and returned to the field: where when hee beheld Primaleon and Gibber in the Princes Tent, he was so enraged, as he could no longer hold, but said. Gibber, it is no fit time for thee to place thy selfe in this Quarter, which in reason appertayneth to none but me.

And wherefore (quoth Gibber) appertaynes it to you? Is it because you slew the Giant Orilo in the battell, or the Prince of Clarence? Or else, for driving the Enemy to flight, by your hardy promise and valour? If you haue done all these memorable and worthy things, why then your Excellencie deserueth to be lodged in the dead Princes pavilion, the late owner whereof was slayne by your hand, and by none others.

Thou speakest too audaciously, replied the Duke, although I haue not in this present battell done altogether so much as the Knight that is there with thee hath done: yet am I neuertheless more valiant than eyther he or thou: and therefore neither of you ought so boldly to place your selves here.



44 The second Booke of the History

In sooth ( quoth Gibber ) you haue no reason thus to extoll your selfe, for I speake it hære publicquely, that this day you haue bitterly lost all your honour : and perswade your selfe, this Knight of the Clauen Rocks, is beyond you in birth, or ought beside. As for me, I am such a one as in nothing will giue place to you, or change the honour of my house with yours : therefore giue ouer in peace, and ste hence as you did in the battell, lest otherwise than well doe happen vnto you. What would I faine see (quod the Duke) and uttering these words, he set foote on ground, and entred the pavilion, accompanied with twenty Knights that followed him.

Then Primaleon, who yet had not uttered one word, because he was loath to haue any quarrell or motiny raysed : seeing the Duke enter, he could no longer containe himselfe, but setting hand on his sword, came to encounter him, saying : Duke of Montenell, it were great folly longer to suffer or endure your extreme arrogancie : and with these words he reached him such a græting on the pate, as cleauing his Helmet, and taking away some part of his scull, he fell downe to the ground ( as it were ) in an amazement. Whereupon the Dukes Knights made agaynst him, but Gibber and he gaue them the repulse, by slaying five or sixe of them immediatly, and wounding some of the other dangerously. The Dukes men gaue place, reputing him for dead, which caused many of the Dutchesses Knights to hasten thither : who vnderstanding well what Primaleon had done in the battell, condemned the Dukes follie, and intreated Primaleon to forbear farther reuenge : in which meane space the Duke was come to himselfe againe, and leauing that Tent, was brought vnto another pavilion. Now came many brane gallants, to keepe company with the Knight of the Clauen Rocks and Gibber, to whom they yielded obedience, as their especiall superiours.

CHAP.



## CHAP. VII.

How the Knight *Gibber* sent tidings vnto the Dutcheſſe of the victory, how ioyfull *Gridonia* was thereof, and what answer ſhe made to him that brought her the tidings.



The duke being healed of the wound he had receiued, he ſo grieued to ſee himſelfe diſgraced, as ſuddenly he departed thence with his people, making ſmall or no account of ſeeing the Dutcheſſe, or *Gridonia*, before his going. So ſetting forward on his way, he iourneyed extremely, not reſting in any place, untill he arrived in his owne Dukedome. On the day following, when *Primaleon* and *Gibber* heard of his departure, they were very glad thereof, and gave encouragement to the reſt, ſaying; that they ſhould not neede to ſtand in feare, for (by the fauour of the Heauens) they would defend them from any danger to come. Then *Primaleon* prevailed ſo much, as *Gibber* was made Generall of the Armie, who by his aduice ſo well diuided the Enemies ſpoyle, as none was diſcontented: But *Primaleon* remembering the Knight, who in the battell holpe him to a freſh horſe, on him he beſtowed his part of the riches, as alſo the Prince of Clarence Armour: For which the Knight very heartily thanked him, and from that time forwards he continued ſtill in his ſervice, to requite him (as indeede he after did) for this eſpeciall fauour done vnto him.

Now before they went thence, they cauſed all their  
D head



## 46 The second Booke of the History

Dead to be buried, leaving their Enemies bodies still in the field: except the Prince and the Countles, to whom they afforded honourable buriall. The wounded were conveyed to necessary places, where they were diligently and carefully attended by expert Chirurgions: Afterward, they went and seized the Townes and Castells which the Prince had usurped. During all this time Gibber sent an Esquire of his to the Dutchesse, to let her understand this victorie, as also to excuse the Duke of Monteuclis departure: But before the Esquire could reach thither, she had heard reported by sundrie Knightes, that the Prince of Clarence was vanquished and overcome by the onelie valour of the Knight of the Clouen Roche: which made her so exceedingly overcome with ioy, as she had not power sufficiently to expresse the same, but still devoutly lauded the Heavens for sending a Knight of such estate to her succour.

But when the Messenger came to the Dutchesse, then the ioy and gladnesse was much more to be noted: and understanding what had passed concerning the Duke of Monteuell, she sayd. In sooth the Duke is a very proud minded Knight, ignorant of the rare vertues in the Knight of the Clouen Roche, of whom he might learne both regard and honour. His departure somewhat displeaseth me, but thus hath the heavens appoynted that the accomplishment of my desires should not be fulfilled: Nevertheless, so soone as possibly I can, I will send to pacifie his conceived displeasure, and seeing that Gibber with the Knight of the Clouen Roche hath taken charge of our other businesses, I doubt not but that they will manage them sufficiently.

After great gifts were bestowed on the Messenger, he was conducted to Gridonia, and the aged Dutchesse, when he that held the Castell (hearing this good newes) let him in immediately, conducting him where Gridonia was, who shewed him a verie gracious countenance, and gave him



him honourable entertainment, at the last thus she beganne with him.

What good newes hast thou brought me from sir Gibber, and the Knight of the Clouen Rocke? Madame, answered the Squire, my newes are the best in the world, for you shall vnderstand, that the Prince of Clarence is not onely vanquished but likewise slayne, by the high courage of Knight Gibber, my Lord and Maister: And by some meanes of the great vertue, in the Knight of the Clouen Rocke abiding, who indeede slew the mighty Giant Orfio, and the proude Prince of Clarence: his worthy Chualry can not be sufficiently commended, and I suppose there is no Knight in the world comparable vnto him. For still he gaue strength and courage to our men, he was ever for most for theyr defence: briefly, what shall I say of him, but the Enemies fled from him, as from an infernall forie?

It becommeth me not also to forget the Knights hardie and vndauntable spirit, who by his proper hand slew the Countie of Bronze your mortall enemy: for such deedes of consequence hath he perourmed, as worldes of time hereafter must extoll him: Therefore is he made General of the Armie, and is gone to recover what the Prince vniustly detayned. So continuing his Discourse, he declared all that had happened vnto the Duke of Monteuell.

What shall I doe (quoth she) to discharge my selfe of the debt, wherein I stand obliged to your Maister: chiefly for his paines, in conducting hither the Knight of the Clouen Rocke: I pray the Heauens, that (with his owne honour) he may performe the promise he made me. Say to your Maister, that I acknowledge the Service he hath done me: and commend mee to the Knight of the Clouen Rocke, and desire him not to let it be long before he doe see mee.

Afterwardes, being very bountifull in gifts vnto the Squire, she sent him away, remayning in a wondrous desire, to see the Knight of the Clouen Rocke returned:



for she made but a scoffing account of Gibber, and calling the Ladie Zerphira aside, sayd: What thinke you (sister) of this worthy knight, so excellent both in beautie and vertue? What (I pray you) can I sufficiently requite him withall, from whom I haue receiued so many choise benefites?

Madame, replied Zerphira, you can neuer doe so much for him, but still you shall discerne his deserts to out-goe you, nor can you haue so many occasions of service, as hee will gladly employ himselfe in for your sake: Therefore you must needs thinke your selfe beholding to him, and in some sort obliged more than to any other. God knowes (answered Gridonia) how willingly I could loue him, so he would not falle in finishing my desired aduventure: heauen then I pray to endue him with such strength and valiance, that he may reuenge me on Primalcon, as already he hath done on the Prince of Clarence. Then (had hee but his Cloake and Sword onely) yet would I thinke my selfe happy, hauing him to my husband: But questionlesse he is descended of some great Linage, wherefore I will iet downe my rest to loue him, and make more account of him, then of any other knight in the world. So shall you doe well, replied the Ladie Zerphira: and one houre passed not, but still they talked together on the knight of the cloven Rocke.



## CHAP. VIII.

How the warre being ended, *Primaleon* and *Gibber* returned to the Dutchesse, who with her daughter gaue them very kind intertainment, and what conference *Gridonia* and *Primaleon* had together.

**T**he Squire being returned towards *Gibber* his Master, he found him before a Castle, wherein diuers had slained them selues that fledde from the battaile: when he had certified him of *Gridoniaes* toy, at rehearall of his message, hee was him-selfe highly pleased, and *Primaleon* also. Wherefore concluding to cease the warre, to see her he most desired, according to her owne request, his thoughts and cogitations were diuersly disturbed, because he imagined not himselfe sure to enioy her, by reason of so many doubts crossing his way. And finding no other meanes to compass his intent, he purposed to returne to *Constantinople*, whence hee would come with some puissant strength, and so perforce to beare her thence with him, which conceit gaue him a little comfortable hope.

The Dutchesse continually sent to them all needefull things, and *Primaleon*, whose desire to see *Gridonia*, augmented day by day, assayed the place so furiously where the Enemies were inclosed: as hee obtayned entrance, put many to the sword, and tooke the rest prisoners. So passing thence along, hee reconquered all the places that were held by the Enemye, some forcibly, others voluntarily yielded, the like also did diuers other braue and valiant Knights before they had ended, besides great store



## 46 The second Booke of the History

of common mercenarie men, who were not a little glad to haue their liues saued. Gibber was wonderously pleased with this good successe, yet could hee not so well gouerne as to generall liking: which made them more desirous of Primalcon than of him, for each one very gladly would take him as his Lord, because they noted his especiall desertings, and the Dutchesse Knights were more desirous hereof than the other, which made them with hee might haue Gridonta in marriage.

After that all in generall was to them submitted, and no newes heard of any enemy to resist, (for the Prince of Clarence had but one Brother, who as yet was ouer young to seeke reuenge:) they set forward and returned to Ormeda.

Being there arrined, (the Dutchesse well accompanied with Knights) set forth to meeete them, pacing on faire and softly till they came in sight.

So soone as Gibber, Primalcon, and the other Captaines of the Arme beheld her, they alighted from their horses, and each putting off his Helmet, went to doe her reverence. Shee (shewing a countenance of exceeding joy) first embraced Gibber: afterward, holding Primalcon for a pretty while enclosed in her armes, with the teares standing in her eyes, shee sayd.

Faire Sonne, blessed be the Mother that gaue thee life: as also the day and houre of thy birth, in regard of the good thou hast done already, and forwardnesse I discern in thee to continue the same: Heauen make mee able to recompence what you haue done for me, in vanquishing my proud insulting enemies.

Madame, quoth he, what hath bene done, proceeded from the Highest bountie, who could not permit the iniurie you endured, many good friends and subiects haue you, that right lawfully, in this Warre, made manifest their loving affection: amongst whom I intreate you to reckon me as one, because my desire is rather to serue you, than  
any



any Lady in all the world beside. And let not I pray you your thanks extend to me only, but to this good Knight for Gibber also, who (to his great fame and praise) hath in this warre expressed, how careful he is of your safetie and welfare.

I know well (quoth she) the intire love he beares me, for which I shall alwayes reckon my selfe indebted to him: then turned she vnto the other, very graciously thanking them for their high good service. After they were mounted on horse backe againe, they rode all into the Citie, Gibber and Primaleons lodging being appoynted at the Pallace, where as great honour was done to them as to any of the other.

Soone after, the Dutchesse granted licence of departure, for all such Knights as had come to her defence, every one recompenced to his owne contentment: and Gibber also sent away all his Troups, except two hundred which hee stayed there to attend him. This done, the Dutchesse determined to feast the two Knights, in the same Castell where her Daughter was: And she being aduertised of her Mothers intent and purpose, caused diuers faire Pavilions to be erected about a Fountaine, because she esteemed it the most pleasing place in the Castell, thither came her Lion to seeke her, following her still from one Tent to another, they all being costly and sumptuous, whereof one was for the Dutchesse her Mother, her Grandame and her selfe. When all things were in such order as they should be, she came forth into the place most royally adorned, all her faire Damselfs attending vpon her: Now seemed she tenne times more beautifull than when Primaleon at the first had scene her, and so she sat her downe by the Fountaine, expecting the company that came to visite her. Now came the Dutchesse from Ormeda brauely attended vpon, having sent all prouision before needefull for the Feast, and Primaleon conuersing with her vpon the way: amongst other matters, she told him that she could finde in her heart



to giue him her daughter in marriage, so he would vnder-  
take her reuenge on Primaleon. As for Gibber, about all  
men in the world he should not haue her, both in regard of  
his mis-shapen bodie, as also his vnworthinesse to enioy  
such a wife: and this conference had she with him, not one-  
ly of her selfe, but was induced thereto by the counsell and  
aduice of her people. Then Primaleon made the same vow  
to her, which before he had done to Gridonia, that he  
would neuer rest, till he had deliuered into her Daughters  
hand the head of Primaleon.

Theise wordes made her not ioyfull alone, but all the  
Knights and Ladies that bare them companie. When  
they were come to the Fountaine, and had all forsaken  
their horses, Gridonia issued forth of her Pavilion with  
such a grace and maiestie, as all that beheld her were a-  
mazed thereat: and falling vpon her knees before her Mo-  
ther, who had not sene her a long while before, in teares  
she receiued many embracings from her, and thus at the  
last sayd her Mother. Daughter, behold here the Knight  
of the Clouen Rocke, who hath placed you in your former  
estate and dignity, recovering whatsoeuer you were rob-  
bed of by your Enemies: doe him all the honour you can  
deuise, for he deserues no lesse, because he is the best knight  
in the world. That will I Madam most gladly, answered  
she, for I see his vertues worthily challenge the same: So,  
stepping forward in humble manner to receiue him, hee  
was greatly abashed at the honour she offered him, and put-  
ting himselfe before to hinder her humiliation (very kindly  
and louingly) many grætings passed on either side. Gibber  
all this while stood in a quandarie, or as one besides him-  
selfe, seeing no honour done to him, but all to Primaleon:  
who knew well the cause whence this agony proceeded,  
and hauing compassion to see him thus tormented, beganne  
to say as followeth.

Madame, see here the hardy Knight Sir Gibber, who  
hath done you such especial Seruice in these Warres:  
where-



whereupon she came and welcommed him very graciously, saying. Sir Knight of the clowen Roke, I thanke him (as my Knight) with all my heart, for his good will imployed on my behalfe, and you for bringing matters to so good effect for my sake. These words greatly pleased every one except Gibber, who saw it was but folly in him to waite for any extraordinary matter, the Knight of the clowen Roke being in companie: yet could hee not disswade his affection, from extreame desire still to doe her service. Afterward, when they were entred the Pavillion together, the aged Dutchesse arose so well as shee could, and hauing the teares standing in her eyes, caught Primaleon in her armes, giuing him many kisses on the cheek, and at the last said. My sonne, it euidently appeareth you are descended of Royall blood, in that you haue handled our enemies in such sort: pardon mee I beseech ye, because the other day when you were here, I did you not such honour as of right you deserved And then taking Gibber by the hand, shee gaue him likewise a very kinde welcome.

All this day they feasted, and continued in sundrie varieties of pleasure: yet could not Primaleon but be sad and pensive in his Ladies sight, thinking on nothing else but how he might enjoy her, so beauenly faire shee seemed in his eye. Yet she to drine him from these dumps, expressed many signes of good will, and conferred with him very courteously: whereto he returned diuers imperfect answers, so strangely was hee carried away in conceipt, and euery minute more than other inflamed in desire of possessing her. The Lyon in like manner kept still by his side, to the admiration of the Dutchesse and all the rest, & when he pleased to walke from him, then would he goe to Parente, Primaleons squire, and salune on him in as gentle manner: because he knew him, and had been nourished in the house where the Squire was. For the Knight of the enclosed Ile had sent thither this Lion, there to guard  
and



and defend Gridonia: giving thereby to vnderstand, that a Lyon of more strength (meaning Primaleon) should after be the Lord and Gardian of her.

When the Dutchesse perceiued the Lyon so gentle to Purence and his master, she said. Thou highest God succour this poore Widow, making her glad and contented with so good a sonne: maruailous are thy secrets, giving knowledge and vnderstanding to bruite beasts, as now at this instant I doe behold. Having thus spoken, she remained silent, and no one that heard, but well perceiued what she meant by those words: which made Gridonia in surpassing ioyfulness, saying. Sir Knight of the Clouen Rocke, the Lyon well knowes your seruants, and hath more reason than I haue, in that hitherto I had not so much manners as to speake to any of them, wherein I confesse my ouer-much negligence, for the Squire seemeth both gentle and courteous.

Then calling him and the Dwarfse to her, she said. Pardon mee, that as yet I haue not shewen my selfe to ye as well as became me: but hereafter I will no more be so forgetfull but admit ye (as occasion serueth) to come often and see mee.

Purence and the Dwarfse kissed her hand in signe of their humilitie, and yelded themselves altogether at her seruice. All the Knights there present were highly contented, expecting when Primaleon should be acknowledged their Lord, and desired in heart that it might be speedily.

When the houre was come they should all goe to rest, Primaleon and Gibber went to their Pavillion, which was that they took from the Prince of Clarence: euery one taking pittie and compassion on Gridonia, whose leue increased more and more to Primaleon, and the Knight which gave him a fresh horse in the battaile, extold him to the heauens, saying, no man in the world could reuenge her on the Emperours sonne, but onely he. The day following



loving, they went to hunt in the woods there néere adjoining, wher Primaleon (who was an excellent good hunter) slew many beasts of diuers kinds: at which the beholders very much meruailed, to see him so perfect and compleat in all exercises.

Whatsoever had bene taken or slaine, was brought before the Dutchesse and her Daughter, to whom still it was said, that the Knight of the clouen Roke had sent them those presents: which the Dutchesse not a little admiring, said: God had made him singular in all things. So returning home from the Chase, and being alighted from their horses, each one did welcome him very honourably and Gridonia taking him by the hand, placed him on her right hand, the Dutchesse and Gibber sitting on the left, then Gridonia began in this manner to parle with her lover. So farre as I can see (my Lord) there is not any thing that can escape your hands: you tame the cruelty of Lyons, and fiercenesse of other wilde beasts, the birds (though they haue wings) yet it auails them not: Alas, what shall poore silly Ladies doe: how farre more easily their hearts are won and conquered by you, I am not able to conceiue noting your worthines: I wonder if you loue no Lady of high desert, who giues you the strength and hardinesse thus discerned in you.

Madame (quoth he) well may you aske that question, but durst I discover the paine I haue suffered, my heart would be eased of a world of afflictions. Let mee intreat ye then (Madame) thus to conceine of me, that I loue so perfectly, as (to giue my heart some breathing time of rest) to my great misfortune, I was so bold to aduenture hither: but I finde I had been better to haue kept me still hence, because since I beheld her whom (beyond all other) I most desire to serue, I feele a martyrdome so extream, as death (I feare) must onely mitigate. Herewith Gridonia changed colour, that she should cause her new Lover to vse such kinde of language: but the sweet Blasse which  
mounted



mounted in her cheekes, made her seeme more beautifull, and caused her to stand silent a pretty while, without returning any answer: which made the Knight catch hold on this advantage, and pursue his former speeches in this manner.

Lady, she who hath altogether subiected me vnto her, is the onely fairest creature in the world: in regard whereof you must vnderstand this, that such and so honourable is the loue I beare her, as whatsoeuer vertue remaines in me, receiueth thence his originall and increase: so that if I doe any thing to be reputed of worth, the presence of her I loue doth onely procure it. Beside, perswade your selfe sweet Madame, that were I not descended of great parentage, I durst not be so bold as to disclose my hearts anguish, wherefore so please you to rest thus resolved, and to entertaine me as your Knight and seruant, you shal not be deceiued in me, and such reuenge will I execute on Primaleon as you shal haue iust cause to remaine fully satisfied. But till such time as I may performe this promise, I would intreat ye to allow mee that fauour, because I would haue none else serue you and gladly would I combat with every one, that shall come and offer themselves to goe encounter Primaleon. This (so please you) dare I boldly vndertake: for no one shal doe you more seruice than I will, in that I loue you more than any Knight can.

The Ladie was very glad to heare these words, & with a gracious countenance thus replied. My Lord and Brother, I verily beleue, that no lesse valour remaines in you then you make iust shew of, and therefore I should account my selfe happie in accepting ye, not onely for my Knight, but as my Lord and husband: if ye would but reuenge me on Primaleon, which is the thing I onely desire. And thus perswade your selfe, that (while I live) will I make reckning of no other knight but you: whose deserts towards me haue been so great, and whose vertues are more than can be numbred. If then you loue me as you protest, be-  
lieue



I am assuredly what I have said unto ye, and that I love ye as dearly as you can love me: granting your request with all my heart, to enter the combat against all knights that offer me their service, not doubting but it will be to your great honour. In meane space, I beseech yee deferre not the search of Primaleon, and rest thus resolved of mee, that never will I love any other but you: for in doing otherwise, I should much faile of the firme faith I see you beare to me, and not answer the bond I have received of you.

Madame (quoth he) I now repute my selfe most happy, by the promise you have made me, and for my owne part, you shall see what diligence I will use in accomplishing your content. I intreate (withall) it might stand with your good liking, to shew good countenance toward sir Gibber, for affectionately I love him, and I would not that through despaire any ill should befall him: for the rest, I hold my selfe so assured of you, as in matter of love you will make no account of him.

Whereof make you no doubt (quoth she:) it is certaine that hee is a good knight, but I had rather dye than hee should banquish Primaleon.

Fear not you that Madame, replied Primaleon, for I thinke himselfe hath no hope thereof: whosoever performeth that must be more valiant than he is, seeing so many better knights have attempted and failed.

As she was answering, that in this respect she stood in feare to lose him: Content ye Ladie (quoth hee) let that rest on my perill, for I feele my selfe sufficient and strong enough in winning your grace, then neuer doubt I to finish this adventure, were it farre more dangerous: and it shall be by the meanes of your rare perfections, not any other abilitie in my selfe, for very thinking on you, will make my strength unconquerable.

Thence forward, the Lady shewed her selfe much more pleasant than before she had done, being proud that she



Shee was loued by so worthe a Knight: who (God knowes) was still in great paine and anguish, in studying with himselfe how he should compasse this hard conquest of himselfe.

Thus spent they five dayes together in solace at the Fontaine, where on a time as Primalcon was deuising with Zerphira, hee told her that hee was discented of the Emperours house, and hauing often heard speech of Gridonias rare beaultie, he came thither for no other cause but to see her: after he had seene her, hee became so wondrously enamored with her love, as it would be his death, except he might enioy her, and happie would he esteeme himselfe, if he could get both Gridonia and her thence, that he might enioy her former estate and honour.

Befoze the faire Lady could returne him an answer, there came a Knight richly armed and well attended, who brauely trotted his Courser befoze the Tent, where the Dutchesse and Gibber sate conferring with Gridonia.



## CHAP. IX.

How *Primaleon* vanquished in fight *Irmele* the Prince of *Ponilla*, and how shortly after there came newes to the Dutchesse, of the death of the King of *Polonia* her brother.



The knight sat on his horse a good while very earnestly beholding them, not speaking one word, yet declared by his countenance that he had valor in him: At last breathing forth a far fetched sigh, he said. It is but right that *Gridonia* is reputed the very fairest in the world:

but what shall I now doe, if Fortune be so aduerse to me, that I may not enjoy her? Unwisely haue I then done, to come with such good will to seeke my death: and hauing thus spoken, he was silent againe. The Dutchesse being offended herewith, thus replied. Sir, you shew not such curtesie (as you ought to doe) in speaking these words, therefore in good time I pray you get ye gone. Why Madame (quoth he) thinke ye I am ashamed of saying, that I doubt which way I shall enjoy *Gridonia*. The reason that makes me thus distrust my self, is because I cannot finde him, by whose meanes onely I might obtaine her: for otherwise, perswade your selfe, that I can deserue her as well as any knight liuing. heauen fanning me but to doe her any seruice. I haue been at Constantinople to combat *Primaleon*, but there I could not finde him: afterward, pursuing the search of him through these Countries, I heard that the Prince of Clarence made warre most wrongfully against



## 60 The second Booke of the History

against you, then coming hether for your ayd and succor, I finde the warre finished, to my great discontentment: for the Prince should not haue escaped so, but all his estate and countries would I haue ruined.

Primaleon, who was angrie to heare these wordes, thus answered. Knight, I haue considered on your speeches, concerning your desire to doe Gridonia service, and it is necessarie for you to vnderstand, that shee stood in no need of your help to abate the princes pride, who is dead, and in that respect shee seeks no farther vengeance on him. Moreover, I am certaine you haue not been to enquire for Primaleon, because there is no fault in him but ye might haue found him, for hee contains no such cowardly spirit, as to hide himselfe from any one, (as I haue heard.) But that your journey may not altogether be fruitlesse, let vs see if your valour be such as you make it in thew: for I tell thee that I am Primaleon, who defies thee, and challengeth thee to the combat, because it were against reason, such foolish and vncliuill speeches, (vled in the presence of so great a Lady) should passe without their deserved punishment.

Having thus spoken, incensed with rage and anger he arose, and casting him his gantlet, the Knight threw him the lappet of his corset as his gage, saying. Knight, I accept the combat, not because I thinke thee to be Primaleon, but to quallifie thy ouer-weening pride, which thou hast learned in sitting by these Ladies, taking it for a lile pleasing and delectable: but we shall presently see if thou art able to doe them any service, and canst stand vnder the weight of my martiall strokes.

I can and will, replied Primaleon, so thou wilt but stay vntill I am armed: then shalt thou finde me as able for armes, as fit to sit and conuerse with Ladies.

Thus is Primaleon gone to arme himselfe, and the Dutchesse with her traine abiding with great astonishment, because they heard him call himselfe Primaleon.

Here



Hereupon shee said to her Daughter: what thinke ye on the words the Knight spake? Peace Mother (quoth Gridonia) and perswade your selfe, were he the man hee named himselfe, hee would not be so hardy to enter the middest of his enemies: but he tearmed himselfe Primalcon, that he might haue the better meanes to Combat with the Knight, for he intreated me, and I gaue him leaue besoze, to stand against all that should come to seeke after mee.

With this answer the Dutchesse was somewhat pacified, in regard of the loue he bare her Daughter, yet a zealous suspition remained still in her heart: but turning to the Knight, shee desired him to be gone, declared what great vertue remained in his aduersarie, and that in the Combat there could no glozte befall him, but rather misfortune.

I will not follow your counsell (quoth the Knight) for if my heart failed mee in your Daughters presence, I should declare my loue to be but little, or of no reckoning. Who might you be (replied the Dutchesse) that do thinke so well of your selfe, as to enioy my Daughter in marriage? I am called Irmele Prince of Pouilla, answered the Knight, who haue taken all this paine to come and see you, induced thereto by the renowne of your Daughters beantie.

I am now (quoth shee) lesse willing you should hazard the fight than besoze, for I would not haue a Knight (of such fame as you are) dishonoured in my presence. As he was answering, that it would be more dishonour for him to flee the Combat than otherwise, he perceaued his enemy comming to deale with him: who hauing already vnderstood of what degree hee was, reioyced that hee should meddle with a Prince of such esteeme, wherefore approaching toward him, he said.

Irmele, defend thy selfe, for here is the head of Primalcon, sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople, now



## 62 The second Booke of the History

shall we see what thou canst doe to get it. This braverie will I soon chastise, replied the other, and make thee confesse, that what thou hast said is false. Now because they were both full of fierie desire to trie each others valour, they took their race, and met together with such furie, as their Launces flew vp shivered in the aire, in which charge the Prince lost his stirrups, but quickly recovered himselfe into his saddle againe. Immediately they drew their swords, beginning to hake and beat one another so unmercifully, as Primaleon had great neede to be valiant, because his enemy knew so well how to handle his weapon, and stood vnto him very manfully. But Primaleon being of greater strength, and having withall an excellent good sword indeed, hee neuer gave stroke, but it took away a peece of his Armour, and escaped hardly the very flesh. The fight continued so cruel betwene them, as Gridonia wondered thereat, being afraid she should lose her knight, looking so pale as a cloth, and holding her arms crosse-wise together, which Primaleon perceiving, and saw as yet hee had gotten but small advantage, bethinking himselfe withall, that it was shame for him to suffer the fight so long in his Ladies presence: wherefore provoked both with valour and despight, hee gave the Prince such a sound stroke on his Helmet, as he cleft it, and made him feele the hennelle of his sword, then pressing on nearer him, hee caught him so strongly by the shield, that downe he fell on the earth, and hee dismounting, cut the laces of his Helmet to take off his head: but the Dutchesse cried out that he should not kill him, intreating him to spare his life, for hee had won honour already sufficient. Primaleon with-drew himselfe at her request, and shee led the Prince into her Pavilion, calling for Chirurgions to dress his wounds: But he was much ashamed of his apparant dishonour, therefore his hurts were no longer bound up, but hee would needs away, and so returne home againe with this sore disgrace.



disgrace. Primaleon was unarmed by the hands of Gibber, and had his wounds dressed, which were not greatly dangerous, when Gibber thus spake unto him. Alas brother, what did you meane to say you were Primaleon? whereat he smiling, thus answered. I said so, onely to provoke the Knight to the combat. Then Gibber desired him to beware afterward, to call himselfe no more by that name, fearing it might be the cause of his death. Thus saith (quoth he) whosoever should thinke mee to be Primaleon, were worthy to be condemned for his foolish opinion. Soone after he came to the Dutchesse Pallatium, who satte with her daughter very sad and pensive, to see their Knight had bene so hardly handled: but Primaleon with a merrie countenance, thus renewed them.

Ladies, what thought ye when I told the Knight that I was Primaleon? I did it in regard of his false boasting, that he had bin to seeke him, and he (belike) should cowardly hide himselfe from him. Gentle sir, quoth the Dutchesse, I pray you (hence forth) never call your selfe Primaleon againe to any whosoever, except ye will loose the love I beare you: I know wel to what end you did it, but I would beare it no more till my Daughter were revenged, then can we be contented to beare any derision of him. Primaleon said, hee would thenceforth in such sort no more offend them: practising all meanes to comfort them againe, because they were sorrie for the Princes perill, as also for the words Primaleon had spoken. As they satte discoursing diversly on the cause: a Knight attired all in blacke entred the Pallatium, who falling on his knees before the Dutchesse, began as followeth. Madame, I beseech you let me kisse your hand, as my loyall reuerence to the Queene of Polonia, because your Brother is diseased without any issue, which hath caused great trouble amongst the Lords and Barrons of the Realme, in that some haue chosen you as Queene, others take part with your Nephews Gresto and Gristamo, and enter vpon the



the Kingdome perforce, where they haue made Gristamo King, because hee is eldest. They therefore that are on your behalfe, by me doe humbly desire you, that you and your daughter would repaire thither, with so much speed as possibly you can : being perswaded, that at your personall appearance, there will be none so hardie to stand against you : and with these words, he presented her a Letter, sent from those her friends, and the Dutchesse hearing these heauie tidings, said.

Unhappie creature that I am, what shall I doe now my good Brother is dead ? Thou dost ill Primaleon in killing of Perrequin : for were he now liuing, I should be lesse burthened with griefe, and my Daughter might in peace be Queene of Polonia, and so she continued bemoaning the death of Perrequin. Primaleon and Gibber entreated the Dutchesse to forbear her plaints, and prepare her selfe to set forward to enioy her right. Sir Knight of the clouen Rocco (quoth she) if you will promise to goe along with me, I am certaine all shall fall out well, and the rebells repent this bold intrusion.

Madame, said he, it were a great fault in mee, if I should yet forsake you : therefore build thus farre vpon my promise, that I will neuer leaue you, till your estate be assured, and all troubles quieted. She returned him heartie thanks, and afterward with her Daughter went to Ormeda, to set matters in order for their departure : but let vs now speake a while of the famous Prince Edward.



## CHAP. X.

How Prince *Edward* conferred with the Lady *Olymba*, concerning his owne amorous Passions, receauing from her some comfort therein. How hee vanquished and brought the Soldan to death, instead of whom hee established *Mosderin*.



During the time that Prince *Edward* remained hid in *Maruins* house, with the Lady *Olymba* & her brethren: hee was in some inward disturbance of minde, by denisling how he might compasse to enjoy his faire *Florida*, whose heavenly beauty was so impzinted in his memorie, especially by these words, when she made him promise, that what he had done for her sake, should one day be recompenced. And being unable to endure this extreame oppression, he declared his loue and torment to the Lady *Olymba*, saying. I pray ye tell me *Madame*, if the *Magitian* (who was so priuie to my affaires, & yet knew me not) told ye whether I should enjoy her or no, that hath so cruelly wounded me: This I heard him say, )quoth she) that by her you were hurt, you should likewise be holpen: and he let me see a certaine thing, by meanes whereof shee shall loue you with all her heart, & far more intirely then she both her selfe: whereto he thus answered. For Gods sake (*Madame*) tell me that if you please, and shew me what it is, for the onely sight or knowledge of such a thing, I doubt not but would thoroughly recover my extremitie. Then the Lady said that she would giue it him, because it was



## 66 The second Booke of the History

the onely medecine for his maladie : at which words shee  
brought forth a Cup of gold, garnished with many rich and  
precious stones, where amongst there was a white Ca-  
lamite, which had the vertue to heale any disease: it was  
set in a bone taken out of the middle of a Stags heart, and  
so deliuering the Cup to him, she said. Know my Lord,  
that if the Princesse Florida, drinke water out of this Cup,  
shee shall loue you with all her heart : then hee taking it  
in his hand, bestowed many kisses thereon, saying.

Faire Cup, thou art more precious than all the trea-  
sure in the world, because thou shalt come into her hand  
that hath not her equal: by the helpe of thee I hope to  
winne her heart, as for strength or valour, they auaille  
not, and without thee I shall but in vaine attempt, be-  
cause in her sight, all my bittermost is nothing : At these  
words the teares trickled downe his cheekes, with the  
earnest desire hee had to see his Mistresse. The Lady  
still hartned him on with good perswasions, that grieve  
might be no hinderance to the curing of his wounds : for  
shee told him, that by some part of his knightly behaui-  
our, he must likewise endeuour to obtaine his Lady. Now  
began he to waite more chearfull, purposing sone after, to  
goe & see her: so in few dayes after he felt himselfe whole &  
sound, holding continually the cup in his hand, for there-  
in his hope altogether consisted. During these occurran-  
ces, Maruin (who was very circumspect) secretly confer-  
red with the principall knights of the countrie, they be-  
ing (for the most part) his kindred : who were very glad  
to heare of the two princes arrivall, promising to hazard a-  
ny danger for their good. Maruin brought them one after a-  
nother into his house, & shewed vnto them the true intent  
of the knights, who on their faith & loyalty had swozne to  
aide them so far, as lay in their power. But there hapned  
to be amongst them one false knight called Mauion, who  
speedily sent a letter in secret to the Soldan, to aduer-  
tise him of all these intended affaires. Now Maruin being  
both



both wise & carefull, knowing that treason is soonest found where trust is most reposed, sent likewise one of his Squires to Niquca, to attend about the Soldans Court, & (without any outward inspition) to note what might be practised against him. The messenger that Maruin had sent, came first thither, & gave his letter to the Soldan, who before affected those knights exceedingly, but now hearing these news, he was not able to conceale his anger, which made him enter into these speeches, Maruin thou repent, & curse the houre that ever he durst venture on so bold an enterprize: therefore all you my friends prepare your selves, for now must I make proofe of your fidelitie. Then shewed he them the letter, which the greater part rather thought well of, than disliked: yet they durst not outwardly let it be perceived, but answered they would defend him to the death. The Soldane prepared all in readines to goe against Maruin, & because he was both fierce & feared, in short time hee had a sufficient Army in equippage, setting forward with all speede, no one daring to gain-say him therein. So on hee goes, in such extreame choller, as he purposed to destroy not onely Maruin, but all the Country, for giving entertainment to the two young Lords. When Maruins Squire had intelligence hereof, immediately he returned to his master, so the end he might be advertised in time. How displeasing these newes were to him, cannot easily be expressed, and much hee marvelled by whom his intent should be thus discovered: so going in presently to Prince Edward, whose wounds were now perfectly healed, hee acquainted him herewith, and the Prince boldly made him this answer. Brother, now have we more need of hart & courage, than ever heretofore, & seeing you have taken in hand to forward these affaires, you must imagine, this busie time admits no dalliance: let us compasse the meanes, that they of the countrie may take part with us, & then if the Soldane come he wil scant like his entertainment, or hope of any advantage by his attempt. See you then forth & declare publicquely to the people,



ple, that Mosderin is there rightfull Lord, and no other: for this cause he comes but to claime his owne, and (God ayding him) hee will obtaine it. Maruin perceauing his counsell to be for the best, armed himselfe presently and tooke Mosderin forth with him, with his head bnaarmed, that every one might know him, saying: See here your lawfull Lord and Soueraigne, reioyce and welcome him, for he is a loyall true Knight, whose life heauen hath preserued for our good and aduantage.

When they of the Countrie heard this, they set all busineses apart, and trooped together with great ioy to behold him, so that happie was he, that could first step forth humbly to kisse Mosderins hand, every one acknowledging him as his lawfull Soueraigne. Maruin well noting their loue and affection, thrust the traitour Mauion forth by the head and shoulders (for hee was come thither among the other Knights) and thus said aloud. False traitour, well hast thou deserved death, for disclosing to the Soldan what he intended: which hadst not thou so treacherously performed, wee might the sooner haue accomplished what wee goe about. Hee had no sooner spoken these words, but the common people fell on him, & tearing him in a number of peeces, rewarded him with a most miserable kinde of death. Sone after, they heard of the Soldans comming, & therefore standing on their own defence, made themselves so strong as they could both by Land and Sea: Prince Edward still very honorably encouraging them, shewing them by reasons of great force, that they had no cause to doubt or feare their good successe. At length the Soldan there arriued, & the same day gave a most furious assault to the City, with very great hope to be possessed thereof: but they defended themselves so bravely, as the enemies sustained no meane losse of their men, & by the valour of Prince Edward (who performed exceeding rare deedes of Chivalrie) in foure houres space which the skirmish endured, more than fiftie of the Soldans knights were slaine by his owne hand.

When



When the Soldane perceived that he and his people sustayned the worst, his men thus murdered every where very pittifully, he caused retraits to be sounded, and beleagred the City very strongly, making deepe trenches round about it, that none might issue forth, or get in to help them. All this while Prince Edward made many sallies out, endamaging the Enemy very much, so that hee became both knowne and feared, insomuch as no one durst abide before him.

Then certaine Knights (that were abroad) let Maruin secretly understand, of their good-will and readinesse to entertayne Moslerin as their Soueraigne: but they were constrained to conceale open manifestation thereof, because they stood in feare of the Soldane. Which when Prince Edward heard, and perceiuing withall, how strictly they were kept in by ditches and trenches: he bestowed him on a meane for soonest ceasing this Warre, that he might returne to see his diuine Florida, whose picture was entirely engrauen in his heart. And because he saw evidently, that the whole victorie consisted on the Soldans life or death, he purposed to goe enen into his owne Tent, and there to kill him: wherefore taking Bellager along with him, and foure other Knights beside, he revealed his intent to Maruin, aduising him to bring forth his Companies as soone as might be, for he should heare of a very sodaine revolt in the field.

This resolution made Maruin exceeding pensue and doubtfull, because hee found great daunger to be therein: which made him to entreate the prince to permit, that a herald might first be sent to the Soldane, desiring him to take truce with his Nephews, which counsell Prince Edward well liked of and yielded vnto. For this end and purpose a Knight was presently dispatched thence, hauing charge giuen him beside, that if the Soldane would not listen to peace: then to tel him, that a Christian Knight would undertake the combat with him, and let him soundly vnderstand,



It and, what soule treason he had committed : and if then he refused peace, he should determinately set downe his rest neuer to escape thence without a most cruell and reproachfull death.

Gone is the Knight to deliuer this Embassage, and when he came befoze the Soldan he shewed his commission on behalfe of the young Princes, which was to this effect. That they would pardon whatsoeuer he had already done, and hold themselves to be his children, suffering him to continue their Soueraigne while he liued, provided that (after his death) the estate and dignitie might be resigned to them.

Wherefo the Soldane (full of ire and rage) answered: That one should take the messenger quickly out of his sight, for he would graunt no peace, but was resolutely determined to put them to a shamefull death.

The Knight perceiving he would make no acceptance of peace, deliuered his message sent from Prince Edward : which made the Soldane in such extremitie of choller, as he caused them to lay hands on the Herald, and led him out of the Campe to be cruelly executed : many were highly offended at this deed, but they durst neither speake or resist against it.

Maruine and all the rest of his friends were hereat amazed, but Prince Edward still encouraging them, condemned this crueltie, giving them to vnderstand by many reasons, that such dishonourable actions could not escape without iust punishment.

The same night the Lord Admirall (who was named Albriso, the greatest Lord that was in Niquea) sent secretly to tell them, that he was willing to helpe them so much as possibly he might : wherefoze when they should next set vpon the enemy, he would turne to their side, and take part with them. Each one was glad to heare these tidings, but they saw no easie means how they should issue forth to be with him, because of the Trenches and secret ambuscadoes that round did ingirt them. Now Prince Edward, who thought



thought he staid ouer-long in compassing what he would, hauing Bellager with him, and foure other knights, all armed with the very worst Armour they could finde, because they intended to passe vnknowne. With these his company he got into a Boate in the deadeſt time of the night, and after that they had rowed themselves farre enough from Land, before day they came and hoared with the enemye, landing and going into the Soldanes Campe, as voluntary men that came to serue him: for from all parts came still fresh supply to ayde him; among whom they passe on, without any enquiry what they were, and did nothing for two dayes, but note enery thing, especially the defences on the land and water sides. And this withall they perceined, that should they be knowne, it was vtterly impossible for them to escape with life: therefore their surest remedie was to finde out the Lord Admiralls pavillion, and thither to haue recourse as occasion serued. At the length, when Prince Edward had concluded on what was to be done, he charged his friends and companions, that when they were once gotten within the tent, they should stand manfully at the entrance thereof to guard the passage. At night, when all were quiet in the Campe, they being come to the Soldans pavillion (he sitting in counceill, how to make an absolute conquest of the Citty) there they would haue entred: but an armed Moore that stood to defend the passage, would not suffer them, when the Prince drawing forth his good sword gaue him such a sound salutation therewith, as he fell downe soze wounded, giuing a lowd cry, wherewith the Soldane and all that were in his company was greatly afraid.

But before they could rise, Prince Edward had gotten in to the Soldane (whom he knew well enough, because the two dayes before he had very well noted him) and lifting by his naked sword, sayd: Accursed Traytor as thou art, now shalt thou deere pay for the death of thy brother.

The



72 The second Booke of the History

The Soldan being mightily amazed, knew not how to helpe himselfe, but caught him about the middle to cast him downe, reposing some trust in the strength of his armes : wherein he found himselfe very much disappointed, for he received such a stroke upon his head, as cleft it quite down vnto his shoulders, and so he fell dead at the Princes feet. Then two of the Soldans knights caught holde on him, and others drew forth their weapons to smite him, being every one now ready armed without : but he got forth of their hands to their small advantage, for he was wondrous strong, and layde about him so furiously, as he soon sent them out of this world.

All that heard this tumult and noyse which indeed was great) made thither so fast as they could, but Bellager, who guarded the Tent doore, behaved himselfe very bravely, killing every one that offered to enter : Nevertheless he could not so long haue stood on this resistance, because the people so mainly thronged thither, but that prince Edward (who had dispatched all within) came valiantly forth to assist him. Now in regard the night grew still on verie darke, as it was hard for one to discern another, the Soldans people furiously fought with themselves, not knowing whom they smote, nor friends from foes, nor yet the cause of this todayne sedition : by which meanes they gaue way to prince Edward and Bellager, who gladly got themselves forth of the crowde, leaving three of their knights slayne at the Pavillions entrance. Bellager being likewise wounded, marched on, soye to see himselfe in such a dangerous estate : But his princely companion still cheered him up, and conducted him to the Lord Admiralls Tent, who hauing heard so great a tumult in the field, came forth with his Souldiours, hauing diuers lighted Torches carried before him, for this night the Soldane called not him to counsell.

When he sawe Prince Edward with his sword so bloudied in his hand, and Bellager likewise soe wounded, he



hæ wondered, and desired neare to know what they would haue: but the other Knight, which remayned aloue of the soure, knowing the Admirall well, and making no doubt of his kindnesse in this case, thus answered. My Lord, see here Prince Bellager, who with his owne hand hath slaine the Souldane, and worthily reuenged his fathers death, deliuering both you and he all from our former seruitude: therefore helpe to defend him, for I dare assure you, he is one of the worthiest Knights that this day girdeth a sword to his side.

The Admirall was much amazed heereat, and taking Bellager by the hand, led him into his Tent, where he caused him to be vnarmed, and his wounds looked vnto: hauing some little knowledge of him, because he partly resembled his father, reioycing withall, that in him had bene noted such vertue and valour.

When some of the Souldanes people were entred his pavilion, and sawe their Lord lie there slaine with many moze beside, they made a great murmuring, wondering who durst be so bold to perforce such a deed, & not knowing what counsell to take in this case, in severall opinions they passed ouer the night. The Lord Admirall presently made knowne what was done, to certayne Knights his kindred and friends, and as he held Bellager still embracing him, those thus being aduertised, came thither to assist him.

Now could not these affayres be kept so secret, but shortly the campe it was generally bruted, that they which had slayne the Souldane, were in the Admiralls Tent. Hereupon a number of their friends and Allies and kindred (which had this night bene slayne) ranne thither in haste to reuenge their deaths: as for the Souldane, they made no great reckoning of his losse, but stood very stoutly vpon the others slaughter, beginning to assault them that were within with loud shrieks and most horrible cries.

The



The Lord Admirall and his people made forth in their defence, and Prince Edward seeing they stood in neede of his helpe, crowded amongst the thickest to be with the foremost, making such haucke on every side about him, that it was a sight most dreadfull to behold. Now by the Lord Admiralls braue encouraging his men, they beate backe the enemies euen into their owne pavillions, where they being vnable to defend themselves, Prince Edward made such a butchering of them, as he thought he offered a most pleasing sacrifice to God, in slaying the Moors, that had neyther religion nor piety.

Greatly wondred the Lord Admirall at Prince Edwards deedes of Armes, and sayd, the pong Lordes might very well repute themselves happy by his assistance. The men of the Countrey hearing that the Soldane was dead, were very glad thereof, and perceiuing the souldiours to forsake the trenches, they left the Citty, and went forth into the field also. Mosderin came amongst them with all his Knights, and Maruin bearing his Royall standard before him, wherein was to be seene the Armes of Niquea, and thus he cried aloude vnto them: Behold (my friends) your true and lawfull Soueraigne. Then might you heare them say generally throught the field, that he came in good time, and was heartily welcome, each one kneeling downe and acknowledging his allegiance.

During this time, the Lord Admirall and Prince Edward slew and tooke prisoners such as submitted not themselves, till they sawe the day was fully obtained, and that they were not withstood by any: then went they where Mosderin was, who alighted from his horse so soone as he sawe Prince Edward, and catching him ioyfully in his armes, sayd:

My Lord, I am bound to blesse the houre of your birth, for you haue iustly and nobly reuenged my fathers death, and by you am I made Soueraigne of mine inheritance of Niquea.

Mar-



Maruin descending from his horse, embraced him also. Leave this kindnesse my Lords (quoth the Prince) untill more conuenient lesure, and let vs make sure Niquea, with the places adioyning, lest the Souldanes wite gather head against you, and so come on you againe with a fresh molestation.

Then was Mosderin publicly declared and receiued as Souldane, his Helmet being taken off that euerie one might see him, and there was no lamentation at all for the Souldans death, but a mutuall reioycing for this their new Governour.

Afterwards prince Edward was conducted to the Lord Abbotts tent, where his wounds were dress'd by expert Chirurgians, and all the dead bodies were burned in the field, except the Souldans and certaine of the knights, which were admitted honourable buriall. All this being done, the Ladie Olimba came thither, kneeling downe at Prince Edwards feete, and highly thanked him.

The new Souldane bestowed large gifts on such as had holpen him, especially on Maruin and his kindred, and so set on to Niquea, which presently revolted from the Sulkana, and shee with her children were imprisoned in the Castell.

Then came they all to sweare fayth and homage vnto Mosderin, desirous also to beholde the English Prince, whose fame was spread through all the Countrey, Olimba still doing vnto him all the honour she could deuise, because shee found her selfe so many sundry wayes indebted vnto him.

Afterwards it was concluded, that the Sulkana and her children should be sent thence to Aram her father, but first, all the treasure of her deceased Lord, was seized and deliuered into the new Souldanes custodie. Thus Mosderin being in peace possessor and Lord of all, by the aduice of Prince Edward, recompenced his well-willers, pardoned such as liued of his enemies, and so had the loue of all his subjects.

Very



## 76 The second Booke of the History

Very faine would hee still haue kept Prince Edward with him, but knowing what earnest affaires hee had, for, bare ouer-much to bidge him: yet bestowed hee great gifts on him, all which the Prince committed vnto the Ladie Olimba, for his sake to bestow them as best her selfe pleased.

### CHAP. XI.

How Prince *Edward* departed thence to *Constantinople*, where (the better to compasse the sight of his faire *Florida*,) hee fained himselfe to be a Gardners sonne, and what passed betweene them many times in the Garden.



Prince Edward seeing there was no more businesse here for him, would needs goe visite *Constantinople*, to see the Ladie and Mistresse of his affections, and after hee had required Olimbas aduise herein, shee gaue vnto him this counsell: To depart from thence secretly with one onely Squire, which shee would giue to attend him, and then to rule and governe himselfe as Fortune should permit him. Thus leaving Clodion and Maiortes his good Dogge in *Niquea*, and clothing himselfe in very base apparrell, as also the Squire which Olimba had giuen him, he set forthward on his way: but for Bellager, who could not so much preuaile as to beare him company, he went to a part of that Countrey neare *S. Georges Port*, to the end he might giue him some assistance, if hee should stand in neede any way to employ him.

When



When our Knight was come nere to Constantinople, he beganne to reioyce, seeming already to haue receiued some content in his earnest desires, albeit amorous afflictions did neuer giue him ouer.

Now could he not determine what to doe, for in re- case would he haue himselfe knowne, by reason he was the occasion of Primalcons leauing the Court: one while he thought it best to returne home into England, and send thence to require faire Florida in marriage, but in so long a space he stood in doubt to lose her. Wherefore seeing he was now there himselfe in person, he concluded to ha- zard his fortune, saying, he should repute himselfe the happiest man in the world, if he could beare her thence from Constantinople, aswell to compasse a Lady of that worth, as to quittance what the Emperour had befoze done to his Grandfather.

Thus then unknowne he entred the Citty, and went strait to the Pallace, not perceiued by any one, where he could not get a sight of his heavenly Mistresse, because she bled seldom to leaue her Chamber, being in pensiue thoughts for her brothers departure.

Having thus remayned there thre dayes, and not seen her, as one night somewhat late he walked about the Pallace, by chance he happened on that side the Garden where the Emperour was lodged, for which cause it was inclosed with very high walles. This garden was beau- tified with a goodly water-course, which streamed along from a very faire fountayne, and beside infinite choise things wherewith it was adozned, it was planted with diuers sorts of strange trees, and had a Gardener attendant to prune and order them.

This Garden extended to that side where as Floridas Chamber was, there she bled often-times to walke, and disport with her Ladies: now it chanced this Evening as Prince Edward passed along by this place, she was newly come downe into the Garden, where it was his

F

good



78 The second Booke of the History

good hap to get a sight of her, because the Gardiner (bee-  
ing a plaine simple honest man) hauing some errand forth  
by likelihood, had left the doore open, which the Gardners  
wife could not so sone shut, but that the Knight espied his  
Ladie was there walking: Which very sight made his  
heart exceedingly satisfied, may it was no sooner that a-  
gaine but he fell into his former afflictions, and had not the  
power to goe thence till the old man returned.

Now during the time of his carrying there, he discour-  
sed with himselfe, that if he could get to be entertayned  
with the Gardener, to weed, digge or doe any thing about  
the Garden, he should esteeme his fortune incomparable:  
wherefore the Gardener was no soner come backe, but he  
beganne with him in this manner.

Honest man, if I wist you could be secret, I would tell  
you a thing should bee very much for your profit. The old  
man looking on him, maruelled to see so faire a young man  
in such ragged garments, and thus answered.

What might it bee you would haue me so secret in, or  
(as it seemes) you would binde me to by oath: First de-  
clare the matter to me, and if it be a thing I may with my  
credits perforce, I promise you what silence your selfe can  
desire.

My good friend (answered the Knight) I will not vige  
any thing that shall turne to your discredit. I will put my  
trust in you, without bindeing you to any other promise.  
Know you that there is great store of treasure hid in the  
Emperours Garden, and I know the means how to  
come easily by it, which I promise to deliver into your  
hands, so that after ward you will bestow upon me but  
what your selfe shall please.

The Gardener hearing these words, beganne to laugh  
and clapt what he itched not, drawing nere to the Knight,  
answered him thus: You tell me great matters, and if this  
be althow desire, I will see herein then as your selfe shall  
advise me: for there is none to persee but gladly would be



rich if he might: I pray you haue a little patience, I will but goe impart these newes vnto my wife, and see if Spaine Florida be gone into her Chamber, and presently returne to let you in.

After Prince Edward had told him that he was contented, and would stay his life for the good old man, he came chearefully at the doore, which when his wife had opened, and he perceined the Princesse was not there, he told his wife what he had heard, whereat shee not a little reioycing, sayd,

Good husband, let vs not forget this happy adventure, seeing it hath pleased the Heauens so luckily to send it: goe fetch the young man hither, and if we be demaunded what he is, we will say he is our Sonne, that went away from vs when he was a little boy, by this meanes he may remaine with vs, and do vs good service in labouring about the Garden: If in this matter he should chauce to deceiue vs, yet shall we haue him vnder our power, to dispose of him what we thinke best. The olde man well liked his wifes advice, and running presently to the Garden gate, was not all day in letting him enter. Our Knight thus disguised, had before furnished himselfe with sundry rich things, as Chaines, Jewells, Rings, and such like, which he had caused the Squire to bring with him, to the end hee might afterward say that there he found them, in the Garden in the night time. Knowing this was the way to perswade the olde man, for by apparant signes we are soonest satisfied. The Gardeners wife taking the Knight by the hand, led him into the house saying: I hope (my sonne) you are come hither in a lucky houre, to enrich and aduance vs, if all be true you haue said. Fear not do you doubt (quoth hee) of what I haue promised vnto you, for I vnderstand it by the skill of a learned Magitian: and in truely there is hid great riches of the Emperours, which Fortune will that it should now fall vnto you, to maintaine you in your aged dayes. Heauen grant it, sayd the gardeners wife, but vnder-



80 The second Booke of the History

stand what my husband and I haue determined : wee will tell the Princesse Florida and her Ladies, that you are our Sonne, whom wee lost long agoe when you were verie young.

A good deuice (quoth he) for albeit I am not your naturall sonne, yet can I willingly serue and honour you as my parents. The olde man caused supper to be made ready, telling his young childezen this was their brother : and euen as the Knight heard the woman name her husband, so did he determine to entitle himselfe, as the onely way to keepe himselfe unknowne.

After they had discoursed on many matters, he tolde them that night he would spend some time in the Garden, to set his Contemplations in a little forwarde : which they very well liked of, so he went and late him downe by the Fountayne, seeming to him a place pleasing and delightfull, especially now in the season of the Spring, where all the Contemplations hee vied, were an infinite number of profound sighes, thinking of his goddesse and mistress, who often-times was wont to walke in that place. Woe is me miserable man (quoth he) I feare lest I shall neuer see my desires accomplished, in performing such seruice for her, as a number of others doe, I should then haue some hope to obtayne her fauour, but my hard Destiny denyeth me that grace, appoynting mee as a Weeder and Labourer in this Garden, to do her seruice that way, since otherwise I may not.

Ah Edward, this foolish boldnes of mine is prized at thy life, since thou canst not enjoy her, by whom onely thou liuest : But why should I thus torment my selfe ? What happines can I more desire, than being in this place, where I may daily see and speake to her, though not as I would, yet as I may ? Thus spent hee the night in these and such other lamentations.

It was no sooner day, but taking vp those Jewells hee had thus purposely prepared, hee went and shewed them  
to



to the Gardener, saying: *Sir Father, I have found some part of the treasure, we can not altogether so soone get it, because it is disperied in many places, but in time I shall finde the meanes to come by it all: thus hee sayd, so delay his time of longer abiding there.*

The old man was wondrous ioyfull at this sight, and ran with the Jewels immediately to his wife, saying: *Wife, good fortune beginneth to smile vpon vs, for part of the treasure is already found.*

It is not to be demaunded, whether the woman were pleased, or no, because she both sawe and felt the riches, and yet did scantily beleene they should be hers: but locking them vp where she thought most convenient, they both shewed exceeding kindnesse to the Knight, who thence forthward attended vpon the Gardener, and help him to do such worke in the Garden as he appoynted him to: for albeit that hee was but meanelly experienced in this occupation, yet hee knew this would be some ease to him, in seeing his sayre Mistresse.

The next evening (as was her wont) shee came downe into the Garden, accompanied with sayre Amandria, daughter to the King of Sparta, who continued there with her, because the Emperour had obtayned of the King her father, that she should be given in marriage to Abenuncio, but by reason she was yet ouer-young, they were not bawle in bestowing her, nor was she her selfe desirous to bee married, untill the princeesse Florida were first provided.

Another Lady also had bene trayned vp with her, the daughter to Duke Ptolomic, called Attaida, a very sayre and gentle young Lady, who the princeesse more loved than any other about her, and shee was now in her company also.

When they had walked a while in the Garden, the princeesse sat her downe hard by the Fountaine side, where she desired to sit more than in any other place, and immediately the Gardeners wife came very ioyfully to her,



## 82 The second Booke of the History

bringing her Roses and diuers swete flowers, saying: **W**on't you not Madame, what cause I haue to be merry, I thanke the heauens (Lady) I haue found a sonne of mine, which (when hee was young) went from mee a long time since. As then Florida replied, that shee was glad of her good fortune: **Y**ea mary Madame (quoth the woman) you may well tearme it so, because now (in our Age) he is all our ioy. This shee spake, in hope of the treasure he had promised to finde for them, and hereupon shee beganne to call her sonne in this manner.

**W**hat Iulian my sonne, come hither alittle, for Madam Florida desireth to see thee. When he heard these words, his heart beganne to leape for ioy, yet was hee ashamed to come before her in so base manner: and in regarde of the great loue hee bare her, hee kept aloofe and durst not steppe forward: this made the Gardeners wife bring him to her by the hand, saying: **H**ow say you Madame, haue not I cause to reioyce in finding such a sonne as this: **Y**es indeed haue you (answered the Princesse) and credite mee hee is welcome hither.

Iulian was then so overcome with extremitie of ioy, as hee had not the power to speake one word, hearing his Lady say that hee was welcome: this made him come farther on before her, where hee stood still and sayd not a word at all, but fed his eyes with looking on her, which was to him no meane contentment.

The Ladies seeing him stand thus mute, beganne to laugh vpon each other, saying: Doublesse this fellow is in some danger to lose his beaultie, for hee is so foolish hee knowes not how to speake.

Attaida, who sat nere to the Princesse, said: I thinke he is dumbe, Ile aske the question: **S**ay (my friend) Are you tongue-tied: or are you not willing to answer the Princesse: Madame (quoth hee) my heart amazed with the wonders presented to mine eyes, bound fast my tongue, and therefore I could not speake.

As



As Attaida demanded of him, what wonders he had scene: Can I behold (quoth he) any thing more worthy wonder, than the rare beauty remaining in all you here present: I have bene else-where, and have seen many Ladies, but I neuer saw any equall to you: for this tooke I silent, thinking I had done well in returning to my father and mother, that I might doe any service whatsoever for you. And though I am not worthy of such honour, yet are your hearts enriched with such mildenesse, as you will rather regard my good will, than any other desert in me: for unfit am I to come in your sight, and perswade your selues, that had it not bene for obedience to my mothers commaund, I would not have presumed into this place, but what service hereafter I can or may do for you, I beseech you impose it, till I have made amends for this over rash fault. My friend, answered Attaida, your pardon is quickly obtained, for I see you are a handsome fellow for a Gardeners office, to follow the same profession your Father did before you. As he answered, that he would there to apply himselfe gladly, the Princesse tooke great pleasure in this talke betwene him and Attaida, saying: Give over this prating, for Iulian seemes to me more wise, than you courteous, to mocke him in this maner: and turning to Iulian, she said: My friend, let passe their speeches, and neuer care what they say vnto thee: continue as honest a servant as thy Father hath done, for whose sake, and thy Mothers withall, I haue a very good opinion of thee, and will doe for thee what I can, because thou art so well disposed, and wouldest become a farre better trade of life than this is, wherein if I can doe thee any pleasure hereafter, be assured of it, for thy honest parents loue shewen to me.

Iulian was rapt by into heauen with these kind words of the Princesse, and falling on his knee, perforce tooke her by the hand, and kissed it, speaking thus somewhat softly.



## 84 The second Booke of the History

Madame, your gracious courtesie is such, as I doubt not but you will account of the small service I can do you, and that you will returne better recompence than I can in any way merite.

The Princesse perceiving what sweete fayre handes Iulian had, musing thereon, sayd thus vnto her selfe. Alas, redly, neyther the last wordes he spake, nor those daintie handes do belong to a dudge or rusticke person: so without any more wordes, she sodainely arose and walked about the Garden.

Our Knight thought himselfe the happiest man in the world, that he had both kissed her hand, and spoken as he did: so he dissembled some businesse in a certaine place, where at pleasure he might now and then haue a sight of her. The Ladies albeit they had mocked and teased at him, yet they marvelled not a little at his beauty and behaviour: which made them afterwards enter into diuers opinions, and they found talke with him in many matters, whereof he returned such answeres, as they could hardly tell what to coniecture.

When the Princesse was thus withdrawn into her Chamber, our poore amorous Knight remayned as one in darkenesse, the light of his Deauen being thus taken from his eyes, and if at the first sight she seemed faire vnto him, then now at this second time she appeared tenne times more beautifull: so that, as at the beginning he felt his heart mightily enflamed with her love, now thence forward his torments grew insupportable, which made him thus conferre within himselfe. Ah poore Prince Edward, how happy wert thou, if thou couldest bring this enterprize to end: thou shouldest gaine the greatest glory that ever Knight did. To shadow these thoughts, he dissembled his former pleasant disposition, as one not a little pained to be in that place, and so wel governed he himselfe toward the gardner and his wife, as they grew more and more in love with him: made him determine to bring forth his cop and  
sell



tell the Gardener he found it among the treasure in the ground, that he and his wife might bestow the same on the Princesse Florida, because there consisted an especiall matter in the touching of it. Feigning them some excuse abroad, to the end he might finde his Squire, he received all things else he had left in his keeping with the Cop, & then dispatch him toward the Lady Olymba, that she might still send him more as occasion served, letting him understand the place where they would continually meet: beside to intreat her withall that she would send him his horse and armour, to the same place where his friend Bellager remained. For at this time the Emperour was at peace with the Moors, and men might freely have dealings among them, because the Emperour had bene before advertised, of Molderins recovering his right & dignitie by the Knight of the Dog, whom much he commended to himselfe, albeit he reputed him his enemy in that he was the cause of his sonnes forsaking the Court.

The Squire is gone on his journey, and passing along where Bellager was, he acquainted him with all the occurrences already happened: who was very glad thereof, yet marvelled that Iove was so powerfull, to bring a Knight of such esteem into so base estate, for nothing else but the very sight and speaking with his Ladie. When the Squire had left Bellager, and was come home to the Lady Olymba, hee told her likewise of all the news from the Prince, as also what he required of her: in teares she pittied his case, sending him great store of riches, and causing a meruallous faire white armour to be made for him, which she likewise sent by Clodion to her Brother Bellager, with a very good horse of the selfe same colour.

Now come we to Prince Edward, who was no sooner parted from this Squire, but he returned presently to the Garden againe, and the next morning shewed all those rich things to the Gardener, saying he found them that night among the other hidden treasure.



Who can possibly expresse the old mans ioy and his wiues together, seeing themselves lately poore, and now become so rich. The Knight said, that for all the moitie of those iewels, he but desired himselfe might giue that Cup to the Princesse, for it was reason he should haue some, what for his share: and therefore intreated them, that if it were her hap this day to come down into the Garden, they would permit him to giue her that Cup, for he would well enough excuse how he came by it. Very glad were they he demanded no more, which made them quickly yeld to what he had required: so when the houre came of the Princesse accustomed walking in the Garden, after she had pretely wearied her selfe, she went to her vsuall seat by the Fountaine.

Prince Edward (whom we must now learne Iulian) spying her there, came and brought her sorts of diuers fruits to eat, which she kindly taking, and demanded how he did, he thus replied: Madame, no man better in the world than I, that I may be heere to doe you any seruice. I am glad of it (quoth she) and ye doe better abiding heere, than wandring (as it seemes ye did) in sozen countries. At this instant, the Gardeners wife came running with the Cup in her hand, saying. Madame, seeing it likes ye to serue so well on these fruits, it were not amisse if ye drinke a little faire water in this Cup. The Princesse being inquisitiue how she came by so faire a thing: Madame (quoth she) my sonne Iulian brought it home with him, and he would gladly that you should haue it, because it is more conuenient for you than me. With that, the Princesse prayed Iulian to tell her who gaue it him: whereto he answered, seeing she was so desirous to know, he would tell her, and then began as followeth. Madame, the Lord of the place where I remained, married a most faire daughter of his to a braue Knight, which wedding was solemnized with great pleasure and triumphs: For the Brides Father made an aduenture of three Jewels, one for the Knight



Knight that should conquer in the Tourney, another for him who did best in the Joust, and the third prize (being for men of meaner condition) was this Cup, provided for him that could best skill in wrestling, because in those parts wrestling was very much exercised. Now when I beheld this Cup was of some value, I thought to do what I could for gaining thereof, and by good fortune I did so well, that I brought it away with me, and gave it to my mother, whom since I have intreated, that you may have it, as a thing farre better becoming you than her. It was well done of thee (replied the Princesse) and I believe if Fortune had made thee noble by birth, thou wouldst have proved a good Knight, and gone beyond them of that profession, as thou dost herein excell thy equals: the Cup I accept, and thanke thee for it, promising to give thy mother whatsoever it valuerh. As Iulian was humbling dutifully himselfe to make her answer, she walking by and downe viewing the Cup, which was both faire and rich: afterward, she would needs drinke some of the Fountaine water in it, which she had no sooner done, but she felt her hart immediately touched, eying Prince Edward (advisedly) standing before her, who seemed to her the goodliest man that ever she beheld, and as richly apparrelled as to such a one appertained. Thus noting him well with affectionate lookes, she began to love him so entirely, as she was well nere quite carried from her selfe: & though her yeares were but yong, yet was she wondrously advised, ashamed to feele such a sudden change in her self which she could not so cunningly hide or shadow, but the Knight perceived two sweet and affable regards darted on him, whereat he ioyed beyond measure, and the Princesse sate a prettie space silent, not speaking one word. In this while, the Ladies questioned with Iulian on diuers things, which hee had seene travelling through strange Countries: and he answered every one roundly to the purpose, though dissembling rude and clownish kinde  
of



88 The second Booke of the History

of speech, hauing (notwithstanding) his eyes still fixed on his Lady, that he might note both what she said and did.

And she had long late in these more conditions, she breathed forth a very deere sigh from her heart, saying: Ah powerfull Heauens, how wonderfull are your workings: When she had thus spoke, she reached her hand to Iulian to helpe her vp, who (I warrant ye) was quick and readie to the purpose, then she said: Iulian it would doe mee good to see thee wastle, because I imagine thee to be strong. Madame (quoth he) my strength is slender, but my heart strong and hantie, which makes mee thinke on matters which I feare I shall neuer attaine vnto: there may yet come a time (if heauen so please), when you may see mee wastle, in regard ye be so desirous, but I had rather die than I should be vanquished in your sight. The Princeesse took his answer in very good part, and so walked along about the garden, Iulian going still by her side, replied to her demaunds, wherein she receiued such contentment, as she could not returne to her chamber till it was night: and when this occasion constrained her to be gone, she did nothing but conferre with her Ladies concerning Iulian, whose behauiour was so gentle and seemly, as they hardly beloued him to be the Gardeners sonne. Afterward, the Princeesse caused Attaida to bring the Cup which Iulian had given her, and took great pleasure still to drinke therein: but the oftner she drunke, the more was she enflamed with the loue toward the Knight, to whose supposed Parents she sent the Cups balme, and much more beside.

While thus he continued in the garden, his life (thus in louing) seemed irkelome to him: yet (on the contrarie side) pleasing and contented, by being in sight of his faire Florida, and readie at hand to doe her any service. But as for the Princeesse, albeit the passions she endured for his loue were great, yet was she so discret and wise, as not to make any outward shew of affecting him: marrie when she



the fate alone by her selfe, then would she blame her hard fortune in this manner.

Unhappie that I am, deserue I not worthily a most cruell death, to affect a slave in such sort as I doe? What thou no more reckoning of thy high linage, nor of the place from whence thou art descended: Dishonoured Ladie, small wit or iudgement hast thou, in abusing thy thoughts thus extreamely, on a man that is of so scruple & mean condition, albeit he were the goodliest person in the whole world to be found. But whether is my reason carried: where am I: or what shall I say? Assuredly, when hereafter I shall denie loue to a knight that is worthy of me, the world may in reason censure mee with punishment, for my now regarding a man so vile and contemptible. How great then is my misfortune, that I am not Mistress of my selfe: nor able to checke my heart from yielding to these idle conceits: Thus laboured shee to exclude forth of her thoughts, the feeling which loue had already taken, but when Iulian came in her sight, so humble and diligent to doe her any service, her affections waxed ten times more extreame. Wherefore at length shee thus determined, to seclude her selfe some indifferent while from seeing him, that way to quench the amozons flame that burned so furiously: and hereupon (for she daies together) she refrained from coming downe into the garden, albeit her Ladies daily biged her to her accustomed walke. But in all this space shee found no ease of her amozons affections, for Loue permitted no rest either by day or night, so that she found abandoning the garden did her no good.

On the other side, he perceiuing she came not to walke there as she was wont to doe, fell into such extremitie of griefe, as he could not so closely conceale, but the old man and his wife perceaued it: for they saw he was become so weak, leane and sickly, as he could scanty speake or eate, were it neuer so little. At length his mother came to him, saying,



saying. Son, what disease is this, which in so few daies hath thus weakened and pulled thee downe? Shee thinks thou hast lost the better part of thy former sweet complexion. I know not what it is (quoth hee) but I well perceave it will be my death, without any hope of remedie or succour. The good old woman was much agréed to heare these words, because she loved him tenderly, in regard of the riches he had given her, & daily did: wherefore about the five dayes end, shee went to see how the Princesse Florida did, carrying her Roses and flowers as she was wont to doe, and afterward fell into these speeches.

Alas Madame, I know not what to say, for my sonne Iulian isaine into so grievous a sickness, as I feare hee is past all hope of recourie: so pale and leane is hee, as (were he herre) you could hardly know him. The Princesse shewed her selfe sorrowfull for these newes, bidding her have care of him, and looke that he wanted nothing: the Gardeners wife answered, she would doe what lay in her, and so after some few other speeches, shee returned home, leaving the Princesse in her wonted fits for Iulians love and pittying that this inconvenience had befallen him. When night was come, shee threw her selfe on her bed, over-charged with wondrous grieve and pensiveness, which made her breake forth into these private monings. Cruell and unkinde, how can I endure from seeing him, that loves such an afflicted soule as I am? Out of doubt through me hath ensued his sicknesse. Then perceaving that Amandria, and all the other Ladies were asleepe, softly shee arose from her bed, and went lightly (because shee was young) to a window which was over the garden, and looked if shee could see her Lover walking amongst the trees. Iulian, who had so long wept and complained, as more he could not, by chance was there laid to sleepe under a tree: but this quietnes continued a very small while with him, for with a sudden feare he awaked, and breath-



ing forth abundance of sighes, as a man that cared not to conceale his extremitie any longer, began to talke to himselfe in this manner.

Most wretched Knight, what hast thou to complaine on thy hard fortune? where thou thoughtst to purchase honour amongst other Knights, there must thou rather dye by the rigor of fell deserie: who not satisfied with making thee become a Peasant and a Gardener, (which estate well liked thee,) because thereby thou daily beheldest her who did most delight thy heart, but hath laid a greater torment on thee beside, in depriving thee of her diuine presence. Fortune, thou needst not rob me of Beauties sight, though thou deniest me to enioy her person. Madame, why are ye so cruell to me? wherefore doe ye suffer a poore disconsolate Knight, to die thus disregarded? I cannot thinke but you selfe perceiue, that the loue I beare you is more than to all the world besides: yet notwithstanding, to make my martyrdom of greater crueltie, you absent your selfe, as fearefull of this place: though my unconquerable resolutions heretofore, haue deliuered mee from the perill of highest enterprises, doe ye imagine I can now escape such an insupportable torment as this is? Sweet Madame, if you please, take pittie on me, and let not your poore Knight leaue this life so soone: for if ye continue in this rigor, perhaps you will looe much more than yet yee thinke on. If hitherto I haue not done yee any seruice, it is in regard of the meane estate wherein ye see me liue, where I can performe nothing else, but what fortune calls me to, onely for your sake: but if it like yee to shew mee fauour, you shall perceiue wherein I am able to serue ye, hapily as well (if not better) than any other Knight in the world. Wretch that I am, euen cast downe through want of your sight: death were better to me than this verasion, because ye come not to this harbour as ye were wont. Change this opinion, and succour me, that loue you beyond all other in the world.

But



## 92 The second Booke of the History

But what shall I say, seeing I cannot deserve so great a grace? for she doth no otherwise than well, and ought not to esteeme of mee as I appoynt her, that she should come eyther to see or speak to me: then death will be farre more honourable and glorious for me, seeing it is for her sake that hath not her equall.

With sundrie other speeches he held on thus lamenting, the teares issuing from his eyes like water from a fountaine: and the Princesse (who had attentively listened all this while) was much moved with the violent love he bare her, yet the better pleased, when she heard he was a Knight. In briebe, being intrained with a world of thoughts, and knowing she was the cause of her loves affliction, she began to pittie him, and as she was saying thus: *Percillesse wretch that thou art, so unkindely and cruelly to kill him, who loveth thee so entirely,* she fell in a swoone. But Iulian in his plaints and teares (being overcome with slumbering) at length confusedly brake off, and so betooke him to his rest againe.

CHAP.



## CHAP. XII.

How the Princesse *Florida* discoursed to *Attaida* all her minde, who comforted her in the best manner shee could deuise: And of that which afterward passed in the Garden, betweene Prince *Edward* and his gracious Lady and Mistresse.



*Attaida*, who could not sleepe after the Princesse rose, left her bed likewise, and softly followed to watch whither shee went, when shee saw her stand so still at the window, shee kept awake and would say nothing: but seeing her fall into a sound, then shee caught her in

her armes saying.

How now Madame? why rise you from your bedde? what matter is it that offendeth ye? Come to your selfe againe, and then (if you please) tell mee what aile ye?

When the Princesse was reuiued, shee fell into meruailous lamentations, and seeing her selfe in *Attaidaes* armes, as one amazed shee saide: Sister, who brought you hether? for Gods sake goe and let me die, that passage is moze easie for mee, than liuing in such extremitie as I doe. All this while the Lady laboured very much to comfort her, and when shee saw time meet to answer, thus shee replied.

Good Madame, cease to vse this kinde of language, and tell mee I beseech ye, what is the reason you speake in this manner: as for my selfe, I haue not bene wont to  
G hide



94 The second Booke of the History

hide any thing from you, albeit the same concerned me neuer so neere, & gladly would I die in doing you any service.

Oh sweet sister (answered Florida) what would ye haue me tell ye, but that I am the most wretched and vnfortunate Lady in the world: I am ashamed of my selfe, in thinking on a matter so farre different from my estate and honoz: but seeing you would so faine beare the cause of mine affliction, I will tell you what a disloyall enemy my heart is become to my credit and reputation. The loue of Iulian (Sister) torments me with insupportable passions, and doe whatsoeuer I can deuise, yet is it impossible for me to withstand this oppression: this makes me condemn my selfe as the most contemptible creature of the world, in letting slip the raynes of my affection I know not on whom, but one rather seeming a slave or a villayne, than a Knight or otherwise better descended. I haue assayed by all meanes possible to redresse this euill, and refrayned for certaine dayes together from the sight of him: but therein I found I did worst of all, for the more I fled and shunned him, the more my paine and torment increased. This was the cause which made mee leaue my bed, to see if I could behold him walking in the Garden, and euen now I heard him complaine in such sort, as I verily beleue hee is a Knight: for hee exclaimes on his hard fortune, that hath thus abused him, and it should appeare, I am the onely cause of his comming to this place. I know not what to doe, for when I see him, his beauty and behaviour encreaseth my loues extremity: when I deprive my selfe of his presence, I am vnable to endure it, because then my martyrdome is tenne times more cruell. Now know ye the summe of my misfortune, whereof (for Gods sake) take some compassion, and counsell me what I shall doe in this bitter agony. Ataida who was wise and quick conceited, louing the Princesse euen as her own life, began in this manner. In sooth Madame, ye haue told me a wondrous thing, and to remedy this inconuenience seems hard



as impossible: for if your thoughts be so soundly ensnared,  
 it exceedeth my wit how to get them loose againe, and if Lu-  
 lian be a man of so vile and base condition, no shame is  
 comparable, as to thinke a thought of loue toward him. It  
 is certaine, and I very wel note it, that he is gallantly dis-  
 posed, and of very good carriage, which makes me ima-  
 gine him no slave or clownish dudge: but rather a man of  
 some great birth, hauing thus disguised himselfe, to see  
 and conferre with you, as heretofore Arnedes did for the  
 loue of your Sister: for if he were the Gardeners sonne, he  
 durst not be so bold as to ayme his affections at you, nei-  
 ther would your gentle starres bode you such ill fortune,  
 that you should loue him so extraordinarily. But referring  
 this matter to me, I will some know the truth thereof, and  
 doe not you forbear the garden-walkes, because ye may  
 hinder me thereby: onely be discrete, and neuer discover  
 your selfe to him, for he will say nothing without your  
 leave and licence. Sister (quoth the Princesse) you haue  
 giuen me good counsell, and now I haue one to whom I  
 may impart my griefs, they will seeme lesse burdenous vn-  
 to me, than otherwise they would haue done: and I pray  
 you be circumspect in your talking with Iulian, that hee  
 perceiue not I am amorous of him, till we may better vnder-  
 stand of whence and what he is. When the Lady had  
 tolde her, how carefull she would be in these affaires,  
 they both returned into the chamber, and got to bed a-  
 gaine so quietly, as they were not discerned by any of the  
 other. Now began Florida to consider on Attalides spee-  
 ches, how he might be some knight of great descent, and  
 was thus purposefully disguised for her loue: which conceit  
 made her very ioyfull, speaking thus to her selfe. What  
 daunger can there be to me in louing him: his behauiour  
 euery way doth deserue much more: if it fall out that hee  
 be not my equall, the sooner will I learne to forget him, &  
 in this determination he betooke her selfe to sleepe. When  
 the morning was come, and euery one ready, merry and



well disposed shee went downe into the Garden to see her lover, whose absence all the while had so offended her: but when she beheld him so leane and pale coloured, she pittied him much, saying.

How comes it to passe (Iulian) that in this short while you are so strangely altered? Madame, quoth hee, my infirmitie is such, as except heauen shew the greater favour, my wretched dayes will soone be at an end: nevertheless in that place I first receaved this harme, (to my joy) I suddenly feele some little amendement, which makes mee imagine my selfe more than halfe well alreadye. and restored (almost) to my former sound estate.

God forbid, said the Princesse, thy life should miscarie: and thy sickness hath bene very displeasing to mee, whereof I was advertised by thy good Mother. For these kinde speeches, he humbly thanked her: for with such grace were these words delivered, as it would have revived him had bene halfe dead.

As shee and the other Ladies walked about the Garden gathering flowers, Arraida taking him by the hand, said Iulian, I would talke a word or two aside with thee, desiring thee to tell me one thing which I would very faine know. Lady quoth hee, there is not any thing in the world that might doe you any service, but were it in mee to performe, I would gladly doe it.

Hee wanted no thanks for this kinde answer: and continuing her intent, she thus proceeded.

I cannot chuse but meruaile Iulian, that you, who haue neyther the countenance or behaviour of a Clowne or peasant, should colour the matter so handsomely, as to make vs believe you are the Gardeners sonne: I rather thinke ye goe thus disguised for some speciall occasion, which if ye doe, I would be very glad to know it, assuring ye (by the faith of a Lady) not to reveale the same to any body living, without your likening, beside, I will repute my selfe so much beholding to you, as (in any reasonable matter)



matter) y<sup>e</sup> may and shall commaund mee. Iulian wal-  
king on with her, thus replied.

Madame, how can I any way deserue this great fauour  
y<sup>e</sup> doe me, in vouchsafing to enquire of my estate, and  
condition: but Lady, what perceiue you in mee, which  
should make you thinke that I am not the Gardeners  
sonne: assure your selfe I am his sonne: marry indeed I  
haue traualled through many countries, where I haue  
seene and learned such small manners as y<sup>e</sup> beholde in  
me. In good time (saide Attaida) yet thinke I otherwise:  
but because he should suspect nothing, she would question  
no further with him, neither did shee make her any other  
answere, not dreaming on the charge she had from the  
Princesse, nor to what end she thus conferred with him, but  
thus returned both toward Florida againe, who saide (as  
she was went) by the Fountaine side, taking great plea-  
sure and contentment to see him stand by her. When sent  
she some of her Damosels for Muscull instruments, say-  
ing shee would heare them both play and sing, because  
since the departure of Primaleon, shee had not bene so  
pleasant as she was at this instant: but her heart was  
now too mainly besiedged with loue, to minde her bro-  
ther or any businesse of his. When the Damosels were  
returned with Harpes and other instruments, they began  
to play and sing very mellodiously, and Iulian (who was  
well skild in Musicke) delighted much to heare them:  
but hauing himselfe (one evening there in the Garden)  
made a Dittie consozmable and agréing with his owne  
amorous toymēt, hee tooke a Harpe from sooth one of  
the Damosels hands, and began to play and sing in this  
manner.



98 The second Booke of the History

Prince Edwards Song in the Garden, before  
the Princesse Florida and her Ladies.

**R** Eason and dutie both commaundeth me  
To loue and serue the Soueraigne of my life :  
Whose vertues Times eternall wonders be,  
And sweet appeasers of heart-breaking strife.

Though day and night my sorrowes doe increase,  
Through my unworthinesse to taste her grace :  
Yet with my soule her heauenly lookes make peace,  
Whereby my thoughts some comfort doe embrace.

If then vngentle Fate vrge not constraint,  
To leaue the place where my most comfort is :  
One time or other she may beare my plaint,  
And with kinde pittie helpe whats now amis.

Be not so cruell to thy seruant then,  
For thou shalt finde him dutifull and true :  
And to exceed common esteeme of men  
In loyaltie, and so sweet soule adue.

The Knight sung these verses so sweetly & with such  
true representation of passion, as the Princesse and all her  
Ladies wondred thereat: and he beholding his Goddesse  
before him, (who was the onely object of his Song)  
through more extremitie of his present agonie, sodaine-  
ly fell in a swoone, his head lightning by chance in the  
Ladies



Ladies lap which sat next him, but when the Princesse beheld him in this estate, she was not onely amazed, but withall, took such compassion on him, as she could not refrain from catching him by the hand, saying: Ah Iulian what aylest thou? what is the reason thou art so faint-hearted? Come to thy selfe againe, and dye not so balnely: thus speaking, she drew him to her, and clapped him on the cheek with her hand, which when he felt so gently touch him, he presently recovered againe, and shewed himselfe most ioyfull: but by reason his heart was thus amazouly conceited, he had no power to expresse his affliction, but breathed forth many sighes, and as one ashamed of his infirmittie, thus spake.

Madame, I beseech ye pardon mee, I took my selfe to be thoroughly recovered, but now I finde the contrary.

Gladly do I pardon you (replied the Princesse) seeing ye are so well come to your selfe againe: the breaking off your song more displeaseth me, because I take delight in hearing it: see therefore hereafter ye vse to sing among my Damosels, and learne to be of better courage than now you shewed your selfe. After he had answered, that he would indeavour himselfe to performe her commandement, the Princesse proceeded on in this manner.

Tell me now, who taught ye to play & sing this sweet song? A good Master of mine Madame (quoth he,) as for the Song, I neuer learned that of any body, but the heart being over-charged, constraines the tongue sometimes thus to tell what grieve it indureth, for although my estate is no better than ye see mee in, yet am not I exempt from such passions, which those of greater degree than my selfe have endured. But tell mee (quoth the Princesse) why you are so sad & pensive? take ye no pleasure in this delectable place, or want ye ought beside that would better content ye? Madame, said he, if ye would vnderstand the cause of my grieve, it is thus. Fortune is so cruell to me, that I lone where I cannot be requited with the like.



100 The second Booke of the History

Know you then (quoth the Princesse) what it is to loue? yea Madame, to my cost (quoth he) for loue hath taught me too many wofull lessons. As she desired to know what harme could be receiued in louing, he returned her this answer.

As Madame (quoth he) loue is of such a nature, as it abaileth the greatest, and exalteth the meanest, the stoutest it makes timorous, and giues boldnes to starke cowards: things pleasant are oft times offensive and contemptible to them that loue, their hope of good successe comes euer more slow or slackly: A minde througly amorous is neuer contented, but daily in doubt, and when it dreames of greatest quiet, then is it most busie with affliction. What further shall I say & perswade your selfe (Madame) that it requires the skill of one more expert and cunning than I am, to paint forth and expresse the diuers natures of loue. It seemes to me, said the Princesse, that you can speake sufficient thereof, and I take you to be a very good servant of his, because ye can so well discourse his qualities. You say well Madame (quoth he) for if I knew no more than other practitioners in loue, I could not speake so perfectly of him as I doe. I haue good cause to complaine on lones crueltie, for the wrong he doth mee is intollerable, compelling mee to loue one that hath no regard of me, and that which most of all torments mee, is, to see my selfe frustrate of any hope or remedie: With these wordes the teares trickled downe his cheekes, which moued her to great compassion, saying. I wonder that your loue should be so extreame, and torment yee in such violent manner.

Neuer maruelle thereat Madame (quoth he) for in him that thinks on nothing else but loue, are great secrets hidden. Well did she perceiue whereto his speeches tended, but she thought it not necessarie to excite him any further on, least her Ladies and Damosells should gather suspition: wherefore she arose from her seat



seate, purposing to returne to her Chamber: and in her going shee looked backe diuers times vpon her Louer, by meanes whereof hee was greatly contented, and tooke better rest this night, than many a night before hee had done.

The Princesse called Attaida aside, demaunding what she conceined of Iulian: who forthwith returned her this answer. In sooth Madame, he is so secret, as I can not get one word from his mouth, whereby to discover him: which I imagine is, because he dareth not trust me. It may be so (sayd the Princesse) but let me alone, Ile finde a meanes to resolve vs in this doubt, perswading my selfe already, that he is not the Gardeners Sonne, in regard of his swete countenance and ciuill demeanour. These words shee deliuered very chearefully, being glad shee had one to whom shee might impart her griefe. Amandria and all the other Ladies wondered much at Iulian, talking on nothing else but of his good parts and behaviour, extolling him to the Heauens for his comely perfections.



## CHAP. XIII.

How the Emperour being in his Hall, there came before him a man very much mis-shapen, holding by the hand a Damosell deformed likewise: how he entreated the Emperour to make him Knight: to the amazement of *Florida*, being then in the Hall, and how this man afterward behaued himselfe very valiantly in the field.



**D** the next morning, as *Florida* would haue gone downe into the Garden, the Emperesse called for hir, because she would go see the Emperour: for she neuer went vnto her daughters Chamber, nor all this while had walked in the Garden, by which meanes *Iulian* was kept the more secretly. The Emperour was well pleased when he beheld his daughter *Florida*, demanding in what case the Garden was: She answered, Neuer more faire or flourishing. Now was there present with the Emperour many great princes and Barons, who were come to see him since the departure of *Primalcon*, being all very sorry, that as yet they could heare no tidings of him.

As they were communing together on many matters, a Squire entred the Hall, holding a Damsel by the hand, being both of them so mis-shapen, as very seldome should one beholde the like. The Squire was a man of great stature, strongly limbed, and so full of haire, as if he had bene a wilde sauage man: he wore a short garment, which was fastned about his necke with a buckle of gold.

The



The Damsells habite was like of many colours, embossed round about with costly stones : shee wore nothing on her head, so that her haire was scene to bee somewhat short, blacke and curled, her necke and breasts were leane and swartie : thus entred they the Hall being well accompanied. At the Emperours feste they both humbled themselves, and the Squire hauing kissed his hand, beganne to say thus.

My Lord, I am a bassaille of yours, who comes to beg one boone of you, that it might stand with your good liking, to make mee Knight, because I made this Damosell a promise, neuer to receiue that degree, but from the hand of the best and greatest Prince in the world : and this I am perswaded, that your equall is not to be found throughout the whole world : Whereunto the Emperour thus answered him.

My friend, I will graunt thy request, but I would first gladly know what thou art, and how thou art called, to see if thou be worthy of the order of Knighthood, or no.

As for that my Lord ( sayd he ) neuer make you any doubt, I am of most noble bloud, and am descended from Knights of no meane valour, which seeing you are so desirous to know : Understand then, that this Damosell is Daughter to the Prince of Gorgara, who perceiuing her elder sister to be Lady of the whole Province, withdrew her selfe to a Castell, where ( at her pleasure ) shee often used to ride on hunting. My selfe being Sonne to a Knight of the same Countrey, Lord of a Castell adioyning neare the Mountaines, brought vp from mine Infancie in the exercise of Hunting, chanced one day to slay a boare in the presence of this Lady, as shee sat by a Fontaines side to recreate her selfe.

Shee seeing me so active and full of hardinesse, began to affect me, and I afforded the like to her, when intreating that she would take pittie vpon mee, shee was contented to graunt me her loue.

Finishing



Finding my selfe thus graciously regarded, I made her a promise, neuer to receiue my order of Knighthood, but by the hand of the most renowned man in the world, and afterward to performe such deedes of Armes for her sake, as she should generally be reported happy by her Knight, who would make her fame farre to excell her sisters. Maimonde (for so is this Lady named) was highly pleased with the promise I made her, saying she would goe along with me, to see what deedes of Chivalry I should performe in her cause. And neuer did man account himselfe more happy or fortunate than I doe, in hauing this Damosell for my Lady and Mistresse.

The Emperour and the rest could not forbear laughing, hearing him deliuer such arrogant speeches, whereupon he thus replied: In sooth this Ladies beautie is so rare and singular, as it may much augment the valor and manhood of her Knight: other answers were severally deliuered, in scoone and mockage of this mishapen Squire.

Then Florida remembryng the comely shape of her Iulian, reioyced inwardly to her selfe, teasing familiarly with her Ladies and Gentlewomen, in derision of the Squire and his beautifull Mistresse. Camilot (for so was this deformed Squire called) seeing the Princesse, her Ladies and the other Knights thus flout him, endured all patiently, without answering one word: then the Emperour spake thus vnto him. In regarde (Sir) you haue gotten you so faire a friend, it is great reason she should be pleased, to the end we may behold what you can do for her sake. Then Camilot called for his Armour, which was more strong than beautifull, and after he was armed by his squire, the Emperour knighted him: whereof she being not a little ioyfull, turning towards the Emperours knights, sayd.

Now mocke, and spare not, eyther mee, or my Ladie: and so breaking off his speeches, one of his Squires gaue him a Garland of Roses, of such strange and variable colours,



lours, as the like was neuer sene: and no sener made her shew thereof, but all the Hall was filled with a most heavenly sweet sanour. This Garland was set on Maimonds head by her new made Knight, who sayd: I would see any Knight beere so hardy, as to take off this Garland, and turning to them all, thus proceeded. You shall vnderstand (my Lords) that with great paine and danger I obtayned these Roses, which I do purpose to defend and maintaine where I haue placed them, euen to the bittermost abilitie remayning in me: therefore I beseech your Highnes grant mee leaue, to enter the enclosed field without the Pallace gate, against all such as dare combate with me: there will I and my Mistresse abide so long as I thinke meet, and let me see who dare be so bolde, as to fetch this garland from her head.

The Emperour was loath to graunt him this libertie, presuming he might be very hardy and puissant: but the Duke of Anemon (who was a gallant young Knight, devoutly affected to the beautifull Lyserna, and expected daily to enjoy her in marriage) seeing the Emperour delayed to make him an answer, stepped forth and sayd. What meane you my Lord? Why giue you not Camilot leaue to enter the field: admit him I pray you, for your Knights repute themselves highly wronged, to see this Garland stay so long vpon Maimonds head. All the rest affirmed what the Duke had sayd, and the Emperour perceiuing them so forwardly addicted, granted Camilot license to enter the field when he pleased: who as one not a little ioyfull thereof, humbly thanked the Emperour, and continuing on his speech, sayd: Know (my good Lord) that in my Countrie is a Tree which beares these Roses, on the toppe of the highest mountaine that was euer sene, where (till this instant) no one in this world, but my selfe, hath gathered of these Roses, which are of great vertue, and lea-  
uen yeares together will containe their freshnesse and verdure: with no small perill and hazard did I aduenture for  
them,



106 The second Booke of the History

them, because very strange wilde beasts doe keepe the mountaines passage, whereof I haue slaine many, finding my selfe wondrously strengthened by my Maimonds loue, which in despight of these fierce beasts, enabled mee to gather these Roses, whereof I made a Garland, to the end I might bring it hither to iustifie her beauty.

The Emperour tooke great pleasure in hearing Camilot so amorous of his hard favoured and mis-shapen Ladie, which caused him to vse these speeches to the Emperesse: Doe not you imagine Madame, that if you were so faire as this Damosell is, you would encourage mee to doe much more for your loue, than euer (as yet) I haue done. The Emperesse calling to minde the golden dayes whereof he spake, as one yet ioying in them, answered: In sooth (my Lord) you neede vse no such speeches on my behalfe, for if your deedes of Armes were illustrated and famous, your owne vertue, and no matter in me was cause thereof. It becomes you not to say so (replied the Emperour) for my heart and courage is as good yet as euer it was, to deale with Camilot in this quarrell, or any other Knight that dare offer himselfe, whom I would well giue to vnderstand, there neuer was or shall be, any one in this world fairer than you.

With these words his colour so arole, as if some one had slept soeith to reprocue what he said, which made all there present highly contented: especially Florida, who began but now to loue, she reioyced to heare what affection had passed betwene her father and mother, hoping no lesse might ensue twixt her and Iulian, if he were a Knight and worthy of her fauour, and in this conceit being carried beyond her selfe, she said: Perswade your selfe (my Lord) that you haue done greater matters, and with much more reason on my mothers behalfe, than euer Camilot shall or can doe for such a homely pcece as this is. The Emperour and the rest smiled at Floridas words, Mary Camilot was offended, and turned toward her with such a cholericke



cholerike disdain, as it seemed that sparkles of fire flew from his eyes; then with a very proud and a dreadful voice, he thus spake. Lady, beautie is but badly bestowed upon you, shewing your selfe so slenderly experienced in court'esie: I tell you, I love my Maimond as dearly as ever you shall be loved, were you farre fairer than you are: and I would see, if your beauty can prouoke any Knight here to the combate against me, that he may winne this Garland from her, and therewith adorne your gay tresses.

Perhappes you thinke your selfe more worthy thereof than she, but it will cost very deare before you can proue so fortunate: I haue giuen it Maimond, in regarde of the love I beare her, and will defend it against all Knights whatsoever, that dare enuy my gift. The Princesse was much amazed when she beheld Camilot so angrie against her, and hauing no colour left in her face, she turned towards the Emperour her Father: who smiling at his daughters fearesolnesse, said to Camilot. Go, get you to the field, where you shal find to deale with hardy Knights, and timorous Ladies: if there you can affright your aduersaries, as you haue done this young Damosell, they will hardly be able to abide in your presence. I goe my Lord (quoth he:) and so taking Maimond by the hand, went forth into the field. and the Emperour caused a Knight to beare him companie, who was attended with two hundred horse, lest any should offer him private iniurie. Thus is Camilot gone vnto the place appointed for Combats, where he erected a pavilion for his Ladie and Mistresse.

Now as concerning his former speeches to the Emperour, they were very certaine: for the Countrey people of Gorgata are barbarous, wilde and fierce, the whole Province full of mighty Mountaines, butting on the confines of Greece towards the Equinotiall.

This Squire, for the loue of his Maimond, a Lordes Daughter of that Countrey, hauing a huge Pace of yron  
in



in his hand, ascended the Mountayne whereof hee spake before, onely to fetch some of those goobly Roses, where hee slew diuers Lions, Tigers, and other dreadfull beasts, by means whereof hee grew sterne, haughty and arrogant: so neuer any man before durst attempt those mountaines, though by diuers Magicians many had bene given to vnderstand, that there was a Tree which bare those Roses, of such soueraigne vertue. Nor did Camilot or Maimond ride on horses, as others vse to doe, but on strange deformed beasts, that being moze wilde whereupon hee rode, than the other whereon his Lady was mounted, resembling rather a Mule than a Horse, but that his head was great and round, like to a Lions, yet light and quicke enough in pace.

No talke was now in the Court of any thing else but these twaine, because every one wondred at their strange deformities: But the Emperour calling his daughter Florida to him, said: Tell me (daughter) what you thinke of this Knight: it seemed to me that you were afraid of him, and that you dare not be so bolde, as to goe take the Garland from his Ladies head, albeit the Roses are very beautiful, and would much better become you than shee that weareth them. I beseech you my Lord (quoth shee) speake no moze of this infernall fiend, for I stand yet in doubt lest hee should come and doe me some outrage: I am very well contented shee shall keepe her Garland, although it were ten times fairer than it is. The Emperour laughed heartily to see his daughter so fearefull, and diuers Knights which were there present determined (for her sake) to combat Camilot, that shee might be honoured with wearing the Garland.

Afterward, the Emperour related vnto his Barons, how he imagined Camilot to be a hardy man at armes, and the Knight ought to be very ballant that should enter the Lynxes against him, aduising none other to meddle with him.

Such



Such as followed this counsell, received no endamage-  
ment, but they that did not, repented their labour. Not  
long after, the Emperesse returned to her chamber, so did the  
Princesse Florida to hers: who because she had not this  
day seen her Iulian, went downe into the garden, though  
it was somewhat late and toward evening, saying she  
would there dispose her selfe a while, by reason she had  
bene so affrighted by Camilot. Iulian, (to whom this day  
seemed an hundred yeares, though his Ladies absence) no  
sooner espied her, but became exceeding ioyfull, and as  
she demanded how he fared, he returned unto her this  
answer. Madame, I liede upon thoughts, and leade a life  
full of bitter anguish, here delving in the Garden. Iulian,  
(sayd she) I can tell thee marvellis, it is strange that thou  
beholdest mee now alive, I was so afraide of a Fiend of  
Hell that would haue slayne mee. Who durst be so bolde  
(quoth he) as any way to disturbe your quiet? A Squire  
(answered the Princesse) whom this day the Emperour  
my Father hath knighted: and so from point to point dis-  
coursed the whole matter to him, the deformed shape of  
him and his Lady, with all the other accidents hapning  
in the Hall: whereat he grew extremely displeased, say-  
ing: Dearly shall that proud Knight pay for his abusing  
you: Which words he had no sooner spoken, but he re-  
pented his rashnesse, because all her Ladies were within  
hearing of them, wherefore taking better care to his spee-  
ches, he proceeded thus.

Why Madame, is there neuer a Knight in your fathers  
Court, that dare chastise the presumptuous arrogancie of  
this barbarous man?

Not one (at this time) answered the Princesse, seeing  
my brother Primalcon is not here: therefore must I in-  
treate heauen to protect me, and punish him that was the  
cause of his departure: with which words she wared very  
pensive: and the Knight as heavy by hearing what she  
said, answered thus. Grieve not your selfe, good Madame,



110 The second Booke of the History

for Primaleon is so much esteemed, that his departure will  
renowne him through the world, by such rare deedes of  
Chualrie as he will every where perfoyme. I hope so too,  
answered the Princesse: but very desirous was she to con-  
ferre more privately with Iulian, to vnderstand of her place  
and what hee was, which made her walke to one end of  
the Garden, whither calling Iulian to reach her a Hele-  
tre branch, she laying her hand on his shoulder, thus spake.  
Wherefore would you not satisfie my friend Arraida in the  
question she demanded of you? Look what she said to you,  
was by my appoyntment, for I loue her as my selfe, and  
repose more trust in her, than in any other beside. It is so  
then, that both she and I repute you to be a Knight, and for  
some reason best knowne to your selfe, you shaddow it with  
such secrecie as you do: let my words perswade you to re-  
solve me herein. Hardly can I expresse his wondrous ioy  
when he heard her vze such a Question to him, nor was  
he able a long while after to make her answer: but when  
this priuiledge of pleasure somewhat forsooke him, hee thus  
replied. If I were assured Madame, not to be deprived  
of the contented life I leade in this place, nor you offended  
with such words as I shall vse, I would soone satisfie you  
in this request. Farre is my desire (answered she) from  
any injury to you, for I protest by my faith vnto him who  
made me, and my dutifull loue to the Emperour my father,  
that I will not take in any ill part whatsoeuer you say, nei-  
ther will I hinder you of your abiding in this place. Prince  
Edward bowed his knee to the ground before her, and hum-  
bly taking her hand, would needs kisse it, then while the  
teares stood in her eyes, thus he sayd: This day Madam,  
haue you done me an vnspokeable grace and saueur, for I  
feele all my griefes indured hitherto sufficiently recompen-  
sed. Know you then (saie Princesse) that I am not the  
Gardeners sonne, and I could wish I had neuer so inti-  
fled my selfe, in regard of the extreame anguish I haue  
thereby suffered: but in hope to speede better than as yet I  
haue



hane done, I came hither and made my selfe such as you see, whereas (in very deed) I am a Knight, bowed to your service all my life time, and descended from so good a place, as what valour soener remaineth in mee, I hope shall be no blemish vnto mine Ancestors. And to the end you may hane some assurance of my speeches, foure dayes shall not be fully expired, but I will reuenge your wrongs on that insolent braggart, and (in despight of him) bring vnto you his Garland of Roses: I force not what perill may be in the aduenture, your beautie alone will winne mee the victorie.

In regard of your rash promise (answered the Princesse) I am soze that I caused you to discover your selfe: but seeing you hane thus acquainted mee with your minde, it becometh me to be patient, and hereafter I pray you be circumspect, lest any of my Damosells (except Attaida,) chance to perceiue you: to her you may safely say what you would, when you cannot speake with me, and if your loue be such as you make protestations of, I am not so vnthankfull but I will acknowledge your kindnesse: but let vs now walke backe againe, for feare lest my Ladies gather some suspicion. As he was answering, that by her gracious fauour, his heart was thoroughly eased: she went vnto her Damosells, not speaking to Iulian thence-foorthward as hitherto she had done, because she wared more bashfull knowing now he was a Knight: and being in her Chamber chatting with her Ladies, no other talke passed among them, but all of Camilot. The next morning the Princesse discoursed to Attaida, what talke had passed betwene her and Iulian, saying moreover: I shall now see how hee can carry himselfe in the Combate against Camilot, for if hee proue to be a good Knight, I see no reason but I may well afford him loue, let yours be the charge then (hence-foorth) to conuerse with him from mee: and so embracing her very loningly, with the teares standing on her cheekes like beautifull pearles, she thus continued her speeches.



Oh gentle Sister, I pray thee blame me not for afflicting Iulian, because (though I confesse it a fault) I can doe no otherwise: but the Heavens (I hope) will send mee some comfort, and suffer me no way dishonour my father. Such is my hope too, answered Attaida, and seeing Iulian knows you have such confidence in mee, referre the rest to me, it shall goe hard but I will vnderstand somewhat more of him than yet you have done. But come we now a while to Camilot, who abiding in the Field, could not that night deale with any one because it was late: But many this night were in good hope of the Garland, and above all the rest, the Marquesse of Feriara, a knight hardy, and rich, who loving the Princesse Florida in some small measure, thought it a gay matter to doe her any service, but at no time durst bee by any conference with her. The next morning (having first bene at Church, put on a faire Armour, and rode into the Field, where so soone as Camilot espied him, he mounted on his beast, and taking a strong Lance in his hand, demaunded of the Marquesse, what he would have.

I come (said he) for the Garland of Roses, which becometh not so ill favored a beast as your Jewell is.

I will let thee vnderstand (sayd Camilot) by badges of Armes, that thee deserves it better than any other whatsoever.

So separating themselves to fetch their carere, they came to the encounter, wherein the Marques failed, because his horse was affraide of Camilots beast, and so started aside: by means whereof his enemy smote him on the flanke with such strength as he lost his saddle, and fell to the ground so mainely, that in a good space he was not able to rise againe.

Camilot alighted to disarm him of his Helmet, but the Emperour perceiuing what he went about, called to him, saying

Knight, seeing you come to make proue of your forces,  
ble



the courtesse, and lay not hand on a knight unable to help himselfe, it may well suffice you to have vanquished him: wherefore Camilot answered, that he was contented: but the Marquesse felt himselfe so bruised with his fall, as hee had no minde to proceede farther in the Combate, perswading himselfe he should gaine nothing thereby: wherefore hee got upon his horse, and forsaking the Field with this small foyle, went to rest himselfe in his Chamber, because he so thought it expedient for him.

Some after came the Countie Paller, a very gallant young knight, who desired to have Attaida in marriage, and for her loue would hee needes adventure the Combate with Camilot: but his fortune and the Marquesse were not much different, for his horse also flew out, and by no manner of meanes would come neare that boly beast. The new made knight was not a little locond, seeing he had so sone overcome these two knights, and with a loud voyce called to his Lady, saying: Now may you wel mocke them that scorned vs, perceiuing their cunning in defending themselves.

Maimond being seated alone in the Banilion, that she might the better beholde the Encounters, laughing outright, thus replied: If all the rest speede no better than these haue done, you shall not much neede to weary yourselfe, but easily may we beare the honour hence. Madam (said he againe) there is neuer a knight in all the world, that (in your presence) can maister mee.

During this conference, the Duke of Anemon entred the Field; hee was very valiant, and often had scene these wilde sauage beasts, because hee was both a great hunter and horse-man: But when hee saw the two knights (before named) were so sone vanquished, he was somewhat dismayed: yet notwithstanding entred boldly the Field, where both couched their Launces, and met together with such furie, as the splinters flew vp into the ayre, and Camilot (who had on a good corset) was wounded a little:



114 The second Booke of the History

but the Duke more shrewdly, having lost his stirrups, and very hardly escaped falling. Then drawing out their swords, a rough sterne Combat beganne betwene them, which continued not very long, because Camilot was nimble and full of valour: besides, the Duke lost much blood at his first receyved wound, which by little and little sooner weakened him, as at the length he fell from his horse, and by his Squires was presently borne forth of the field. Now beganne the Emperour to be somewhat offended, seeing these such knights overcome before halfe the day was spent, blaming himselfe very much, for yielding thus to dishonour his owne Court.

All the rest of the day, no Knight was so hardie as to enter the Joust, but on the morrow, there came, more for shame, than voluntary, eight knights together, intending to abide the Combats one after another, onelie by this meanes to trye their adversarie: but they wonne nothing hereby, for Camilot was as fresh at the last assault as the first, banquishing them all, so that two of them payed their lives for tribute in the place: and the day following he was conquerour of tenne knights more. Maimond conceived such exceeding loy hereat, as now she beganne to growe very proud and haughty, expecting who durst be so hardie as next to enter the Combat.

CHAP.



## CHAP. XIIII.

How Prince *Edward* vanquished *Camilot*, and slew him in the fight, and how afterwards, as hee pursued *Maimond* totake the Garland from her, hee vn-  
horsed in the Ioust *Polandos* and *Abenunco*.



Prince *Edward* remaining highly contented, for the speeches which had passed betwene him and his Ladie, hee denised all the night long, how hee should behaue himselfe to combat with *Camilot*: wherefore, so soone as it was day, hee left the Garden, and went to seeke *Zaidell* the Squire, which *Olimba* had given him.

Having found him, he sent him to the place where *Belager* was, for the Horse and Armour sent him from *Olimba*, appoynting at what place hee should stay with them: in the meane while he went to behold *Camilots* behauiour, where seeing him vanquish three Knights one after another, he remembred how the Marques and the Countie had the worst, through default in their horses, which made him conclude to deale with him on foote. But when *Florida* noted *Camilots* aduantage in Armes, (wondering thereat) shee said to *Attaida*. Alas sister, it grieues mee that *Iulian* should trie the Combat with this diuell, for mee thinkes he is the fiercest tyrant in the world: bid him (for my sake) to forbear this enterprize, leaving it to some Knight better experienced in such affaires than I take him to be, and I shall neuer a iote the more mislike of him. Whereupon, *Attaida* and shee, the same Evening, went into the Garden, where the Knight had no sooner perceined his hearts diuine



Mistresse, but by his outward behauiour it might be well be discerned: Mary shee, who once already had heard him speake to her contentment, seemed daintie in lending her eare againe to listen him, yet notwithstanding, when she was set, bashfully looking on the ground. shee sayd: Marked you to day Iulian, how easily Camilot vanquished three very good Knights? I suppose hee will doe no lesse to enerie man that couche a staffe against him. Cursed be the houre (sayd Prince Edward) that ever he came into this Countrey, but I perceiue by what meanes hee pzenalieth so well: As for his valor, I make no great reckoning thereof, I know there are many in the Court much moze valiant than hee is. It is ill sene yet (replyed the Princesse) but I should be very glad to see his pride mastered. So falling from one matter to another, shee arose and walked along the Garden: by which meanes Attaida stept to conuerse with him, saying.

Well may you be thought happye Iulian, that my Ladie the Princesse is so gracious towards you, and knowing you loue her, to suffer you to continue in this place: shee hath told me what talke passed betwene you, how you disclosed your selfe to be a Knight, and for her loue you fained your selfe to be the Gardeners sonne: also, how you purpose to enter the Combate with Camilot, that she may discerne some prooue of your Chualtrie: But shee is not desirous to see it, neither would wish you hazard your selfe against such a diuelliſh furie. Wherefore, by me shee entreates you to desist from this enterprize, some other may come hither in time against whom you may better venture your fortune: thus shall you receiue no dishonour, because all men of Iudgement thinke it no wrong, to forbear dealing with him, who is moze meet to combat wilde and cruell beasts, than men endued with no such ablenesse. And (for mine owne part) I would wish you follow this counsell, as well to auoide offending the Princesse, as to assure your selfe from manifest danger.

God



God forbid (quoth he) that I should any way be offended to her, for I thinke my selfe the onely happy knight of the world, by her vouchsafing to accept me as her servant: which felicity I could neuer have attained unto, but that her gracious pittie pleased so to spare me my life, to vnthankfull might I then be reputed, should I not reuenge her cause (who hath so highly fauoured me) on him that durst affright her with such saucie menaces. Say to her (I beseech ye) that I humbly intreate her to hold me excused, in regard her selfe hath my promise to reuenge her wrong, whereof if shee would now discharge me, I should imagine my selfe the most vnforsunate man in the world. What aduantage in the encounter can Camilot haue against me, if she in whom the whole worlds beautie is assembled, be but present in the place where I may behold her? Therefore good Lady perswade mee no farther, let Camilots valor be what it may be, neuer will I dismaye hauing such a sweet Mistres. But now to your selfe, who knowes my hearts secrets, and true efficacie of my loue: how shall I deserue this kindenes at your hands? Ah that you would still continue remembrance of me, when you are in priuate talke with your Ladie, perswade your selfe I will one day acknowledge it: for though now ye see me in this poore estate of life, heauen hath else-where appointed better meanes for me, whereof I must and will forbear to speake, till I may more effectually make it knowne unto ye. For durst I haue bene so bold, to commence such a matter to a Ladie of her degree, were I not a knight that might beseech her service, without comparison of equalling her greatnesse.

Sir (quoth Arraida) mine owne opinion euer gaue me, that you were a knight of good descent, else ye would not haue aymed your hopes at one of such height: I am very glad I now know it, and would be acquainted with the rest of your estate, so pleased ye to reueale it. But seeing you will needs venture the combat with Camilot,

God



## 118 The second Booke of the History

God be your speed, and send ye successe according to your  
owne hearts desire: in the meane while tell me, if any espe-  
ciall cause doth prouoke ye to this enterprise, and how we  
shal know ye when ye are in the field. The Knight than-  
king her, said, no other cause prouoked him to the fight, but  
onely the fauour of his Princesse and Mistres: beside, hee  
purposed to combat on foote, an especiall token whereby  
to know him, and hee meant (withall) the next day to  
leauethe Garden, hauing already deuised a fit excuse for  
himselſe. Attaida againe laboured to dissuade him from  
the field, expreſſing how gratefully the Princesse would  
take it, who (in regard of her loue) feared least some mis-  
hap would befall him. I will not (quoth hee) be so enſor-  
t to breach of my promise, rather intreat her consent to my  
death, than to haue her Iulian conuicted of a faint heart or  
cowardise: for if she please but to enrich mine eyes with  
her heavenly presence, I know my strength will in such  
sort be redoubled, as the proud presuming Knight dare not  
abide in the field beſore mee. So walking backe againe  
toward the company, Florida ſome after returned to her  
chamber, where the abſence of the rest ſo well fitted her,  
as ſhe would needs know what had paſſed betwene At-  
taida and her Louer: whereon the Lady thus began to  
the Princesse. Madame, I know not what I ſhould ſay  
vnto ye, neither can my wit comprehend what is like to  
enſue hereon, for I neuer heard a man better indued with  
iudgement than hee, which plainly ſhewes him to be of  
ſome great Parentage: for albeit I ſaid to him all that ye  
gaue me in charge, demanding likewise to know further  
concerning his eſtate, yet is he ſo wiſe and ſecret to him-  
ſelſe, as he will diſcloſe to me no more than he did beſore.  
Florida was glad to heare her imagine him of ſo great  
birth, and affected him the better, in that ſor her ſake hee  
would thus abaſe himſelſe, repuſing him verily to be a  
good Knight, becauſe he made no more reckoning of fight-  
ing with Camilot, eſpecially in being ſo carefull of his  
promise:



promise: wherefore she prayed to God in her minde, that he would preserve and keepe him from danger.

After the Princesse had left the garden, Prince Edward went to the Gardener and his wife, saying: that he must goe abroad to seeke a certaine hearbe, by meanes whereof he should finde the rest of the treasure: he was not certaine he said, how long he should be absent, but they praying hartly he might finde the hearbe, and he very humbly taking his leave of them, departed the next morning to seeke his Squire Zaidell. On the morrow, when the Princesse went downe into the Garden, and found not her Iulian there (as she was wont to doe) she became exceeding heauie in minde, accounting her selfe as a creature left alone in the world: a good while she sate still not speaking a word, fearing least her Louer were gone for altogether, without any will of returning thither againe: whereon she thus conferred with her selfe. If he be gone (miserable that I am) what shal I do? My affection toward him is growne so vehement, as my former delight in this Garden is become hateful to me, seeing Iulian is not here, whose sight best pleased mee. As thus in griefe she sate meditating, she espied the Gardeners wife comming toward her, to whom immediately thus she spake: What is become of your sonne, that I see him not here as I was wont to doe? Madame (quoth she) he is gone abroad about some necessarie businesses, but he will quickly returne and attend your service, for so he promised me at his departing. God graunt he doe so answered the Princesse, for in sooth I tooke great pleasure in talking with him, because he seemed to mee discret and well governed.

Now to the end her Ladies and Damosells should not any way grow suspitious of her, though her friend were absent, yet she frequented still the Garden, shadowing her passions so much as possibly she could, taking no other delight, but when she sate devising with Arraida, she toyed she should now see her Iulian a knight at armes:  
but



but he returned not so soone as he expected, for Zaidell (whom Prince Edward had sent to fetch his furniture) could not finde Bellager, because he was ridden on hunting farre from thence, for he tooke great delight in that exercise, especially hauing the good Dog Maiortes with him, which Clodion brought at his comming thether, wherefore Zaidell was enforced to trauaile so farre farther for him.

When Bellager vnderstood that Prince Edward should combat against a Knight of such valor, hee would needs himselfe goe see the fight, and disguising himselfe in the habite of a Merchant, went on along with the Squire, who brought Prince Edward secretly to a place called Saint Georges Tarras, making it full eight dayes before they came to Constantinople: in which time Camilot had performed very haughtie deedes of armes, there being not one Knight in the Court able to vnderstand him.

Hereat the Emperour was so discontented, that he was many times minded to enter the field himselfe, to recouer this shame and deepe indignitie: but the Emperes perceiving his over-much forwardnes, instantly intreated him from so rash a purpose.

The Princesse Florida was likewise in a wonderfull perplexity, when she saw foure daies were past, in which time Iulian had promised to reuenge her cause, and now he came not to performe his word: this made her now verily imagine, that he came thether but with an intent to beguile her, and all speeches past on his behalfe, were fables and bitterly false.

But alas, full little dreamed she on her Knights beautes, when in al this time he saw that Zaidell returned not, gladly would he haue gone to seek him, had he knowne any certaine place where to finde him: poore Prince, he knew not what to say, but sat bemoaning his hard fortune, that thus he should breake his first promise to his Ladie: but when he beheld Bellager & his Squire come together,



together, how ioyfull he was, I leane to your imaginati-  
on. He embraced them louingly one after another, and  
saie would haue questioned where Zaidell had staid all  
this while he was absent, but loath to lose so long time in  
talking, he presently armed himselfe, for yet he had day  
light enough, and willing Bellager to follow him by some  
other way, he mounted on horse backe, and galloped as  
maine till he came to the field, where Camilot sate very  
imperiously, because all that day and the other before, no  
one came forth to offer him the combat: which made him  
(puffed vp with glory) aloud to deliver forth these spée-  
ches.

He thinks the Knights of the Emperours Court, that  
made such derision of me and my faire Mistres, are much  
altered from their former behaviour, for now al the shame  
remaineth on their heads. It is high time I should now  
get me gone, seeing none dare come into the field against  
me. As for you Madame (quoth he to his faire Saint) be  
bolde to tearme your selfe the fairest Ladie in the world,  
and say ye haue iust cause to lone your servant Camilot.  
Maimond was highly delighted with these words, shew-  
ing her selfe very affable vnto him, and desiring him that  
with speed they might now depart thence: whereupon Ca-  
milot caused his Mantlion to be taken vp, lading it on his  
beast, and thus away he would.

When the Emperour (who stood with his Barons at a  
window of his Pallace) beheld his pride and intolence  
in him, he was extremely impatient: the Princesse Fle-  
rida being present, and noting this likewise, who knowes  
how heauily she tooke it, especially because Iulian came  
not to combat, according as he had promised he would. E-  
uen at this very instant came Prince Edward thither,  
who alighting from his horse, willed the guard to permit  
entrance, whereto the Captaine of them thus answered.  
I would counsell ye (my friend) to suffer Camilot to de-  
part now he is going: for me thinks you are no such likely  
man



man at armes to deale with him, neuer make proue of your valour here, least the fight fall out more perillous than you are able to endure. Knight (answered Prince Edward) I pray thee bestow no counsel on him that asks thee none: if Camilot be going, Ile be so bolde (by his leaue) as to make him stay a little longer: and hauing thus spoken, they suffered him quietly to enter the field. The Emperour marvelled when he saw him come in, not knowing whence or what he was, and generally they reputed him to be but some new made Knight. Now reioyced the Princeesse (not a little) when she beheld him, yet fearefull withall least he should any way miscarrye, so that her countenance gaue testimonie of her inward alteration, and looking on Arraida, gaue her a signe whereby to tell her, this was her Iulian: which she likewise quickly perceiued, but durst say nothing to her, because she saw there was no fit opportunitie, and besides, both feare and joy would not now admit her to say any thing at all.

Prince Edward setting the point of his sword to the ground, looking on Camilot, said. Sir Knight, dismount thy selfe speedely, for I would rather combat thee on foot, then on that strange ill-sauoured Beast, by whose meanes thou hast overcome so manie good Knights, whose horses were affrighted by that ugly monster. The Emperour and all the rest which heard him, affirmed he had said rightly, condemning themselves very much for thinking thereon no sooner. Camilot presently alighted, saying: Thou shalt not imagine (wretched Knight) that I seeke any advantage of thee: ill hast thou done to hinder my departure, and I will make thee deerey repent it. So (without any other speeches betwene them) they laid on each other stoutly and fearnly. Now, albeit Camilot was of great strength, Prince Edward therein went yet somewhat beyond him: beside, he had better skill in handling his weapon, as also was very active and nimble, so

easily



easily he auoyded his Enemies blowes, and soone gave him to vnderstand, that he had met with his Master. The Combat betwene them was very fierce and cruel, continuing a whole houre together without any ceasing, the Emperour and all the rest much admiring the vertue and valour of the yong Knight, being meruailous desirous to know what he was, but the Princesses ioy exceeded all comparison, when she perceined her Iulian to be so hardie and ballant, whereon she could not chuse but say thus to her selfe: The heauens protect my Knight, and strengthen him to ouercome honourably his hatefull enemy.

All this while the English Prince (who did all his endeavour to be Conquerour, and witness his valour to all the Knights there present) casting vp his eyes, beheld how the Princesses colour came and went, with feare least ought but well should befall him, and being soundly perswaded she knew it was he; his strength and courage renewed in such sort, that he bestowed three such violent strokes together vpon his aduersarie, as made him stagger too and fro amazedly: for halfe his shield was sliced away, and grievously was he wounded on that arme beside, so as his shield could now no longer stand in stead to defend him.

Camilot perceiuing his owne extremitie, and nothing but immediate death was now before his eyes, like a mad dogge he ran vpon the Prince, to catch hold of him with his other arme, hauing throwne away his sword, but Prince Edward being nimble, suddenly stept backe, and gave him such a stroke on the arme wherewith he would haue caught him, as it was thereby able to doe him no longer seruice, wherefore (through the grievous paine and extreame anguish he felt) he was constrained thus to exclaime and cry vpon his hard Destrerie, crying aloud.

Most miserable that I am, to be thus vanquishd by him  
of



of whom I made no account at all. As thus he raved by  
and downe, the blood issued from one of his wounds in  
such abundance, as hee could hardly stand any longer on  
his feet. Now (quoth Prince Edward to him) let vs le-  
ve goe haunting hence with your sweet Mistresse: and  
stepping then suddenly to him, gaue him such a blow as  
fello him to the ground, when setting his foot on him, and  
cutting the lace of his helmet, (without shewing any pit-  
tie) presently smote his head from his shoulders, saying:  
See now how thy glory is brought into subiection: here-  
after be not so bolde againe to offend them whom thou  
wert neuer worthy to serue.

Now could not the great ioy of the Emperour and his  
Barons be exprest, when they beheld the ouerthrow of  
this monstrous diuell: and Maimond (beholding her lo-  
uer thus slaine) was so extremely displeased thereat, that  
smiting the beast (whereon she late mounted) with a smal  
wand which she held in her hand, I will abide here no  
longer (quoth she) for feare that Knight bereaue me of  
my Garland. The Guard would haue with-held and stai-  
ed her, but she laid such blowes vpon his beast, that he ran  
away so swiftly, as none could ouer-take him. Prince  
Edward beholding her escape thus away, waxed exceeding  
angry thereat, and albeit he was very sore wounded, yet  
would he needs make after her immediately, to recover  
the Garland, the hope of all his paines.

Euery one there present highly commended the Knight,  
but especially the Emperour, who cursed Maimond for  
her dishonorable getting away in that manner. Now  
there were diuers that imagined this Knight to be Pri-  
maleon, but the Emperour said it could not be his son, be-  
cause this other was taller and better set in body than Pri-  
maleon: hereon Duke Zolome replied, that if hee re-  
turned not with the Garland, it wer good some should ride  
after to enquire what hee was. Unable am I to expresse  
the wonderfull gladnes of the Princeesse, who sighing to  
her



her self, said: Ah wonderful, who might this worthy knight be? I thinke the world containes not his like. my Brother Primaleon onely excepted: I pray God that Maimond haue not the power to scape him. Now when shee saw Attaida had gotten very nere her, with the teares in her eyes, she thus proceeded: What thinke ye (Sister) of the great vertue remaining in Iulian? Now am I rid of all doubt that he is a Knight, as also descended of some high linage, noz doe I repent the lone my heart hath bestowed on him, seeing he hath made so good p[ro]ofe of his valor and worthinesse.

Prince Edward rode on, enquiring still for Maimond of all hee met with, and they tolde him which way they saw her riding: but although he was very well mounted, yet all this day he could not reach her, such was the speedie pace of her strange mishapen beast. At night hee came to a Wood, at the entrance whereof were many severall wayes: and he not knowing in this case what hee should doe, concluded to rest there till the next Morning, when perhaps he might meet with one or other, by whom he should learne some tidings of her. Resolving thus, he alighted from his horse, tying him vnder a tree to feede, and not long after he espied Bellager and Zaidell, who hauing scene the combat, and the cause which constrained him in such hast from the field, they galloped likewise after him, vnable to ouertake him untill this instant.

It is well knowne what græting is among friends when they meeete, especially after a fight of such honorable importance, which wanted not (I warrant ye) now at this present, as they sat by some light, discoursing on diuers matters, while Zaidell vnarmed his Master, and dressed his wounds with a precious Unguent, which the Lady before had giuen him. After they had rested a good part of the night, (especially the Prince) who was very wearie, at length the day began to breake: and as they were readie to mount on horse-backe, they beheld Mai-



126 The second Booke of the History

mond hard by them, who had done nothing all that night but rid vp and downe in the wood, and when she thought her selfe furthest off, was now nearest her enemye. No sooner had the Prince espyed her, but leaping lightly on horse-backe, called aloud to her, saying: Tarte, tarte, thou deformed creature, for thou neither must nor shalt escape me so. When she heard these words, she knew him by his voyce, and began to speake away as fast as she could: farre had she not ridden, but she met with foure Knights, two wherof were clad in very rich Armour, to whom she said. Helpe gentle Knights to shield me from this traitour, who seekes to murder me and beare away my Garland. Assuredly doubt not (quoth one of them in rich Armour) he shall not doe you any such wrong: and taking a Launce, came into the midst of the way, saying. Stay Knight, and let the Lady goe whom thus thou pursuest, for I will hinder thee from doing her any iniurie. To your owne cost (replied Prince Edward) take ye this quarrell in hand, for she doth me wrong and I offer her none, she beares away the Garland which is mine by right. Come, come, quoth the Knight, let vs haue no more words, for you and I will otherwise end this controuersie. Thus ran they against each other with such violence, as their Launces flew vp shinered in the ayre, and their horses were so hurt in the encounter, that the strange Knight having his shoulder broken, fell downe with his maister to the ground, breaking his legge likewise with falling on him, so as he could not over-hastily reconer himselfe againe.

Prince Edward lost his stirrups, but yet kept fast in his Saddle, and seeing his enemye thus laide along, left him to follow still after Maimond: but the other Knight stopt before him with his sword ready drawne, and said. Alas Sir, ye must not thinke to get from me so, ye shall dearly answer for this ye haue done. Prince Edward suddenly snatching forth his sword, in exceeding  
anger



anger smote at the Knight, because he stood in feare Maimond would escape againe with the Garland : which made him deliver such a sound stroke on his enemies Helmet, as cleft it in two and wounded his head beside, causing him to fall downe in great astonishment, where the Prince so left him, and pursued Maimond with all the hast he could make.

The two Knights (thus dismounted) were Polendos and Abenunco sonne to the Soldane of Babilon : for Polendos bearing the departure of Primaleon, immediately left Thessaly, to see if his Father would now any way command him : and because hee had bene soe weather-beaten on the sea, he came on land with two Knights and two Squires, having sent the rest of his company along by sea.

Abenunco who had followed the search of Primaleon in many places, yet neuer could vnderstand where to finde him, being passionate (withall) for the lone of Amandria, as hee was returning backe toward Constantinople, by god hap met Polendos on the way, and so kept him companie, till what you haue heard befell them both by Prince Edward. Polendos lying on the ground thus bruised by his horses fall, (who could not chuse but be inwardly displeased) hee commanded his two Knights to helpe him vp, who mounted him vpon one of their owne horses. Abenunco (on the other side) seeing himselfe thus hardly handled, I make no question but he was as much offended as his friend, who being more cholericke indeed than Abenunco, would in all the hast (soe soth) follow Prince Edward to be reuenged. But to crosse him in this hot determination, Marinte (brother to Tyrendos) came galloping to them, being sent from the Court to enquire what the Knight was that had vanquished Camilot. Hee knew Polendos well, and Abenuncoes Squires taking off their Masters Helmet to binde vp his wound, (which was somewhat dangerous) hee



128 The second Booke of the History

remembered him likewise, and wondering how they both came into this pittifull plight, he said: what wofull sight is this? Alas (my Lords) who hath dealt with yee thus unkindely? Polendos demanding what he was: he presently returned him this answer. I am called Marinte, sonne to Duke Eustace, being ready to doe ye any service: I follow after a yong knight, who hath shewen most admirable deedes of Chivalrie, therefore am I sent by the Emperour, to know, (if possibly I may) of whence, and what he is. Polendos desiring to vnderstand what deedes of Armes he had done: He hath conquered (quoth Marinte) and slaine the boldest knight, that ever came into the Emperours Court, rehearsing all the matter concerning Camilot, and Maimond her flight likewise for feare to lose her Garland.

When Polendos heard these newes, (being much amazed therat) he said: Nay, then will I follow the knight no farther to be revenged on him, (as once I intended) but wheresoeuer my good hap is to meete him, I will doe him all the honour and service I can. Why (said Marinte) was it he that thus unhorsed ye? I dare assure ye, he is the onely brane knight that ever wielded sword. No otherwise thinke I, answered Polendos, seeing that by his vertue Camilot is vanquished: as for the advantage hee got of mee, my horse was much more in fault than my selfe. And herein he said true, for had not his horse failed him, Prince Edward had not past away so easily as he did.

Being al mounted on horse-back, they tooke their way toward Constantinople, where (with much adoe) they arrived befoze it was night. When the Emperour saw his sonne, (as one overcome with exceeding ioy) he embraced him in his armes, saying: Sonne, you are most hartily welcome, not a little glad am I of your returne: but how comes it to passe you are thus crazed? When he had humbly kissed the Emperours hand, he thus answered:



My Lord, mans nature often leads him to benter on quarrels, which are against reason, and makes him repent his rashnes afterwards. So hee discoursed what hapned betwene him and the young Knight: how by Marintes persuasions he gaue ouer, and followed not to be renenged on him.

You did well therein (replied the Emperour) for (wo)se might haue befallne ye than as yet hath done, by reason he is a Knight of great valour, and (beside) in right pursues the Ladie. Then comming to Abenunco, he demanded likewise how hee fared: Not well my Lord, (quoth hee) because I cannot finde Primaleon, but (some what to my cost) I met with the yong Knight you talke of. The Emperour said, in time he should doubtles heare tidings of his sonne: as for this which had hapned both them by the way, it was not to be reckoned as any strange accident, because such chaunces are euermore incident to Knights errant.

All the Barons of the Court reioyced to see Polendos, who, with his companion (for reuerie of their hurts) were committed to the charge of very skillfull Chirurgeons: but the Princesse Florida loyed beyond all measure, hearing of their arrivall, and how her Loner Iulian had handled them, wherefore she intreated the Emperesse, that in her companie shee might goe see him, whereto shee granted: and comming into Polendos his chamber, (attended on by their Ladies) the Emperesse gaue him her hand to kisse, and Florida embracing him very lovingly, said. My Lord and brother, I pray you tell me what befell ye on the way with the yong Knight, which is so talked of: What should I tell you Sister (quoth he) concerning him, but that he is one of the best Knights in the world: and very easily unhorsed both me and Abenunco. So did he (quoth she) make good proue of his vertus here: but doe ye thinke hee is like to recover the Garland of Roses? That will hee without all question, answered Polendos,



130 The second Booke of the History

Polendos, be cause there is none dare keepe it from him. After they had sitten a pretty while conuersing with him, they went to see Abenunco, who was not a little glad when he beheld his Amandria, neither was the soze of his speedie coming backe againe. So when they were departed thence, and Florida gone vp to her chamber, she began thus to commune with her selfe. Sweet Iulian, what reason haue I to be thine enemy, seeing (for my sake) thy noblenes and valor is thus kept hidden and concealed? How worthily mayst thou be esteemed amongst the best knights, not being any way beholding to me, for whose sake thou becomest a peasant and a Gardener, that I might be Mistress of all thy seruice? What way can I make amends for this thy kindenes, but with requitall of thy vnfained affection, which (I may safely say) is deuoted to none but me? And were it not that my heart takes no delight but in beholding thee, I would suffer thee longer to abide in this place so disguised, and hinder the world from sight of thy victorious Chivalrie. Thus continued the Princesse in her amorous purposes, thinking on nothing else, but the loue and brave behauiour of her servant Iulian.

CHAP.



## CHAP. XV.

How Prince *Edward* took the Garland from *Maimond*, in despite of three Knights that maintained her cause, and afterward were vanquished by him: likewise how hee shewed himselfe to *Marinte*.



After *Abenunco* was unhorsed (as before ye have heard) Prince *Edward* followed *Maimond* so fast as hee could ride, who in this time of his bickering with the Knights, had gotten farre before him: but her beast being bitterly spent, and she very wearie with sit-

ting so long, could goe no further, by reason her tyred beast fell downe under her, and she with the fall became as one in a trance, which after she had recovered, weeping, and breathing forth diuers woefull complaints, at length a beaute Amber seized on her eyes. Now the Prince still pursuing her amaine, as also Bellager and his Squire following after him, at last he found her in this manner fast a sleepe in a medow, where comming to her faire and softly, he took the Garland from off her head, when she awaking, and knowing him to be the Knight that had slaine her champion, like a hungry Lionesse she ran vpon him, saying: Thou shalt not (traitour as thou art) beare away my Garland so lightly, albeit thou hast slaine my honourable friend and loyall servant. The Prince found himselfe so troubled with her, by reason she was strong, and held him very strictly, so as hee could not imagine  
which



132 The second Booke of the History

which way to helpe himselfe : beside, hee was lothe to throw downe the Garland, least thereby the Roses should be defaced, therefore he struggeled with her till Bellager came, who alighting from his horse, went and receined the Garland of him, speaking thus merrily : He thinks this Damosell is so powerfull ouer you, as you are ouer hardy Knights in triall of the combat. When he was thus deliuered of the Garland, he shooke the Damosell which way him pleased, but she holding fast a lappet of his Cozlet, by no meanes would let him goe any further from her : which made him draw forth his sword, and knock her on the knuckles with the pomell thereof, hoping that way to breake off her hold. But she crying out, held fast still the lappet of his cozlet, and perceiuing thre Knights come riding nere at hand, she called aloud to them, saying: Helpe me Gentlemen against this false Traitor, who perforce hath taken my Garland from mee, and beside, seeketh to murder me cruelly.

Hereon they all thre cried to him, that he should let her alone, and deliuer her Garland or they would reuenge her iniurie with his death. Follow your counsel they that list (quoth Prince Edward) the Garland haue I won by great paine and trauaile, therefore I will keepe it in despite of them sayes no. That will I presently see (replied one of the Knights,) and alighting from his horse, he came with his sword readie drawn against the Prince : who after some few blowes on each side deliuered, brought hisemie on his knee, albeit hee was both hardie and valiant. Which when the other twaine beheld, they likewise left their horses to trie their fortune, and the Prince perceiuing they came both against him, thought they would dishonorably haue fought together: but indeed one of them kept backe, to trie how his fellow could speed before him, who (though he were a good Knight) yet remained vanquished. With that the thirde kept brauely to him, and at his first two strokes wounded the Prince in two severall places,



places, for which hee had as currant payment before his  
 departure. Now when Maimond saw two of the knights  
 foyled, he ranne upon Bellager, to get the garland from  
 him: but Bellager soone deliuered it to Zaidell, and shee  
 began to wrastle with him very roughly, so that Bellager  
 was likely to sustaine the worst, because Maimond was  
 huge of body, and very strong withall. Euen at this in-  
 stant Marinte arrived there againe, who was sent to  
 pursue the Emperours former desire, to wit, to trie if hee  
 could vnderstand what the knight was. When he beheld  
 his brother Tirendos combating with him that slew Ca-  
 milot, it very much grieued him, especially seeing the o-  
 ther swaine (already vanquished) standing by: Where-  
 fore (fearing the end of this dangerous fight) he cried out  
 aloud. Stay brother, giue ouer the Combate, for the  
 knights cause is iust, and you may be ashamed of your  
 folly. When Tirendos heard his brother speake, hee pre-  
 sently stept backe, so did Prince Edward likewise: then  
 Marinte rehearsed the whole matter to his brother, and  
 how the knight (to his great honour) had won the gar-  
 land. Tirendos wondring when hee heard the whole dis-  
 course, immediately took his sword by the point, and of-  
 fering it vnto Prince Edward, sayd. Warden mee Sir, (I  
 pray you) for I yeelde my selfe conquered, as well as my  
 companions: and though you haue brought me into some  
 extremitie, yet I renounce all malice hereafter against  
 you, bowing for euer to loue and honour you. Prince Ed-  
 ward tooke these words maruellous courteously, answer-  
 ring: that his sword was already in a good hand, & there-  
 fore desired him so still to keepe it. When looking backe,  
 he beheld Bellager and Maimond were both downe toge-  
 ther, shee holding him so strongly in her armes, as hee was  
 vnable to recover himselfe: Wherefore the Prince step-  
 ping to them, smit her on the hands to make her loose him,  
 saying: Away wicked Damosell, goe seeke thy death as  
 thy Louer hath done, returne to Gorgara, and liue there  
 among



134 The second Booke of the History

among wilde beasts, for thou wast brought into this world  
for no other purpose, I will returne (answered she) but  
to thy endlesse miserie, for I will neuer cease, till I haue  
made thee die a most infamous death,

Bellager was so ashamed that she had thus disgraced  
him, as he would gladly haue slaine her, but that he  
wanted a weapon: and she seeing no meanes now left  
for the recouerie of her Garland, railed and exclaymed  
on the Knight, who had thus spoyled her of her former  
dignitie. As for the two Knights vanquished by Prince  
Edward, the one was Knymard, sonne to the Duke of  
Corra, who hauing seene the rare Chivalrie of the Em-  
perours Court, grew in hatred of his fathers house, and  
therefore (Knight-like) he desired to see the world, be-  
ing a louer and deare friend to Tirendos: the other was  
Pernedin, sonne to the Duke of Pera, all three hauing  
left the Emperours Court in quest of Primalcon, and  
some few dayes before mette all together, and were at  
this time returning towards Constantinople. Now, be-  
cause the other two were very sore wounded, Tirendos  
and Marinte conducted them to the next village to be well  
tended: but before they departed, Marinte earnestly en-  
treated Prince Edward to tell him, of whence, and what  
he was, because the Emperour would very willingly  
know him, hauing expressly thus sent him for none other  
purpose.

I pray you sir excuse me, answered the Prince, if I do  
not satisfie you in this demand, for as yet you may not  
know what, and whence I am: but (for your sake) I  
will shortly go kisse the Emperours hand, and present him  
this Garland, as in duty it becommeth mee. Marinte  
thanked him for this great kindnesse, offering himselfe at  
his service, and thus proceeded. Sir, you might doe mee a  
singular pleasure, if it would please you but to dis-arme  
your head, because many in the Court be of this opinion,  
that you are Primalcon the Emperours sonne.

Prince  
Edward



Edward said, he would doe so much for him, and lifting up his Helmet, presently let it fall downe againe, because he should take no speciall marke of him. My Lord (saide Marinte) my selfe was perswaded that you were Primaleon, but now I haue seene you, I am therein otherwise resolved.

Thus took they leave each of other, and they that had the wounded Knights in charge, brought them (by good hap) to a Castle neare adioyning, where (in short time) their hurts were well recovered: But Maimond seeing such an unluckie end of all her high hopes (confounded with griefe and inward vexation) departed thence with all the speed shee could possibly make.

CHAP. XVI.

How Prince Edward returned to *Constantinople*, and deliuered the Garland vnto the Emperour, that he might bestow it vpon the fairest Lady in his Court: And how hee gaue it to the Princesse *Florida* his Daughter.



Irendos and his Companions, being thus departed, Prince Edward was constrained to barme himselfe, for curing and dressing of the wounds hee had receyued: Where, soe hee remayned there all the night long, laughing at the wackling betwene Bellager & Maimond, telling at her striving with him, and counselling him neuer after to



to goe so vnweaponed, because a man knowes not what inconueniences (on the way) may befall him. The next day, they went to a place where they were kindly intreated, which made them abide there two whole dayes, concluding on their returne to Constantinople againe: but Marinte arrived there before them, who reported to the Emperour all that happened; and how he had seen the Knights face, and commended his beantie, which highly pleased the Emperour, thinking the time ouer-long vntill he might see him. When Florida heard that her Loner had vanquished the other three Knights, and would returne thither with the Garland, shee was vnable to conceale her ioy: but calling Attaida to her, sayd. Sister, who would ever haue thought Iulian to be so valiant? In sooth I purpose to loue him while I liue, accepting whatsoeuer fortune shall betide mee with him: but I feare lest some mis-happe should befall vnto him, in his tarrying so long hence; for if he miscarry, soone will my wretched dayes be at an end. Good Madame (quoth Attaida) be not so timorous, nothing but well can happen to him, and some especiall matter may be the cause of his stay, but assure your selfe (such is his loue to you) that he will not tarrie long.

The very same day came he to the Court, and hauing sent Bellager to a place where he might furnish himselfe with Armes, he went alone to the Pallace, all armed, but the hand wherewith he helde the Garland. Before the Emperour hee kneeled to expresse his duety, and offering withall to kisse his Highnesse hand: but the Emperour would not suffer him, saying. Sir, you shall not so much humble your selfe, rather let mee embrace you in mine armes, for the fauor and honor done to mee.

My good Lord (answered the Prince) what I haue done, deserueth no such account as likes your Maicstie to grace it withall, but could I performe matters equall to my desire, then should you perceiue how gladly I would  
line



line and die in your service. I was a stranger, and knew no person in this place: but hearing what deeds of armes were here perfozmed, I thought it would be no disgrace to me, to aduenture my poore fortune amongst so manie good Knights.

This bold humoꝝ made me appꝛoch your Court, where my good hap being to win this Garland, I thought it my duty to present you therewith, that you might bestow it on some Lady in your Court, whom you should imagine most woꝛthy of it. Foꝝ seeing it is wonne from the ugliest and most mis-shapen woman in the world, I would haue it placed on the head of another, who might be thought the paragon and floure of all faire Ladies, which in this place is to be found, oꝝ no where else. As foꝝ my selfe, I haue not yet scene any of the Ladies here abiding, neither am I skilfull in iudging of beautie: therefore my humble request is to your Maiestie, that you would giue it her which best deserves it. My friend (said the Emperoꝝ) you haue giuen me a very great charge, because a man may deceiue himselfe, and faile in such a case, eyther through affection oꝝ want of iudgement: neuerthelesse (quod hee) let mee haue my daughter Florida and her Damosells called hither, to see amongst them all, who shall best deserue to weare this Garland: then turning agayne to the Prince he said. You shall do me a great pleasure sir, to abide here still with me, and by letting vs know whence you are. My Lord (quoth he) I account my selfe vnfortunate, because at this present I cannot satisfie your desire: foꝝ vrgent occasion constraineth me else-where, and I may say nothing of my selfe untill my retorne. The more soꝝ am I, replied the Emperour, at least yet, take off your Helmet, and doe vs the fauor but to let vs see your face. Good Lord (quoth hee) excuse mee I beseech you, and let my former answer (at this time) content you. No more words spake the Emperour, but the Princeesse being come, she fell on her knees and humbly kissed her fathers hand: afterward she stode  
by



by him, and so did all the Ladies which attended on her: you may iudge how prince Edwards hart trembled, when he beheld his mistresses rare beauty, to whom the Emperour her father thus began.

My daughter, this is the Knight that conquered Camilot, and brought backe the Garland from deformed Maimond, which he hath deliuered into my hand, that I may giue the same to the fairest Lady of my Court, as moze meet for such a one, than her head which wore it. If thou wert not my daughter, I would bestow it vpon thee for two reasons: First, because (in mine eye) thou seemest the fairest: next, in regard Camilot made thee so afraide, and said thy beauty could not deserue it. But if I deceiue my selfe herein, or that my speeches saue not of sound iudgement, I desire this Knight, and all the rest here present, on better conceit, to deliuer their mindes. My Lord, (answered Polendos standing by, I suppose there is none will contradict your opinion, for no Lady in the world may compare her beautie with the Princesse Florida.

He hath sayd most truly, replied Prince Edward, for although I neuer beheld her till this instant, yet doth her beautie confound me with amazement: so falling on his knee before the Emperour, he intreated him to set the Garland on her head, which presently he did, commanding his daughter to honoꝛ him that wonne it for her.

Most gracious Lord and Father (said the Princesse) I thinke not my selfe worthy to weare this Garland: notwithstanding, with all my heart I thanke this courteous Knight, and will doe for him whatsoeuer remaineth in my power. Prince Edward returned her many gratulations, and offered to kisse her hand, but she would not permit him. Now presently she knew her Iulian by his smoth and delicate hand: so with reuerence she goes and kneeles before her father, who placed the Garland agayne on her head, which made her seeme so wondrous beautifull, as it raised admiration in all there present. The Kises of the  
Garland



Garland had this vertue, to encrease lone where it had taken neuer so little beginning, which caused Camilot to oppose himselfe to so many dangers for his Maimonds sake: now, though Florida loued her Knight sufficiently before, yet after this Garland was set vpon her head, her heart was much more enflamed toward him, and Prince Edward imagining her beauty encreased by wearing it, differed but little from her in his amorous opinion. The Emperour willed his daughter to entreate the Knight, that hee would open his Helmet, and suffer his face to be seene: but with this motion her selfe was not well pleased, because she doubted lest some of her Damosels would know him, wherefore shee made this answer to her father. I beseech you (my Lord) let me not shew my selfe so simple, to entreate that of a Knight which he is not willing to graunt: for seeing hee refused to do it when you desired him, I am perswaded my words cannot induce him thereto. He thinks another request to him much better beseech me, namely, that he would hasten his returne hither againe, so may he be ready to do you any service. Daughter (said he againe) I am very desirous to see the Knights face, but for that hee is unwilling to pleasure me therein, I will ioyne with thee in the other request, that he will let his returne be so soone as possibly hee can: Wherevnto Prince Edward (falling agayne on his knee) thus answered. I were worthy (my good Lord) to be reputed the most vntthankfull and wretchedst Knight in the world, if I should not acknowledge this especiall grace in reckoning mee as yours, as also in accomplishing what the Princess your daughter hath required: wherefore I doe make your Grace this solemne promise, to returne hither againe with all possible speede, and performe such service as (I hope) shall be pleasing to you both: which words made the Emperour highly contented.



## CHAP. XVII.

How Prince *Edward* vanquished and slew in fight the Countie of *Burdeaux*, who came and defied him for *Maimonds* Garland. How afterward he returned againe to the Garden, to see his faire *Florida*, and what passed betweene him and her that night.



During the time of these familiar entercourses, one of the Emperors Garde came into the Hall, and said, there was a strange Knight staying without, who was come to defie an other Knight in the Court, for offering wrong to a certaine Damosell, and that he sought for Primaleon by name: hereupon the Emperour commanded to admit him entrance. This Knight was a Frenchman, and Countie of Burdeaux, by name called Gaillard, and the only gallant man at Armes in all France: in very many places of the world had he bene, and made his rare deedes of Chivalry knowne, to his great honour, and the deare abiding of many good Knights. Oft had he heard talke of Gridoniaes wonderfull beauty, and that (in earnest of her marriage) she onely demanded the head of Primaleon: which made him undertake to goe give him the Combate, and traavelling on the way, it was his chance to meeete with disgraced Maimond, not a little sorrowfull for her Louers death, but much more for the losse of her beautifull Garland. He desired to vnderstand the cause of her sadnesse, and she tolde him, that a Knight of the Emperours Court had taken a Garland of Roses from her, which she esteemed as deare as her life. The Countie  
made



made her promise to recover it for her againe, and this was one cause of his coming thither at this time.

When he came into the Emperours presence, where he beheld the Garland on Floridas head, and Prince Edward standing by ready armed, he was glad he had met with him he sought for, and therefore with a loud voyce, thus spake.

Now praise to the Heavens, that of two things I seeke, I am so happy as to find one. The Emperour demanded what it was he sought: I come hither (quoth he) to seeke your sonne Primaleon, to combat and revenge on him the death of a Knight, slaine by him treacherously and contrary to manhood, but I understand he hath cowardly taken himselfe to flight, whereby I am prevented, to my no little griefe. Next this, it was my chance to meeete a Damosell on the way, who complained to me of a Knight that had taken a Garland from her, and slaine her Champion whom she dearly loved: I imagine yonder is the same Garland which the Lady hath on her head, and this Knight armed, is the man that took it from her, wherefore here I tell him, if with speede, and willingly he restore it not againe unto her, he is come, that perforce will compell him to doe it.

A bad time hast thou chosen (quoth the Emperour) to come hither thus presumptuously, saying my sonne Primaleon is cowardly fled, for feare of such a one as thou art: were it not that I hate to be thought discourteous, my selfe would chastise thee for thy idle-headed follie. As for this Knight, with great hono2 hath he won the Garland, and will answer whatsoever thou dar'st object against him, with reason sufficient to controule a wiser man than thou art, or else to beate better iudgement into his braines. Prince Edward having obtayned favour to speake for himselfe, came to the Countie in this manner. Knight, thou hast spoken falsely of Primaleon, (the onely mirror of valour and Chivalrie) in saying he is coward-  
K like



142 The second Booke of the History

like fled from this Court : I tell thee that thou lyest, and will iustifie the same, when, or how thou dar'st : also, that I haue no way intured the Damosell, but rather she hath too much abused me : the Countie in great choller, replied thus : Let mee neuer be thought worthy to put armour on my body, if I reuenge not these brauing taunts, and that immediately . The Emperour who was desirous to see this combate, receiued both their pledges, commanding Duke Eustace and the Duke of Pera to be Judges of the fight, and see them conduced to the place dedicated to such assayes : but before the Countie departed the Hall, he spake to the Emperour after this manner. We go now (my Lord) to fight for the Garland, it is very necessarie you should first promise me, that it shall be deliuered, if I chance to be Conquerour.

Now the Emperour (hauing not as yet digested his former speeches,) turning to the Princesse Florida, sayd : What say you Daughter : will you reasse the Garland on the condition proposed : I had rather die (saide she) than depart with it to him, neither shall he haue the power, I hope, to come nearer it than he is. Hearte Knight, sayd the Emperour, thou seest the Lady is loathe to part with the Garland, but goe trie the Combate, and afterward I will see thou shalt haue reason done thee. The Countie answered, hee demanded nothing else : and Prince Edward presently mounted on horse backe, being accompanied all the way with many Knights of the Court, among whom was Marinus, who gaue him an exceeding good Launce, and offered him whatsoeuer else hee should stand in neede of.

The Emperour came with Polendos to a Window, where they might best stand at ease to see the Combat : so also did the Princesse Florida, being very pensiue (God know) and full of feare in her minde. When calling her hearts comforter Attaida vnto her, softly in her eare thus she whispered. Ah Sister, let mee intreate thee now to  
pray



pray devoutly, that heaven may protect the valiant Knight Julian from all misfortune : you see how dangerously he adventureth himselfe for this Garland, accursed be Maimond for bringing it hither. Good Madame say not so, (replied Attaida) for (but by this) we had never bene acquainted with Julians prowess and manhood.

By this time the Knights had colwched their staves, and encountred each other with such courage, as their Lances flew by in shivers, but in the assaunt they were both wounded : then drawing forth their Swords, their blowes made fire flye forth of their Helmes, and each did his best to overcome his aduersarie. The Emperour, who of long time had not scene a fight so cruell, turning to Polendos, sayd : How iudge you of these Knights : I thinke in all your life you neuer saw better. My Lord (quoth he) in sooth I stand amazed at their valour, but yet our Knight seemeth likeliest of victorie, because he loseth not the least advantage, and still bestowes such terrible blowes on his enemye, that his Sword (being very good doubtlesse) neuer misseth, but entrencheth to the bare flesh. It is very true (said the Emperour) and I cannot but marvel of whence he should be, at least wise I shall thinke my selfe happy, if I may hereafter haue his company in my Court.

Now, though Camilot was of great strength and hardiness, yet could he not defend himselfe so well as the Countie did, for he was marvellous expert in handling of his weapon, and therefore this Combat was much more cruell than that of Camilots. So long endured this conflict, as every one wondered they could hold out, and not rest themselves a while, for the Countie being sore wounded, lost his blood very abundantly, and gladly would have breathed if he might have bene permitted. But the prince perceiving his strength to diminish, cheered up his owne courage with very conceit thereof, and to make an end of this doubtfull controuersie, he deliuered him such a stroke



144 The second Booke of the History

in the Helmet, that he staggered therewith, and fell to the ground, when hee soone dismounting (though wounded grievously) without minding any mercy, presently smote his head from his shoulders.

Florida seeing her lover wounded, and that he had lost such great store of blood, withdrew her selfe (full of griefe) into her chamber, wondering what now he would do, and whither hee could goe to haue his hurts cured, because she feared lest hee should be knowne. What meane you by this Madame? saide Attaida, you ought rather to reioyce, that your Knight is the Conquerour, than sit thus heavily sorrowing at the same. The Princesse beholding her other Ladies there present, in excuse of her sadnesse, said: My griefe proceedeth from a quite contrary matter, and therefore I pray you forbear to trouble me. As she walked by and downe to suppress these afflictions, her Damofells could finde themselves no other saike, but all in commendation of the young Knights worthines, reporting him for the best that ever they had seene. The Emperour (on the contrary side) was as ioyfull, beholding the Counties pride so nobly corrected, sending foure Knights to entreate Prince Edward in his name, that hee would accept of a lodging in the Pallace, to haue his wounds cured: whereto hee returned them this answer. Kisse the Emperours hand (I beseech you) on my behalfe, and say I humbly begge pardon of him, for to stay here I may not, but needes must follow my appoynted iourney, All the other Knights came and desired him to tarry, in that his hurts had great neede of looking too, and Marinie (amongst the rest) most laboured to perswade him: but he told them, he could not abide there without breach of his faith, and therefore perforce, they must hold him excused.

Marinie would not leave him untill hee was forth of the Citie. where (with much ado) the Prince perswaded him to turne backe againe, looking still about lest any should follow



follow him : as for the Emperour , his departure displeased him not a little , and the more, because he could not learne, what, and whence he was.

When the Counties servants saw their maister slaine, they very much honoured him, in regard of the many famous deedes he had done : and after the Emperour had better knowledge of him (being wellacquainted with his deserts and parentage) he caused him to be honozably buried by Camilot, engraving on their Tombes the manner of their deaths , leaving a boyde place for the knights name that slew them, hoping (in time) to have it there expressed : because the whole Court had no other talke but of his valor, and the Emperour himselfe neuer ceased extolling his worthinesse.

Marinte had no sooner left Prince Edward, but he took a solitarie and unfrequented way, until he imagined himselfe farre enough from the Citty; then returned hee to the place where Bellager attended him, who marvelled he had staid so long, and came now thus wounded . His hurtles were no sooner bound up , but they went to the Sea side, and being embarked in the ship that brought Bellager thither, before day they arrived at the place where Clodion remained , when the good Dogge Maiortes was not a little ioyfull to see his maister returned , who shortly after was layd in a very fine bed, and his wounds well looked unto, as indeede their neede required. Bellager was very carefull for recovery of his health, having sent a Messenger to advise his sister of the Princes estate : whereupon Olimba would needs iourney to see him , but so could not the Soldane Mosderin , because hee had affaires of great importance , nevertheless hee sent him many rich presents.

Prince Edward was glad of Olimbaes companie, who after she had kissed and kindly embraced him, sayd : How ioyfull am I (my Lord) to see you here : The heavens be praised for deliivering you from so great danger :



## 146 The second Booke of the History

tell me then I pray you, in what state standes your affayres with her, that is cause of your torment? In my conceit she may becom her selfe the only happy Lady of the world. Madam (sayd he) I can not well tel you as yet, whether I live or no, albeit (by your meanes) I have bene very much holpen, in enioying the sight of her who is my onely comfort: but now would I faine see what you can doe for me, that I may with some speed retorne to serue her againe, for I know my absence will be very much displeasing to her. The Lady pleasantly saide, that she would vse all the cunning she had to make him quickly whole: and after she had looked on his wounds, she applied such soveraigne Oyntments to them, as in a little space they were thorowly healed: so within few daies after, he was desirous to be gone, because he could not be quier, till he saw his Mistresse. Clodion intreated he might goe along with him, but he would not yeld thereto, by reason of his great Dogge Maiortes, whom he was loath should any way be harmed. Olimba gaue him a very faire Jewell, wherein was a Stone of exceeding great value, which she intreated him to bestow on the Princesse.

At last, taking good store of treasure with him, to glorie the Gardener as he was wont to do, away he went: and entring into the Gardeners house, right glad was he and his wife to see him returned; who tolde them he had found the hearbe he went forth to seeke, but it cost him great labour, and this was the cause he stayd thence so long. The Gardeners wife was so glad to see him, that in all the haste she would goe acquaint the Princesse therewith, because she had many times enquired for him, and stood in doubt whether he were alive or dead: So that had not Arraida continually comforted her, she might have lost her selfe in extremitie of desire to see her Iulian.

Oftentimes would she take the Garland in her hand, and (breathing forth a world of sighs) thus fondly speake to it. Unhappy Garland, so deere hast thou cost mee: for  
through



through thee am I robbed of my faire Knights presence :  
 When what shall I do, but die ? or if hee live, why comes  
 he not to me : Were it not for his sake, who wonne thee  
 so dangerously, I would deface thee, vile Garland, and re-  
 venge on thee mine anger for his long absence . Thus in  
 vaine would shee talke to the Garland, with the teares  
 streaming downe her cheekes, like water running from a  
 Fountaine.

Now while she was in the midst of this bitter agony,  
 the Gardeners wife came running apace to her, saying :  
 Madame, wot ye what ? My sonne Iulian is returned a-  
 gaine, which made mee so ioyfull, that I thought it over-  
 long till I came to tell it you . When the Princesse heard  
 these happy tidings, her heart began to leap with ioy, say-  
 ing : Mother, I am partaker with you in this pleasure,  
 and hee is heartily welcome : I will walke about the gar-  
 den to finde where hee is, because (for your sake) I cannot  
 chuse but love him . The Gardeners wife very ioyfully  
 went backe agayne, and told Iulian how glad the Prin-  
 cesse was of his returne . Shee in the meane time, put-  
 ting the Garland on her head, walked along the Garden  
 in a very pleasant mode, which sodaine cheerefullnesse of  
 heart so highly augmented her beauty, that shee seemed  
 fairer than ever shee did before . So soone as Iulian espied  
 her come nere him, he humbly fell on his knee to kisse her  
 hand : and inward ioy made her so forgetfull of her selfe,  
 as she could not plucke it backe to hinder his deuotion, but  
 brake forth in this manner . Where haue you bene so long  
 time Iulian, without doing vs the fauour to see you ? Wee  
 thinke (without you) wee are heere all alone, therefore  
 I pray you hereafter serue vs no more so . Madame (qd.  
 hee) henceforth I promise not to breake your commande-  
 ment, albeit wheresoener I haue bene, in duty still I rest  
 your servant . Attaida and all the other Ladies, heartily  
 welcomed him, for euery one delighted in his companie,  
 in regard the Princesse bestowed him so good countenance.



Iulian (quoth Attaida) I pray you tell me where you haue bene, and how you feele your selfe? because we thinke you haue not yet recovered your sickness. Ladie (said he) I thinke I shall neuer be in better case, then e. Seeme it not marvellous, if my face make report of my poore hearts affliction.

The Princesse was so pleasant (beholding her Iulian) as hardly could shee keepe it from being discerned, but calling him to her, she sayd: Iulian, see you not what a Garland of Roses I haue? This is it that once appertained to Maimond, and was won for me by a strange Knight, the most valiant and hardy man at Armes that euer was seene. He left the Emperour my father in great discontentment, because he would not suffer himselfe to be knownen: and (for mine owne part) I entreated he would still make his abiding in the Court, that such honour might be done him as hee had worthily deserved, yet could hee not be wonne to tarry, though very many humbly required him: I heartily pray no harme befall him, because hee departed very sore wounded.

Iulian blushing with bashfulness, to heare himselfe so much commended, thus answered. Madame, the Garland much better becomes your head, then deformed Maimonds, and you may be perswaded, the Knight concealeth not himselfe, but vpon some speciall occasion: or it is likely hee will retorne very shortly to the Emperours service, if heauen fauour him to escape with life. After they had thus conferred a pretty while together, the Princesse walked along the Garden, by meanes whereof, Attaida got opportunitie to speake with him aside, saying. Sir, we reioyce exceedingly all, for your deliuey out of so great danger, to your eternall honour: full well haue you made knowne both your vertue and prowesse: the Princesse is not a little ioyfull, who (in marvellous deuotion) expected your retorne, because that she feared lest your life should be endangered by your wounds.



For am I thoroughly healed of all my hurts, (replied Prince Edward) but to the end she might receive no discontentment, I made the more hast backe againe: accounting these wounds of no reckoning, in respect of one farre deeper than them all, namely, the ceaseles torment of my poore massacced soule, which speedely will forsake her disconsolate dwelling, except it please the Princesse in mercie to respect me. Why (quoth Attaida) what would ye haue her doe for yee more than already she hath done? Indeed answered Iulian she hath done much more for mee than ever I deserved, in accepting me as her knight and seruant, but if she would vouchsafe me one fauour, I should repute my selfe the happiest man in the world. And because I cannot now speake to her as I would, by reason so many of her Ladies are here present, I beseech ye tell her, that by night my desire is to talke with her here in the Garden: which honest lute shee neede not denie me, if she remember her promise made in presence of her Father, to doe for me what remaines in her power. For your sake (quoth Attaida) I will tell her what ye say, or whatsoever beside ye will entoyne me, because (indeed) I both loue and honour ye. So after the Princesse was gone vp to her chamber, (for she made hast thither, to know what speeches past betwene him and Attaida) which being revealed to her, and she much troubled in minde thereby, thus spake.

Unfortunate Ladie, what shall I doe? Loath am I to breake my promise, and (on the other side me thinks it is not good to doe what he desires, because I may incurre both danger and dishonour thereby. Madame, replied Attaida, herein your feare is needelesse, in regard my self will neuer be from ye. Well then (quoth the Princesse) be it as you will haue it, I am contented to graunt his request, because I am obliged to him for far greater matters than this. The next morning when they were in the Garden, Attaida gaue the knight to vnderstand, that the night following



150 The second Booke of the History

lowing he should be met in the Garden: at which words, his heart mounted with joy. And the Princesse was no sooner withdrawn to her chamber, but she presently left the Garden, commanding Zaidell to bring him a rich mantle of Turkish silke, embroidered all about with very precious stones, which the Lady Olymba gave him at his departure, with other sumptuous habiliments beside. These things being conveyed secretly into the Garden, when he cipped fit time for the purpose, he unclouted himselfe from his base garments, and attyed in these much better beseming him, attended there the coming of his Ladie: who perceiuing that her Damosells were fast asleep, taking Arraida with her, very softly descended into the Garden, holding her companion fast by the hand, because she was fearefull to walke alone. As soone were they met, but Prince Edward catching her by the hand, bestowed an infinite number of kisses on it, and onward they went to sit vnder the trees. Now the Moone shining very brightly, they might full easily discerne one another: but who knowes in what amazement the Princesse was, when she saw her Loner Iulian so sumptuously attyed: at last, Iulian (quoth she) who gave ye this rich clothing? I would gladly see ye goe thus every day, for it better becomes ye than your accustomed garments. Now would I haue ye tell me all your secret affaires, and not to hide or conceale any thing from me, for I know not how my Destenie is appointed, but this I perceiue, it consisteth not in my power to giue ouer louing ye, building so soundly on your honesty and vertue, that I shall finde my selfe no way deceiued. Die may I first (quoth she) a most shamefull death, before I deceiue her who hath so richly waged me, and perswade your selfe Madame, that were I not a knight, able to giue ye the height your greatnesse deserueth, regard should haue withdrawn me quickly from so dearly affecting ye: wherefore by all the kinde grace receiued from ys, and all the optie wherein I stand bound



bound for ever, let me humbly beg this fauor, that ye will not as yet desire to know my name, nor whence I am, for should I tell ye I were son to the only King of the world, yet ought ye not believe it, untill by deedes ye may better discern it: if it may stand with your liking but to afford me this grace, ye binde me in vndissoluable bands vnto ye for ever. Well (saide the Princesse) haue herein your owne desire, for I take ye to be a Knight of such honour, as hates to wrong a Lady of my birth and calling: know then that in honorable sort I both like & loue yee. Desiring heauen to blesse vs with such success, as shall be fittest for vs. I hope Madame (answered he) heauens power will further my desire to eleuate the honour of your name, in acknowledgement of graces receiued: this spake he with teares streaming from his eyes abundantly. Full well perceined the Princesse, how dearly hee did loue her, wherewith she was greatly pleased, and forgetting her former backfall feare, taking both his hands in hers, saide. Faire hands, how powerfull haue ye shewen your selues in Chivalrie; and with what strength haue ye encountered them whom ye took to be your enemies: In sooth when first of all I beheld ye, I knew ye belonged not to one of base condition: Euen in the presence of the Emperour my Father, I knew ye to be my Iulians, whom still I will loue, without knowing any other name, for to that name already haue I deuoted my loue. It exceeds my skill, to describe his inward acceptation of these words, millions of kisses bestowed on her Lillie white hands, & infinite other amorous ceremonies beside, may partly resolue ye how welcom they were: at length draughting the King forth which Olympus had giuen him, putting it on her finger, spake thus. Madame, I put this King on your finger, in token, that the Knight who thus doth it, is yours while he liues, hoping one day to set a Royall Diadem on your head, till which time, assure ye on Iulians word, that what he hath promised, hee will neuer faile in.

Good



152 The second Booke of the History

Good Sir (quoth she) ye shal need to say no more, for all your words I beleue of certaine. beside, such is your renowne and valour, that I blesse my fortune in being Ladie of such a servant: onely one thing let mee intreate ye, to haue regard of mine honoz, for my weake spirit can hardly manage these affaires so discretly as they ought to be done, and therefore may be some hinderance in our sollemne purposes. The Prince said, he would gladly haue a care of whatsoeuer she commaunded him, without attempting any thing preiudiciall to her credit: onely he intreated pardon for his bold presumption in loue, for it was the onely cause that made him leaue his Countrie. After they had conuersed on diuers amorous occasions, the Princesse demanded, if his wounds were healed or no: when he (bntying a little golden belt) shewed her his hurts, to the end she might know certainly it was he, who (for her sake) had bene so hurt and hurt in the combats. As she looked on them, she pittied him very much, wondering that ener he was able to endure them, and with the teares standing in her eyes, she said. How gladly would I haue had the tending and curing of these wounds, whose remembrance made me so full of griefe and heauines: The other day, when I beheld the cruell strokes giuen, I much despaired of your health and safetie. Prince Edward embraced and kissed her many times, with all other behanour, which was esteemed lawfull to be vsed, and said: How happy am I (sweet Madame) that you pittie so my hurts: Had I bene assured of this kindenes in ye, I would neuer haue felt such extremety of anguish, as your onely absence laid vpon me: but whatsoeuer paine or griefe I haue heretofore suffered for your loue, I finde now most graciously requited with extraordinary recompence. In this manner spent they a great part of the night, Florida neuer minding, whether her Damosells (all this while) awaked or no, her heart was so raniſhed with delight in her Iulian: but Attaida per-  
celuing



seeing how swift the slow-seeming houres passed away,  
 tolde her it was time to returne to her Chamber, where  
 at the Prince grieved, but she thus pacified him. Be not  
 displeased at my departure, for seeing we have thus begun,  
 hereafter we will learne to meete oftner in this place: so  
 with a most louing embrace, they tooke leave each of o-  
 ther, Florida returning so quietly to her Chamber, as  
 none of her Damoells saw or heard her. Slaepe could she  
 not, for thinking on this passed conference, what Iulian  
 might be, and how he came by those costly ornaments.  
 He (on the other side) went and got on his ragged gar-  
 ments againe, triumphing not a little in his happinesse this  
 night, for perceiuing her affection answerable to his, and  
 fauours shewed so abundantly on him, he pleased her in  
 all other matters so well, as in the end they compassed  
 what they both aymed at.

But let vs leaue them for a while in this plentie of  
 pleasure, and speake of Torques, who (as ye haue heard  
 in the beginning of this Booke) followed in search of Pri-  
 maleon, and at length found him.



## CHAP. XVIII.

How *Torques* in his search after *Primaleon*, was assayed in a wood by *Ledefin* and *Risfarano*, and how after they knew each other, they went in company together to the Emperours Court of *Almaine*.



*Rimaleon* having left his fathers Court, many Knights betooke themselves to trauell in quest of him, one (among the rest) was *Torques*, sonne to King *Toman* and *Grisque*, and *Romara*, who for the loue and kindnes he had receiued from *Primaleon*, concluded to tra-

uaile the whole world but he would finde him, and with-  
all, because he was desirous to see Adventures. Having  
then left at Constantinople the rest of his companie, he  
tooke but two Squires with him, and searching in diuers  
places, it was not his fortune to heare any tidings of  
him. It hapned him one day to meete a Damosell (some-  
what richly cloathed) on a Palfrey, who hauing saluted  
him, thus spake. Sir Knight, I pray ye tell me whether  
ye iourney, and if ye seeke after any especiall matter, or  
no: for ye seeme in mine eye to be a Knight errant, and in  
that regard I would do ye al the service possibly I may: he  
returning her many thanks, said: You haue guessed aright  
faire Damosell, I am a Knight, strange in these parts,  
and after another Knight haue I sought in numberlesse  
places, yet cannot I finde him, being no little grieue to me.

¶



If ye will promise mee (quoth shee) one thing I shall demand, I will tell ye where ye may heare tidings of him: very ioyfully, he made her promise of whatsoever it were.

You must goe then (saide the Damosell) to the court of the Almaine Emperour, and there shall ye finde the man ye seeke after. As he was desirous to vnderstand by what meanes shee knew he should there finde the knight hee sought for, considering as yet he had not named him: I know him well enough quoth she, for my mother auertised me of him, she being a skillfull Magitian, having no other children but my selfe and my brother, who is a very good knight, the deare and perfect friend to a most valiant, but a much misshapen and deformed knight likewise, that loved a rich and beautifull Damosell. At his request, my brother went with him to her Father, to intreat that hee might enjoy her in marriage, but when my brother saw the Ladie, he became himselfe so enamored of her, as in stead of desiring her for his friend, he got her for himself to be his wife, conueying her to a Castle not far hence, that appertaineth to vs. Antion (for so is my Brothers friend called) seeing this, was readie to die with griefe, & vowed neuer to giue ouer, till hee had put him to death: which made him with all speed come before the Castle, where he defied and challenged my Brother to the Combat, who (perceiuing he had wronged him) demed to come forth, beside our mother in no wise would permit him. Antion (speaking many insultuous words) departed, yet many times comes thither to dishonour him, for which cause, my mother (being unable to endure this indignitie) sent mee to seeke you, giuing mee instructions how I should know ye. Now challenge I your promise, that ye combat this Antion, for whatsoever hee can alleadge, because wee are assured that you will vanquish him. Damosell (answered Torques) the knight had good reason to defie your brother, but seeing my promise is past. I will doe my best to combat him, though I had rather finde some safer cause.

So



156 The second Booke of the History

So setting on toward the place the Damosell spake of, they rode three daies together befoze they came to the Castle, where Torques willed the Damosell to goe in, himselfe abiding without, in expectation of the Knights arrival. All they in the Castle were exceeding glad, when they heard that Torques was come to fight with Antion, who shortly after came thither, and summoned the Damosells brother with a loud voyce, saying. Come forth traitterous Knight, why comest thou not forth? how long wilt this thy cowardly humour endure? thinkest thou not at first or last, these hands will smite thee dead? know thy wifes beaultie will not be able to defend thee? Torques no sooner heard him, but lacing his helmet, he came to him in this manner. Beast as thou art, what makest thou here? imaginest thou not what wrong had been done the Damosell, shouldst thou (being so misshapen) have enjoyed her in marriage? Forbeare these threatenings, and know she was not for thee, seeing Fortune was not willing to bestow her on thee. Antion was wondrous angrie at these words, and therefore crying aloud thus he replied. Knight, I take thee to be some Traitor, because thou thus maintainest anothers treason, I will make thee understand (quoth Torques) by deedes of armes, that noz I noz any of my race at any time were traitors, therefore looke well to thy selfe, for on this quarrell (and no other) will I combat thee. Having thus spoken, they encountred each other with such vigour, as Antion brake his lance on his adversaries shield, who with his wounded Antion mortally: and drawing forth their swords, there began a very dreadfull fight between them, but Torques (being more valiant) gaue the shrewdest strokes and in the end brought his enemy to such a plight, as he could hold out no longer, but fell dead to the ground, and was immediately carried from thence by three of his Squires.

The Castle gate (upon Antions death) was forthwith set



set open, and the Damosell comming forth in companie of her brother, earnestly entreated the Knight to enter the Castle: which he did, and being unarmed, one small wound which he had receiued in the fight, was dress and tended as it ought to be, being otherwise serued in very honourable manner.

Here did Torques passe away the night, vnderstanding (by the Lady of the Castle) matters concerning his present businesse: how in his way toward Almaine, he should receiue great honour, and there meete with or heare of Primaleon. On the morrow morning, he departed merrily thence for Almaine, hoping hee should there likewise finde his Cousens Rifarano and Ledefin: but afterward, when he vnderstood they were become Christians, he grew very sorrowfull thereto. As he continued thus on his iourney, one night at length he lodged in a Castle, which was within two dayes traualle where the Emperour Trineus kept his Court: there did the Master of the Castle most honorably intreate him, and as Torques sat with him at the table, he wondred to see his Host so sad and pensue, which made him demaund the cause of his heauinesse.

Alas good Sir, (quoth he) neuer offend your selfe at my mis-fortune, in regard there is no meanes to redresse it. Is your mishap such, answered Torques, as nothing may remedie the same? Heauen in pittie will yelde you some assistance, though no other helpe were left to serue your torne. Now because his gentle Host past from this matter to another, he was lothe to be ouer-much inquisitiue, and therefore quietly betooke himselfe to rest: and the next morning when he was armed, he mounted on horse backe and rode on his iourney.

Nere to this Castle was a thicke shade wood, where continued two Knights richly armed, and made toward Torques, who neuer minded them, one of these Knights comming somewhat nere him, said: Knight, thou must  
L here



## 158 The second Booke of the History

here pay for the dishonour thou hast done the Emperour: and so saying, prepared his Lance. Torques, who though he rode on sadly, yet slept not, caught his staffe out of his Squires hand, and went forth to meete him: now though they were both vallant, yet Torques bare his enemy out of his saddle, and made him measure his length on the ground: which his companion seeing, set ready his Lance to runne against him, saying: Are ye so strong (Sir) to doe such displeasure: then bide and answer it, for ye may not carrie it away so.

Torques saw it was now no time, to stand excusing by words what he had done, but called for a fresh Lance, therewith to answer his enemies objection: and the ground groning with the beating of their horses hooves, they met together in such forcible manner, as neither could mock other, for they were both laide along. No sooner had they recovered footing againe, but out went their Semitaries, and such rude strokes on each side were delivered, as both laboured not a little who should be victor. The Knight which was first unhorsed being got up againe, perceiving the fight grow on very cruell, and Torques still defended himselfe so manfully: aduancing his shield before him, went to his companion with these speeches. It were not done amisse of mee, to helpe you against this false Knight: and with these words, he smote at Torques, but the other being more courteous, willed him to forbear, saying: Sir Ledefin, in good sooth you are much to blame, let me end this controuersie, and if I be banquished, then after ward ye may come and reuenge my cause.

When Torques heard Ledefin named: Sir Knight (quoth he to the other) I beseech ye holde a while, and tell mee if this Gentleman whom you call Ledefin, be sonne to the Soldane of Persia or no. Troile, who (since our former Histories beginning) hath usually bene called Rifarano, hee being sonne to the Emperour Trineus,

AND



and the faire Aurecinda, in anger demanded, what hee had to doe, if it were that Ledefin? If it be he, quoth Torques, I haue cause to loue him, because he is my Cousen. If hee be your Cousen, replied Triole, then so am I too, how are you called? Then doubles you are Rifarano, answered Torques, and casting his sword on the ground, ran and caught him in his armes, saying, hee was called Torques, son to King Toman, and came into those parts onely to see him.

Good newes are these, quoth Triole and I am soyle it was my hap to see ye thus discourteously, taking ye for a Knight that is in the Castle whence ye came: I pray ye take off your Helmet and let mee see your face. Torques fulfilled his request, and presently they knew each other, they both laying by their Helmets likewise, bising such familiar and kinde embracings on all sides, as you may better imagine than I can expresse: but very glad was hee for so happie meeting with him, because they might now go see the Emperour all together. Well (quoth Ledefin) we both are ioyfull of your company, and albe- it we bowed neuer to see the Court, till wee were renen- ged on a Knight, who slew a Lady his Sister in the Em- perours presence: yet now (for your sake) we will turne thither againe.

But wheresoze, said Torques, did the Knight so murder his Sister? they replied: That shee caused him come thither about a case of iustice, to the end shee might enioy a part of her heritage which hee forcibly kept from her, and being entorned by the Emperour to restore it her, in a rage he drew forth his Sword, and presently smote her head from her shoulders: say- ing: Goe get thee now to the place where thou shalt stand in neede neither of goods nor patrimoine. This being done, hee quickly got him forth of the Pal- lace, and speedely mounted himselfe on Horse backe, and rode away so fast, that he could not be overtane of any:



160 The second Booke of the History

we being at the same instant in the Court, immediately armed our selves to pursue him, and bearing he was with in this Castle, attended here his forth comming, or any other that would defend him.

By this discourse Torques perceived it was the same Knight his Host, which hee saw so mellancholie, who being there staid by his kinsman, chiefe Lord of the Castle, would not suffer him depart thence, but ment to deliver him to the Emperour when time required, as indeed after ward he was, and receiued iustice due to so foule an offence. Now would not Torques tell his companions, that hee had seene him, but intreated them retorne with him to the Court: so rode they all three merrily together, and lodged that night in a convenient place, where Troile rising earlyer in the morning then his fellows, and leaving them in bed, said, he would rise on before, because hee had occasion to speake with the Emperour. When Ledefin and Torques were mounted on horseback, they set forth ward saire and softly, Torques sharpe reproving his kinsman, because he was become a Christian, he being sonne to so mightie a Prince: as for Rifarano, he interuailed not so much at him, by reason his father had constrained him thereto. But when Ledefin tolde him, that loue enforced him to this change, and had he but seene her, for whole sake he was baptised, he would then forbear in such sort to controule him: Torques gave over further contention, and communing on diuers other matters beside, by this time they were arrived very nere the Citie, and Troile hauing had conference with the Emperour, declared with whom hee met in his journey, which highly pleasing him, hee sent Vernar and sundry Barons with him, to meete them and bring them on the way.

Ledefin drawing nere them, said to Torques, See here Prince Vernar the Emperours sonne who hath left the Court to come and meete vs. Hee disarmed his  
head



head and hands, and when he beheld the yong Prince so comely and gallant, he kempt befoze him, and did him humble reverence: Vernar and all the other Barons honorably embracing him. Afterward, when they came befoze the Emperour, he arose from his Chaire to welcome him, and when Torques made an offer to kisse his hand, he would not suffer him: but (soz his greater honor) made him sit downe by him, demanding what newes from King Toman his father, and other Lords of his acquaintance in that kingdome. Torques assured his highnesse of their good health, and declared how hee traualled in search of Primaleon, who secretly had left his Fathers Court: beside, how (by the way) it was tolde him, that in this place he should heare tidings of him. The Emperour wondered thereat, and said he had heard no newes of Primaleon, nor knew he whether euer hee was in his Court or no.

As thus they discoursed on many matters till it was supper time, and every one sitting downe to the table, one knight among them said: That he heard there was one in the Dutchesse of Ormedaes Court, who called himselfe knight of the clouen-Rocke, the onely brane man at armes in all the world, who happily might be the Prince Primaleon. The Emperour affirmed, the like report had bene made to him, but he could not be perswaded that it should be he: So after the tables were withdrawen, a convenient lodging was appointed for Torques, with whom Ledefin and Troile still kept kinde company.

On the morrow, the Emperour made a great feast in honour of this knight, and the Emperesse came into the Hall with her daughter Velerisa: but when Torques beheld the rare beantie of Velerisa, he excused Ledefin, whose heart and minde altogether was chained to her service.

Then beholding Vernar so faire and youthfully disposed, he said to the Emperour: he wondered that he sent



## 166 The second Booke of the History

not to the Emperour Palmerin, to desire the Princesse Florida in marriage for his sonne, they being both young, and much about one age. But the Emperour replied, that as yet there was no such hast, hee staid till Veruars yeares should challenge Knighthood, thinking it unnecessary to moue any such matter till then. Thus endured the feast three daies space for the loue of Torques, who thought on nothing else but how he might come by some tidings of Primalcon: but it was not long before an occasion hapned him, whereby the former words of the magitian (to him) were accomplished.

### CHAP. XIX.

How the Emperour *Trineus* sent his sonne *Troile*, with a great and puissant Armie, to succour the Dutchesse of *Burgundie*, whose subiects rebelled against her, and how *Troile* bare away the victory.



**L**uymon, Sonne to the King of Fraunce, and Duke of Burgundie, had a sonne by his Dutchesse, (as more at large is declared in the history of Palmerin) who (before he died) married with the faire daughter of the King of Naples. After Luymon was dead, the Dutchesse (who dearely loved him) was ready likewise to die with very conceit of griefe: but the young Duke became a good Knight,



Knight, mary so unfortunate, as hee lived not past five  
 yeares after his fathers decease, by means whereof, some  
 gathered suspition that he was popsoned, and so made a  
 way: He left behinde him a faire young daughter his heire,  
 five yeres of age, and named Viceda. Now after the Duke  
 was thus dead, certaine disobedient Knights his subjects,  
 rebelled against the widow Dutchesse, who standing in  
 feare of them, conveyed her daughter to a strong place cal-  
 led Ture, which had a goodly port of the Sea before it: af-  
 terward, she assembled all her faithfull subjects, to chastise  
 these insolent rebels: They had sent for Fraqueo, eldest  
 sonne to the Duke of Millaine, (who was Nephew to the  
 old Duke of Burgundie, being a sisters sonne of his) and  
 gave him to vnderstand, that if it pleased him to come thi-  
 ther, they would yelde the estate of gouernment into his  
 hands. Fraqueo being a bolde knight, and desirous to com-  
 mand, leueyed a mighty power of men, and treated with  
 the Castellane of Ture, where the Dutches daughters was  
 kept: that if he would deliuer the place into his hands, hee  
 should receiue of him a very beautifull recompence. The  
 Castellane being a traitour, made promise to yelde it: as  
 indeede he did, and the young Princesse in it. When the  
 Dutchesse was aduertised of these ill tidings, she became  
 so confounded with griefe, as she knew not what to doe:  
 whereupon a good aged knight gaue her counsell, to send  
 and require aide of the Almane Emperour, because  
 he was nere, and she should make promise of her daugh-  
 ter in marriage, to whom he pleased, if now he would re-  
 lieue her in this necessity, which aduise she followed ser-  
 uing in like manner to the King of Fraunce, as also to the  
 King of Naples her father. When the Almane Emperour  
 heard these newes, he was very ioyfull, and remembering  
 now his sonne Troile, whom he had by the Seldans faire  
 sister Aurecinda, as in the historie of Palmerin d' Oliva  
 is largely described, thought presently this a meete match,  
 to let his son enjoy the Dutches daughters daughter in marriage.



## 164 The second Booke of the History

Whereupon he called for him in this merrie humor, saying he would send him to aide the Dutchesse of Burgundy, discovering his farther intent withall: when Troile (hum- bly kissing his Maesties hand) said, he was ready to doe whatsoeuer he commaunded him, & so was the messenger forthwith dispatcht backe againe, to certifie the Dutchesse, that she should haue helpe quickly sent to her. Torques and Ledefin would needs accompanie Troile in this war, whom his father made Generall, referring to him, full power and authoritie for the whole Army. After they were departed thence, with all such provision as they should most neede, at length they came where the old Dutchesse made her abode, who was not a little ioyfull of their ar- riuall, entertaining the Knights with all the honour she could possibly deuise: declaring to them, what spoyle the Rebels had made, seizing her Peace by treason, and kee- ping her vnder strong guard in Ture.

Fraqueo was likewise in the field with a very puissant strength, making himselfe master as hee passed along the Countrie. Troile comforted her in the best manner hee could, saying, God would alwaies defend the oppressed: and then considering further what was to be done, thus they concluded, that Torques should goe besiege Ture by sea with a sufficient power, and Ledefin (as well pre- pared) by land, but himselfe intended another course, e- uen befoze the Enemies face in the field to bid them bat- tle.

Torques presently went to perfozme his determinati- on, assaulting the Port defences, which was prepared with diuers vessels for warre, and by the stout valor of the Almaines, he slew or tooke all that there resisted him, becomming master of the port. Ledefin (on the other side) had so strictly engirt the gates, as none could enter or issue forth: but by reason there were so many Knights with- in, diuers sallies and excursions were still made, which the Almaines tooke aduantage of at every offer.

Fraqueo



Fraqueo perceiving what helpe was come to the Dutcheſſe, wrote to his father, kindred and friends, for ſtranger ayde : but his father could not then ſend him any, becauſe he had work enough to do to defend himſelfe againſt the King of Fraunce, who was entred his Countrey, and made ſuch ſpoyle, as the like was neuer ſene.

Triole cared not for recovering (as yet) ſuch places as the Enemy had taken, but went to meete him in the field, with ſuch diſdaine, as he would not ſend him any aduerſement, but encouraged his owne men to behaue themſelves balliantly, the eaſier ſhould they ſoyle the foe, and end the warre. Each man boldly answered, that they were reſolved to die, or vanquiſh: which words made him very ioyfull, and the next morning (before day) he put all his men in order, marching (with a running Campe) to finde out Fraqueo, who perceiving their neare approach, kept not ſo warrant you, but ranged his men in readines for the fight, and with wonderfull courage ſetting on the Almaines, a cruell and a dreadfull battell began betwene them.

Triole performed rare deedes of Chivalrie, delivering apparant proofe of his valour and vertue, and making way with his ſword through the thickeſt of his Enemies, gave helpe to his owne men where he diſcerned any need, making his balliant arme many of their lives protector. Fraqueo (among his troups) ſhewed himſelfe no leſſe courageous, extending forth his ſhield, as a rampart and defence for his followers. Thus continued the fight untill now it was mid-day, yet the victory to eyther ſide remaining doubtfull, becauſe ſometimes the hope went one way, and then againe changed as ſodainely to the other.

Triole fearing leſt Fortune ſhould enuy him, mounted on a freſh horſe, with a ſtrong Lance in his hand, and two hundred knights with him as well provided, giving the aſſault on that ſide where the Enemy was ſtronger, crying, For Almaine, for Almaine, chearefully breath



the ranks, and sundring the squadrons, so that Triole and Fraqueo were now mette together, charging each other with very manly strokes. Quite through both shield and capstat did Triole smite his enemy, giving him withall such a dangerous wound, as made him amazedly fall to the ground: but a number of his people thronged about him, and (in despite of the Almaines) got him forth of the battell. When Fraqueo was come to himselfe againe, & sawe his estate such, as hardly could he retorne to maintaine the fight. He mounted on his horse and rode to the Campe, which so dismayed and abated the hope of his men, as Triole (seeing the Chiefestaine unhorsed) so encouraged on his followers, and renewed the conflict with such bigour, that they (seeing themselves without a head or Leader) were enforced to turne their backs, and trust to their heeles, now their hands could not helpe them, the Almaines following amaine, & making a marvelous slaughter of them. When Fraqueo sawe his people thus betake themselves to flight, and how himselfe was very sore wounded, he staid not till he got forth of the Dukedome of Burgundie, accompanied with some few of his traine, entering a Castle of his owne for his safer defence. All night did Triole pursue his victorie, and then returned to the enemies field, where he spent that night, and the next morning commanded honourable buriall for all his slaine Almaines, dividing the spoyle among his souldiours. Then sent he word to the old Dutchesse of his good successe, who was so foyfull thereof, as with some small forces for her defence, she went unto him, that she might againe be possessed of those places the enemy had usurped. When the Dutchesse came where Triole remayned, embracing him in her armes, she sayd: In sooth it can not be otherwise, but you must needs relemole your famous father, who was the most excellent man of Armes of his time. Many kind courtesies passing on either side, they departed thence, to recover such holds and territories, as before were lost: where



where the Burgundians (to re-obtaine their Dutchesse fauour) suddenly revolted, and set on the Millainones, slaying the most part, and taking the rest prisoners, for which (after their submission) the Dutchesse pardoned them all, so in few dayes they recovered whatsoeuer had bene lost in Burgundie: and the French men hearing of this victorie, altered their purpose of coming into Burgundie for the Dutchesse aide, and besieged Millaine with inuincible forces. When the Dutchesse and Triole had all other places vnder their obeyesance, they came vnto Ture, where the Knights (which were within) had vowed to lose their liues, before they would make surrender of it: for Torques and Ledefin, though by Land and Sea they had strongly beleagured it, yet (with all their cunning) they could not take it. At the Dutchesse's arrivall every one reioyced, and Ledefin said to Triole: My Lord, now you are come, Ture is no longer able to make resistance. As for that (quoth Triole) we will take more hereafter, for if Viceda might haue bene won by deedes of armes, she had bene already in your custody, now albeit we haue vanquished the Enemy else-where; why, it was done in open field, and not against them enclosed in such high rampard walls: Torques afterward came on land to see Triole, each feasting ether very honourably, intending to assault Ture in such knightly manner, as they would bring it againe into the Dutchesse's subiection. But returne we now a while to Primaleon, and the Dutchesse of Ormeda.



## CHAP. XX.

How *Gibber* being left to gouerne the Dutchie of *Ormeda*, *Primalcon*, the Dutchesse and *Gridonia* traueled to *Polonia*, where *Gridonia* was solemnely crowned Queene of the Realme.



After that the Dutchesse and *Primalcon* were come backe to *Ormeda*, they beganne to make provision for their departure, because they thought it not necessary to delay the time ouer-long: and shee conferred with *Primalcon*, concerning what was to be done, how the Dutchie of *Ormeda* should be gouerned, while they went to take possession of the Kingdome of *Poland*: saying, But for the loue shee bare her daughter *Gridonia*, shee hardly could be intreated to leaue her Country. *Primalcon* considered with himselfe, that if *Gibber* might be left to this charge, the Dutchie would be kept in peace, and so should they the more contentedly proceed in their voyage, as also he might deale the closer in his *Lones* affaires: immediately he gaue this aduice to the Dutchesse, who sent her Daughter to perswade him, that hee would accept the gouernment of *Ormeda*: which shee did the more willingly, because she would so gladly be ridde of his companie, and (for this purpose) causing him to sit downe by her, she began with him in this manner.

Sir *Gibber*, you see how great my misfortune is, that no sooner I am out of one mis-hap, but presently I fall into another much worse: wherefore I would request a fauor at



at your hand, Mary I doubt whether you will do so much for my sake, or no. Gibber ( assure you ) was not a little proud to heare these kinde speeches, which made him returne this pleasing answer: that he would gladly any way be commanded by her, as being the thing hee most especially desired.

She heartily thanked him, saying: she should never be able to recompence his manifold services, and afterward thus proceeded. I doubt not sir, but ye perceiue how needfull it is for mee and my mother, to goe and clayme our right in the Kingdome of Poland: for which time we must needs be absent hence, and gladly would we leave you to governe here, so pleased you but to accept the charge, because we know none more meete for the same than you, having here so many knights to attend upon you.

Madame, answered Gibber, I well perceiue you are weary of my company, for this request of yours is to my great impeachment, though (perhaps) agreeing with your minde and fancie, as seeking all meanes to be rid of my presence. But howsoever it be, I am contented to obey whatsoeuer you command mee: with which words, the teares trickled downe his cheeks, and breathing forth a monozous sigh, he continued as followeth. Come what may come, never will I change, till I see what Time and Fortune will allot me: I will abide here Madame, and doe my good will to governe well your Countrey.

Gridonia seeing him thus dolozous, and loath to undertake such a charge, could not chuse but laugh, albeit she well hid it from being discerned, and replied thus. I perceiue now (sir Gibber) how my mishaps continually increase, in regard (unkindely) you thus conjecture, that I intreate your stay here, as not caring for your company. Ah me vnfortunate Maid, extreame necessitie enforces me to this request, because I know no one, whom I would trust with my Countreys gouernement but you, whom (in effect) I wish were onely Lord thereof.



I shall account my selfe happy Madame (quoth Gibber) if these words proceed from a heart so resolved : but howsoever it fall out, it shall cost me my life, but I will reuenge your cause on him that hath so offended you: and so, while you trauell to Polonia about your weighty affaires, will I remaine here at your commandement. The Lady requited him with manifold thanks, wishing her selfe able to recompence his curtesie, and saying she would goe certifye her mother of his gentle grant. Herewith she arose, and comming where the Dutchesse sat with Primaleon, she tolde them, that Gibber was wonne to tarry there. I know well Madame, answered Primaleon, he would not faile to obey whatsoener you commaunded him, therefore you do very ill if you account not of him. I make good account of him, answered Gridonia, but not in any such sort (perhappes) as he doth mean: I had rather die my selfe, than he should be the death of Primaleon, to performe the promise to him wherein I stand obliged. Neuer trouble your selfe with that conceit, answered Primaleon, for Primaleon will defend himselfe well enough against him.

Gridonia somewhat displeased at his words, and the Dutchesse sodainely stepping away to conferre with Gibber, she began thus. Sir Knight, I pray you hereafter vse no more of these Speeches, for still you are taking Primaleons part, and I cannot gather for what reason you do it. When you combated with the Prince of Pouilla, so stoutly telling him that you were Primaleon. I tell you, you made me in a strange alteration, but because I bare you good affection, I dissuaded my mother, and the rest, from giuing any credite thereto.

Now at this instant, you make me imagine him your friend, or some way allied to you: for if you be not allied, nor you any friend of his, why do you wrong me so much in maintaining his ablenesse? At all times, when any speech is vsed of him, you are ready to take Armes in his defence:



defence : I pray you hide nothing from me concerning your affaires : for I love and esteeme so well of you, that you may dispose of me and what is mine, as of your owne selfe.

He humbly thanked her for this exceeding favour, confessing it could not but proceed of admirable kindnesse, albeit it had no manner of way bene deserved on his behalfe, and continued on his discourse in this forme. Assure your selfe Madam, that whatsoever is enclosed in my heart, I will not conceale from you, because it is wholly yours : nor would I have you imagine me of the Emperours rate, for if I were so, you must thinke I should hardly have adventured into this place, so well knowing (for almost none are ignorant) what dislike and enmity is betwene you and him, no way to be appeased but by his sonnes death. The reason why I named my selfe Primaleon to the prince of Pouilla, was to mount his choller the higher : and if sometime in talke I chauce to speake of him, and do not bitterly inuey against him, it is as well because I naturally hate to backe-bite mine enemy, as also I have heard him reputed a gentle knight, and of the good, we should report no other but good. But Madame, when I come to deale with him by handy blowes, you shall finde (for your sake) how much I am his enemy, and then will I tell him, what wrong he hath done you. Let me intreate you to forbear all doubts, because no one in the world is more affected to your service than I am, and henceforth will I have a speciall care, not any way to displease you. I pray you do so (quoth she) and I would we had dispatched in Poland, that (all things being in quiet to our contentment) you might depart to finde out Primaleon.

Madame (saide he) as willing thereto am I as your selfe, for I feele my heart beset with innumerable cares, and I finde my selfe unable to endure these afflictions, except some way or other they may be redressed.

Gridonis



172 The second Booke of the History

Gridonia (whose desire herein was answerable to his) began to sigh, and could make him no answer, for the Dutchesse came with Gibber and the Chiefe of the Cittie, telling them she would have him their governour in her stead, and take their oathes for their obedience to him, as if her selfe were there in person.

After all things were in readinesse for their departure, Gibber shewed himselfe very sad and pensive, because Primaleon went thence with the Dutchesse, for he well perceived that Gridonia loved him: so being upon the point of departing, Primaleon taking Gibber in his armes, said thus.

Sir Gibber, it grieueth mee very much to leaue you here behinde, but seeing your stay is imagined necessary for the Countrey, both you and I must haue patience, till Heauen bestow vs to meete here againe, for in sooth I shall not be well without your company.

Gibber well knowing, that Truth consisted in deedes, gaue the lesse credite to his friends faire words, and therefore returned him this answer. Knight of the Clonen Rocks, you haue gotten the better doe, and I thinke she is not sorry for it: this may suffice, for I know you vnderstand me. And seeing you are so happy in all things, I will rest patient, expecting what good fortune hereafter shall befall me. Here must I tarry, for Gridonia hath so commanded, be I willing, or no. As for you, you are reputed better able than I. Be a good guide to her, and Heauen keepe you from harme, as hitherto it hath done. This is all the word I wish you, for your former loue to me.

If you should doe any otherwise, replied Primaleon, certainly you were very much to blame: and seeing him so surcharged with griefe, that longer communication would make him but more discontent, he ceased to trouble him with more words, especially any way concerning that present businesse, onely assuring him of his loue, by example of passed kindnesse.

Gibber



Gibber bare them company to the Sea side, returning afterward to his charge in Ormeda, and by reason he had two hundred hardy knights there of his owne Countrey, he gouerned very peaceably: for he was wise and prudent, not to be reprimed of any other thing, but his fond conceit to enjoy Gridonia as his wife, and his disfigure of body, which he could no way helpe. Primaleon, at the intreatie of the Dutchesse, tooke charge of all the troops that went with them to Poland, Gridonia, Zerphira, and diuers other Ladies, with an hundred knights at armes for their defence, entred one vessell: and sayling on with a merry gale of winde, Primaleon would after leave his owne ship, to goe visite Gridonia, because entirely hee loved her, and wished they had rather sayled toward Constantinople, then that way they did, if hee could haue holpen it.

It was not long befoze they landed in Polonia, the Dutchesse being glad she had escaped the seas so well, and gaue command to all her followers, not to shew any signe of outward merriment, but rather to be sad for her brothers death: and the little aduertised of the Dutchessees arrivall with her daughter, prepared to entertaine her like dutifull subjects. Countie Malarin, an auncient Knight, true and loyall, the principallest man in the Realme, who (by the deceased Kings commandement) sent for the Dutchesse, had a sonne called Ricano, a bolde hardie Knight, he having heard of Gridonias beautie, perswaded himselfe to enjoy her in marriage. To the port they came to entertaine her honourably, but the Dutchesse forbade all ioyfull face, till she had seene her brothers sepulchre: and there, for came all on land clothed in blacke, Primaleon all armed, except his head and hands, he conducting the Dutchesse as she went on shoare. The Countie was the first that kissed her hand as his Quene and Mistress, next him, his sonne, and then the rest one after another, first to the Dutchesse, then to her daughter. Ah Countie (my good friend)



## 174 The second Booke of the History

friends) god. Ohe, what a bad change haue you made, loosing  
so good a King as my brother, and his sonne Perrequin a  
worthy Knight, to enioy mee and my Daughter in their  
stead? Madame answered the Countesse, whatsoeuer pro-  
ceedeth from God, is good, and we ought to be contented  
therewith. It was in him to make your daughter Queene  
of Polonia, without the death of Perrequin: but seeing it  
pleased him this way to order it, it becommeth vs to be  
patient, and desire him to graunt vs vengeance on him  
that slew him. I heartily pray for it (said the Dutchesse)  
and that it may be with speed: but Primaleon said within  
himselke, I hope the Heauens will neuer suffer it.

Notwithstanding all the bitter words they vsed against  
him, who stood and heard them, he neuer changed counte-  
nance; but perswaded himselke, when they should know  
it was he, no one durst be so bold as lay a hand on him,  
for he purposed to enioy Gridonia by faire means or force,  
as for other matters, he had no leisure to thinke on. Af-  
ter a multitude of ceremonious welcomes, they entred the  
Cittie, and the Dutchesse went vnto the chiefe Church,  
where the King her brother lay intombd: there they  
found the Queene, with a sister of hers called Rianda, who  
in her company had liued there in the Court.

The Queene entertained the Dutchesse, and Rianda  
Gridonia, each stood lamentably complaining for the Kings  
death: and Primaleon standing by them, saying neuer a  
word, but hearing himselke cursed, banned and threatened  
for the death of Perrequin. The Countie Mafarin condu-  
cted them to the pallace, where conuenient lodgings were  
appointed for such as should be there, and he hauing heard,  
that this was the Knight of the Clouen Roche, who had  
done the Ladies such especiall seruices, he did him great  
honour: but the Dutchesse commaunded his lodging in  
the pallace likewise.

Now this night they concluded, to solemnize the de-  
ceased Kings funerall pompe on the morrow, and the  
Dutchesse



Dutchesse immediately to be crowned Quene : which dignity she desired might be bestowed vpon her daughter, for the very name of Quene-mother, she thought sufficient for her selfe.

To this they condescended, and on the morrow (the funerall rites being performed) Gridonia laying by her mourning attire, was clothed most sumptuously, and conducted by the Countie, with other chiefe Lords of the Kingdome (according as the Dutchesse before had commanded) vnto a goodly Scaffolde, which in a meet place before the Church was appointed, and after she had sat downe in the Chaire royall, a rich Crowne (beautified with stones of great value) was set vpon her head, and she receiuing her oath, afterward was publickly proclaimed Quene, shee now seeming rather an Angell than a mortall creature.

Primaleon, who stood and behelde all this, could not but be highly contented in his minde, wishing shee were now with him in Constantinople : nor could hee containe himselfe, but to the Lady Zerphira standing by him, hee used these words.

How hapneth it (Madame) you will take no pittie on mee : I know you but what I can do for you, certainly you would helpe me more fauor than yet you haue done. But perhaps you imagine that I deceiue you, or that I am not descended of the Emperors Linage. I protest by the heavens, I haue not lied in any thing I haue tolde you, and verie desirous am I now to place you in your former estate. Say then, why haue you not hitherto fauored me? I doubt it not but one day I shall heare you confesse, that my grieue exceeded, and was intollerable, for who can seee such a beauty, but hee must needs die except hee obtayne it? Appears it not in your eye at this present, that Gridonia is Emperesse of the whole world? At these wordes hee a while paused, and sent forth such a vehement sigh, as one would haue thought his heart had split in sunder : when



176 The second Booke of the History

Zerphira (taking him by the hand) said, I beseech you for-  
hold your peace, lest some body chance to heare ye, for should  
you be knowne to be of the Emperors house, it were im-  
possible for the whole world heere to save your life.

Wherof I doubt not (quoth he) so let all passe, and  
whatsoever shall please you to commaund mee at this pre-  
sent, be well assured I am ready to performe: for so soone  
as these businesses are once well dispatched, either I will  
die, or you shall enjoy what you would have, and so resolu-  
edly build upon my word, without any other speaking  
to mee hereafter. All the solemnities performed, backe to  
the Pallace they returned, where three dayes together the  
feast continued, the Quene bestowing great gifts upon  
them that had kept their loyalty, and satisfied every one in  
such landable sort, as none there were discontented, but  
gladly would lose a thousand lives in her service. And af-  
terward, as Gridonia satte devising with Primaleon, hee  
broke forth on a sodaine into these speeches. Madam, see-  
ing your gracious nature hath yielded such especiall good  
to every one, I would gladly intreate one favour of you:  
Shee had him demand what he would, and the thing  
was very deere which should be denied him. My request  
is (said he) that you would bouchsafe but to remember  
what you have promised mee, for now you are become a  
Quene, you may easily forget me. I will never forget  
you (replied Gridonia) albeit I were Emperesse of Con-  
stantinople, because (in regard of your great valor) I love  
you more than any other man in the world. Now may  
I repate my selfe happy (quoth he) standing thus assured  
by your royall word: at such time as I shall see you peace-  
ably possessed of this Kingdome, then will I make claime  
of the favour promised me.

Looke what before she had spoken, againe she confirmed,  
adding but this promise, that he must request nothing that  
stood against her honour to graunt. Afterward, Primaleon  
daily went richly apparelled, because Gridonia and the  
Quene



Quene-mother had bestowed great gifts upon him, by  
 which meanes, he seemed a very goodly personage in the  
 eyes of every one, except Ritano the Counties sonne:  
 who perceived how Quene Gridonia especially affected  
 him, whereat hee envying, conceived hatred in his heart  
 against him. But so did not Rianda, for (at the very first  
 sight) shee became enamoured of him, delighting to heare  
 them talke of his manifold vertues: which made her still  
 keepe company with Quene Gridonia, to the end shee  
 might daily have conference of him, which proved a great  
 disturbance to both the Lovers, because now they could  
 not so freely have speech together. Primaleon purposed, if  
 hee were once absolutely possessed of Gridonia, to loyne  
 this Ladie in marriage with Gibber, and cause Gridonia  
 to bestow on them the Dutchie of Ormeda.

# CHAP. XXI.

How *Primaleon* with his owne power of men, and without  
 the helpe of Countie *Masarin*, slew *Gristamo*, and dis-  
 comfited his Armie, the newes whereof caused great  
 reioycing throughout *Polonia*.



The Countie of Aglier, a very great  
 Lord, toke to wife the King of Po-  
 lonias sister, by whom he had two  
 sonnes, Gristamo and Gresto, who  
 hearing of their Uncles death,  
 came with their forces to seize on  
 the kingdom, and while the Dut-  
 chesse was preparing thither, they  
 had gotten possession of divers  
 places. Gristamo termed himselfe the Poland King, him-  
 selfe in person besieging one Citty, and Gresto his bro-  
 ther



## 178 The second Booke of the History

ther (a Knight of much valour) doing the like to another, leaving the chiefe Cittie of Poland to be last dealt with, all, because many good Knights were entred for defence thereof. Now the new made Quene and her mother consulting with the Countie and others, what was most needfull in these troublous times to be done, they concluded, that a messenger should be sent to Gristamo, commanding him to depart the Kingdom, and surrender up such places as he had taken: in so doing, he should be honourably dealt withall, and esteemed as her noble nephew: otherwise, shee would warre against him as her deadly enemy, and thus in meane while they made readie all warre-like provision. When Gristamo heard what was thus commanded, hee answered the olde Quene in this manner: That he had no intent to give over his enterprise, but if she pleased to let him enjoy her Daughter as his wife, he would be her obedient sonne, and doe her such high services, as she should well account of. The Ambassadoe returned this answer, which being delivered to Quene-mother, in presence of the Councell, shee sayd: What answer is this which Gristamo sends me? I gladly would consent to his demand, to save blood-shed and spoyle of our kingdom, but therein should both my daughter and I breake a solemne bove which wee have made. Now because the greater part of the Councell were of this minde, to permit the marriage, in regard of the Realmes quietnesse, the yong Quene Gridonia was presently called for, to whom they shewed by many substantiall reasons, that it was much better for her to breake her oath, than be the death of so many people, as in the warres it all were likely to perish. She that loved Primaleon even as her owne soule, thus replied. I know not (my Lords) how you can be contented, to have such a one your Quene, as might be touched with maxime of her credite and breach of promise: But Heaven send that ever I should be such a Quene, to faile in the matter whereto I stand so highly obleiged.



obliged. Well may you determine of my death, but for my yielding to this marriage, that will I never doe. My Cousins haue proudly vsurped what appertaineth not to them, and (in your conceits) I should deeme my selfe so vnfortunate, as to submit my selfe vnto them. Alas, alas, neuer shall he be my husband, that declareth himselfe my open enemye, not to mee alone, but to all this State: and as she thus spake, the teares abundantly trickled downe her cheekes.

The Quene-mother forthwith answered, that she should neuer haue a husband, whom she could not like of: whereupon Ritano, that desired (with all his heart) to doe any seruice for Gridonia, kept forth with these speeches.

Certainely, if my counsell might be allowed of, I would neuer take truce with Gristamo nor Gresto, but presently make out our forces against them, that they may perceiue, we haue so many good knights on our side, as we are able easily to abate their presumption. The Countie by no meanes would gain-say his sonnes opinion, but allowed it, as agreeing with the Quenes owne desire: and because all things were in a readinesse for the warre, without returning any answer backe to Gristamo, they concluded on their setting forthward.

When Primaleon was tolde what demaund Gristamo had made, he swore a great oath in anger, that he would neuer giue ouer, vntill he had sent his Soule forth of this world, humbly thanking Gridonia for her princely answer. Assure your selfe, (quoth she to him) that I will neuer change the affection I beare you, vntill I see how you keepe promise with me. I desire no more (saide Madame, said Primaleon, for I will deliuer you the head you would so faine haue (according to my promise) or lose my life in the aduenture: and when this warre is concluded, then shall you perceiue what I can and will doe for you: He returning him many thanks, gaue him a rich Belt of golde,



180 The second Booke of the History

golde, to weare vpon his armour, as her fauour. The Countie Malarin was made Generall of the Poland forces, and Primaleon of them which came with him from Ormeda: setting on to find out the Enemies, who did much harme and spoile in the kingdome.

When Grissamo was aduertised of the Counties comming, immediately he perswaded himselfe, that neither the Quene-mother, nor Gridonia liked his demand: whereat growing highly offended, he determined to ioyne his strength with his brothers, the sooner to vanquish his enemies.

The Countie, by his Espials, being hereof aduertised, tooke counsell with his chiefe familiars, what in this case was to be done, and Primaleon being ioyfull of these tydings, sayd thus to the Countie. No doubt (my Lord) but the heauens will assist vs, if we do our owne endenour as best becomes vs, let me then intreate so much fauour at your hands, as to permit me this night go secretly forth with my troupes, for I will keepe him from ioyning with his brother so soone as he intendeth.

Much faine had the Countie heard of this Knights behaviour, and being contented to graunt his request, said. Sir Knight of the Clouen Rocks, so great is your vertue, as I thinke it neither good or reasonable to hinder your designs: I will giue you a guide, that shall conduct you to a place, where you may bide in safety. As for my selfe, I will follow after them, to giue you succour if need be, not doubting but the highest bounty (who hath hitherto blessed vs) will at this instant crowne vs with victory. No one was against or displeased with this enterprize, but the Counties Sonne onely, who laboured to hinder this secret ambascado, fearing it would rebound to the Knight of the Clouen Rocks honor: but the Countie seeing this a likely meanes to make a speedy end of the warre, gave a guide to Primaleon, and sent him away. He ranging his men in such order as he thought meet, went along in the night without



without making any noise, and was so well conducted to  
 a mountaine where the enemy must needs passe along,  
 as he abode there all the morning undiscovered. Grista-  
 mo hearing that the Countie continued still in the field:  
 without dreaming of any other resistance, came and en-  
 camped nere the place where Primaleons forces lay, who  
 purposed to doe nothing till day light, but all the night-  
 long encouraged his men, and at day-broke went along  
 to meete him. When the enemies spies had gotten a sight  
 of them, they cried out aloud, and began so busily to pre-  
 pare themselves, as Gristamo was faine to forsake his  
 bed, and arme himselfe with all the speed hee might: but  
 Primaleon first had gotten into his Campe with his men,  
 killing and smiting downe whomsoever they met, like a  
 fierce Lyon he led the way still to his company, and no  
 knight came to resist him, but dearly paid for it. His  
 brave behaviour gave spirit & life to the men of Ormeda,  
 who (whetted on by his vertue) in lesse than an houre  
 made a most pittifull slaughter: the remainder that were  
 assailed thus unprouided, fled to Gristamos pavilion,  
 where he being newly mounted on horseback, encouraged  
 them with all the best speeches he could ble. Primaleon still  
 belwing out his way before him with his sword, seeing so  
 many knights assembled there on a heape wel knew that  
 the chiefe must needs be amongst them: & being followed  
 by about fifty hardy knights of his owne, tolde them, the  
 victorie consisted where thele were thus gathered. And gi-  
 ning his horse the spurs, he laid about him on euery side  
 with such fury, that (despight their hearts) he enforced them  
 make him way, where Gristamo being in the middle of  
 this troupe, & seeing them all so sharpely assaulted, he was  
 at his wits end, not knowing in this case how to behaue  
 himselfe. Primaleon guessed it should be he, by his rich  
 Armour, and making toward him, said. What doest thou  
 Gristamo? me thinks thy courage failes thee, thou shalt  
 now see what it is to be King of Poland vniuersally: & with  
 these



these words, commanded fresh charge. Gristamo having  
 six of his best Knights with him, valiantly defended him-  
 selfe, but Primaleon bestirred himselfe so nimbly amongst  
 them, as two of them were quickly laid along the ground:  
 then addressing himselfe to Gristamo, with his sword he  
 gaue him such a mighty stroke on the head, as he had no  
 need of a Chirurgeon to heale him, because (with the blow)  
 he fell dead from his horse, whereat his men were so enra-  
 ged, as not fearing death, they engirt Primaleon very dan-  
 gerously, but they got nothing thereby, for many of them  
 left their liues presently in the place. At length they slew  
 his horse vnder him, yet failed not his courage, for though  
 he were on foote, hee still performed incredible deedes of  
 armes, and quickly was holpen to another horse, by two  
 of his Knights that left their owne for him: but he would  
 none, for at this time hee liked better to keepe still on the  
 ground, and with his followers plied his busines so well,  
 as in short while after, the enemies took themselves to  
 their heeles. Primaleon being both weary and wounded,  
 cared not for pursuing them any farther, but entred Gri-  
 stamos pavillion, to rest himselfe, and haue his hurts lookt  
 vnto. Some after, the Countie arrived there with his part  
 of the army, but became ouer-late, for victorie was alrea-  
 dy obtained against the enemies: and he beholding what  
 a slaughter had bene made, not marueiling a little thereat,  
 said: Now will I beleue what heretofore I haue heard,  
 concerning the rare magnanimity of the Knight of the  
 clouen-Rocke, having so few men with him, in regard of  
 the enemy. And having thus spoken, he alighted from his  
 horse, and coming to embrace him, thus proceeded. It  
 appeares to me Sir, that you haue spared vs a labour, be-  
 cause you haue made an end before wee could get hither.  
 It is Gods doing, answered Primaleon, and not ours,  
 wherefore I pray ye go take a view of the field, & cause the  
 slaughtered to be buried, especially Gristamo, because hee  
 was of great parentage: for I am somewhat wounded as



ye see, and here is no bidding for us, except we will fall in-  
 to the hands of Gresto. The Count presently left him, &  
 finding Grissamo among the dead bodies, with other prin-  
 cipal knights slaine likewise in this fight, he sent them to a  
 Monastery neere adjoining, & there gave commandement  
 they should be buried: the rest were entred in the field,  
 & the bootie diuided among them, that had most endange-  
 red their lives for it. Ritano was nothing pleased, to heare  
 the Knight of the clouen-Rocke so much commended, but  
 said in himselfe that he would doe such deedes, as euery  
 way should equall his vertue, determining to giue an as-  
 sault on Gresto. Primaleon departed, because he receiued  
 no contentment but in the sight of Gridonia. Quene-mo-  
 ther hearing report of the victorie, one while was ioyfull,  
 & then againe sad, because shee grieved for her Nephewes  
 death, saying: Alas, I shall be taxed hereafter, for ta-  
 king such sharpe reuenge on him that injured me not  
 much. Madame (quoth Gridonia) neuer grieue your selfe  
 in this manner, but rather reioyce, that God hath thus fa-  
 uoured the Knight of the clouen-Rocke: for me thinks ye  
 haue no occasion to be displeased, in regard ye may haue a  
 better friend and kinsman. Grissamo would needs proude-  
 ly usurpe the crowne of Poland, in no case of right apper-  
 taining to him, and now is he iustly requited for his pre-  
 sumption. Afterward, the young Quene commanded  
 fires of ioy to be made, through the Citie, and what else  
 could be done in applauding the victorie, not ceasing to ex-  
 toll publicly the Knight of the clouen-Rockes great va-  
 lour. Ab Madame, (quoth the Lady Zerphira, being then  
 present) well may ye esteeme your selfe happy and fortu-  
 nate, to be the Quene and mistresse of a Knight so com-  
 plete in all perfections, I wonder ye consent not to him  
 in all he can desire, louing ye so honourably as hee doth,  
 and vndertaking such wonderous perils for your sake, in  
 which my selfe a thousand times haue pittied him. Faire  
 Sister, replied the Quene, encrease not the paine I feele  
 at



184 The second Booke of the History

at this present, opportunity neuer fauoured me (till now) to honour him as he hath deserued: and if he loue me, hee hath great reason to doe it, for I had rather die, than any other (but he) should haue power ouer me, neuerthelesse, I would haue all things performed by good meanes, and with such respect as becometh mine honour. Seeing ye know all these matters so well, answered Zerphira, me thinks ye are not so wel aduised as ye might be, in delay- ing acceptance of the good which heauen presents ye with- all. I will accept it (quoth Gridonia) when I see time conuenient: in meane while, wee must minde our other busineses. She was infinitely pleased, seeing her Knight performe so much for her sake, and imagined shee should be condemned of ingratitude, if she made him not recom- pence to his high deservings, which could be no way else, but euen by bestowing her selfe vpon him.

CHAP. XXII.

How the Countie and *Primaleon* besieged *Gresto*, in the Citie where he kept himselfe: How he fled, and the Citie was taken, with all the rest of the kingdome: The con- ference of the two louers together.



Any Knights of *Gristamos* company el- caped from the field, and fled to the place where *Gresto* abod, who was very sorry for his brothers death, as al- so the spoile made of his Army: and because hee imagined himselfe there scant strong enough, he got to a Citie which was defended with the Sea, and there he resolved to expect what his enemy would doe. The Countie and *Primaleon* besieged him presently by land, and because the newes of *Gristamos* death was generally dispersed, the *Quenes* Armie daily increased mightily. Ritano, to purchase



purchase honour would needes haue the haungards leading, erecting his pavillions very nere the enemies wals. Gresto, being a hardy Knight, and desirous to reuenge his brothers death, one day made a sally forth upon the enemy with two thousand men, entering the pavillions, and making a marvellous slaughter: but Ritano stepped forth with his power to repulse them, driving them manly back to the City, and coming to handie blowes with Gresto, made proufe of the valour remaining in him: nevertheless, Gresto fell out too hard for him, deliuering such a stroke on the Helmet, as both his head and it fell in two parts about his shoulders, and there lay the Counties sonne dead on the ground. Gresto with his men returned quickly into the City, & the body of Ritano (with great griefe) was caried thence: But when the sorrowfull father saw his sonne slaine, in extremitie of passion, himselfe was ready to giue vp the ghost. Primaleon, who had not bene in this conflict, because his wounds were not thoroughly healed, came and comforted the County, promising he would reuenge his death: which happened as (ye haue heard) onely through enuy in Ritano, that Primaleon should any way be thought better than he. After the County had seene his sonne interred, he caused two or thre furious assaults to be made on the City: but hee gained nothing thereby, for still hee returned with very great losse. When Primaleon was in better plight recovered, he came to the same place where Ritano first lodged his forces, and eight daies together remained quietly there, yet enermore standing on his owne defence. In the end, Gresto thinking to obtaine the like honour as hee did before against the Counties sonne, one morning (well provided for the purpose) at the very same gate hee issued forth againe, and began to endamage his enemy very much. No sooner did Primaleon heare the noyse of their weapons, but with many of his Knights he went to encounter them, beginning upon them such a violent assault,



assault, as he made them flie like lightning backe againe. Many were slaine in very little space, and Gresto did his best, yet could he not get his people to bide by it, for Primaleon with his troups followed so fast on them, as they beat them backe to the gate, and made them runne on in such confused manner, that they had not the power to shut the gate, but Primaleon and his people got in vpon them. The Countie came after with his forces to second him, and being in the City, without any mercy made hanoche of the enemies. Gresto seeing these affaires fall out so badly on his behalfe, and small hope was left of any good successe, with diuers other in his company fled to the sea side. Of those that fought in his quarrell, most part were slaine, and many taken prisoners, the inhabitants of the City being pardoned at Primaleons request, because they had done little harme, and cryed for mercie: a good bootie likewise happened thereby to the Souldiers, which being equally diuided among them, gaue better courage in their recovering other Citties of the Kingdome, which in a while after, were all submitted to the young Quæns obeysance. Full sorrowfull was the Countie for his sons death, Primaleon likewise, so loved and honored throughout the realme, as euery one heartily desired he might be their Soueraigne: whereat ye may be well assured he grieved not, but wishing himselfe now with his gracious Mistresse, was answered by her with as much longing to see him, and she sitting conferring with the Quæne Mother on diuers matters, at last began thus. What say ye now Madame: how shall we recompence the Knight of the clouen-Rocke, by whose onely meanes we haue recovered our Countreies: But for him, we had lost the Dutchy of Ormeda, and in the like state stand this of Polonia. We haue said true daughter, replied the Quæne-mother, who knowes how willingly I would shew my selfe thankesfull to him: but let vs referre it, till he performe his promise concerning Primaleon. The Countie took  
his



his sons death so heauily, as he would not goe backe to the Queen again, but returned home, through which occasion all the kindnes & welcomes (by the two Quēnes) were bestowed on Primaleon onely, they making him royally at the Pallace gate, expressing the greatest loue & affection toward him, that could be, & returning into the Hall, Gridonia caused him to sit down by her, beginning thus. Sir Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, I know not how happy I may count my selfe, by the acquaintance of such a one as you are, who haue won for me those rights, which bad mindes would haue robbed me of, so that whatsoeuer I enjoy next God, I confesse it is only by your meanes. All the Knights there present, confirmed her speeches with the like, and extolled so much his famous deserts, that he stood as one modestly ashamed of their praises, intreating the Quēne to forbear such kinde of language, and rather thinke on some gratitude for the Knight of Ormeda, whose merits he commended far beyond his owne: which kindnes of his, so wondrously in loue prouoked them, comparing his admirable dēdes and vertuous behaviour together, that they intreated the quēne-mother, to giue him her daughter in marriage, for he was able to keep and preserve their countries in quietnes. She answered, that she desired the same as much as they did, & then talking with her daughter a while, they both came back, and intreated the Knight, seeing now there was no moze businesse there for him, that he would goe combat Primaleon, according to his promise, and at his returne, his marriage with the Quēne should be accomplished, and hee possesse her kingdom as her dowrie. Thereto (confusedly) hee answered, that hee would depart thence with all conuenient speede, but first hee would see, if Gresto durst returne to warre vpon them againe: which if he did not and he perceived their quiet to be absolute, he would goe, and performe his promise on Primaleon. Innumerable thanks they returned him, for the great care he had of them and their



their affaires: but his thoughts (withall) were so perplexed, in devising by what meanes hee might enjoy Gridonia as (on a sudden) hee became exceeding pensive. Which she well perceiving, taking him aside to a window, entered into these speeches. I am lozrie Sir Knight of the cloven-Rocke, to see ye thus melancholly, tell me I pray re, what is the cause thereof: for there is not any thing lawfull to be done, but for your sake I would gladly accomplish. Where words and deedes saide he all one, you should not discern any such sadness in mee, I see my harmes daily increase, and yet you take no pittie of them: for when my minde tells me that I must needs leave ye, then feele I my life at the very latestt extremitie, and know not how or which way to preserve the same, till I might but afford this desired service for ye. Wherefore, if ye will vouchsafe me one favour, which I have often moved, and you as often promised, not only that ye make me more unfortunate, but beseege, set such a keene edge on my courage, as I undoubtedly shall conquer Primaleon.

When she had answered that she would doe any thing for him, which possibly she might: he persecuted his former occasion in this sort. The thing I most desire (sweet Madame) is onely your company to Constantinople, that in your presence I might combat with Primaleon for I am most certaine, if you but stand before me, had he a thousand lives, yet should I vanquish him. Whereas, if you be not there present with me, I shall neither have courage nor strength, because I leave them both in those faire eyes, which will be too farre from mee in such a needefull time.

Alas (quoth she) how can I goe with ye being assured the Queen my Mother will never yelde thereto: and to depart without her leave, were a matter most hainous, and to my eternall dishonour. Not so Madame, answered Primaleon, rather such will be your endlesse fame and glorie in thus doing, as the Queen will easily winke at a farre



farre greater fault : and I protest by the faith of a loyall Knight, not any way to touch your person, untill your selfe please.

Oh my Lord (quoth she) by this request ye have strangely afflicted my thoughts, for Gods sake let me muse hereon a while : if I finde I may doe it, I will, because I would gladly be as good as my word. Primaleon was well pleased to heare this answer, & whilster she would or no) sweetly he kissed her hand : so each parting from other for this time, hee went to the Lady Zerphira, praying her to counsell Gridonia to doe as he willed her, promising he would goe along in their companie. The Lady bled such perswasions to the young Queene, as in the end she was fully banquished, in regard of the great affection she bare her Knight : but such matters immediately happened, as gaue occasion to thinke on other things, than this departing thence.

### CHAP. XXIII.

How Primaleon pursuing *Gresto* on the sea, by a tempest was carried to *Ture*, where *Troile* kept his siege: where he aided him in such sort, as the Citie was taken, and how he made himselfe knowne to *Torques*.



*Resto* hauing gathered together so many men as hee could, went robbing on the Polish seas in such sort, as no merchant or any other of the Kingdome might scape him, but he would spoyle him of his goods, or keepe him prisoner : whereof when Queene-mother was

aduertised, she became exceedingly offended thereat, and sending for the Knight of the cloven-Rocke, said. Sonne, not without great cause did you so willingly say in expectation what my Nephew *Gresto* would doe, who robs &



190 The second Booke of the History

doth much harme vpon our seas: wherefore, seeing hither-  
to ye haue done so much for vs, I pray ye take in hand to  
chastise this rebell, for without your helpe, he will soon  
endanger the Realme, which (in regard it must hereaf-  
ter appertaine to you) as your owne already ye may now  
goe to defend it.

This new disturbance was much displeasing to Pri-  
maleon, who minded nothing els but his purposed depar-  
ting, yet made he no semblance thereof: but bowed in  
choller, that Gresto should repent it, and presently he  
meant to goe encounter him. His ships being in a readi-  
nes, he took his leaue of Quene-mother and Gridonia,  
who was not a little glad of this new accident, which di-  
spenced with her departing to Constantinople. Now as  
Primalcon with his flēte made sayle to finde out Gre-  
sto, for two daies space they rode on with faire winde and  
weather: but the third day was tempestuous, with very  
rough Seas, which being caried aloft with contrary  
windes, bare them along, themselves knew not whither,  
till at length they descried Ture, which was holly besie-  
ged by Troile, Torques and Ledefin, as before ye haue  
heard. Many assaults had they giuen thereto, but could  
not as yet take it, because they within defended them-  
selues valiantly, intiring the Dutcheſſes part more with-  
out, then any way themselves were: which much dis-  
pleased Troile, who had concluded to die, but hee would  
haue it, and the same day Primalcon arrived there, they  
battered it both by Sea and Land so furiously, as it was  
strange they could be able to endure resistance. When  
Primalcon heard the noyse, hee demaunded of the Pilot  
and Mariners in what place they were? whereof being  
resolved, he commanded them to cast anchor, and calling  
for a Boate, in deſire the place where he heard this bat-  
tailing, demaunding there of certaine Mariners these  
warres occasion: and being satisfied therein, he present-  
ly sayde vnto himselfe, that hee doubtlesse was sent thi-  
ther



ther to succour some friends. So returning backe to his Ships, he called the chiefeest of his Knights about him, & said : I vnderstand (my friends) that Fraqueo, sonne to the Duke of Millaine, hath done great wrong to the Dutchesse of Burgundie, and would depriue her of her Countre.

It is the dutie of good Knights to help the afflicted, that others may do the like for them in their necessity, & doubtlesse we are sent hether only for this purpose: which if we refuse, we shal much discredit our selues. After they had answered, that they were all ready to doe what he would appoint them, they weied anchors againe, and put into the Port, where going on land, they began to buckle with them which were vpon the walls, deliuering such blowes, as not one durst abide befoze them.

Torques, who was on that side, seeing this new come succour, and not knowing whence they were, encouraged his men, commanding them set scaling ladders to the wall, and was the first that mounted on them. Primaleon looking backe on Torques his ship, and knowing by the Streamer to whom it belonged, imagined it was he which ascended the wall: and getting vp so soone as he by another ladder, they two were the first that entred the Citie, charging such as resisted them so valiantly, as not one durst abide, but was glad to giue them way. When Troile and Ledefin saw that they on the sea side had recovered the wall, charging on their men, they drew nere to the Gate, because they which befoze defended it, were respyred to aide them at the Port: and putting fire to the Gate, in short time burnt it downe and entred, where they made such a slaughter in euery stræte, as intreatie or submission saued no mans life they met withall.

Torques beholding Primaleons wonderfull dédes of armes, drawing nere to him said : Favour me so much Sir Knight, as to let me know of whence ye are, for (till now) I saw ye not in our companie. Primaleon, willing that



that he should know him, and to haue him thence, to further his Affaires, answered: Sir, ye haue seene me many times before now, as your selfe will say when ye haue dispatched this business.

My fortune is incomparable (quoth Torques) if you be the Knight I seeke. I am the same (replied Primaleon) but be silent, and disclose me not to any one. Torques knew not how to behaue himselfe, hee was so surpassing ioyfull, for with this good hap, his courage mightily augmented: and Primaleon expressing the like by his behaviour, gaue not ouer till they were possesse of the Citie, not leaving one of Fraqueos men alicke. Troile got to the Pallace where Viceda was kept, whose feare was not a little, by his rough and stearne encounter, but hee took her by the hand, and Knight-like chered her, when perceiving the Dutchesse come thither, with her Traine attending, Troile presented her the young Ladie, saying. Madame, I deliuer this Damosell into your hands, to the end you may see her safely guarded. I will keepe her then for you, replied the Dutchesse, because I haue no other guerdon than this to bestow vpon ye: and taking her in her armes, gaue her innumerable kisses, speaking thus to her. Ah sweet Daughter, how many wishes haue I spent in vaine for thee: Heauen be praised for restoring thee againe vnto me. The Ladie was glad to see her selfe in her Grandmothers companie, for she was afraide of Troile, because she saw his armor all smeared with blood. Troile, to prouide for the other businesses, left the Pallace, and meeting with Ledefin, who this day had very manfully behaued himselfe, said. Goe now and rest your selfe where the Dutchesse is, for I will seeke out Torques, by whose vertue we were Conquerors this day: hee can tell vs what succour that was which came so luckely. So passing on along, enquiring for Torques hee was advertised where he should finde him: for hee and Primaleon were gotten into a chamber, where they might more priuately



uately conferre together, and Primaleon (to satisfie Torques) tooke off his helmet, and let him see his face, whereupon he said. My Lord, the paines I haue taken to finde you sozth, hath been well imployed, in that it is my lucke at length to meete with ye: I beseech ye tell me, where ye haue bene so long a while: the Emperour was much agrieved for your departure, and many good Knights left the Court to pursue your search. Primaleon told him, hee was constrained to depart when hee did, and had not yet met with the Knight, by whose occasion he left the Court: but ioyfull he was for meeting with him, because he now meant to intreate his companie, and would acquaint him with many matters past, which should be revealed to no man aloue but he, intreating he would tearme him knight of the clouen-Rock, and no otherwise, by reason he had bene (as yet) so commonly called: all which Torques promised faithfully to performe. While they continued in this pleasing conference, Troile came into the chamber, and looking on Primaleon, stood a while as one amazed, at length he said. What good hap is this, that I now see the Knight, by whose noble demeanour our enemies are banquished: who could haue holpe vs so admirably, but you, who (questionles) are the Flower of all Chivalrie: Then casting himselfe at his seete, Primaleon quickly tooke him vp, and after many embracings, tolde him hee must with some speede perforce depart thence, and could now say nothing to him concerning his busines, but that he would be at Constantinople, so soone as possibly might be. Troile was very sozrie he would so quickly be gone, and desired hee might beare him company, albeit hee had great affaires of his owne in hand: but Primaleon would in no wise yeld thereto, wishing him to abide, and finish the matter he had so well begun, being to his perpetuall honour. Torques seeing they needed him no more, after they had talked a little together, embracing Troile, hee and Primaleon went presently to the Port. All such baggage



194 The second Booke of the History

gage as belonged to Torques, was by his Squires carried into Primaemons ship, and he gave all his Knights to understand, that this was his Cousen, whom there he happened on by great adventure: whereof they were all ioyfull, and the next morning they put to sea with a merry gale.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How *Troile* espoused *Viceda* Dutchesse of *Burgundie*, and intreated the Emperour his father ( by a letter ) to give *Velerisa* in mariage to *Ledefin*, which at his request was immediately performed.



uch was *Troile* agrieved for the departure of these two Knights, and would gladly have knowne some of Primaemons proceedings, that hee might have acquainted the Emperour therewith: but seeing it might not be granted, hee provided for things more necessarily belonging to himselfe. First he caused view of the fights successe to be made, where finding how many Almaines were slaine and wounded in this conflict, hee took order for the ones curing, and the others burying.

This labour asked so much time, as a great part of the night was spent before he returned to the Dutchesse, who then entertained him very graciously, causing her Damaiselles to hearme him, and such wounds well tended as he had received in the skirmish. As for *Ledefin* he was long before in bedde, and pretely well rested: but when hee understood it was Primaemon who thus came to succour them, he was wondrously displeased that he had not seen him. The Dutches never thought hongr enough bestowed on *Troile*, and when all things were there appointed in good order, she went to her Cities of *Burgundie*, being entertained with their bittermost engend of love and humilitie,



middle, and Viceda (by all) accepted as the chiefe Lady & Dutcheffe, and soon after, a peace concluded between her and the Duke of Millaine, who took an oath, neuer more while he liued to beare armes against her, provided, that the King of France (in like manner) ceased his warring on him. All matters being thus pacified, the olde Dutcheffe (by the aduice and consent of all her knights) concluded on the marriage betwene Viceda and Troile, in recompence of these seruices, and thankes to the Emperour for his good aide sent her, being well pleased to match in such an honorable alliance. Hereupon the Nuptials were celebrated, and because the Bride as yet was ouer-yong, the Bridegrome was contented to stay her yeares: but seeing himselfe fully receiued as Lord of the Countrie, he determined to send backe Ledefin with the remainder of Almains. Ledefin discovered the secrets of his hart vnto him, and the vnfained loue he bare to Veleris, continuing still his former purpose, that he would not haue been baptizd, but in hope he might enjoy her: which made Troile write to the Emperour his Father, intreating he might haue Velerisa in marriage, partly to requite his honourable seruices, as also in regard (for his sake) he had abandoned and left his Fathers wealthie Kingdome.

All this while Ledefin lost no time, but hauing taken his leave of the Dutcheffe, who bestowed many costly gifts vpon him, went backe toward Almaine, Troile bearing him companie soore daies together on his way, afterward returned into Burgundie, where hee was so wel-beloued of his people, as all his life time he found no breach of peace among them.

The Emperour vnderstanding what Ledefin had done in the warre, honored him very much, and recompencing all his knights and foliowers, commanded each one to his severall home. When he had perused the Letter sent from his Sonne, he was a while in some suspence, but at



la it resolved with the Emperes, Ledefin should intoy Velerisa, because he had bene so forwarde in his service: and sending for Velerisa, to know her minde herein, shee made answer, that she was ready to doe whatsoener they commanded her. The Emperour misliked not her humiliation in this matter, and sending for Ledefin into his chamber, thus priuately communed with him, I know not how to requite the great bond wherein I stand obliged to ye, and performe the promise made ye, when ye received the sacrament of Baptisme, except in bestowing my daughter Velerisa on yee as your wife, with such a dowry beside as may honourably content ye. Ledefin falling at his fete, humbly kissing his hand, said, My Lord, this day no knight can equall mee in happines receiving from your bounty such a wonderfull fauour: for which (during life) I must acknowledge my duty and continue yours to my bittermost in service. We will admit no long circumstances (quoth the Emperour) but forthwith shall ye be espoused to her, which by agrément of all the knights and Gentlemen, was that evening performed, with such pompe and solemnity as in like cases is required: the Emperour creating him Duke of Mallor, enduing him with the lands and Signories thereto belonging.

Ledefin henceforward departed not from the Emperours Court, hauing diuers sonnes by Velerisa who proved to be hardy and aduenturous knights. When the Emperour heard afterward by Ledefin that Prima-leon came to succour Troile, and had carried Torques thence away with him: hee meruailed thereat, dispatching a messenger presently toward the Emperour Palmerin, to aduertise him how matters had happened. No sooner were these tidings come vnto him, but hee and all the Court in generall reioyced: nor can I expresse the wonderfull contentment of the Emperesse and the Princesse Florida, when they were acquainted with these long desired



desired netes, so which, the knight that brought them was nobly rewarded, and so returned backe againe with no meane contentment.

# CHAP. XXV.

How *Primaleon* beeing much troubled with tempests on the Seas, arrived at length in the Isle of *Cantara*, whereof (at that time) the Giant *Cataru* was Gouvernour.



**P**rimaleon and Torques hoping saile (as you have heard) to reconer Poland, were againe troubled on the Sea with divers tempests, so that they found themselves very farre from the place, where they most desired to be. Five dayes together continued this outrage of winde and weather, they not being able to guesse what course they took; and but that Primaleon and Torques, with gentle speeches encouraged the rest, they were afraid to be all utterly lost.

At length, one while despairing, and then againe renewing their hopes so well as they could: they found themselves to be nigh the Island of Cantara, governed by the Giant Gataru, brother to the great dog Maiortes, in search of whom he long time travelled, and after he had sought in numberlesse places: at last hee arrived in this Island, which then was ruled by Eleus a Pagan Giant, who had a faire daughter which he dearly loved. Gataru behaved himselfe very affably, hoping to enjoy this virgine in marriage, as indeede her father afterward, granted her to be his wife. Eleus got this Island from a great Lady, who being a widow, and remaining there with her sonne and a young daughter of hers, were conquered by Eleus, her sonne



sonne put to the sword, and the Lady (with her daughter) enclosed in a goodly strong pallace, which he erected at the foot of his stone Castle, enchanting the place in such sort, as whosoever came and entered the Pallace, were presently deprived of their senses, and neuer more minded any worldly occasions. Thus remained Eleus Lord of this Island, which was very pleasant, and wherein lived many goodly mighty men, as also very beautifull women. So long as Eleus lived, his sonne in lawe was milde, quiet and obedient, MARY he was no sooner dead, but presently he entered on the whole Countries iurisdiction. But before Eleus dyed, he so ordered his charmes, that Gataru onellie might enter this enchanted Pallace, without any losse of his senses, because he was likewise well scene in the Arte Magicke. When Primaleon and his people were arrived in this Island, not a little ioyfull for escaping their wondrous tempests, both Torques and hee armed themselves, and with diuers other of his Knights went on land with their horses, to recreate themselves while the Seas disturbance was appealed. And as he went walking with Torques vnder a faire shade of trees, hee acquainted him with all his passed fortunes, because hee had not the leisure (till then) to tel him any thing. Among the rest, he told him how Zerphira remained with Gridonia, whereat he marveling, intreated Primaleon to doe his uttermost for her deliuerance thence, saying: hee was very desirous both to see and comfort her. When Primaleon declared beside, how he was on the point of bringing them both away, but could not performe it, by reason the affairs of Gresto impeached him, whom with his power he pursued vpon the Polish Seas. Torques said, he wondred that one of his discretion, durst so intrude himselfe amongst his enemies, where if he should be knowne, millions of liues would prove insufficient to ransom him: but hee saue that Love enforced him thereto, which no way could be terrified: for Love hath such a power, as to blinde the wisest iudgements, and  
make



make the mightiest humble, whensoever hee controlleth. You say very true, answered Primaleon, for such is the love I beare Gridonia, as I regard no perill that can oppose it selfe against me: neyther will my thought's enjoy any quietnesse, till I haue her in my power forth of her owne Kingdome, and aduance her to such height of dignity, as shall wipe out her remembrance of hatred against me. Did she but know (quoth Torques) what happinesse faire Desteny appointeth for her, her frowning displeasure soon would be qualified, for womens desires are most at Soueraignty. Whilist thus their talke continued, a Knight passed by them, mounted on a faire Courser, a Bugle hanging about his necke, and followed by a great many of houndes, for hee had bene a hunting: This Hunt man maruelling to see such strangers there walking, called to them, saying: A bad houre chose you to land in this place, for very speedily shall you all repent it. So setting spurs to his horse, away he gallops as fast as he could ride. Well (sayd Primaleon) wee shall see what this threatening will come to, for I had rather endure danger on the land, than on the Sea: this hee spake, because the tempest was not as yet ceased.

Thus continued they there all that night, pleasant and merry, for the place was in a calme ayre, and very delectable: neuerthelesse, they stood still on their guard, and Primaleon purposed the next morning, to goe by hisher into the Island to see what might befall him, remembering the Emperors his father, who had passed many perills in wandering through the world, yet evermore departed to his great honor, and doubtlesse as good fortune was reserved for him. The Knight that rode so fast away, was a kinsman to the Giant Gataru, who no sooner espyed these new come people, but presently hee went and acquainted him therewith. He much enraged at these vnlooked for news, sent backe Mucheo (for so was the Knight named) with such forces as hee thought meet, to slay them all so lately landed



## 200 The second Booke of the History

landed in his Island; commanding, not to let one of them escape, and would have gone himselfe in person, but that hee was not well disposed. Mucheo immediately went to charge this company, and minded to kill them every one, because they durst set foot on the Isle without the Giants leave. When Primaleon saw Mucheo returned with a Lance ready placed to encounter him, he said: Thou art a foole, to come seeke thy death and need not: and speaking thus, he met him with such fury, as his Lance pierced quite thorow him, and there lay Mucheo dead on the ground. Torques bestowed like welcome upon an other Knight, and setting hands to their swords, beset them selves so valiantly among the rest, who were of great stature, and defended themselves manfully, that at length the Islanders turned their backs and fled, as well in regard of Mucheos death, as the high valour and behaviour of Primaleon.

Pursued they were very nere the Castle, which stood hard by a river that thwarted all the Island, and was thereto a mighty defence: right before the Castle was a bridge, which extended all the waters breadth, at the end whereof stood a strong tower, as entrance to the Castle, and no other passage was therto but this. Some one or other (seeing the Islanders coming backe thus confosedly) not a little maruelling thereat, opened the gates for safegard of their liues, and afterwards shut them presently againe, when Primaleon and the rest, seeing they could get no further, were contented perforce to bide at the bridge. The Giant being then walking in the Castle, beholding so small a number of his men returne, and Mucheo not with them, imagined presently that he was slaine: hereon he grew so mightily offended, as not a man durst enter his presence, and fuming outrageously, went forthwith and armed himselfe: then mounting upon a horse of huge stature, he rode on to issue south of the Castle. One that was in the watch-tower on the Bridge, called to Primaleon  
and



and his company, saying : Traitors, you shall all now be put to the sword, our prince Gataru will make you dearly pay for the wrong you haue done him. Primaleon thinking it was better to fight with the Giant, man to man, than hazard his followers in any danger, made this answer to him in the tower. So tell thy master here is a Knight, Capitaine of this Nation, whom contrary windes hath brought him on land, and not any intent to offer him injury, that if he deny him peace, will combat with him, on this condition : If he be vanquished, all they which landed with him, will confesse themselves the like, but if he overcome and conquer the Giant thy Lord, he shall be content to endure the wrong, which thou saiest hath bene done him by this Knight, and suffer him quietly to continue here, till the Seas be in better temper, to conuey him and his else-where. He answered, that willingly he would goe heare his Lord this message, and ranne immediately to acquaint him therewith : who swelling with disdain and anger, sayd : Peace villaine, what vantage shall I get by vanquishing one silly Knight : My Lord (replied some of them which had escaped his hands) make not so light account of him, for hee is another manner of man than you take him to be : but were he once conquered the rest may easily be got into your power. Well, sayd the Giant, I am content to deale with him, to shew how little I care for such prowesse as you deeme to be in him : So causing the Castle gate to be opened, he came forth, saying : Where is the Knight that would enter combat with mee : Thou seest him here (replied Primaleon) for I am he, who do it to save the lives of my men. To save others lives then (quoth the Giant) thou sekest willingly the losse of thine owne : in so doing I account thee but a foole, and will make pꝛoofe of what thou art able to doe. Moreover, I sweare and promise, that if thou canst get the victory of mee, I will accomplish thine owne request, and no wrong shall here be done to thee and thine : but never live  
in



in hope thereof, for I shall put thee to a most miserable kinde of death. What must be as it pleaseth God (sayde Primaleon) who may enable my deedes to quittance thy words. Torques was very sorie for this desperate challenge, but durst not gaine-say it, and Primaleon intreated him, that if he were banquished, to returne with the rest of his people into Poland, and certifie Gridonia, how hee was Primaleon, because shee should take the lesse grieue for his death: withall, to pray her deliuer him Zerphira, and so to be her guide in conueying her thence. I beseech you say not so, answered Torques, your happy starres (I hope) doe bode you better fortune. The Giant returned backe, and Primaleon entred the gate of the Tower, holding a very strong Lance in his hand, praying the Heauens to be now his defender: the like did Torques and all the company, whose hearts were full of feare, because they stood in doubt of this Combats successe.

## CHAP. XXVI.

How *Primaleon* combated with the Giant, and being at the very point of obtaining victory, by the Giants treason, he was enchanted in the Pallace.



After that the Giant had willed his men to withdraw themselves, and commaunded silence, hee made choice of a sayze large place before the Castle, because hee would haue his wife beholde the Combate: Then said he to the Knight: now fir, to the purpose, let vs see what you can doe: for questionlesse thou seemest to be a man of great spirit, that thou darest be so bolde as to enter fight with me. Primaleon and the Giant encountred so roughly,

ly, I  
who  
him  
when  
might  
whic  
D  
smot  
as w  
stren  
made  
send  
the  
self  
male  
ly tra  
his st  
not a  
more  
foote  
by an  
to the  
wing  
no lo  
mind  
one v  
man  
in soc  
ance  
the n  
maki  
self  
perm  
quiet  
them  
Capt



ly, as both were dismounted, and the Giant wounded, who being huge and heavy, could not so quickly recover himselfe, as Primaleon (being nimble and active) did, when drawing forth his sword, hee came to the Giant a mighty stroke on the right arme, before he got up, with which blow he was (in a manner) maimed.

No sooner had the Giant recovered his feete, but hee smote two such dangerous strokes on Primaleons shield, as would have troubled him very sore, if the Giants strength had not bene much impaired by his hurt: which made Primaleon to be very circumspect of his blowes, defending and scaping them by his excellent dexterity. When the Giant saw how skillfully his adversary still saved himselfe, twice or thrice he sought to close with him: but Primaleon (fore-seeing what peril might ensue thereby) lightly traversed up and downe, evermore keeping the point of his sword still in his face. Gataru seeing this way he could not advantage himselfe, his strength still weakening more and more, by the losse of his blood which streamed forth abundantly, determined to revenge his mis happe by another meane, making shew of flight, and so ranne into the enchanted Pallace: but Primaleon fiercely following him, sayd; He should not so escape him: and was no sooner in the pallace, but hee lost his senses presently, and minding none of this worlds occasions, threw his sword one way, his shield and helmet another, walking on as a man newly metamorphosed. The Giant seeing hee was in such estate as he desired to have him, said: This vengeance is sufficient for mee, here will I thus keepe thee till the day of thy death. So went he forth of the Pallace, making fast the gates after him, going into his owne Castell to have his wounds healed, commanding his men to permit the vanquished knights followers depart thence quietly, without offering them any injury, for he thought them punished sufficiently, by the losse of so worthy a Captaine. Whereupon, he that stood aloft in the watchtower,



tower, called to Torques, saying: Except he meant to lose  
 his life, both he and his companions should get them some  
 gone, for his Captaine was in such a place, as (while he  
 lived) he could neuer be released: Wherefore, if he made  
 any long abiding there, both he and his were sure to die  
 the death. At which words Torques so wofully lamented,  
 as his means were able to haue moued the rocks to com-  
 passion: But they of the Island laughed him to scorne,  
 which caused him in great discontent to return to his ships,  
 yet minding not to depart thence, till he had performed the  
 bittermost he could against them. Being in the ship, he  
 beganne his complaints agayne, and so did Primaleons  
 Dwarfie falling downe in a swoone, when he heard what  
 disastrous chance had befallen his Lord: But being come  
 to himselfe agayne, so strange were his pittifull lamenta-  
 tions, as heauen it selfe took pittie on his miseries, and no  
 one present grieved lesse than he, except Purenthe Primale-  
 ons Squire, who embracing the Dwarfie in his armes,  
 sayd: I pray thee (my friend) hurt not thy selfe so much,  
 for were I assured of my masters losse, I should be no lesse  
 tormented than thou art: but I am certaine we shall re-  
 couer him againe, and that very soone, I dare a warrant  
 thee. Torques wondered when he heard Purenthes words,  
 demanding of him, how he knew this assuredly: By  
 the meanes of a Knight (sayd he) who fore-tolde me all  
 that hath hitherto hapned, and that Primaleon shall be de-  
 liuered from this trouble, by a Knight of incomparable  
 valor. Now beganne Torques and the rest to be some-  
 what better pacified, resolving to stay there, and defend  
 themselves so well as they could. Primaleon, who was  
 farre from thinking on any of these matters, found in the  
 Pallace the before named Lady of the Island, who remai-  
 ned there enchanted likewise, as hath bene declared, the  
 Pallace being of very curious workmanship, and seemed  
 the fairest in the whole world. There fell the Knight to  
 embracing the Lady, and each liked so well of the others  
 compa

compa  
 with b  
 Ladie  
 wante  
 associa  
 king t  
 them,  
 Princ

Ho



intell  
 ly ga  
 Care  
 gane  
 the s  
 poze  
 neit  
 sonn  
 our  
 (by p



company, as in the end he accomplished what he would with her. Thus spent he his time in walking with the Lady and her daughter, who were very glad (albeit they wanted the benefite of good discourse) to be so familiarly associated with this knight. But let vs leave them walking there, untill more convenient leasure to speake of them, and returne we now vnto the passionate knight Prince Edward, and his beautifull Mistresse.

## CHAP. XXVII.

How Prince *Edward* beeing in the Garden with the faire Princessse *Florida*, borrowed such a kindnesse of her, as she was very sorie for, after shee had afforded her Louer that fauour, and could by no meanes call it backe againe.



**V**lian was infinitely glad, that his Lady granted him the benefite of conference by night: wherefore after her last parting from him, all the night long hee could take no rest, deuising how he might get her thence with him into England, before the Emperour should haue intelligence thereof. Before it was day, he got on his homely garments againe, being so pleasant and merry, as the Gardners wife wondered thereat: to whom this day hee gaue great store of riches, found (as he told them) among the supposed treasure hidden in the Garden, so that the poore folkes could no longer conceale such plenty of riches, neither knew in what sort to recompence Iulian. Faye sonne (quoth the Gardners wife) we must needs repute our selues happy, hauing bene before so poore, and now (by your meanes) haue attained to such wealth.

Ray,



## 210 The second Booke of the History

May (quoth Iulian) there is much more behinde, for I hope to find a greater word than as yet I haue done. This he spake in regard of the princeesse Florida, meaning (with her) to get the Gardner and his wife, because no harme might ensue to them by the Emperour, for her departure: purposing to bestow great possessions on them, when they arrived in his fathers Kingdome.

Florida this day came downe into the Garden, both pleasant and bashfull for her last conference, as she had not the boldnes to looke vpon her Loner, albeit her heart was neuer well, but when she might see him, for it seemed in her conceit, that her Damsells were acquainted with her pynate familiaritie.

Iulian was abashed likewise, to come before her so basely apparrelled, in regard she liked him so well in his better garments, and desired alwayes to behold him no otherwise.

So soone as this modest mode was a little quailed, she called him vnto her, as she was wont to doe, lest her Ladies any way should grow iealous of her behauiour, and then beganne thus. I thinke you haue forgotten (Iulian) what charge I gave you to sing and play in companie of my Damosells, I know no reason, but you might haue done so much at my request.

Heauen forbid Madame (quoth he) that I should be carelesse of any thing you commaund me, for my desire agreeth at nothing else, but to acknowledge the honour you do me, in liking or allowing any part of my uttermost seruice, I being a wretch of so meane and base condition. As say not so Iulian, said the Princeesse, I make good reckoning of thee indeed, and for thy parents sake loue thee not a little.

At these words he made offer to haue kissed her hand, but she caught it away and would not suffer him: then the Instruments being by her Ladies brought thither, she took great pleasure in hearing Iulian touch the strings,  
and



and answer the note with his most pleasing voyce : when Attaida, praying him to sing the same song againe, which he did the other day : he replied, That he had forgotten it, but was provided of another, which being set to a very sad note, he beganne in this manner.

Prince Edwards second Song in the Garden, to  
his diuine Mistresse.

**H**E that hath spent his time in silent mone,  
And ne'r saw merry minute in his life :  
To sad conceit makes all his sorrowes knowne,  
Who (to fore-stall pleasures ensuing strife)  
Tells him whole stories of sweete discontent,  
To adde more vigour to his languishment.

In such a Heauen of inward happinesse,  
My labouring thoughts are earnestly imployd :  
Hating the vulgar tracke of idlenesse,  
Wherein so many infant-wits haue ioyd,  
And finding that it doth such comfort bring,  
Kinde Discontent, I haile thee as my King.

This Dittie Iulian (quoth the Princesse) is ouer pen-  
due, it makes thee too much perplexed in the singing, and  
be as passionate in the hearing : do then as skillfull Musi-  
tions vse, meddle a little sweetes with a great deale of  
solwe, and once againe (for my sake) let vs heare what  
can be said in a pleasanter key. Madam answered he) you  
only haue power to command my uttermost ability, and  
being not vnmindfull of your late charge, though not so  
bolde as to intrude my selfe till I was called for, looking  
ouer



208 The second Booke of the History

ouer my Papers this morning, I found out this Canonet, which, how blent or rose soever it be, I will commit it to your gracions hearing: and afterward beganne as followeth.

Prince Edwards third Song in the Garden  
to the Princesse Florida.

**B**Eauty sate bathing by a Spring,  
where fairest shades did hide her:  
The windes blew calme, the Birds did sing,  
the coole streames ranne beside her.  
My wanton thoughts enticde mine eye,  
to see what was hidden:  
But better memorie sayd, Fie,  
so vaine desire was chidden.

Into a slumber then I fell,  
and fond Imagination  
Seemed to see, but could not tell  
her feature or her fashion.  
But euen as Babes in dreames doe smile,  
and sometimes fall a weeping.  
So I awakde, as wise that while,  
as when I fell a sleeping.

Well pleased with this Song the Princesse shewed  
her selfe, and returning Iulian many thanks for it, wal-  
ked by her selfe, to consider better thereon. Afterward she  
concluded with Attaida, that night to come downe into  
the Garden, unknowne to Iulian, because she found grea-  
test



self contentment therein : and performing her determi-  
 nation, she found him sleeping vnder a tree, where sitting  
 downe softly by him, the faire light of the Moone was so  
 auayling to her, that very perfectly she might discerne his  
 countenance, whereupon she thus began to her selfe. *Oh*  
*Heauens*, what wonders are these? that a knight so rare-  
 ly accomplished, should in this manner disguise himselfe  
 for my sake? my selfe being likewise so carryed away in  
 affection toward him, as (contrary to modesty) by se-  
 cret stealth I must needs thus come and see him. Thus  
 speaking, many a sweete kisse she bestowed on his deli-  
 cate soft cheek, yet he not feeling them, in regard he slept  
 very soundly: Then taking him gently by the hand, with  
 a voyce trembling she thus proceeded. Deare friend, how  
 canst thou sleepe thus carelesly, and minde not thy *Fleri-*  
*da*, who is come to keepe her promise? Well wist thou  
 thinke my loue true and vnswayned, which against my de-  
 gre and duty thus constraineth me. *Julian* seeming much  
 troubled in his sleepe, started suddenly, and awaked, when  
 beholding the *Princesse* so neare him, sayd. *Alas*, what  
 dreame is this? I haue all this while bene awake, in re-  
 gard of heart-breaking griefes, and soule-tormenting pas-  
 sions, yet when all my lines glorie sitteth thus neere mee,  
 my dull body slept, though my spirit was my mindes true  
 waking *Sentinell*. Pardon mee this fault (*Sweete Ma-*  
*dame*) and let mee forget with this admirable kindnesse,  
 that thus you vouchsafe to comfort mine affliction. Who  
 loveth (quoth she) must needs seeke remedy, and you ta-  
 king delight in my company, I hold it a sinne to deprive  
 you of it: which though in me is more than seemely, yet if  
 you hold it not immodest, I shall thinke my fault the lesse.  
*Good Madame*, sayd *Julian*, forbear such speeches, this  
 fauour (I hope) your selfe shall shortly perceiue, neyther  
 to be in vaine bestowed, or any offence thereby commit-  
 ted. What houre (quoth she) haue I long expected, and in  
 hope thereof at the length (more than modestly for your



210 The second Booke of the History

lake) I make no care of incurring danger or dishonour. Both which (said he) shall you neuer stand in need to feare, so please you but to credit me, that no deceit is intended: and were it not my only contentment in this place, where you make me endlesse happy by your heavenly presence, I would make my selfe knowne to the Emperour, who understanding what I am, I doubt not but will gladly yield to what I desire, but I will first stay the returne of Primaleon. Florida was well contented he should so do, and thus they spent this night in the fresh coole aire, and among the flowers which sented most sweetly, and many nights afterward mette there in this manner, till newes came to the Court, concerning Primaleon (as already hath bene told you) which made the Princesse exceeding foyfull, and to make her pleasure the more perfect, that night she went downe into the Garden, where taking her Lover by the arme, shee walked along with him in this manner. Sir (replied she) I hope my brother Primaleon will shortly be returned, very faine would I haue him here, that you might declare your selfe to the Emperour my father, and so our desires be afterward accomplished. As she had thus spoken, he sweetly embraced her, sitting both downe vnder a tree for farther conference. Now Attaida, who all that day found her selfe not very well at ease, perceiving the Lovers talke so quietly together, thought it great pittie to trouble them, and sitting alowse off, I know not how, but there (in good sooth) shee self fast asleepe: which the Knight well noting, he now purposed to borrow a further fauour of his Ladie, than ever yet hee had desired, as being the nearest way, to be assured of her for his returne to England; whereupon, occasion so fitly offering it selfe, hee did what hee durst neuer before attempt, because Attaida euermore was in company. So, after some few amorous ceremonies (in such cases bled) he moued the Argument, and shee (for a while) stood vpon absolute deniall: but in the end (after many nayes) they made this conclusion, that



that of a faire Maid, she was now become as faire a woman. Perhaps (and I thinke no lesse) but he was passing well pleased therewith, Mary she, hauing a little better considered on the matter, that a floure cropte from the stalk, could neuer after containe his former beauty; displeased, angry, or how I cannot tell, but she brake forth into these speeches.

As Iulian, now I well perceine, that whatsoeuer you haue hitherto done, was onely to delude me: I imagined, you would neuer haue attempted any thing against my will, and durst you now contend with me in this unkind manner: you may be ashamed of your behauiour, for now I doubt you, and take you to be no such man as hitherto ye seemed, because you haue broken faith and promise with me. Wretch as I am, what shall I do: Thus am I resolved to liue no longer, for by death shall I reuenge on my selfe, the hainous wrong and disgrace I haue done the Emperour my father, and so leaue you likewise satisfied, enioying what you would haue: Nay, thinke not that I dissemble, for I verily intend it, Death will giue end to my sorowes, and cutte off the worlds pointing at me, then may you report, entire griefe (for so soule a deede) abridged my daies, and made a full period of all my languishments. With these words, the teares streamed abundantly from her eyes: and he seeing her thus mightily offended, casting himselfe at her feet, replied. For Gods cause (Madam) be more pittifull vnto me, and lesse angrie with your selfe: for except you pardon what is past, I am the first will beginne this tragedy, that my soule may receive the punishment it hath iustly deserved: assuring you withall, you can not take my trespassse more offensively, than I doe my selfe, neither can reuenge it more cruelly, than I haue courage to ad vpon my person. Why should you talke of destroying your selfe: The verie words are torturing weapons to my soule, whereby it ill appeareth, that you rest resoiued of the loue I beare you, whence this



error proceeded, if so you please to commit it. Imagine me no lper or treacher in my words, I am a Knight, and so well discended, as the Emperour will rest satisfied, and be contented that I shall enjoy you in marriage. Then pardon me I pray you, else you will compell mee to such an extremity, as here before your face to do violence on my selfe, if nothing else can cause you be better assured of mee. The Princesse beholding Iulian so deeply disquieted, appeased somewhat her anger, and to the end he should doe himselfe no harme, answered thus: In sooth Iulian, you haue so much offended me, as I could find in my heart neuer to forgive you: but because Soule and Body shall not perish together, I will remit this crime, whereof my selfe am the onely cause; for had not I bene so gracelesse as to come hither, this scandall to mine honour could not haue bene committed: But thus may the world condemne mee of folly and lightnesse, which causeth me hate my selfe greatly, that you were so bolde to abuse me in such presumptuous manner, which will be a perpetuall blot to all my linage. With these wordes she arose, and Iulian hauing indifferently perswaded her, suffered her to depart: then came shee and wakened Altaida bitterly bawling the houre when she fell asleepe, which made her start vp amazedly, demanding why shee was so displeased.

Much better (replied the princesse) I had neuer bene borne, to come this night as I did downe into the garden: so strong shee vp into her Chamber, but yet so quietly (for all her anger) as none of her Damosells saw or heard her. Being laid in bed, no sleep could fasten on her eyes, so impatient was she for that which could not be holpen: for albeit shee loued the Knight marvellous entirely, yet shee meant not to bestow such a gift on him, untill she had attained to further knowledge of him. Unhappy Princesse (replied she) how small a while hath my felicity endured? My brother Primaleon trauells through the world to enlarge his fame and greatnesse, and I am borne to obscure the

the glo  
ded wo  
kept be  
siderin  
but the  
nes an  
light a  
a wo  
mean  
ter sha  
impat  
Tray  
her to  
death  
nate  
for if  
my m  
them  
cruell  
conte  
me, i  
I ha  
of me  
like l  
wala  
inve  
fared  
to do  
in be  
Prin  
gers  
and  
con  
sing  
tione  
nelle



the glorious splendor thereof here at home. So highly offended was she with her selfe, that three daies together she kept her bed, whereat her damoels marvelled not a little, considering shee had heard newes of her brother Primaleon; but she covered her discontent to them, with excuse of sickness and debility of body, which would not permit her delight according to her owne minde. Attaida durst not speak a word, knowing her selfe somewhat culpable, yet by her meanes a peace was concluded, as more at large hereafter shall be declared. Iulian seeing his Lady sing away so impatiently, begins to chide with himselfe as followeth. Trayterous and disloyall heart, how durst thou displease her who hath only power over thee? what meanest thou death, that thou comest not to dispatch a most unfortunate Knight, which neuer hitherto lived in any pleasure? so if my passed loves might any way be reckoned great, my miseries at this instant may well be said to surpasse them: but how can I tearme them loves, which prove so cruell torments to my divine mistress? why did I not content my selfe with the especiall favour shee afforded me, in comming hither so kindly to comfort me? if now I have lost that heavenly benefit, alas, what shall become of me hereafter? Thus spent he all the night in these & such like lamentations, and seeing shee restrained her wonted walking in the garden, he was ready to die with griefe, intreating the Gardeners wife to goe see how the princes fared, who would not speake to her now as she was wont to doe. knowing (by her) this griefe was partly occasioned, who returning said to Iulian, what shall we doe now? the Princesse is sicke, and will not speake to me. Like daggers of these words stab Iulian to the heart, walking up and downe all that day, not speaking one word, neither could he at night close his eyes together, when discouraging with himselfe on many matters, purposing with patience to support these griefes, in regard his boleanesse had so offended his mistress, and on the morrow he



214 The second Booke of the History

he came to his mother, saying. We doe very ill in making so small account of the Princesse, seeing she is sicke, let vs gather some fruit to carry her, and Ie goe along with ye, to see if we can make her merry: whereto she consented, and so went to prouide themselves accordingly. During this while, the Princesse meditating on her anger, sometime iudged her selfeouer-crucell to Iulian: then againe she would wish her selfe dead, rather then this escape of hers should be knowne, especially if Iulian were not a Gentleman, and so could not any way certainly perswade her selfe. The Emperesse hearing of her sickness, came to see her, and (she being gone) the Gardeners wife (prouided of the choicest fruits) with Iulian came likewise into the Princesse's chamber, where falling on their knees: Madame (quoth the good olde woman) see here what goodly fruit, we haue brought ye, so please ye eate of them, they will quickly make ye well againe.

Florida casting her eyes on the Knight, fetching a deepe sigh, said: No mother, the fruit is too bitter, and partly causeth my disease, because I haue eaten too many of them. Think not so good Madam, replied the Gardeners wife, they haue a good taste, and cannot any way be hurtfull for ye. Iulian durst not open his mouth to speake, neither indeede could he, so full of griefe he was to see the Princesse in this estate: who well perceiving his passion, took pity on him, lone being of greater power, (in this case) than anger and said. How durst thou be so bolde (Iulian) to enter my chamber? Knowest thou not, that no body comes hitther without my leave? Madame (quoth he) when my mother tolde me ye were sicke, it grieved me so much, as I could not forbear, but must needs come see ye: then she breathing forth another bitter sigh, thus replied. Care not thou (Iulian) though I die, the Emperour my father will thinke on thee, because he is so well affected to thy father. When he heard her thus speake, his griefe was so great, as he had no power to returne any answer, and she  
very



very well noted it, being glad that he loved her so effectually, then loath to entreate his anguish, shee began more pleasantly, in this manner.

I pray thee tell mee Iulian, wouldst thou be sorrie if I should die? I hope I shall die my selfe (quoth he) rather than live to see that day, for if my life should not end by the losse of yours, yet would I banish my selfe from this countre for ever, being robbd of her, to whom I only dedicated even all my bittermost services. I beleue thee, said the Princeesse, yet take no thought for mee, because this sicknesse I hope will shortly weare away, and I shall doe well enough: but now get thee gone, for I would not haue my Physicians come and finde thee here. If I depart (quoth he) it is much against my will, because I had rather stay and doe ye any service: and indeede he was very loath to leave the chamber, so wondrous beautifull seemed the Princeesse, as she lay in her bed. Attaida attended for him at the chamber dore, to know wherein hee had so offended her Lady: wherefore she went along with him, saying. Alas, what shall I doe if the Princeesse die: doubtlesse it will likewise be the endigge of my life: heauens will restore her againe (replied Iulian) therefore neuer entertaine such disconsolate thoughts. I will walke along with ye (quoth she) to gather some hearbs in the Garden and this shall serue me as an excuse to talke with ye: so taking him somewhat out of sight, shee proceeded thus. I pray ye Sir tell mee what injury haue ye offered the Princeesse, that she should be thus extreamely offended? I dare not aske her the question, therefore doe you resolve me herein. What would ye haue me say? quoth he, much better had I neuer bene borne, than endure such griefe, for her sake in that she will credit nothing which I tell her. The vnrestful lone I beare her, made me a little bolder than perhaps) became me, which had I knowne she would haue taken so haltonly, a thousand deaths would I haue abidder, ere I had so displeased her. But seeing now it cannot  
be



216 The second Booke of the History

be recalled, I beseech ye speake to her on my behalfe, tell her, except the sooner shee pardon mee, she is like to heare what will more offend her: for if shee count her selfe wronged, I will reuenge it on mine own life, albeit shee made not grieue hereat so extreamely, if shee regard but what seruice I haue done her, and bid her perswade her selfe, before any long while that be expired, I will raise her to such honoz as she hath deserued, because she once said I was soueraigne of her heart, which made me lesse fearefull to aduenture on mine owne. When Attaida perceaued how the case went with the Princesse, that such an exchange had bene made, as now most needes stand to ratifie the bargaine, she likewise waxed a little angry thereat, and said.

Now in good sadnes ye are well worthy to be chidden: but seeing it is done and past, let the matter be discretly ordered, least we chance to marre all, haue a care to your behauiour, that her honoz be not any way scandalized, for I will deliuer your answer in such sort, as shall qualifie her anger, and obtain your pardon: but see that your selfe delay not the time ouer long, in perfecting the meanes of both your hearts contentment.

That shall be done quickly (quoth he) if she be willing thereto, and so please her to pardon mee, I will declare it to her my selfe. Attaida taking leaue of him, returned againe to the chamber, where she met the Whisitons comming away, and going nere the beds side, she intreated the Princesse to pacifie her selfe a while, in regard she had taken no rest all that night, then causing the other Damoselles to depart the chamber, they being alone together, thus she began. I merueille (Madame) that you will be so displeased with Iulian, for a matter which but expresseth your own hearts affection to him, for if you determine to except him for your husband what reason can pee then alleadge to be angry? If ye dare aduenture in secret to conferre with him, ye must not thinke but he will make

offer

offer o  
giues  
gard h  
to be  
loue b  
passe  
which  
fesse)  
but it  
day y  
stantl  
the lik  
and y  
marri  
pen to  
loue b  
this m  
such e  
Mist  
die ab  
derim  
be b  
to ha  
likin  
sayin  
S  
ing v  
rie, b  
my f  
wise  
reco  
brea  
Atta  
she p  
her  
for



offer of such kindenes as a lover should doe: whereby hee  
gives assurance that he meaneth no dissembling, in re-  
gard he hath toleepe nothing, but you shall finde the same  
to be most certaine. In consideration whereof, if your  
love be such as you have profest to him, for his sake let  
passe remembrance of this small offence, because they  
which love perfectly, ever doe the like. He did well (I con-  
fesse) in shewing your selfe displeased at what was done,  
but it followes not, that either you or he should therefore  
say your selves: Abandon these weake thoughts, & con-  
stantly resolve on what shall ensue. Have ye forgotten that  
the like fortune befell Quene Griana your grandmother,  
and yet (at length) the two loyall lovers were joyned in  
marriage together: Doe ye thinke the like will not hap-  
pen to you? Iulian is of great vertue and desert, if then ye  
love him, ye ought both to live and die for him: without  
this needlesse tormenting your selfe, he being a knight of  
such esteeme, as your happines is not matchable, to be the  
Mistresse of his affections. So many matters did the La-  
die alledge to her, that she alfred her angrie spleene, consi-  
dering it was now past redresse, & more care should now  
be used for concealing such a fault, than by indiscretion  
to hazard publique suspition thereof: the Princesse both  
liking and allowing her reasons, weeping embraced her,  
saying.

Sweet friend, ye have much comforted mee, and see-  
ing your counsel is so good, there is no sense to the contra-  
rie, but I should follow it. No fault is in Iulian, but only in  
my selfe, then seeing none but I have offended, I were un-  
wise to belonger displeased, but rather take hart a fresh and  
recover my former estate againe, for your words have  
breathed new life into me. Therein ye doe well, replied  
Attaida, & Iulian by me shall understand your intent: so  
she purposed this day to forsake her bed & goe see him, for  
her stomacke was come downe, and she called presently  
for viualles, because she had fasted ever since  
this



this angry mood began, Making himselfe ready in very costly garments, at night shee went downe into the garden with her Ladies, where shee found her loue in great perplexity: but so soone as he beheld her, he became exceeding ioyfull, and approaching the place where shee sate, said, I am glad (Madame) to see ye so well recovered. Such are the wondrous workes of God, quoth she, who giveth health, and changeth hearts when hee pleaseth, Iulian understood her words well enough, thanking the God of loue in his heart, for being so mindefull of him. Afterward he spake to Artaida, returning her infinite gratulations, for causing the Princesse come downe this night into the Garden, that he might be assured of her pardoning him: then falling on his knee humbly before her, said, Gracious Madame, am I so happy, as to be pardoned for the offence I made ye? Hea Iulian (quoth she) thou art pardoned already, but rise, and kneele not, for it becommes not him who hath such power over me, to be thus on his knees, and I to suffer it: so raising him by the hand, and causing him to sit down in a place convenient by her, she began againe in this manner. Iulian, I know not what stone is reserved for vs, but I wonder I was so mindefull of my selfe, to admit so great a favour, without better knowledge of ye.

No harme is done sweet Madame, quoth hee, except you take it so, for though as yet ye are ignorant of me, ye will know mee better when I shall make yee Queene thereof I would haue ye so remaine assured. My Lord (quoth she) for your sake will I endure whatsoever befalls me, I am yours only, and hope you take no delight in detaining a poore Damsell: then being altogether at your disposing, I beseech ye beare your selfe in such sort, that I be no way disparaged. Why now, replied the Prince, am I the happiest man in the world, inioying her grace which euer I most desired. All her former ranour and disdaine was now utterly forgotten, sitting talking with her

her  
befor  
to li

H  
fran  
Knig  
Edwa



he w  
ted to  
this

I  
bare.  
Gran  
glasse  
dim  
lesse  
bare.  
Gl  
if you  
there  
neuer  
for a  
cerne



her knight in most kinde and louing manner, not parting  
befoze they were both solemnly contented, intending thus  
to liue and loue for euer.

# CHAP. XXVIII.

How a Damosell came to the Emperours Court, with a  
strange Aduenture of a looking-Glasse, which many  
Knights made prooffe of, but could not finish: how Prince  
Edward afterward came to trie it, and had the honour of it.

**T**he Emperour sitting in his hall, ve-  
ry pleasant, with his Lords & Bar-  
rons, for the newes he had receiued  
concerning Primaleon: a Damosell  
richly attyred suddenly entred, with  
two Squires attending on her, and  
shee humbling her self at the Empe-  
rours foote, to kisse his hand, which  
he would not permit her, because no Ladies were admit-  
ted to the fauour, but such as himselfe pleased to grace in  
this manner: afterward, she thus began.

I come to this Court, my Lord, in hope to finde him  
here, who (to his owne honour) shall make prooffe of a  
strange Aduenture, which is this Myrrour of Looking-  
glasse, the onely admirable thing in the World: blacke,  
dim and obscure it is, except it be in a knights hand match-  
lesse for valour. If it be my fortune to finde such a one  
here, then shall y<sup>e</sup> beholde no meane meruailes in this  
Glasse. For after it is once become bright and clere, then  
if your Grace, or any other take it in his hand, he shall  
there behold the Ladie whom he loneth, although she be  
nener so farre distant from him. The like vertue hath it  
for any Ladie or Damosell looking therein, she shall dis-  
cerne her husband or lover: if she see him looke pleasantly  
and



and ioyfull in countenance, then he loves her truly and effectually, but if he looke fower, fallen and cloudie, it declareth evidently that he is not loyall.

The Glasse hath strange qualities, answered the Emperour. I wish the Knight might be found in this Court, by whose meanes we should beholde such meruailles: therfore let vs see the Glasse I pray ye. I will shew it ye presently my Lord, quoth he, but I must first tell ye, that no married Knight hath power to end this Adventure. I thinke so, said the Emperour, notwithstanding let vs see it. The Damosell called one of her Squires to her, and taking the Glasse forth of a case, shewed it openly, being curiously garnished with golde round about, and beautified with many stones of great value, but the place for sight in the midst, was so darke and blacke, as if it had bene made of a coale.

After the Emperour had it in his hand, not a little merueiling thereat, he said: Doubtlesse the Knight must be exceeding vertuous, who shall make this Myrroure looke bright and clere, and when he had considered thereon a while, he gaue it to Polendos, saying, Heere Sonne, take you this Glasse, for had not you a wife, I am perswaded this Adventure were onely reserved for you: he receiuing it, answered, Neuer say so my Lord, for seeing you have not the power to cleare it, I thinke it must still continue as it is. I tolde ye (quoth the Damosell) to the Emperour, the Adventure was not for him, because it would grieue him to grant me the fauour, which he must doe, for whom the honour hereof is reserved, and hee that gaue mee the Glasse, said, none (of what degree soener) but a young Knight could affect it.

If it be so, said the Emperour, then let none of these married Knights hazard their fortune: whereupon, Polendos admiring the sumptuousnes of the Glasse, deliuered it to Abenunco standing by him, saying. Holde friend, you haue not a wife, lets see if you be valorous enough to make

make  
plyed  
any b  
it cha  
to Per  
sacces  
went  
finish  
bery  
fate  
what  
ther:  
there  
straw  
whom  
your  
the C  
follo  
Kings  
abod  
ly to  
brigh  
decet  
bery  
in th  
red:  
nour  
the C  
prece  
to be  
corol  
da br  
Cour  
they l



make it become bright. Seeing you put it in my hand, replied Abenunco, I will looke in it, though farre from any hope to see the meruailes talked of : but perceiuing it changed neuer a lot, ashamed of himselfe, he reached it to Perned in the Duke of Peras sonne, who had no better successe than his companion : so among many Knights it went from hand to hand, but none was so fortunate as to finish the Adventure, which made the Damosell grieue very much, saying, still all her labour proued but in vaine. Faire Virgin, quoth the Emperour, be not so offended, what happens not one day, may be performed on another: I would aduise ye to sojourne here a while, because there daily resorteth hether many good Knights, some strangers, and others appertaining to this Court, among whom, some one mans good hap may be to accomplish your desire, in meane time stay, and keepe company with the Emperesse.

The Damosell humbly thanking him, said, she would follow his aduice, because she was so desirous to find that Knight: and the Emperour the more willingly bided her abode, hoping his sonne Primaleon would retorne shortly to the Court, and so the Myrrour should recouer his brightnesse by him, but he found himselfe therein greatly deceived.

The enchanted Bird in the Pallace, shewed her selfe very cheerefull at the Damosells entering the Hall, in that (by her meanes) Primaleon should be deliuered: for which the Emperour did her the greater honour, sending one of the most principall Knights of the Court with her to the Emperesse, willing and expressly commanding, the Damosells entertainment to be very honorable, which she every way performed according to his desire. When she and her daughter Florida vnderstood the cause of the Damosells coming to the Court, they meruailed much thereat, especially when they beheld the Blasse. Good Lord (quoth Florida) that a



222 The second Booke of the History

Knights vertue should be so powerfull, great estate  
would I make of the Knight, who were so happie as to fi-  
nish this Adventure: this she spake, thinking on her Iu-  
lian, departing immediately to her chamber, intending to  
let her Loner vnderstand these newes, and comming  
downe to finde him in the Garden, said. Iulian, haue ye  
not heard of the strange accident in the Emperours my fa-  
thers Court: and so from point to point discoursed the  
whole matter to him.

Believe mee, quoth Iulian, it is an accident of great  
importance, and were I the Knight that could cleere the  
Mystery, I would right gladly proue the Adventure, to  
know the truth concerning her I loue, & I could wish she  
should doe the like by me. Ah Iulian answered the Prin-  
cesse, thou dost win the Cup, as better skild in wrestling  
than the rest: if then thy loue be loyal and honorable, why  
should not thy heart serue thee to make triall of the Mys-  
tery: Ladie, (quoth hee) if I will that true vnspotted  
loue could effect this wonder, nothing could discourage  
me from proue of my fortune, being perswaded to make  
it looke brighter than the Sunne, how darke or obscure so  
euer now it seemeth: but consisting on valour and knight-  
ly abilitie, it is not for me to meddle in such matters, nei-  
ther would I willingly be mockt by any one. A good ex-  
cuse, replied the Princesse, yet am I desirous to know  
her ye loue so wel, because (for your sake) I would doe her  
all the honoz I could deuise. The fauour (quoth hee) ye  
doe me herein is so great, as I shall neuer live to deserue  
the same, and assure ye, (if it were possible) I would shew  
ye her whom I loue, but she is too farre absent: neuerthe-  
lesse, to morrow will I depart hence to see her, & acquaint  
her with the good will ye beare her, which she will reioyce  
in, and be very proud of. But Iulian said the Princesse,  
will ye then leaue vs: in sooth it will proue a very great  
fault in ye, considering what account wee make of your  
company. I will returne againe (quoth he) with all the  
spede



sped I can be, to perforce any service you shall please to command me.

She well perceived, that he would needs goe proue the Adventure of the Glasse, which (for all her outward shew) highly contented her, and while she walked along the Garden, he intreated Attaida, to procure her Lady to meete him there at night, that he might conferre with her, before he went to trie his fortune. Attaida gave him counsell, to keepe himselfe from being knowne, and she feared not, but he would now win as great honor, as he did by the Garland of Roses. I thank ye, said Iulian, for wishing me so well, and will one day requite the paynes ye take for me.

At night the Princesse came into the Garden, and sitting downe by her Iulian, said: Am I still so unfortunate, that my poore heart can neuer enjoy one minute of quiet? Ah my Lord, how deere will your absence be to me? For Gods sake make no long tarrying away, to the end I may perceiue how loyally you loue me. Alas Madame, quoth he, needesse are these speeches to mee, for albeit I would tarry long hence, yet my heart could not endure it, being robbed of the endlesse comfort I receiue, by contemplating your celestiaall beautie. Neither doe I undertake this voyage, as thinking my selfe able to accomplish the Adventure, but for the desire I haue to assure ye of the vnsained loue I beare ye, which must be my onely helpe in triall of the Myrrour.

I doubt not (said he) but you will finish your attempt with endlesse honour, and my great ioy, in being present to behold the same: but I meruaile ye conceale your secret occasions from mee, not telling me the place whether ye goe when ye depart hence, who giues ye horse, armor, and such things as ye stand in neede of to be: it grieues me, that ye command not such matters at my hand, as being a service which I would gladly doe for ye.

Let it suffice sweet Madame (quoth he) at this present



I shall neede nothing, but your beateous companie, which I would continually haue, it is my hart onely comforter, my strengths augmenter, making me compleat in happines and all good whatsoever. If then I tell y<sup>e</sup> nothing concerning my priuate affaires, it is to make your top the more effectually, when ye shall perceaue that I deluded ye not: I haue seruants, who (in secret) keepe these needfull matters readie for me, let th<sup>e</sup>s answer satisfie ye therein, and desire not (as yet) to know more of me.

I shall enioy no quietnes of minde, said she, till I see what end our loue will fort vnto, and how long it will be, before these doubts shall be all resolued.

All which (quoth he) will be very speedely, and let mee request this of ye, some two or thre dayes hence to be in the Hall with the Emperour, for then will I be there, and receiue such vigour from your diuine presence, as shall enable me to conclude the Adventure. She promised to be there at the time appointed, and so spent most part of the night thus communing together, till at length they were enforced to part each from other.

Iulian obtained leave of the Gardener, to be absent thence for some thre or foure dayes together, alledging such an excuse, as he could not mislike, and finding Zaidell, he said, they must needes goe to the Lady Olymba: so riding along by Saint Georges arme, they came to the place where Bellager remained with his sister, they being not a little glad to see the Prince, because it now was vpon the departure thence of Olymba whom the Soldane had sent for home to his Court to ioyne in marriage with the Prince of Antioche, who long had impostuned the Soldane in this sute: but Olymba tolde Prince Edward, that she had no liking to meddle with marriage, till she might see his desire touching the Princesse folly accomplished.

Now when Bellager heard the Princes intent, concerning the Adventure of the Glasse, he would needes beare



beare him company. Gelying him two Armours of one likenes and device, which he had there already prepared, that so they might well traualle to the Court, and be to all unknowne.

Prince Edward liked his gentle offer, as also the Armour which was faire and good, Clodion once againe intreating his Master, that he might attend euer on him, because he desired to liue and dye in his seruice: but the Prince said hee must needs abide behinde, in regard his good Dogge Maiortes could not stay there without him.

Being both armed, they took leaue of the Lady, and departed thence by night, for their more assurance of secrecie: when they had cross the Sea, they rode all the night following a quite contrarie way, to make shew of their coming from another Countrie, resting themselves in a place which they deemed most convenient, setting forward thence to Constantinople, with no body in their company, but Zaidell onely.

No sooner were they arrived at the Pallace, and the Emperour thereof aduertised, but they had present admittance into the Hall, where entering armed as they were, they did reverence to his Maiestie, and humbly kissed his hand. My friends (quoth the Emperour) if ye be strange Knights, I desire that your coming hether at this time may not be in vaine, for I see ye are men likely to deale in any doubtfull matter: if ye come to approue the Aduenture of the Myrrour, let me tell ye before hand (though not to discourage ye) that many good Knights haue already attempted it, and failed: and in so saying, he commaunded the Damosell to be sent for. It is verie true my Lord, answered Prince Edward the cause of our coming hither is to see that Glasse, so much admired yet not as men insolently perswaded, that we can attaine to the Aduenturers performance, not imagining so proudly of our valour and ablenes: well may we misse the



## 226 The second Booke of the History

marke, as many more have done, endued with greater vertue, than any way can remaine in vs, so that if like shame betide vs, as hath done to them, yet our comfort is, we have more fellows in our hard fortune.

The Emperour willed them to sit downe, and lay by their helmets, to take the ayze a while, untill such time as the Damofell should come: but Prince Edward thanking him, said there was no such need, in regard they euer bled to goe thus armed.

These words raised immediate doubt in the Emperour, that this was the Knight who conquered the Rose-Garlands stout Champion, because he refused to take off his helmet; beside, he seemed as if he knew him by his speech, yet would he vse no more questions, till he beheld their successe in this present enterprise.

During this time, the Damofell was given to vnderstand how two Knights stayed in the Hall to proue her Glasse Adventure, whereof she being very foyfull, desired the Emperesse to goe along with her, that she might see what fortune these new-come knights should haue.

The Emperesse calling for her daughter, went on with the Damofell, who looking on them both, said: Alas, I thinke not these Knights so happie, to speede any better than the other before them. Then spake the Emperour to the Emperesse and his Daughter, saying: Nay, seeing we haue your companie, doubtlesse we shal see more meruailes this day, than hetherfo we haue done. I would it might proue so, replied the Emperesse, and being all set, the Damofell tooke forth the Glasse, which she deliuered to the Emperour, that he might present the Knights therewith.

Bellager, (being appointed of Prince Edward,) tooke it first, saying: To satisfie your minde Sir, I will holde it in my hand, not to gaine any honoz thereby, but to gaze on these stones of inestimable worth, for I will not expect it to become any brighter, but rather more bly dark

and



and obscure, as indeede it did. Florida knowing her Iulian, marvelled what knight this was in his company, as also to see them both so richly armed, whereupon she spake thus to her selfe: In sooth I haue iust cause to complaine of Iulian, who will tell me nothing of his private affaires, neither what hee is keepe company with him, the next time I conuerse with him, I will not leaue him till he tell me the truth of all.

All this while she eyed her loue earnestly, so did he likewise her, silently intreating her gracious assistance, and as he took the Glasse forth of Bellagers hand, aduancing himselfe forward, and deuoutly contemplating her most Angel-like countenance, he softly said: Now Madame or neuer, let your heauenly beauty helpe me. So soone had he turned the Glasse in his hand, but there presently issued from it such a brightnesse and splendour, as if it had bene a sudden flash of lightening, and the glasse which was so blacke and dimme, now appeared as it had bene cartously polished by some rare workeman. The Prince wondering hereat, and looking in the Glasse, beheld his Florida most sweetly reioycing, holding it somewhat nere himselfe, leaue others should espye it: but he needed not to be thus feareful, in regard no one could see her beside himselfe, and each loue saw his owne Lady, but none else. Florida and all the rest were glad, beholding this strange alteration of the Mirrour, & the Emperour rising to embrace Prince Edward, said: I see Sir that your vertue exceedeth al the rest, for now can I see my Emperesse at pleasure in this Glasse. It appeares Madame (quoth he to her) you neuer deceived me, because here is a plaine manifestation of your loyalty: then turning againe to the knight, thus he proceeded. Sir Knight, ye haue great reason to esteeme your selfe happy, in gaying the honour of this strange aduenture, this shewes your valour to be excellent, and matchlesse, else could ye neuer haue brought this Glasse to such brightnes. My selfe, quoth the Prince, and whatsoeuer



whatsoever abilitie remaines in me, is altogether at your  
 Majesties service. I would be glad replied the Emperour,  
 if it might be so, but ye vse these speeches to disapeint me  
 of any request I make unto ye, for I take ye to be the  
 same Knight, who won the Garland from murtherer Mai-  
 mond, tell me then (by your loyal & honoured word) whe-  
 ther I haue guessed aright or no. He tolde the Emperour,  
 that he was the same man: and without suffering him to  
 proceede any farther in discourse, the Damosell which  
 brought the Glasse thither, said. Sir Knight, well may I  
 blesse the houre of your birth, as also your fortunate com-  
 ming to this place, because ye must perforce somewhat  
 more for me, then yet ye haue done: wherefore I beseech  
 ye, by your knightly oath and the vntained loue ye beare  
 to the chiefe mistresse of your heart, that ye will not deny  
 me one request. Damosell (quoth Prince Edward) all  
 these coniuurations shall not neede. willingly I make y<sup>e</sup>  
 promise of whatsoever it be. Then say what I should doe  
 for ye, and assure your selfe of my bittermost ability: whe-  
 re thanking him, thus replied. The demand I make, is pre-  
 sently to haue ye goe hence with me, for in the place I will  
 bring ye to, your fame shall be enlarged to all posterities,  
 then be of good chere, and ride along with me. I am con-  
 tented (quoth he) but tel me withall, craves your busines  
 such hast, as ye may not abide here this day, to dispatch  
 an occasion which imports me very much: I can stay, said  
 the Damosell, but the space of one houre, our voyage must  
 be by Sea, and a Shippe is readie provided to conuay vs  
 where we should be. I am sorry (quoth he) our departing  
 must be so suddenly, but seeing it may be no otherwise, let  
 forward when ye please, for I will attend ye. When the  
 Emperour heard this he was deeply discontented, and  
 brake forth into these speeches: Damosell, ye doe mee  
 wrong in bearing hence this Knight, for I thinke he is  
 purposely come to perforce a promise which hee made  
 me, therefore am I loth he should depart til he haue done it:

yet



yet may he ioy in his especiall happines, for good Knights are continually transported from place to place still about highest enterprises. Whereupon he remembered what great adventures himselfe had accomplished, and how by going with the Lady that brought the sword, which hee obtained, he became great in fame, and gained his lones Mistress, wherefore hee said to the Knight: Doublesse your faire stars doe appoint you the very chiefe of all attempts, as we that see may witness by the adventure of the Myrrour performed in our presence: but seeing you must needs depart so soone, let me but intreate two things, the one, to lift up your Vener that I may behold your face, the other, to promise your returne hither againe, when you have effected for this Damosell what she requirerh. My Lord, said the Prince, if I escape with life, the Heavens favouring me, I will not faile to returne: and for the disarming of my head, before your selfe onely will I take off my Helmet, because I would not (as yet) be knowne to your Knights. It sufficeth (answered the Emperour) and I desire no more.

# CHAP. XXIX.

How all the Court was sorrowfull for the departure of Prince *Edward*, especially the Emperour and his daughter: how it was his good hap to arrive in the Island where *Primaleon* was enchanted.



Very soze was Prince *Edward*, that he must needs depart thence so hastily, even before he might take his leave of the Princesse his Mistress, and she on the other side was no lesse displeased, which converted all her former ioy for the adventures atchievement, into inward moenes



mones and heart-renting passions, making her colour alter so pale and wan, as Arraida perceiving it, taking her by the hand, desired to know the reason thereof. I finde my selfe very ill (replied the Princesse) and I would I had spared my being here at this time. No body else noted this change in her, they were all so busied in reuewing the Glasse, which according to the nature hereof before expressed declared the Louers zeale, or false dissembling, and thereby wrought diuers effects in them that thus approved themselves. The Emperour seeing some pleased, and some discontented, as also much trouble like to ensue about these Louers triall, taking the Glasse in his owne hand, and turning to the Emperesse, said: Madam, I would haue you now see, if I haue loued you heartily, or no, and continued in such loyalty as best beserued me. I am certaine thereof (quoth she) and need not this Glasse to proue the same, notwithstanding, she took it in her hand, and seeing the Emperour therein most ioyfull and pleasant, she sayd.

You may well deliuer the Damsell her mirror now, for I am perswaded of the loue you beare me, and continually hitherto haue done the like. He turning to the Damsell beganne thus: Behold faire virgine, your doubtfull Adventure is now finished, and the Knight staies ready to attend vpon you: tell me now, what meane you to do with this Glasse? My Lord (quoth she) the Glasse appertaines to the Knight, whose rare vertue made him able to change it in this manner, hee is to doe therewith as it pleaseeth himselfe: Hereupon Prince Edward receiving it from the Emperour, humbling himselfe at the Princesse feete, spake thus. Madame, I made you promise of my returne to the Emperour your fathers service, and to accomplish the same, you see me here as good as my word: but because I must of necessity depart againe with this Damsell, I pray you hold mee excused, once more I promise you, to come backe againe with all possible speede I may,



may, to perfoyme what ye ſee I can not do at this preſent. In meane while, I pray you keepe this Glaſſe for me till my returne, it is a meeke companion for the Garland, which in right appertayneth to none but you. Sir (quoth ſhe) I will gladly undertake the cuſtody thereof, at your request, albeit this Damoſells bringing it hither might well have bene ſpared, becauſe ſhe bindzeth you from abiding with the Emperour my father, for we more eſteeme your company, than the value of her Adventure: all which words ſhe uttered very angerly, her colour riſing therewith, as witneſſing her impatience for his parting, then to him ſhe thus ſayd. I thanke you, Sir Knight, for your willingnes to returne hither againe, as one deſirous (I ſee) to perfoyme your promiſe, but I will thanke you beſter hereafter, when I ſee this kinde offer of yours accompliſhed. Neuer make any doubt hereof ſweete Lady (quod ſhe) for it were eternall ſhame to breake promiſe with one of your degree. Shee took the Glaſſe, and no ſoner looked therein, but ſhe beheld her Iulian, even as ſhe was wont to doe when they met in the Garden, many in farre more pompe and maieltie, for on his head ſhe ſaw a very ſumptuous Crowne, and in his hand a royall Scepter, whereat ſhe admiring, and fearing her Damoſells eſpied as much as ſhe did, in ſome ſmall aſtoniſhment, ſhe let the Glaſſe fall to her breaſt. Now the Emperour was glad of his Daughters words to the Knight, as alſo for his leaving the Glaſſe with her, as a pledge of his returne, to abide in the Court: but ſeeing her ſomewhat troubled and amazed, he ſaid. Daughter, what have you ſene in the Mirror, that cauſeth you to ſeeme affrighted as it were?

My Lord (quoth ſhe) I wot not what I ſaw, becauſe I could not perfectly diſcerne what was repreſented; but I will looke no more therein, until the Knight which left it with me, be returned to this Court againe. At this inſtant the Emperour beganne to conceiue, that he was a Knight of ſome great birth, though thus he concealed himſelfe,



selfe, and came thither for his daughters loue, as Arnedes in former time did the like: this hee gathered, by his forwarones in desire to do her any seruice, as also by her looking in the Glasse, and altring in such manner as shee did, which suspition made him much desirous to beholde the Knight. Amandria tooke the Glasse forth of Florida's hand, beholding therein her loue Abenunco, which (God wot) pleased her not a little, and so from hand to hand it passed among all the other Ladies.

And as they seuerally declared their inward sorfulnes, euen so did the enchanted Bird the like, for at Prince Edwards entring the hall, she stretched forth her wings, and song most sweetly till his departing thence againe: where by the Emperour perswaded himselfe, that this Knight came thither, for his great honour. Now in regard that Prince Edward purposed to espouse Florida and make her his Quene, hee could not any way be challenged of treason, but whatsoever hee did, the honour of Knight-hood allowed.

The Damosell thinking she stayed ouer-long, bad the Knight to take his leane of the Emperour, because it was time to be plodding on their iourney. With all my heart (quoth he) euen when you please. Nay, said the Emperour, seeing I may not intreate your stay, I intend to see your face befoze you depart, else will my thoughts be no way satisfied.

With these words he arose, and taking the Knight by the hand, led him along to his Chamber, hee casting many wofull lookes backe vpon his Lady, who was as sorrowfull as hee, and every one cursed the Damosell for leading him thence. When the Emperour saw Prince Edwards countenance: Alas (quoth he) you do your selfe wrong to hide so faire a face. There is no remedy my Lord, said the Prince, as yet it must needs be so: so being loath to hinder him any longer, commending him to all good Fortune, hee forbare any further to trouble him. As hee looked on  
the



the Prince, remembered his Emperesse Agriola, whom he very much resembled, and observing his speech, perceived it was after the English manner altogether: yet he suspended his judgement upon his promise of speedy returning thither.

So after he had taken his leave of them all, away he went with the Damcell, Bellager and Zaidell: and the Emperour coming backe into the hall, gave great commendation of the Knights bravery, saying, he took him to be an Englishman, no other speeches passing amongst them, but all in praise of him.

The Prince Plendos looking in the Glasse, sawe his faire Francelina very gallantly disposed, albeit shee was very farre from thence, at home in his owne Court, which he could have wished otherwise: so when as they would know the successe of friends in love, whether they continued loyal or untrue, as also how men behaved themselves to their wives, evermore afterwards they had recourse to this Glasse.

The Princesse returned to her Chamber, where being alone with Attaida, she takes the Glasse againe to behold her Lover, and beholding him in the same manner she did before, with such a goodly Crowne of Gold on his head: she became molested with a thousand imaginations, especially fearing he would still absent himselfe thence. Alas my Lord (quoth she) what can I doe without you. In stead of rejoycing, I must live here solitarily, and except you hasten your returne, this very sight of you will be my death, because it serves to no other end, but only to increase my griefe and anguish.

Fie Madame, (quoth Attaida) now or never must you declare your selfe wise and well governed, that your love yet secret, come not to be publique suspected, his returne will be with all convenient speed, and in that perswasion give ease to your extremities. I hope so to, said she, but I will shew thee Iulian with a rich Crowne on his head, to  
the



the end you may perceiue hee spake nothing but truth, for in my conceit hee is some great Prince. I thinke no lesse, said Attaida, and looking in the Mirrour, she could discerne nothing at all: which the Princesse obseruing, that none but her selfe might there behold her louer she feared not afterward to vse the Glasse in company ouer Damofels, and thereby each time still comforted her affliction. By this time prince Edward was come to the sea side, where thus he beganne to conferre with Bellagr.

You see how I am constrained to trauell with this Damofell, not knowing how long I shall continue in this journey, let me intreate you then to commend me to your sister Olimba, desiring her, if my stay be extraordinary, that she would write vnto the prince Florida in excuse thereof, assuring her of my retorne to see her, so soone as time will permit me.

Sir Knight of the Dogge, answered Bellagery, is it then so: would ye thus send me away to be rid of my company: I see well ye make no account of my helpe where soeuer ye goe: at least then, if I may not assist yee with my seruice or otherwise, let mee goe with yee, bee it but to behold your promise and chualtrie: if yee loue me, ye will not denie mee this small request, for I desire nothing more than to attend vpon you.

As much doe I desire your companie likewise, replied Prince Edward, and seeing yee will needes traualle along with mee, then Zaidell shall bee sent backe, for hee cannot staid me here in any manner: so calling the Squire vnto him, gaue him instructions what hee should doe, and hee went thence toward the Infant Olimba, in meruallous beautie.

When Zaidell was come to her and informed her of Prince Edwards departure, she was much grieved, saying she would haue gone with him to doe him any seruice: and so was Clodian as deeply discontented, which made him thus complaine. Wherefore came I hether with the  
Knight



**K**nicht the Dogge, seeing continually he leaves me, and will not suffer mee to attend vpon him: The Infant comforted him with kinde perswasions, taking him and Maior along with her to Niquea, where they found good blage for their masters sake.

**W**hen the Knights and the Damascell were imbarqued, they set saile with a good winde, and twelue dayes together sailed on merily, till at length they arrived in the Isle of Canara, where Primaleon was enchanted in the Palace. there found they Torques and the other Knights, at despairing, not knowing what course to take, for some among them said, it was but a folly to stay there any longer, and Pureses wordes would prove to no purpose. Hereupon there grew great contention among them, for most part of those Knights which came from Ormeda said, they desired rather to dye, then to depart thence without the Knight of the clouen-Rocke: now the other of Polonia, they would needs be gone, yet were won to abide, at the intreatie of Torques.

**I**n conclusion, one Knight among the rest, who continually had enuied the vertues of Primaleon, saide, nothing in the world should cause him tarry there an houre longer: and so weighing his anchor, sailed toward Poland, with all the Troupes belonging to his Regiment, which made others (seeing his departure) to doe the like. But euen in the midst of this contention, Prince Edward put in amongst them, and with his Messell got nere the Flée, to know whence they were, where first he espied Torques, who said. Knights of Poland, aduise your selves what ye doe, think how deepe a discourtesie it is, thus to forsake the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke. Risdeno the Dwarf made the like complaint, saying: Knights of Poland, ye remember not the great seruices of that worthy knight, performed in defence of your Quene Gridonia, I beseech ye stay to succour him, for the Knight which must deliuer my Master, will now be here very speedely.

Prince



## 236 The second Booke of the History

Prince Edward hearing these words, was very glad, because the Princesse Florida had tolde him, that Primaleon tooke but his Dwarf with him, at such time as he departed from Constantinople: but being desirous to finde the truth hereof, he drew nere the ship where Torques was, and sayd as followeth. Tell me Sir Knight I pray you, what strife this is, and what Knight it is, for whose sake this Dwarf makes such moane.

Torques much reioyced when he saw the two strange Knights, hoping that one of them should deliver Primaleon, wherefore turning toward his people, he said: Charge by your hearts, my friends, for Heaven (I hope) hath not sent vs in vaine: so stepping by on the decke of the shippe, and speaking to Prince Edward, thus he beganne. Sir, all we whom here you see, embarked our selues with a Knight, whose equall, the worlds wide spaciousnesse containeth not; by stormy tempests were we cast vpon this Island, whereof a Giant (the most vile traytour this day living) is Lord and Ruler. So he discouered to him the manner of their landing, and how the Giant (being almost vanquished) fled backe, and thereby made the Knight follow him into a Pallace, where he remayneth enchanted: beside, how they had credibly vnderstood, a Knight would shortly arrive there, by whose hand he should be deliuered againe. When Prince Edward had listned to all this report, he knew presently it was Primaleon there enchanted, and to trauell vnknowne, he termed himselfe Knight of the Clowen Roche: withall, immediately hee remembered, that his Lady tolde him hee bare a Shield with such a Device, wherefore, imagining how acceptable service it would be to the Princesse, if hee could thence deliuer him, he thus answered Torques.

It is no marvell Sir, if the Giant vse treason, because the race of such men vse nothing else, which canserth you take this mis-bap the more patiently: as for the Knight of the Clowen-Roche, doubtlesse his vertues are so many,



as Heaven will regard him, and I will doe my uttermost  
for his deliuerance, seeing fortune conducted me so happily  
hether. Torques was not a little glad of this comfort-  
table answer, assuring the Prince, that if by manhood he  
could worke his freedom, neuer Knight performed a  
deed of more honour.

Prince Edward said, hee would presently goe to see the  
Giant, and taking Bellager aside, thus spake. Sir, the  
Knight here enchanted, is noble Primaleon, for whose  
deliuerance I must doe my utmost endeauour, because he  
is brother to the Princess Florida my Mistresse. My  
Lord (answered Bellager) Fortune hath directed your  
course hether, that ye should deliuer the greatest enemy ye  
hane, for he hath sought ye through the world, only to kill  
ye, it is strange that you should doe any such kindnes for  
him. As he replied, that hee made no reckoning thereof  
he went to the Damosell, saying: Faire Virgin, seeing  
it is our hap to arrive in this Island, let not my staying here  
offend ye, to deliuer the onely Knight living, which is so  
treacherously enchanted: and no sooner shall the same be  
finished, but I will then attend ye whethersoener ye will  
guide mee. For your sake (quoth she) I am content to  
bide here so long and will not cease to pray for your hap-  
py victory. So went Prince Edward and Bellager on  
land, as also Torques with his knights did the like, wher  
embracing the Prince, he wished him all good successe in  
this worthy enterprise. The Dwarfes fell downe and kis-  
sed his feete, making such pittifull lamentations, as mo-  
ued every one very much to bemoane him, but Prince Ed-  
ward said to him: Be of good chere (pretty fellow) for  
being so loyal to thy Master, the Heavens in fauour will  
the more regard thee. Thus went they on armed toward  
the Castle, they which were so hastie to be gone, staid, re-  
penting their indiscretion: and the Damosell abode in  
exceeding penituenes, because she feared the losse of her  
Knight.

Q

CHAP.



## CHAP. XXX.

How Prince *Edward* fought the Combat with the Giant *Gatarn*, and vanquished him, deliuering *Primalcon* out of the Enchantment, as also the Lady of the Island and her daughter.



The Knights conferred on many matters as they walked along, and by this time were come to the Bridge, where he that kept the Watch Tower seeing them comming, quickly made fast the gate: but Prince Edward called aloud to him, saying: Sirra, thou the companion of a traitour, goe tell thy master, here is a Knight that defies him to the Combat, for the villany he hath done, in not ending a former combat with a Knight, whom he hath enchanted, as being afraid to dye by his hand: tell him, I will appoyne him a traitour, and make him selfe confesse it, if hee dare enter the fight with mee, craning no other assurance of him, because already he had broken his faith.

He in the Tower made answer, his boldnesse should cost him deere, and so ranne to acquaint the Giant *Gatarn* therewith, who said: Shall I neuer be rid of these vagabonds, that come thus to trouble me at my Castle gates? He saw what lustie Lad this is, which dare thus insolently menace me on their behalfe. Forthwith he armed himselfe, and was so desirous to see this Knight, that he forgot, and would not bring a lance with him, least like mishap should befall him as did at first Jouling, which made him now determine to fight on foot: then with a very dreadful voyce, hee said: Where is this full hardie Knight,



**K**nicht, who dare so boldly challenge me to the Combat? I am he, answered Prince Edward, who will make thee confesse the treason done to a Knight, by thee (coward like) deceived and enchanted. Open the gate (quoth Gataru) presently, and let the prating pongster enter, that I may see what he is able to doe.

**I**mmediately the gate was opened, and the Knight no sooner within, but quickly shut againe. When Gataru saw his aduersary befoze him, he came to the place where they fought the first combat, and there both began to charge each other with such terrible strokes, as neuer was seene a fight more furious and dreadfull: for the Knight took all advantage offered, and bestirred him on every side with such wonderfull courage, as, though the Combat held out very long, yet was he still as fresh and nimble, as at the beginning. But so did not the Giant, whose rage & furie causing him fight carelessly, made him so wearie and well-nere spent, that he could not devise which way to turne himselfe from perill. At length, he determined to serue him, as he had done Primaleon befoze, faying to retire backe, as fearefull of him, and so made some speed into the enchanted Pallace: but Prince Edward perceiuing his intent, and doubting the place to be such, as indeed it was, held fast his good sword in his hand, the vertue whereof auailed against all Enchantments, and commending himselfe to the heauens, followed the Giant, saying:

**V**illaine, thou wilt gaine nothing by flying into this enchanted Holde. With these words, he reached him such a stroke on the legge, as the Giant (no longer able to containe himselfe) fell downe on the ground, thus crying out aloud.

**W**retch as I am, now am I dishonoured and vanquished, for breach of my word.

**I**t is well (quoth the Knight) that thou acknowledgest thy trechery: giuing him another blow on the arme hee held



held vp, as he felt himselfe thereby mortally wounded. When the Giant perceined he was almost slaine, and his enchanted Pallace now stood him in no stead at all, being very desirous to haue his life saued (as any man in his estate gladly would) spake humbly to Prince Edward in this manner.

Save my life Sir Knight, and let the vanquishing of me serue ye as sufficient, for I promise to doe whatsoever ye shall entoyne me to, whereas my death will but little aduantage ye. What account (quoth Prince Edward) is to be made of thy words, thou being a perjurde villain, and performest no promises? Good Knight, said the Giant, make triall of me now, for (by my former perurie) I confesse me selfe (through heauens iustice) thus worthely punished.

Well (quoth the Prince) vpon a condition I am content to spare thy life, but if thou deceiue mee, assure thy selfe neuer more to escape mee. So drew hee backe his Sword, vnarming the Giants head for more assurance of him, nor was he able to rise, till he prayed the Prince to withdraue himselfe thence: who promised him to harme him no farther, so he would deliuer him the Knight which was there enchanted.

Pass on a little further in the Pallace (quoth the Giant) and you cannot chuse but finde him your selfe presently: which Prince Edward courageously without any feare did, entring the inner Chambers of the rich Pallace, where he beheld Primaleon with the Lady of the Island, and her Daughter. Primaleon espying him, ran and embraced him in his armes, shewing such iestures and behaviour, as plainly declared him to be depriued of his senses.

Knight (quoth he to the Prince) are ye come to keepe companie with vs: welcome, welcome, here is room enough for vs to be merrie in: and hauing thus spoken, he began to daunce and leape about him, which hee pittie-

ing



ing to behold, said. Ah Primaleon, what is become of thy wonted noblenesse and chivalrie, that thus it suffers thee to be robbed of thy sense and understanding? Then stepping somewhat nearer him, he proceeded thus againe: Come my Lord, will you goe along with me: lay your right hand on this Sword, for I would gladly haue you forth of this captiuitie. Primaleon vnderstood not what he said, but gazed in his face, and laughed him to scorn. Alas, quoth the Prince, what shall I doe, whereby to make him capable of my meaning: and seeing all attempts else auailed not, he caught him in his armes, intending to carrie him thence perforce: but then he was more disappointed than before, for Primaleon being strong, grew angry, and thrust Prince Edward from him so rudely, that he was glad to let goe his hold, which caused him to flatter him with faire and pleasing words, and so (in the end) wone him to be quiet againe. Then taking him by the right hand, he bestowed many kisses thereon, and causing him to play with the hilt of his Sword, by little and little he entised him along, and so at length got him forth of the Pallace.

Hee was no sooner out of the Pallace gate, but immediately his senses came to him againe, when he (strangely looking about him) said. Who is this: where am I now? Knight, what saist thou to me: and thus speaking, offered to draw forth the Sword hee held by, but Prince Edward stayed him, saying: All friends sir Knight, take not your hand from this weapon as yet, because you haue bene enchanted in this place, and cannot be freed hence but by the helpe of this Sword. I perceiue you say very true answered Primaleon, along then whether you please, for I will doe whatsoever you enioyne me.

When Primaleon beheld the Giant so wounded, he remembered that hee had combatted with him, and saw how he stood grinning his teeth, to see him issue forth in such peaceable manner, then spake the Prince thus to Prima-



## 242 The second Booke of the History

leon, Sir knight, you may now let goe my sword, because you are now out of the enchantments danger, returne not backe againe, lest the like mishap befall you: and now let me shelter my selfe vnder the vertue of your sword, which will be a sufficient defence for mee.

Primaleon reioyced exceedingly at this his deliuerance, being all kinde behaviour could be deuised to the Prince, who said, he must goe into the Pallace againe, and see if he could likewise get forth the Ladies: the Giant made offer of conducting him to his Castell, but he commanded him to stay a while, for he had seene women within the Pallace, and he intended to goe fetch them forth. Out alas, said Gataru, now behold I my bitter ruine, for if they be deliuered, then haue I lost this Island. When the Prince heard these words, he imagined the Ladies to be of great birth, which made him the more willing to giue them liberty: so taking the young Damosell in his armes, he carried her out of the Pallace gate, where presently she recovered her memoire, and seeing the firmament (from the sight whereof she had been so long detained) she fell downe on her knees, expressing in hearty zeale her inward contentment. When fetcht he forth her mother, who was very aged, and her senses were in like manner restozed: now can I expresse the exceeding ioy of the Mother and her daughter, beholding themselves thus strangely deliuered, for she embracing her Childe, said: How happy are wee that we are come into this place, where we enioy our former knowledge, and hereafter may haue more care of our safety: Is not this the Island where sometime I gouerned: but who can tell if the traitour Eleus be dead or no, that vsurped my right, and so highly wronged vs both? Prince Edward reioyced to see them so well comforted, and calling the Giant, they went all forth, Torques and Bellager being not a little ioyfull to see the two knights freed from those enchantments: where contrariwise, the Knights of the Island, they groned extremely, imagining their



their Lord to be past all hope of life. But Primaleon seeing himselfe at liberty, and hearing the murmuring of the Islanders, how they cursed the Knight who had thus nobly prevailed, they beginning to runne away, as not daring to abide, he drew forth his sword, and without any regard of pittie, slew diuers of them, driving all the rest before him into the Castle.

When the Giants wife heard what had happened, she fell downe halfe dead, but reviving againe, she got thither such friends as they there had together, to revenge her misfortune upon the new come knights.

During this time, Prince Edward called the Giant to him, and made him sweare to performe whatsoever he should give him in charge: But when the old Lady and her daughter saw the Giant, trembling in great feare they said. Alas, the Giant is not yet dead, nor can we have assurance of our lives, till hee be quite dispatched. Ladies, (quoth the Prince) be not dismayed, the Giant hereafter shall never more preiudice you. Gataru affirming the same thus replied, both to them and to the Prince. Sir Knight, I am not the man they take me to be, for till now I neuer saw them, or they mee: but I pray you let me goe where I may haue my wounds cured, because I feele my selfe in very great danger. By this time Primaleon was turned from pursuing the Islanders, his sword all dyed with blood in his hand, and seeing the Giant yet alive, he grew marvellously enraged, saying: Nay, let my owne life perish, if I see thine, that delightest in nothing else but treason: and so lifted up his sword to haue slaine him, but Prince Edward kept betwene them, thus speaking. Sir, forbear to offer the Giant any violence, hee is my prisoner, therefore I will not suffer him to endure any wrong. Primaleon presently held his hand, and the Giant calling vnto him the man in the watch tower on the bridge, bad him set open the gates that all might enter, which was done immediately at his commandement. Torques, Bellager, and



244 The second Booke of the History

all the other knights reioyced, to see the Giant solled, and the knight of the Cloven Rocke freed from the enchantment, each embracing other manneons lovingly. Garar sent to command his wife, that she should yeld the whole Island in subiection to him who had conquerd him, and her selfe to come immediately to him: which indeede she did, lamenting greatly, when she beheld him so dangerously wounded. It is no time now (quoth the Giant to her) to mone my misfortune, for I confesse it no more than I have worthily deserved. So he was led into the Castell, but before he went, he entreated Prince Edward to accept a lodging there, and he should be honorably bled, for the exceeding kindenes he had found at his hands. Goe rest your selfe (quoth the Prince) where best you please, I will stay here in the Tower on the bridge with these other knights, let vs have such things sent vs, as we shall stand in neede of, to morrow I will come see ye, and acquaint ye with the matters I must enioyne ye.

CHAP. XXXI.

How *Primaleon* discoursed his loue to Prince *Edward*, and made himselfe knowne to him, to the end he might in like manner know of whence, and what he was: but the Prince craued pardon for that time, and would not disclose himselfe.



**P**rimaleon, Prince Edward, and the other knights, remained this night in the Tower vpon the bridge, the Giant sending them thither al needfull things whatsoener, and when his wounds were dressed, he commanded his Chirurgion very carefully to attend vpon Prince Edward, appointing a very sumptuous bed for him to be lodged in: where he being vnarmed by the hands of Primaleon and Bellager



Bellager, his hurts were diligently looked vnto, and then he lay downe in the bed, because he had great need to rest himselfe. Curia, for so was the aged Ladies daughter named, shewed her selfe very seruiceable, in bathing and balming his wounds: but all the other Knights slept in their Armour, fearing a revolt, or some secret trechery. Afterward Primaleon desired to know of Torques how matters had happened, if he had continued long in the Island, and whether he wounded the Giant so or no: because he remembered not any thing past there before by him: wherein Torques from point to point resolved him, & Primaleon hearing so strange a discourse, wondered greatly thereat, confessing himselfe highly bound to the Knight for his diligence.

The Ladies tolde him likewise all the storie of their mistfortune, first how Eleus slew her sonne, and afterward enchanted them in the Wallace: desiring that he would take pittie on them, and helpe them to recover their former estate.

Upon report of these accidents so admirable, Primaleon was very desirous to haue more knowledge of Prince Edward: wherefore causing all the rest to depart the Chamber, sitting downe on his bed side, thus he began.

Sir Knight, I haue great reason to loue and esteeme you, more than any else in the whole world beside, and in regard of the dutie, wherein I confesse my selfe bound vnto ye (if it might be graunted) I would neuer forgoe your companie, that I might serue and honoꝛ you according to mine owne hearts desire: but least ye should trauaile to some such place, as may be my hinderance herein, I beseech yee afford me so much fauour, as but to tell me whence and what ye are, that I may know the man to whom I am so deeply indebted, assuring you, there is not any thing whatsoeuer, but I would gladly vndertake it, onely for your seruice: Prince Edward returning him many thanks, thus replied. I pray ye Sir  
be



## 246 The second Booke of the History

be mindesfull what you promise, least hereafter I chal-  
 lenge some part thereof at your hands: I would thinke  
 my selfe happie to traualle along with ye, but at this pre-  
 sent I cannot, for I am to iourney with a Damsell my  
 guide, and I know not whether she will conduct me. As  
 for your request concerning my selfe, alas it would but  
 little advantage ye, in that I am of so slender esteeme and  
 reputation, as ye could not know me, albeit I did disclose  
 my self: yet I conet to be conuersant among good knights,  
 especiall such as serue the Emperour of Constantinople,  
 in whose Court (not long since) it was my good hap to be,  
 where fortune fauored me with ending the aduenture of a  
 Myrour, which many knights attempted, yet failed in the  
 performance: The Damsell that brought the myrour thi-  
 ther, begged a grant of one request which she should make  
 to me, namely I must needs depart thence along with  
 her: no deniall might serue her, whereby I was constri-  
 ned to goe with her, for the great desire I haue to doe the  
 Emperour any seruice, & it is now full fiftene daies since  
 I parted with her from the Court. Primaleon hearing  
 spech of his father, and his good knights, with the teares  
 standing in his eyes, breathed forth a vehement sigh, say-  
 ing. I pray ye sir tell me, how fares the Emperour, & the  
 Emperesse? Very well (quoth Prince Edward) ioyfull for  
 hearing newes of their Sonne Primaleon, which tidings  
 was sent from the Almaine Emperour, the Court be-  
 ing in great heavines till the messenger came.

I should reioyce much said Primaleon, so long to leng-  
 then my life, that I might by my seruices mend the fault,  
 wherein I haue so mightely offended the Emperour my  
 father, then could I finde in my heart speedely to returne  
 and see him. What say ye? quoth Prince Edward, are you  
 Prince Primaleon, who hath not his equall in all the  
 world? He replied, that he was Primaleon, but farre from  
 any such account as hee tearmed him, in regard his for-  
 tunes made no such report of him. The highest heauens be  
 praised,



passed, said Prince Edward, that I have done such service to the Emperour and you. It grieues me that I cannot beare y<sup>e</sup> company to your fathers Court, for he expects your returne daily, and very earnestly desireth to see y<sup>e</sup>. Sir, answered Primaleon, if I goe not to Constantinople, my afflicted soule is only cause thereof, I left the Court, to seeke a knight, whom I cannot yet meet withal, and who knowes how much my hard fortune therein offendeth me? but so soone (I feare) did I find another body, who hath in such sort mastered mine affections, as I cannot enjoy one houre of quietnes, neither am I free my self from her service, because she onely hath robbed me of my liberty. Most happy, quoth Prince Edward, may she thinke her selfe, to haue such a knight as you, at her command: what might she be I pray y<sup>e</sup>? Fortune, replied Primaleon, in this case is so contrary to me, as I am enforced to loue her, who holdeth me her mortal enemy: for this cause I trauaile thus concealed, fearing my selfe knight of the clowen-Rock, and if these Gentlemen which are with me knew who I am, they would al set to murder me, except Torques, who left the Court to finde me, and (by great chance) hapned to meet with me. Prince Edward marueiling to heare these things, desired him to discourse at large his history: which when he had recounted, to satisfy the same, he further said.

In sooth Sir, had you beheld the rare beauty of Queen Gridonia, you wold wonder to see me thus continue aloue, because so many desire to kill me for her sake. Yet think I, answered the Prince, that I should not more meruaile at the beauty of Gridonia, than I haue done already at the faire Lady Florida your Sister, who (in mine opinion) hath not her equal in the world. We say true, quoth Primaleon notwithstanding, me thinks Gridonia is fairer then my Sister, because she is of more yeares than Florida, and thereby is in the very perfection of her beauty: yet tel me I beseech y<sup>e</sup> how fares my Sister: very gladly would I see her, and declare withall (so please y<sup>e</sup>) what aduenture it was



was, which you accomplished in the Emperours presence. Prince Edwards thoughts were so strangely transported, by this conference concerning his Lady, as he could hardly returne him any answer, except it were to haue maintained by combat, that Florida excelled Gridonia in beauty. In this conceited humour, he especially considered the accidents and alterations of fortune, who made him leave England for the love of Gridonia, albeit he had neuer seen her, yet was now altogether caried away with the perfections of Florida: he remembered likewise the Country mans speeches to him in the wood, that Gridonia was reserved for a better knight than himselfe, whereupon at length he thus replied.

My Lord I beseech ye pardon me, for my slacknes in answering ye, the paines of my wounds did therein hinder me, but I count it as a very strange thing, that you should love her who is your mortall enemy: for I haue diuers times heard how many good knights haue fought to combat ye for Gridonias sake, which makes me repute it an admirable boldnes in adventuring thus to lye among your deadly enemies, I with you still so defended, and your designs fauoured. Concerning the adventure performed in the Emperours presence, it was of a Myrrour or looking-Glasse, brought thither by a Damself: rehearsing all the circumstances thereof, and how hee had left it in the custodie of his Sister Florida. In sooth said Primaleon, now I am much more desirous than before, to be at my fathers Court, to trie by that Glasse if Gridonia loue me, or in faire speeches dissemble the matter with me. Doubtlesse (quoth Prince Edward) she cannot chuse but loue ye, & hath great reason so to doe, taking ye for no other than a knight errant. After diuers other occasions intercoursed betwene them, they called the other knights: but in this meane while, Torques & Belager (having talked on their affaires) professed great kindnes each to other, & afterward betooke themselves all to rest, making the two  
louers



lours slept not one winke all that night long. Primaleon grieved at his misfortune by the Giant, imagining if Gridonia should know thereof, very griefe would kill her. Wherefore he concluded to goe see her so soone as could be, fearing lest one or other might else happen to marrie her. Prince Edward (on the other side) minded his wife, doubting his returne would be over-late to Constantinople: & the next morning as he was arming himselfe, Primaleon took his sword in his hand, and noting it earnestly said. This good sword hath in it self a certaine kind of happines, by belonging to a Master so hardy & valiant.

My Lord (said Prince Edward) but that I must needs use this sword, about some especiall matter, for the Damocell which brought the Giant: I would intreat you to take it, because it is so pleasing to you, wherefore I will weare it as yours, and so shal ye command it at any time hereafter. I thanke ye Sir, quoth Primaleon, but it hath a better owner already, and so rest I contented. Immediately they went toward the Castle, where the gates were readily opened for them, but Primaleon not willing to see the Giant, stayed there behinde them, onely Prince Edward entered, leading the aged Lady of the Isle by the hand, & Bellager was the guide to her daughter. The Giant lay in a very rich bed, about which stood ten knights, the best of the Countrey, for many came that night, by the Giants wives commandement, but he sent them all backe againe, except these ten, and all the soldiers in the Castle were disarmed, because the Giant was willing to doe any thing Prince Edward should appoint him, setting there ready forth (in open shewe) great store of his treasure, to make the knight offer there, of when he came to see him: as in very deed he did, but he thanking him, said he would nothing else, than his courteous blage of the knights that there arrived, that he should esteem the Ladie of the Island as his mother, and her daughter as his sister, suffering them to enjoy their owne quietly



250 The second Booke of the History

quietly while they lived, even as beslemed the chiefe Ladies of the Countrey, he to be her defender, and (after their death) sole Lord himselfe of the Island. Moreover, so soone as his wounds were cured, he would goe to Constantinople, and attend there the coming of Primaleon the Emperours Sonne, to whose mercy he should submit himselfe, and protest continuall alleageance to him. Beside (quoth he) if thou chance to be there before my selfe can come thither, kisse (on my behalfe) the Emperours hand, and tell him, the Knight that wone the Myrrour, sent thee to him: and thus perswade thy selfe, for my sake, the Emperour will both loue and honour thee. In performance of all this, answered the Giant, I will not faile, and seale the same by my solempne oath before all these Knights here present. He was ioyfull, and reputed it a great grace, that he had not utterly lost the Island, wherefore sending to seeke his wife, he caused her to bestow sumptuous garments on the Lady and her daughter, doing them such honour beside, as they could no way be discontented.

Prince Edward seeing it was time for him to depart thence, left the Giant, who gave him a good horse, whereof he made a present to Primaleon. Gataru from point to point obserued all his promises, and in short while after, Curia finding her selfe great with childe, by the Knight which had bene there enchanted with her: when the time came, shee was deliuered of a beautifull Daughter, which was nourished by in company of the Giants sonne, betwene whose birth and hers was not many yeeres distance.

Primaleon, who loued Curia (albeit he remembred what had past betwene them in the Pallace) demanded of Prince Edward, what became of the Ladies which he brought forth of the Castell, fearing least the Giant had done them some harme, or would doe, if they remayned there behinde them.

My Lord, quoth Prince Edward, neuer doubt you any such



such matter, for the Giant must needs keepe promise with me, or else it will cost him very deere. So sone as Risdeno and Purante beheld their Lord, they ranne to kisse his hand, and humbled themselves to him very lovingly: hee demaunding of his Squire Purence, by what meanes hee knew hee should be deliuered? Sir (quoth Purence) it was told me by a most skillfull Magitian, for whose sake I came to be your servant. As Primaleon answered, that hee confest himselfe beholding to him, because by him (whatsoener hee was) he had ben much benefited. He will yet doe a great deale more for you, replied Purence, and thereof my selfe am certainly assured. All the Knights in the ships came to welcome him very ioyfully, desiring pardon for their baselines to be gone thence, which hee remitted, and thanked them most kindly. The Damosell that conducted Prince Edward, was glad likewise when shee saw him returned, intreating him to make haste, for shee might stay there no longer.

Faire Damosell, quoth Primaleon, wrong vs not so much, as to rob vs of this gentle Knights company, bide with vs one day more, if no further fauour may be granted. It may not be, answered the Damosell, because it is more then time we were gone already: seeing you are at liberty, let vs depart, and thanke Fortune for guiding vs hither, else your trouble had endured a farre longer time. I thinke not otherwise, replied Primaleon: Shall I then goe along and beare you company? No, answered the Damosell, I desire no more but heauens assistance, and this Knight onely. So tooke Prince Edward his leaue of Primaleon, and Bellager did the like of Torques, and being imbarqued in their severall vessells, they set sayle with a prosperous and pleasant winde, and so merrily cut through the deepe.



## CHAP. XXII.

How *Primalcon* sayling on the sea, happened on an Island, whereof a most curteous Knight was gouernour : who gave him assurance for comming on shoare, and provided him of all things needefull for him.



Cry grienously toke *Primalcon* the Knights departure, by whose meanes he had bene thus happily deliuered, and greatly did he commend him to *Torques*, who told him, he would haue said much more, if he had beheld his Combat with the Giant. He is a most kinde Knight (quoth *Primalcon*) and if euer I returne where my hart desires to be, his good fortune likewise conducting him thither, I will both loue and make high esteeme of him. Thus hauing hoysed saile, they departed thence, vnarmishe of victuals, because he would demand none at ail of the Giant : and sayling on two dayes together, they looked on euery side, if they could espie any other place to help them with provision. On the third day, they happened on an Island, greater than that of *Cantara*, well peopled, fertile, and full of good townes: their want made them glad of this good Fortune, and so they entred the Port of a Citie, where the Lord of the Island made his abiding, who had three good Knights his sonnes, and a verie faire Damosell his Daughter, here they toyfully cast anchor, intending to refresh themselves and their wearied companie.

When the Lord of the Island heard of this Fléetes arrivall, he called for one of his Sonnes, and sent him (without making shew of any dislike or suspicion) onely to know of what Countrie they were, and what it was in this Island they demanded : *Palantine* (for so was

was  
wen  
tend  
his p  
and  
that p  
P  
train  
to the  
autho  
the  
this a  
derfla  
ther, b  
intar  
Our c  
and di  
we in  
we w  
compe  
The  
liering  
ditions  
Knigh  
who se  
hede  
rent de  
to com  
Primal  
it in so  
Pala  
held bi  
well )  
were th  
that for



was this knight the Lord Gouvernours Sonne named ) went from his fathers presence, with many gallant attendants, and comming downe to the Port, sent one of his principall followers, to goe aboard the Strangers ships, and straightly to enquire of them, what they sought for in that place.

Primaleon from his upper decke hauing discerned the traine that attended on Palantine, at his comming downe to the Port, imagined him to be some personage of great authoritie in that Countrey, and therefore entertayning the Messenger very courteously, hee returned him with this answere. Sir, I entreat you giue your Lord to vnderstand that wee are Strangers, not come of purpose hither, but diuened by casualty, intending not to offer the least intarfe, either to himselfe, or the meanest of all his people: Our comming is onely to furnish our selues of victuals, and diuers other necessaries which we want: His fauour we in all kindenesse desire toward our furnishing, which we will satisfie for, euen to the uttermost, both with recompence and thankfulness.

The Messenger being returned to Palantine, and deliuering this courteous answere, together with some additions of his owne in generall commendation of all the knights, Strangers, but especially in praise of Primaleon, who seemed their chiefe Commander, Palantine with all haste went to his Father, certifying him of the indifferent demand of the new-arrived knights: who presently commanded his Sonne to returne backe againe to giue Primaleon assurance for his landing, seeing hee requested it in such friendly manner.

Palantine comming to Primaleons ship, where he beheld him vnarmed (to declare hee meant no other than well) hee entertayned him kindly, desiring to know if he were the chiefe of that company or no: He answered, that for this time he was Generall and chiefe Comman-



der of them.

I come (quoth Palantine) on my Fathers behalfe, who is Lord of this Island, to tell you, that if you seeke nothing else, he is content to let ye have whatsoever ye need, desiring your selfe to come on shoare, while your people have gotten together your provision. Primaleon thanked him, saying (for his sake) he would goe with him: so calling Torques and five other Knights in his company, he went on land with Palantine: where they were very much gazed on, because they had seldome scene any such Knights. The Lord of the Isle curteously welcommed them, and while the Ships were providing for victuals, Primaleon and the rest spent the time merrily, conferring on many matters with the Lords sonne: of whom he demaunded the Islands spaciousnes, and whether it were throughout inhabited or no: because it seemed so fertile and pleasant. Sir, answered Palantine, the most inhabitant part of this Island, is on the Sea side, for the rest is very mountaignie, where (no long time since, and yet at this present likewise) hath bene scene a People, farre differing from other: because they are cruell and barbarous, feeding on raw flesh, and cloathed in wilde beasts skinner, beside, so ill-favoured and deformed, as it was a thing right meruallous to behold them. But this is nothing, in regard of one of them, which most usually is scene, and whom we call Patagon, said to be engendred by a Beast in the woods, being the strangest misshapen and counterfeite creature in the world: He hath good understanding, is amorous of women, and keepeth company with one of whom (it is said) he was engendred. He hath the face of a Dogge, great eares, which hang down upon his shoulders, his teeth sharpe and big, standing out of his mouth very much: his feete are like a Harts, and he runneth wondrous lightly. Such as have scene him, tell meruallous matters of him, because he chalety ordinarily among  
the



the mountaines, with two Lyons in a chaine like a leafe, and a bolt in his hand. Much harme hath bee done here, since he liued among vs, for sometime hee will scale a broad into the fields, and if he meete with any body, hee presently kills him, which hinders the Tillage of the ground in many places, because none dare follow their husbandry, for feare of him. And albeit wee haue made diuers assemblies, of our people, in hope to dispatch his life, yet hitherto our labour hath proued all in vaine, for he weares a Coznet about his necke, which whensoever hee wyndeth, suddenly comes a number more of his Patagons to helpe him: in regard whereof, wee finde it better for vs, not to meddle with him, expecting when the heauens will strike him by his hand, freeing the world and vs (that way) from his horrible tyrannie.

# CHAP. XXIII.

How *Primaleon* being on hunting with *Palantine* & diuers other, strayed from them with his Squire, & found the *Grand Patagon*, whom he ouercame and vanquished.



Hear great meruailes of ye (Sir) answered *Primaleon*, & truly I would gladly see a monster so admirable: ne-  
uer desire the sight of him, replied *Palantine*, for in sooth ye were better see the Diuell, than *Patagon*. I pray ye Sir (quoth *Primaleon*) let vs go hunt that way where he abideth, and so we may chaunce to get a sight of him: but we will put on our armour, to prevent the worst which may happen. He beare ye company answered *Palantine*, albeit I haue no desire to see him. At which words *Primaleon* smiled, and arming themselves presently, toward the mountaines they rode, with twenty



## 256 The second Booke of the History

other good Knight in their traine. So long they chased on every side, that at length the darke night over-tooke them, even as they rode along a pleasant faire field, where Primaleon intreating them to abide till next morning, they yielded thereto, and every one tooke him to rest, except Primaleon, who was desirous to make himselfe there spoken of by some action of honour, woz by note and fame: and doubting least Palantine would not guide him directly to meete with Patagon, beholding likewise how every one slept softly hee arose, and taking no body with him but his Squire Purence, strated so farre from them in the nights season, as when morning appeared, he found himselfe in the midst of a faire spacious wood.

At length he espied Patagon, who had hunted thereabout, and was now giving his Lyons their fees, at which sight Primaleon greatly rejoyced. Patagon seeing him, thinking presently this was a pray provided for him, immediately let slip his Lyons, & hartned them on against the Knight: who being mounted on the horse that Gararugane him, & seeing the Lyons come so furiously against him, leapt lightly from his horse, when the Lyons (not regarding him) set both upon the horse very greedily. Patagon crossing an arrow in his bow, let flye at the knight, but his Armour being of good proofe, it did not hurt him, and he making toward him, gave him such a thrust with his Lance, as it pierced quite through both his legges. Patagon seeing himselfe wounded, snatched forth the Lance againe, and darted it at the Knight, who espied it coming, and therefore quickly slept aside, setting hand to his sword to draw it forth: but Patagon having a great Courtlar, smote so strongly therewith upon the Knights shield, that he cleft it in two parts, for which he was requited with two such sound strokes, as Patagon imagined himselfe more than halfe dead already. Wherefore, casting both his bow and Courtlar on the ground,  
and



& forgetting to cal for helpe with his Cornet, he ran to get  
 seymeent on his enemies body, thinking to strangle him  
 betwene his armes: but he suddenly gane backe and wat-  
 ched him such a blow with his sword on the right arme,  
 that he pated away most part of the flesh, cutting off his  
 hand likewise, which fell downe to the ground. Now  
 through the grievous paine he felt by his wounds, as also  
 his losse of blood, which eyed the grasse round about him,  
 he was no longer able to stand on his legs, but falling on  
 the earth, roared so dreadfully, as it would have terrified  
 the very stoutest heart in the world to heare him. At this  
 noyse, the Lyons forsooke the horse, running toward the  
 Knight with wonderfull sorre: now it stood him on to be  
 hardy and valiant, for the Lyons rent his armor in diuers  
 places, giuing him (withall) foure or fve great wounds:  
 but he thrust his sword through the ones belly, which made  
 him stretch himselfe along on the ground dead, and tur-  
 ning backe on the other, cleft his head in two pieces with  
 his weapon, thus was he rid of the Lyons both together.  
 Now was he bnmindsfull to thanke the heauens for this  
 good successe, neither did his owne hurts any way dismay  
 him, but leaving the Lyons, he came to the Graund Pa-  
 ragon, being desirous (seeing him so strangely shapen) to  
 take him thence with him as his prisoner, thinking it  
 would be a great honour, to have him imbarqued, and  
 make a present of him to Quene Gridonia.

Then calling Purence to him, who was greatly astoni-  
 shed at this mishapen sight, & reioyced that his master had  
 escaped such danger: List awhile, quoth Primaleon, and  
 let vs devise how we may get hence this infernall surie,  
 that my mistresse Gridonia may haue a sight of him. I  
 know not, said Purence, how it can possibly be done, be-  
 cause he is so sore wounded, nevertheless, we will try all  
 likely meanes to accomplish your desire.

So taking the chaine, wherewith hee vled to leafe his



258 The second Booke of the History

Lyons together, they fastned it about his neck, whereat he gave such another loud shrike, as called two other of his sauage Patagons, with long sharpe pointed yrons in their hands: which (notwithstanding) were likewise banquished by Primaleon, though indeede with much adoe, in regard he was so dangerously wounded.

Having breathed and rested himselfe there a while, he concluded to depart thence, but he could not deuise how to get Patagon along with him, neither how to helpe himselfe, because the Lyons had torne his horse in pices.

Being in this perplexity, it fortuned that Torques, Palantine, and all the other whom he left asleepe, arrived where he was: but when they beheld what Primaleon had done, they stood amazed thereat, and Torques alighting from his horse, came to Primaleon in this manner. *Believe me my Lord (quoth he) I may iustly complaine of your unkindnesse, in forsaking me as ye did all these other: albeit I am of so slender valour, as my helpe will stand ye but in little need, yet might I in seruite haue attended on ye, to doe whatsoeuer liked you to command me: Say good my Lord, how chere ye: for me thinkes your hurts are very offensive.*

*I thanke the heauens said Primaleon, I finde my selfe very well now I haue brought this earnest desired enterprise to end. Palantine, and all the rest of his company so admired this rare accident, as they knew not which way to extoll it sufficiently.*

*Sir Knight, said Palantine, the heauens hath highly fauoured ye, in that you alone haue effected, what this whole Island could not doe: now hath Patagon his deserts, for should he haue continued longer in these parts, we must haue bene enforced to flee our countrie, as vnable to endure his diuellish cruelty.*

*Well (quoth Primaleon) he shal now trouble ye no longer, therefore helpe to lead him along with vs, that they*  
which



which before feared him, may now at their pleasure behold him. Sixe of them picked him forward with their Launces, and Torques took the Cornet from about his necke, setting it to his mouth, for triall of the sound, and whether any more Patagons would come thither or no: but had there not beene so many in company, he might full well haue repented his folly, for fiftene more came running forth of the woods vpon them, which in the end were every one sleyed: Palantine, Torques and all the other knights shewing great valour, and were not a little proud of so great a victorie.

All the Patagons being dispatcht, they help one another to dresse their hurts, for not one of them escaped vnwounded: two Knights of Ormeda gaue their horses to Primaleon and Torques, rather chusing themselves to trauaile on foote, than suffer men of so great desert to be so vnprovided. All the way as they rode, such wonderment was made at the ground Patagon, as every one enquired to know their deliuerer from so hideous a monster: & when Primaleon was shewen them, imagin you what triumphs and honours they bestowed therfore vpon him. The Lord of the Island, (to whom Primaleon thus farre had disclosed himselfe, that hee was called the Knight of the clouen-Rocke) embracing him for this great good fortune, said. Pardon me Sir, if I haue not hitherto honoured ye to your high desertings, and let my ignorance of you: vertues, excuse so great an oversight. Immediately he commanded his Chirurgions to haue especiall care for his wounds, as also those which the ground Patagon had received, because Primaleon was so desirous to keepe him alive: but he would not suffer them apply any medicines to his hurts, wishing rather to die than be recovered. Seluida (for so was the Lords daughter of the Island named) came in great feare to see Paragon: mary hee was well pleased in beholding her, and shewed himselfe not so



rough and impatient, as before he did, participating with the beasts nature of whom he was engendered, who only delighteth in womens company.

When they perceined his gentleness in the Ladies sight and how obediently he behaved himselfe to her, her doubt and feare of him being well removed, they perswaded her to come the oftner in his sight, and shee so preuailed with him by faire demeanour, that she could governe him as she pleased, intreating him (by signes) to permit his hurts be cured, but he declared by his signes, how he had neede of no other Chirurgion than himselfe, and licking his wounds, with his huge broad tongue, gaue shew, that this was his sicke sufficient for him. Thence forthward Seluida tooke charge of him, leading him vp and downe with her in his chaine, so that much good issued by the taking of him, for the Paragons (afterward) would neuer hurt any one in the Island. Palantine and his brethren did many honours to Primaleon, and Seluida their sister, hauing diuers conferences with him, still laboured to win him to continue with them, but all her perswasions proued in vaine, in regard his affections called him to another place.

Now Palantine imagined, if any meane might preuaile for his abiding there, it was to giue him his Sister in marriage, which deuise he imparted to his Father, and he (on the other side) no lesse willing thereto than his son, sent him to acquaint Primaleon therewith, so comming into his chamber, & sitting downe by him on the beds side, he began as followeth, Sir Knight of the clouen-Rocke, my father and we all doe loue ye so dearely, as we are very loath to forgoe your company, whereof he giues you to vnderstand by me, that if you please to accept my Sister Seluida in marriage, her dowrie shall answer your expectation, & he will repute himselfe happie by enioying such a sonne.

Sir Palantine (answered Primaleon) I thanke both  
him



him and you for the great love ye beare me, Seluida is so faire and vertuous, as I would account my selfe fortunate to haue her my wife, if there were not an especiall hindrance in this case: which let me plainly tell ye, is my heart is else-where countermaunded, and in heauens faire forehead are my bowes engrauen, which makes me thinke my staying here is ouer tedious, though I could as willingly die, as part from your company, but that you perceiue what an vrgent occasion thereto constraineth me.

If it be so, (quoth Palantine) then I vow to trauaile a long with you, and neuer to returne hither againe, while you haue any seruice wherein to imploy me.

Hee accepted his kinde offer, and so he went to aduertise his father thereof, who albeit he was loth to forgoe his sonne, yet for the company of so good a knight, he dispensed with fatherly affection, agreeing to his sons commendable resolution.

Primaleon was no sooner cured, but provision for departure was speedily appointed, to the Ladies no little grieffe, who had good hope, that better acception would haue been made of her love, for (indeed) she affected Primaleon entirely. Thus by the meanes of her, was Paragon embarked, wher taking a heauy farewell of her baine bestowd love, the teares standing like pearles on her faire cheekes, she thus spake. Sir Knight of the clouen-Rocke, much better had it bene (for me) neuer to haue seene ye, for ye take from mee my brother Palantine, leaving my poore heart fettered in stronger chaines, than those wherein Paragon is manacled: but would that mine were comparable to his, then were I assured to go along in your company: with these words she went on shoare againe, not hauing the patience to heare his answer, which mouing compassion in him, made him thus shape his speech to Palantine. I am partly sorry, that I cannot doe your sister such seruice as I would, and deservlesse (on my behalfe) is the  
love



loue she beares mee: but what I cannot accomplish for her, shall binde me in a stricter bond to you, reckoning you alwaies as my deere friend and brother. Now was Patagon euer more affraid when he looked on Primaleon, for hee knew him to be the Knight that vanquished him: therefore when he menaced him, he presently was humble, and at his commandement, standing more in feare of him than any other in the company.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

How the Knight that would not stay the deliuerance of *Primaleon*, when he was enchanted in the Isle of *Cantara*, returned home into *Poland*, where hee reported the Knight of the clouen-Rocks death: the great mone *Gridonia* made for him, and what was strangely tolde her, by the Knight of the enclosed Isle.



Thus sailes Primaleon toward Polonia, with all the speed possible, earnestly desiring to see his *Gridonia*, fearing least shee should heare some sinister tidings of him, and thereby change her minde, to like of some other Knight: which doubt in him was altogether needlesse, because she could neither like nor loue any other but he.

Now (as we haue heard before) one Knight of the company, would needs be gon from the Island of *Cantara* not willing to stay the deliuerance of *Primaleon*, because hee bare him no good affection: this knight is now come home into *Poland*, where being in presence of *Queene* mother and *Gridonia*, he declared what had hapned them, and said that the Knight of the clouen-Rocke was dead: these newes brought *Gridonia* to such extremity of griefe, that leaning in the lap of *Queene* mother, & breathing forth a sigh,



figh, able to rent a farre stronger hart in p[ar]ces, she said.

Unhappie wretch that I am, let mee now die a most desperate death, seeing I haue ouerthrowne the only faire prince of chivalrie: These words she vttered with such intire feeling passion, that she fel into a swoon for a pretty whiles space: when Quene mother beholding her in this dangerous estate, and fearing her life to be now on the latest period of expectation, clapping her on the cheek, thus said:

Alas sweet Daughter, what shall I doe with thee? I wot for vengeance on that traitour Primaleon, and shall I now see thee die, in whom my comfort wholly consisted? Ah miserable mother Quene, much better were my death, than to see my faire hope in this extremitie: Then turning to the Knight, who had deliuered this false message.

Away (quoth she) with this blacke tel-tale of sad misfortune, for I cannot but thinke him a messenger of lyes, because if the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke were dead as thou labourest so to perswade vs: all the other that went with him, would haue returned as well as thou.

Rather tell me (false traitour) wher hast thou left him? betrayed by some trecherie deuised in thy disloyall hart, rather than otherwise, else can no one in the world perswade me, that the famous Knight of the clouen-Rocke is dead. After she had thus spoken, she caught her Daughter to her againe in her armes, and by casting cold water on her face, chaffing her temples, and other such like meanes, she recovered her former spirits, when looking about her, and seeing euery eye wet with pittie in consideration of her case, she thus began to complaine.

Faire Knight of the clouen-Rocke, is it certaine that thou art dead? I cannot thinke the ambitious heauens so much enuy my good fortune; neither had they so slender regard of thee offering thy life to so many dangers for my sake.



264 The second Booke of the History

lake. Be well assured, that so soone as I am more certaine of thy death, my soule, which only dependeth vpon thine, will quickly keepe thee companie, to the end it may enioy the pleasure and repose in another World, which in this life it was so vngently debarred of, there shalt thou perceiue the vnfained loue I bare thee: for I might be reputed as monstrous ingratifull, if I would make any spare of my life, seeing thou wast depriued of thine, for my lones sake. Since first thou hadst knowledge of me, nothing sell to thy share but paine and trouble, hazarding still thy person for defence of mine: now, let not me bury thy kinde- nesse in obligation, but by conuersing with thee familiarly in death, make knowne the true sympathy of my affections with thine. Peradventure it may be, that I was unworthy to enioy thee as my husband, and therefore Hea- uen thought it meete to cut thee off so soone, onely to re- store me of so high a happines, and that Primalcon might liue in better assurance, than hee did while thou liuest: for none in the world was more likely to take downe his presuming thoughts, than thou, nor any able to finish my solemne vow, but onely thou. These and a number such like lamentations she vttered, swooning many times, whereby Quene Mother greatly despaired of her life, when weeping ouer her, she thus spake.

Alas Daughter, why seekest thou to kill me with this griefe of thine? Had I knowne what entyre loue thou didst beare the knight, I would haue giuen better scope to it, than helth to I haue done. Beloeue not (I pray thee) that he is dead, because the reporter of these newes is a lyer and a traitor, as euermore all his kindred haue ben: let vs send for the other which came home with him, to the end wee may perfectly know the certaine truth of these things.

Send for them (quoth Gridonia) and let vs heare what they say, for if the knight of the cloven-Rock be dead in-  
deed,

deed,  
After  
them  
where  
them  
how  
woul  
rie, t  
but u  
in ho  
the  
ment  
knig  
griefe  
ward  
rest u  
the tr  
in reg  
Th  
onely  
not sa  
with  
be can  
die bo  
bery  
Grido  
knigh  
that sp  
Si  
nermo  
ther u  
ther eo  
bia de  
ener m



died, make no question, but I shall speedely follow him. After the other people of the shippe were brought before them, the commaunded them to tell the truth, in doing wherof, they should sustaine no harme, otherwise to assure themselves of grieuous punishment. Whereon they tolde how all had happened, that Purenre likewise said, there would a knight arrive there, who should deliuer him, marie, their Captaine had no will to stay there such leasure, but would needs depart thence, leaving all the rest behinde in hope to recover him.

Traitour, said Quene mother, I knew my conceit of the would not prove false: Faire daughter, leane to torment your selfe with these tormenting passions, your good knight will return with speed I warrant ye, and all this griefe shall be converted into mirth and iouisance. Afterward, the lying knight was commaunded to prison, the rest were set free and recompenced, because they had told the truth, being not faultie in returning backe to Poland, in regard their Captaine enforced them thereto.

These tidings were not so displeasing to both the quens onely, but the Lady Zerphira took them as heauily, yet not daring to expresse her griefe outwardly, she conferred with her priuate thoughts, alleadging her misfortune to be cause of the worthy knights death. But being a Ladie both wise and vertuous, she concealed her sorowes very discretly, vsing many comfortable perswasions to Gridonia, desiring her not to credit the report of her knights death, but rather to expect his happie return, and that speedely.

Sister (quoth Gridonia) I am so vnfortunate, and so vermore haue bene subiect to so many mishaps, that rather ill is alwaies readie for me than good, or any taste thereof: and I wonder you expresse no more heavines for his death, considering what reckoning and estimate hee ever made of you.



266 The second Booke of the History

My griefe (quoth the Lady) would equall yours, were I assured of his death: but repating it a fable, I were but vntwise in needlesse hurting of my selfe.

All this day Gridonia continued like one halfe dead, refusing sustenance and company: at night, throwing her selfe carelesly vpon her bed, Quene Mother lay down by her, to comfort her, and sleepe she could not, till extremitie of heavinesse enforced her thereto.

No sooner were they both asleepe, but a strange deformed Dwarfse entred the chamber, and taking Gridonia by the arme, softly awaked her: whereat she being amazed, and taking him to be Risdeno, she said, Tell mee I pray thee, how camest thou hither at this vnfit time: where is thy Lord and mine: I pray you tell me, is he alive or dead? Madame (answered the Dwarfse,) I am not Risdeno, but one (as desirous as he) to doe ye any service, onely for the knights sake ye love so dearely, whom you imagine to be dead, as I gather by your sad and wofull lamentations, I come to assure ye, that he liues, though (a while) enchanted, and shall be deliuered by a most valiant and worthy knight, who will set him free, that to reuenge your wrongs, hath made himselfe a prisoner: and of this assuredly perswade your selfe, that you shall see him returne very shortly.

Now, in regard ye should not dye with conceit of griefe, I am expressly sent hether to tell yee these glad tidings: for should not the knight of the clouen-Rocke finde you well at his coming, I know it would be his death immediately.

These newes made Gridonia exceeding ioyfull, and looking about for the Dwarfse, she beheld a Man of a tall stature, olde and wrinkle-faced, standing by her, which greatly astonished her, saying, What great wonders are these: My friend, by the reuerend faith thou bearest to mee, I charge thee tell mee, if the tidings I haue heard be true

true  
to m  
seru  
thus  
M  
hear  
ye a  
with  
uen  
M  
this  
by th  
pray  
Rock  
well a  
old m  
great  
world  
deadly  
able to  
of the  
you to  
Ladie  
heart,  
him m  
I shon  
desires  
Ala  
count  
no cert  
tiffie m  
himself  
the old  
will co  
you off



true or no, and what is become of the Dwarfse that spake to me even now, whom I at the first took to be Risdens servant to the Knight of the clouen-Rocke, whose absence thus grieved me :

Madame, said the old man, doubt not any thing ye haue heard, for they are most certaine: concerning the Dwarfse ye aske for, my selfe was he, who did it to acquaint yee with my powerfull skill, that the better credit might be giuen to my speeches.

My good friend, replied Gridonia, heauen quite ye for this kindenes, how much haue ye eased my troubled mind by this glad some report : But seeing your skill is such, I pray ye tell me more, concerning the Knight of the clouen-Rocke, say of what race he is descended, seeing you are so well acquainted with him. Faire Quene, answered the old man, know that the Knight is of so high linage, such great valour and esteeme, as he hath not his equall in the world, except Primaleon onely, to whom you beare such deadly hatred : and hereof resolute your selfe, no Knight is able to bring ye Primaleons head, but this famous knight of the clouen-Rocke, who indeed shal giue it you, and raise you to such dignity withall, as you shal be the onely happy Ladie of the world. Loue him therefore with all your heart, for ye haue great reason to doe so : as for describing him more openly to ye, that will I neuer yeld to, because I should therein offer him no meane iniurie, in regard he desires to frannalle thus concealed.

Alas my friend, replied Gridonia, in that point I account my selfe most vnfortunate, because I can attaine to no certaintie thereof : and seeing you refuse therein to satisfie me, tell me then the reason, why he is so loth to haue himselfe knowne. Because hee took such an oath ( quoth the old man ) when hee left his Countrey, but the time will come, when you shal better know him, and then will you esteeme your fortune matchlesse, being Ladie of such



a Knight, compleat in all perfections: noz can he be fel-  
lowed in any one, but he that most deliuer him from this  
Enchantment, who is of no lesse vertue than hee, and  
trauailes (shadowed) in such manner as he doth. Great  
friends will both these Knights be in this voyage, but in  
time hereafter, their loue shall be conuerted to meruailous  
haired, which will cause moze grieve in you, than euer (as  
yet) ye endured: neuerthelesse, be of good chere, and dis-  
may not, for all your fortunes shall haue a successfull con-  
clusion. All this I aduertise ye of before hand, to con-  
firme your patience the stronger, and when ye remember  
mee, to thinke on these speeches, for moze (at this time)  
may I not reveale vnto ye.

We haue said already so much, quoth she, as both reioy-  
ceth and astonisheth me, I assure my selfe I shall see the  
time whereof you talke: in meane while, I know not  
how to expresse sufficient gratitude vnto ye, for this your  
kinde preserving of my life. Madame, said the old Man,  
I will require nothing of ye at this time, your gentle of-  
fer shall stay till moze needfull occasion: rather let me now  
giue you a gift, which is this Ring, of very great vertue,  
this shall assure ye, that whatsoever ye haue heard of me,  
is no dreame, but a sound truth. At these words, he put  
the Ring vpon her finger, wherein was set a most faire  
Emeralde, which she thankfully accepted, and while she  
looked on it but to behold it, the old Man was banished:  
she perceiuing the Ring so beautifull, and of great value,  
looking vp againe, to thanke the olde Man for bestowing  
it on her, wondred what was become of him, grining  
because he had so suddenly left her, yet determined to be of  
better courage afterward.

This olde Man was the Knight of the Enclosed Ile,  
who knowing Gridonia at the very point of death by  
the false newes of the disloyall Knight, transported him-  
selfe through the ayre, and came thus to comfort her

So



So troubled was her minde with this strange accident, that she awaked the Quene Mother, to whom she shew-  
ed the King, and rehearsed beside vnto her all the olde  
mans speeches.

The aged Quene admired her Discourse, applauding  
the heauens for these ioyfull newes, saying: vndoubted-  
ly Daughter, all this cannot chuse but be of certaintie,  
as partly ye may perswade your selfe, by his great skill,  
entring this place in such sort as ye haue declared. There  
bp your hopes then (faire Daughter) and so soone as the  
Knight of the clowen-Rocke returneth, we will intreat his  
trouaille to Constantinople, because he is the onely man  
that must reuenge our wrongs vpon Primaleon, then in  
short time after, shall both your desires be effectuallly con-  
cluded. Madame, answered Gridonia, I shall thinke it  
ouer-long, till he be here arrived our affaires can haue no  
good successe till then, and gladly would I see the Knight,  
by whom he shall be deliuered: but I could not well vn-  
derstand all the Wizards words, because hee said, that to  
reuenge my wrongs, himselfe was become a prisoner. It  
may be the same Knight which sent me Zerphira, who is  
reputed as balliant as the Knight of the clowen-Rocke: I  
heartily wish it will be he, then will I labour to set vntie  
betwene them, else shall I haue but little ioy by their dis-  
sention. Happen what may (quoth Quene Mother) I  
hope they will be defended both from harme, being so ba-  
lliant as they are reported. In these and such like conferen-  
ces, they spent the whole night, vntill such time as breake  
of day appeared: then did Gridonia recite all these things  
again to Zerphira, whereby shee receiued great con-  
sentment.



## CHAP. XXXV.

How *Primaleon* being on the Sea, vanquished the Knight with one Arme, who had conquered *Gresto*: The great ioy in *Polonia* for his returne backe againe, also what happened by the *Grand Patagon*.



**A** *Primaleon* thus sayled merily toward *Polonia*, hauing the winde very favourable to him, and drawing somewhat nere the Coast, one morning he met a goodly Flote of Shippes, the chiefe Generall whereof, was one that teamed himselfe the Knight with one arme, because (indeed) he had but one arme to fight withal, being borne in that manner, a Knight very hardie & valiant, carrying and advancing his shield in such sort, as one would haue iudged him nothing hindered by the arme he wanted.

Very expert was he in Sea fight, and continually performed such deedes of armes, as hardly any vessell could escape his hands. This knight had vanquished the *Paule* of *Gresto*, taking and putting to death most part of his people, himselfe scaping away in a ship more swift than the rest: all which, with the Knights and Souldiers in them, were now in possession of the one armed Knight. So soone as he espied *Primaleons* *Paule*, he encouraged his men to set vpon them valiantly, saying one ship of them should not escape him, as if hee had been Lord of all the Sea, and so gaue forth to beset them round about.

*Primaleon* perceiuing what they intended, and that he must now stand vpon his owne defence, reioyced greatly within himselfe, because hee imagined his enemy to be *Gresto* and his companie.



My friends (quoth he to his people) arme your selues, and take good courage to you, these are they we seeke for, I mean the traitor Gresto and his confederates, therefore let every man now declare what valour abideth in him. The knight with the one arme addressed himselfe against Primaleons Ship, because it seemed to him (as indeed it was the goodliest and greatest in all the Flote, and before they could close together, very hard strokes on either side were deliuered: but the one armed knight (well experienced in these fights and skirmishes on the Sea) and being (withall) a man of great resolution, immediately leaped into Primaleons Ship, with about thirty knights following him, and the first he smote at was Palantine, whom indeed he quickly layd at his foote.

When Primaleon beheld his Ship so full of Enemies, it was no need now to bid him bestirre himselfe, whereupon, he laid about him so furiously on euery side, as euery stroke he gaue, cost the life of a man.

Now ye must not imagine Torques to be idle all this while, for he gaue good testimony of his valour and hardinesse, and Primaleon well noting how the one armed knight behaved him selfe, hauing wounded Palantine very dangerously, thinking him assuredly to be Gresto, began upon him couragiously, saying: Thou hast chosen an vnfit time wherein to show thy pride, for now thou shalt not escape my hands so easily, as thou didst the last time of thy cowardly flight.

These words could not daunt his Enemies courage, but valiantly he desfered himselfe: marie, in regard Primaleon was more valorous than he, and doubled so often his strokes with such vigour vpon him, he quickly bereft him of life, and then stept to succour Torques, who had no lesse than five knights vpon him, all at once: no sooner came Primaleon amongst them, but the very stoutest of them was glad to giue him way.



272 The second Booke of the History

In briefe, such was his fortune, with those which followed him, that (in lesse than two houres) he had slaine or taken prisoners all in his ship. Then went hee to succour one of his own Brigandines, wherof the enemy was possesse, which after he had reconered, and with death requited their bold presumption that took it: the fight continued so hot, and the enemies so discouraged, beholding their General slaine, as at length they all submitted themselves, of which victory he being not a little ioyfull, commanded the dead to be throwne over-board, and the other remaining alive, to safe custody.

Among these prisoners were many of Grestos men, which made Primaleon enquire of whence and what they were: wherein at large they satisfied him, saying, they verily thought Gresto their Captaine to be slaine. When he was thus told, said Primaleon, for avoyding me to doe more then I intended, this knight with one arme I never dreamt of, but now I am assured hee shall doe no more harme. And for you, who are now my prisoners, behold the successe of your bad enterprises, you are now in the power of your greatest enemy, that will carry ye backe with me into Poland, where Queene Gridonia shall take such vengeance on ye, as in her discretion shall seeme best, in regard of the haynous wrongs ye have done her.

When the wretched men heard this heavy sentence, they cried out bitterly against their mishap, saying: gentle knight, take compassion upon vs, and pardon vs, for we did no more than our master commanded vs. Their cries and lamentations prouoked pittie in him, whereupon he comforted them againe with good words, promising to intreat pardon for them of the Queene. Now was not he a little glad, that he should returne to his Lady with so many prisoners, as also to bring her tidings of Grestos death: but herein he much deceiued himselfe, for he yet liued, and ranged abroad at his owne pleasure and contentment.

When



When he had taken order for all these affaires, casting Palantines wounds and the others to bee well looked vnto, he diuided the spoile of his successe among his followers, scorning to keepe any tot thereof for himselfe, because it had bene gotten by theft. So sayling along, at length they arrived in Poland, euen at the same Citie where Quene Gridonia remained, whose minde was diuersly distracted when she heard what a Paue of Ships was put into the Port: one while she had good hope it was her Knight, then againe she crost that conceit with as contrarie doubting, till at length, a Knight (whom Primaleon had sent before) entered the Pallace, and both the Quenes sitting there conferring together, after his dutie done, thus he began.

Health to my Soueraigne and her royal mother, Iudge you what recompence I deserue for the good news I bring ye, the Knight of the clouen-Rocke is entred the Port, on whose behalfe I humbly salute ye, I think you haue heard how he was enchanted, and afterward of his meruailous deliuerance, wherto I must now adde his good fortune on the Sea, where he hath banquished the one armed knight, being leader to a number of Grestos company, who (as they say) is likewise dead: nothing would hee say concerning Paragon, because Primaleon had therein forbidden him. When the old Quene heard these glad tidings, she embraced the Knight in her armes, saying: Ouermercies deere friend for these good newes, which falling out to be true, I will not faile to requite thee liberally, welcome is the Knight of the clouen Rocke, and wee toy to heare him escaped from so many great dangers. What shall we say of Gridonia doe you imagine her glad or no, hearing now (to a certainty) that he was come, in whom she most delighted: inward toy made her stand silent, her colour ten times moze delicate then the fairest Rose, and what she could not outwardly utter, her bodiees puate motion made



274 The second Booke of the History

made most apparant. Ah I wœt olde man ( quoth shee )  
happy am I in this thy coming to my beds side, for  
now I finde some part of thy words to be most true.

So calling the Knight to her, and giuing him her hand  
to kisse, sent him presently backe againe, to intreate the  
Knight of the Clouen-rocke hasten his coming thither,  
because ( till shee saw him ) shee could not be assured that  
hee liued.

Before the Knight returned, hee reported how two  
Gentlemen came in her Knights company, one of them  
being Cosen to the Knight of the clouen Rocke, and na-  
med Torques.

So sooner did the Lady Zerphira heare the name of  
Torques, but her heart leapt with ioy, because shee knew  
him, and had many times seene him in the Court of the  
Soldane her father: yet would she not outwardly disco-  
uer her contentment, but discretly kept it secretly to her  
selfe. The Quæne sent all her Knights and gentlemen to  
meete Primaleon, who being landed, with the traine rode  
on to the Citty in goodly equipage. Gridonia refused to  
put on any costly garments, because since shee heard the  
newes of his death, shee went continually in blacke, as  
mourning for his company whom most shee desired: yet  
went she along with Quæne mother to the Pallace gate,  
where Primaleon meeting them falling on his knee, hum-  
bly saluted them, when the aged Quæne first embracing  
him, said. Happy be this change of griefe into gladnesse,  
for we heard such newes, as had almost cost vs ouer-deere,  
but the false reporter shall now repent them. Primaleon  
had no leisure to answer Quæne mother, his thoughts  
were so ravished with beholding his beauenly mistresse:  
and I doubt not but her ioy, was as great as his, which  
though modestly shadowed, yet by the eye ( the hearts tel-  
tale ) it was evidently perceined.

Now my Lord ( quoth she ) my selfe will sweare ye liue,  
for



for feare is seloume satisfied but by the like assurance, and that feare had well nere cost me my life, but your happie arrivall hath now prevented such danger.

Madame (quoth he) this kindnes proceedeth of your surpassing grace, not of any worth or merit in me, for I have done ye no such service, as should with least perill affright your person on my behalfe: but well may I wish mine owne daies expired, because I cannot accomplish any matter of desert, which might (but in the) equall this incomparable favour.

Then taking him by the hand, she caused him to sit downe by her, Quene mother giving very royall entertainment to Torques, Palantine, and the rest: the Lady Zerphira well knowing Torques, and hee her, for which happy meeting at this instant, (the teares standing in their eyes) witnessed both their hearts gladnes, & she perceiving Gridonia in such earnest talke with Primaleon, as also Quene mother with the other knights, taking Torques also, thus she began.

Alas my Lord, what thinke ye of my misfortune: how can you like my being in this servitude: little wots the Soldane my father that I am thus imprisoned, the greatest comfort I have in this calamity, is only by the knight of the clowen-Rocke, for I hope to recover my former estate by the helpe of him.

Thereof assure your selfe, answered Torques, and who knowes my heavines of heart to see ye thus unfortunate: but you must take it patiently, and thinke all this hath befallne ye, for your greater good hereafter, the same hand which hath dejected ye, can and will raise ye againe perhaps to greater dignitie than your stonie thoughts can asume at, and seeing my happy stars have guided me hither, I will use my bittermost endeavour, but ye shall regaine your former height of honour.

The knight of the clowen-Rocke affecteth Gridonia in



## 276 The second Booke of the History

such sort, as he cannot depart hence without her company: so getting her along with vs, thinke we will not leaue him behinde, and when we haue attained to Constantinople, there shall all your desires be fully accomplished.

¶ *¶* Sea mary, quoth Zerphira, could this be as some perforce, as spoken, then would I confesse our fortune incomparable. I know Gridonia loues the Knight so entirely, that she will yeld to any thing he can desire of her, and she wants not continuall helpe by my prouoking her thereto.

In further discourse, hee tolde her that the Knight of the clowen-Rocke was Primaleon, and by what meanes hee found him in trouble: whereat shee meruailed not a little, reputing him very aduenturous, to continue thus among his mortall enemies: but leauing them, let vs heare how Primaleon and Gridonia agree together. *¶* Sir Knight of the clowen-Rocke quoth she. Ah let mine eyes surfeit with looking on you, false and trecherous, Gataru, wouldst thou haue robbd the world of the onely choise thing which euer nature (from the beginning) hitherto created: Ah my Lord, such was my grieve when I heard thereof, as made me openly discover the vnfained loue I beare ye: and good reason had I in such sort to lament your losse, seeing I was the occasion of your falling into that danger.

Primaleon reioyced to heare her so publicquely report her loue to him, whereupon he thus replied:

Alas Madame, no one can liue in this world, but one while or other he runs into great dangers, therefore such as make account to ayme at honour, cannot with ease or pleasure alwaies attaine thereto: I am sorry ye suffered such extremitie for my sake, and therefore must I needs complaine of the bringer of those false netes: and albeit I was fallen into such an inconuenience, yet being your seruant, fortune (for your sake) would let me sustaine no harme, as making no reckoning of my deserts any way to auail me.

¶ Therefore



Therefore (sweet Madame) I know not which way to requite this extraordinary grace, in letting the world understand, that I am your knight, and you my royall mistress: but seeing you will needs publish the same your selfe, regard me then in pittie, and let me not live in such griefe as I have done, for ye may more wonder, to thinke how I could live out of your sight, than that any other danger had the power to take away my life.

Remember then your former promise, and let vs depart hence to Constantinople with all convenient speede, for I long to finish my taske against Primaleon, that I might enjoy the fruits of my labors. My Lord (quoth she) thinke me not forgetfull of my promise made ye, because my minde runneth on nothing else, but how I may discharge the debt wherein I stand obliged to ye, then needs must I take pittie on you, for therein I shew mercy to mine owne afflictions. Rest then assured, that I will performe my promise, but least we should be over-heard, or Queens mother grow any way to be suspicious therof: let vs talke of somewhat else, for so I hold it most necessary. Say then, what is become of the knight, who delivred ye forth of the enchantment: I both love and esteeme of him very much, wishing you had brought him hitber in your company. As gladly Madame, said he, would I have done it, as your selfe doe or can desire it: but his leisure would not permit him, because he is gone with a Damosell about some especiall affaires. Gridonia would say nothing, concerning what the old wizard had told her, that his love would be converted into great hatred toward this knight, neither would she have him thinke it was the knight in search of whom he had so long travailed, for she desired to see no contention betwene them. When Primaleon called for his prisoners, and intreating pardon for them, at his request it was graunted, they taking their oathes, neuer after to inturie the kingdomes of Poland any more.

On



278 The second Booke of the History

On the morrow, Gridonia clothing her selfe in most sumptuous habiliments, made Torques and Palantine admire her rare beauty, he reputing Primaleon to be of no maine iudgement, in refusing his Sister Seluida, for a Lady whose match the world enjoyed not: and Primaleon comming to her, spake in this manner.

Madame, I intreat you to goe on Ship-board with vs, for I will shew you the most beautifull Gentleman, that euer ye beheld, who remaineth there enchanted, and cannot be released, but by the fairest Ladies presence this day liuing: now because (in mine eye) you are the same, or else their liues none, I beseech ye goe deliuer the poore tormented Gentleman. Sir Knight (quoth she) I will gladly goe with ye, albeit my beauty hath no power to finish enchantment, as belike his had, who released you from the Giant. I know Madame, said Primaleon, that your beauty goes farre beyond the knights vertue, for albeit hee is a worthy man at armes, yet it is his sword which preuaileth against enchantments, whereas your beauty hath a much greater efficacie. Wee shall make prooue of that quoth she, when we come where he is, for therein shal you finde your selfe greatly deceiued. So taking her by the hand, as Torques did the like to Zerphira, they walked to the port, leauing Quene mother behinde, because she was aged, and could not goe so farre: the people kneeling down in the streets, praying for the Knight of the clouen-Rocks welfare, that he might be the death of Primaleon, and so enjoy their Quene in marriage, the bearing whereof pleased her not a little, which made her walke with the greater maiesty. Comming to the Ship where Patagon lay, (who neuer was pleasant since he departed from Seluida) the Quene could hardly endure the sight of him: why haue ye brought me hither, quoth she, questionlesse this can be nothing else but a diuell. Feare not good Madame, said Primaleon, this man will doe any seruice you commaund



maund him, goe néerer, and make much of him, then shall ye see how humbly he will behaue himselfe.

Not I, answered Gridonia, hee gets no cherishing at my hands, rather let vs be gone I pray ye, for I neuer saw such an ill fauoured beast before.

Zerphira being more hardy than the, went boldly to Patagon, bidding him go along with her, stroking his head and kissing him very kindly: which made him forget his former stubbornesse, and fall at her feet, for he greatly delighted to gaze faire ladies in the face. so taking his chaine in her hand, he followed after her as gently, as if he had bene a Spaniell. When they came backe to the Pallace and shewed Quene mother this ugly monster, shee beamed by her hands saying.

He that hath the power to conquer such strange deformed beasts as this is, I doubt not but will weake my daughters wrong on the traytour Primaleon, and bring his head to delight vs withall. While every one spake his minde concerning Patagon, Gridoniaes Lyon (being lockt vp in her chamber) brayed and kept such a roaring, as made them all much amazed thereat, and getting forth at last, came into the hall among them, where espying Patagon, he ran presently vpon him, he hauing but one hand, and nothing to defend himselfe withal, by meanes whereof the Lyon wounded him very sore, getting his other hand fast in his mouth, and so bit it quite off: but Primaleon fearing least the Lyon would kill him, beate him backe with his sword, whereat hee presently obeyed, and afterward offered Patagon no more violence.

Thus the monster being handled, they were the better assured he would doe no more harme, neither, did he at any time after, but became tame and very tractable, still attending on Zerphira, and alwaies very fearefull when he came before Primaleon.

Some few dayes following, the Knights of Ormeda, being



280 The second Booke of the History

being desirous to visite their owne homes, it was thought very necessary the wars being ended, they would doe so, and Primaleon bestowing bounteous gifts vpon them, certified Gibber (by his letters) of all occurrences, which since their parting had happened him. And intreating the Knights libertie, who brought the false report of his death, the Quene gladly yelded thereto, for hee was desirous of no mans harme or trouble.

So he being released, the Knights sent home to Ormeda, and Primaleon awaiting the happie opportunitie when he might get Gridonia thence with him to Constantinople, in companie of Torques and Zerphira, whose welfare he wished as his owne: Heere pause we for this time, and conclude the second Volume of this History, till better leasure will serue to present ye with the third.

The end of the second Booke.

Conclusion

turn  
are  
wha  
like  
nia a  
phira  
prese  
Knig  
when  
is like  
will  
vpon  
shall



## Conclusion of the Translator.

**T**Hus leaue we Prince *Edward* of *England*, trauailing with the Damosell, who leadshim to finish an aduerture of great importance, the Princessse *Flerida* long looking for her *Iulians* returne to *Constantinople*. The Giant *Gatarn*, his wounds are well neere healed, and hee must needes performe what the Prince had enioyned him. Ye see *Primaleon* likewise, he attends the happy houre of getting *Gridonia* away with him, therby to procure the Lady *Zerphiræes* freedome, and accomplish the hard taske, of presenting his owne head to his mistresse, who (as the Knight of the clouen-Rocke) intirely loued him, but when she knowes him to be *Primaleon* how then he is like to speed, as yet I cannot tel ye. The third book will satisfie ye in all these doubtfull matters, which vpon your kinde entertainment afforded to this, shall be with you the sooner.

FINIS.



REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE  
**HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY**

---

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION



A



REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE  
**HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY**

---

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION

F  
A  
H

VWh  
Aa



# THE FAMOUS AND RENOVVED

Historie of *Primaleon* of Greece,

Sonne to the great and mighty Prince

PALMERIN d'OLIVA, Emperour  
of *Constantinople*.

VVherein his most heroicall and aduenterous  
Acts, admirable and strange Loue, and marriage, are so  
*lively set downe, expressed and declared, that the*  
Reader cannot chuse, besides the delight,  
but reape great pleasure and con-  
tentment thereby.

---

The third Booke.

---

*Translated out of French and Italian, into English, by A.M.*

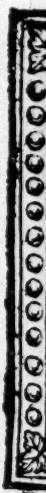


LONDON:  
Printed by THOMAS SNODHAM.  
1619.





T  
H



an  
H  
on  
im  
Bo  
be  
th





TO THE RIGHT  
Honourable, HENRIE VERE, Earle  
of Oxenford, Vicount Bulbecke, Lord  
Sandford, and of Badelesmere, and  
Lord great Chamberlaine  
of England, &c.



Close vp, and knit  
together (in one small  
volumne) the prece-  
ding parts of *Primale-*  
*ons* ancient Historie;  
this third Booke is  
added to the former;  
and in like manner presenteth it selfe to your  
Honour. I proceeded no further in translati-  
on, when these three Bookes had their prime  
impressions; for, rumour talking of a fourth  
Booke, which (as then) by no meanes could  
be compassed; I remained contented with  
these, and promised to effect the other when



*The Epistle Dedicatorie.*

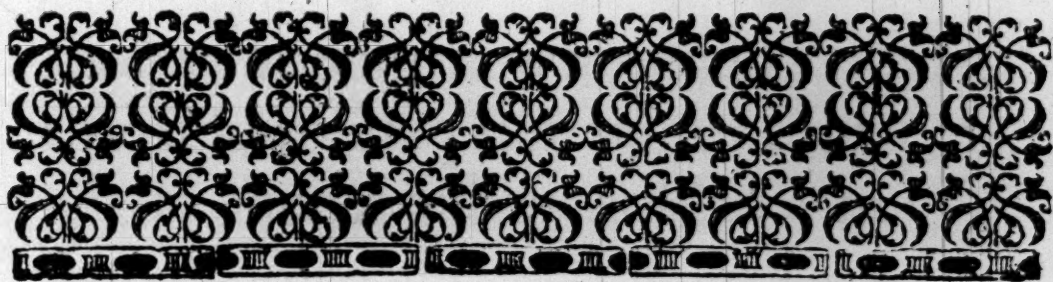
it should come to my hands. But hauing  
that fourth Booke now in mine owne posses-  
sion, with an imperfect portion of a fift al-  
so, vpon your Honourable receipt of these  
three Bookes, and as other imployments  
will spare me leasure; they shall likewise  
learne to know you, the worthy Patron of  
the former.

*Your Honours*

*in all dutious affection,*

A. M.





## Of the Translation, against a Carper.

**D***elicious phrase, well follow'd acts of glory,  
Mixture of Loue, among fierce martial deeds,  
(Which great delight vnto the Reader breeds)  
Hath th' Inuenter kept t' adorne this Story.*

*The same forme is obseru'd by the Translator,  
Primaleon (sweet in French) keeps here like grace;  
Checking that Foole, who (with a blushles face)  
To praise himselfe, in Print will be a prater.*

*Peace chattring Py, be still, poore Lazarus;  
Rich are his gifts, that thus contenteth vs.*

H.C.





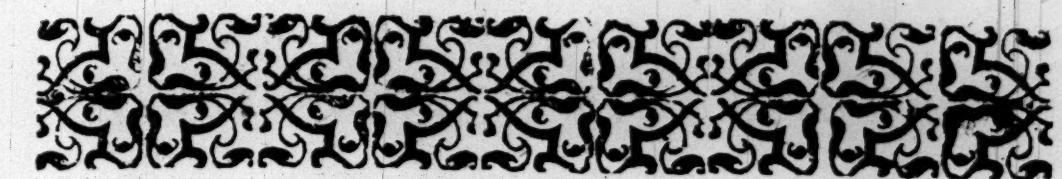
T  
of t  
ri

How  
ha  
po  
Pr



wife  
and b  
in Co  
to the  
all m  
Prim  
Prim  
that  
Coar  
sent





# THE THIRD BOOKE

of the famous and renowned Historie of *Primaleon of Greece*, Sonne to the high and mighty Prince *Palmerin D'olise*, Emperour of Constantinople.

## CHAP. I.

How the great Gyant *Gataru* went to Constantinople as he had promised to Prince *Edward*, wher he declared from point to point what had happened betweene him and *Primaleon*, and after with Prince *Edward*.



As soon as the Giant *Gataru*, that was left sorely wounded within the Island *Cantare*, had recovered his health, he caused a ship to be made ready, to saile vnto Constantinople, according to his promise, and speedily embarked himselfe with certaine of his men, straightly charging his wife, to looke that *Curio's* childe were carefully brought vp, and hauing a prosperous wind within short time he arriued in Constantinople, where going on shore, he presently went to the Emperours Palace, where he was no sooner come, but all men thought his repaire thither to be purposely to desie *Primaleon*, saying, when shall wee see our valiant Prince *Primaleon*, that he might plucke downe the pride of those that come hither to fight with him? At his comming to the Court gate the Guard would not suffer him to enter, but sent a messenger vnto the Emperour, to enforme him that

B

the



the Gyant Gataru, Lord of the Island Cantare, was come to submit himselfe vnto his Maiestie, by commandement of a certayne Knight, and that he was likewise willed to stay there, till the comming of the Prince Primaleon, if he found him not in Constantinople. This newes seemed strange vnto the Emperour, much marveling who the knight might be, that had sent the Gyant vnto him, and presently admitted him vnto his presence. The Giant being disarmed put on a rich and costly gowne, and comming before the Emperour, after humble reverence and due honour done, kneeling at his fete, said, Most high and mightie Emperour, although I am not in any wise subiect vnto you, yet let me craue leave to kisse your Maiesties hand, and know I am sent vnto you purposely by a Knight that hath banquished me, to shew your Grace that it was he that in your Court here won the enchanted Mirro, which the Gentlewoman brought hither: and further he charged me to submit my selfe vnto Primaleon your sonne, and that if I found him not here, that I should stay to attend his comming, and for that cause I am bound to stay here in your court, to doe your Maiestie service, till his returne to Constantinople.

The Emperour glad to heare newes of the Knight that had won the adventure of the Mirro, saide vnto him: Friend Gataru, you are welcome hither, and for the love of him that sent you, as also for your owne sake, that deserue no lesse, I will doe you all the honoz and fauour that I can: but to satisfie my minde, I pray you tell mee truly wherefore he and you fought together. The Gyant began willingly to declare, first what had hapned betwene him and Primaleon, & after what with Prince Edward, by which his speeches the Emperour perceiued that his sonne Primaleon had beene enchanted by the Gyant, and therewith saide, how happy am I that my sonne is deliuered from his captiuitie? I trust I shall shortly see him here. Then turning vnto the Gyant, he saide, you tell me strange things, but it is not the part of a valiant knight to betray good Knights, but seeing you are sorry for it, let it passe.

Then

The  
 a rich  
 God b  
 maleo  
 the co  
 that o  
 leon, th  
 thinke  
 more, t  
 of them  
 most li  
 leon, by  
 him: se  
 they co  
 he retur  
 The  
 Prince  
 that wo  
 what th  
 deliuer  
 exceedin  
 the mea  
 had rece  
 ble and  
 being ge  
 woman,  
 that Iuli  
 my brot  
 long. W  
 before he  
 his iong  
 into som  
 At suc  
 Court, t  
 choly, be  
 childe, a  
 friend Iu



Then the Emperour commaunded him to be lodged in a rich chamber, & the Emperour said vnto his Lords that good by him, what thinke you of the dangers wherein Primaleon putteth himselfe? I suppose you it was hee that had the combat with this Giant, and for that cause the Knight that ouercame him, sent him to submit himselfe vnto Primaleon, that he might take such vengeance on him as he should thinke good. I meruaile why he went that way, and much more, that of all those that went to seeke after him not one of them can finde him: The Lords made answere, it was most likely that it must by all signes and tokens be Primaleon, by the newes that the Emperour Trinco had sent of him: so euery man comforted the Emperour as well as they could, saying, they hoped it would not be long before he returned home againe.

That done, the Emperour sent a Page to certesse the Princes Florida, that he had receiued newes from the knight that won the aduenture of the myrrour, and sent her word what the Giant had said vnto him, which message the page deliuered in so good words, that the Princesse Florida was exceeding glad, to heare that her brother had bin deliuered by the meanes of Iulian her loue, and for the good newes shee had receiued, she willed the page to returne her most humble and dutifull thanks vnto the Emperour. The Page being gone, she began to speake vnto Arraida her gentlewoman, saying: ha my good friend, it fell out well for vs, that Iulian went from hence, or otherwise I beleue that my brother Primaleon had remained prisoner all his life long. But what shall I doe (said she) that he stales so long before he comes againe? I cannot conceiue the cause of his long tarrying, but I am in doubt he hath put himselfe into some great danger to win more honour.

At such time as the Giant came vnto the Emperours Court, the Princesse Florida was very pensiue and melancholy, because shee perceiued her selfe to be conceiued with childe, and for that cause would willingly haue gone to her friend Iulian, she was so much ashamed and abashed there-



at, and yet she durst not once make it knowne, nor speake thereof vnto Attaida, which knew all her secrets. The thing that most grieved her, was, that besides the desire that she had to see her friend, she feared that hauing gotten his will and pleasure of her, he was gone into his owne Country, and that ere he returned againe, she doubted that it would be so late, that she should haue no meanes longer to hide her great belly, in such sort that she was in so great sorrow, that she could by no meanes comfort her selfe, but onely when she looked into the enchanted glasse, and beheld her gallant loue, which put her in good comfort, that he would neuer change his affection and loue towards her, and with all Attaida perswaded her so, that she began to lessen her grieffe: When she receiued the newes which the Giant brought, she began to be glad, and was desirous to see and speake with her valiant knight, and wondering at the message which her father sent her, she said vnto Attaida: Alas my good friend, what may this meane? what will you say if the Emperour my father know somewhat of the great loue that I beare vnto Iulian? I assure you I am in great feare thereof.

Madame, said she, let your heart at rest, and be not of that opinion, for the Emperour your father doth it not for any cause, but onely in regard that he esteemeth him much, together with the affection that he perceiueth to be in him, to doe you all the honour and seruice that he can. That may be, said the Princesse Florida, and with that they went to tell the newes vnto the Emperesse, and the next day determined to goe see the Giant, for the loue of him that sent him thither. The Emperesse vnderstanding thereof, was much abashed to heare of her sonnes danger, and with tears in her eyes, besought the heavens to reserve him from all mischief, together with the knight that had deliuered him, and for that cause the same evening she desired the Emperour to send to seeke him. Take you no care for him said the Emperour, for it is the manner of good knights to enter into many great dangers, and to trie hard adventures.

Then

Th  
st  
ter  
kille  
who  
grea  
that  
per  
lent  
ther  
how  
place  
keepe  
your  
well  
my b  
prom  
fore  
wo  
be be  
so m  
be ba  
that  
forth  
woul

How  
wa



from



The next day the Emperour caused Gataru to dine at his stone table, and after dinner, the Emperesse and her daughter came into the hall, where the Gyant Gataru offered to kisse her hands, maruelling at the great beauty of Florida, who for her part wondred much moze at his exceeding great stature, and beholding him, thought vpon her Iulian that had fought with him: They being set downe, the Emperour said to Florida, Daughter this is the man that was sent hithe by your Knight, aske him when he will come hithe againe, for I greatly desire to see him: Alas said she, how should he know that, he being gone away from the place where he left him: yet I am in good hope that he will keepe his promise, and if he stay long, you must perswade your selfe that he can neither will nor chuse: I beleue it well, said the Emperour, for that a man endowed with so many honorable qualities cannot chuse but be faithfull of his promise: you may well say so said Gataru: for that I asfore you that all the vertues, and carresses that are in the world, are sorely in him, and he promised me that he would be here as soone as possibly he could, charging me to tell you so much. With that he began to shew the Emperesse all that he had before declared vnto the Emperour, and every man that heard him knew apparantly by the signes that he gave forth, that Primaleon had first fought with him, but they would not be knowne thereof.

## CHAP. II.

How *Pride* came to Constantinople to seeke for Prince *Edward*, wherby he was known to be the knight of the *Dog*.



At that time the Emperour was certified, that there was a Knight of England come to the Court, which desired to doe his duty vnto him, for which the Emperour was exceeding glad, being very willing to heare news from Fredericke king of England, and therefore comman-



ded him to be brought in before him: this Knight was son to the Duke of Calce, which was so great a friend unto King Frisol, as hath bene said in the hystory of Palmerin, and was called Pride, who next unto Prince Edward was the best & most courageous knight in all the realme of England, and loved Prince Edward exceeding well, with whom he had for a time bene nourished and brought up, but when Prince Edward departed out of England, he was not at the Court, & therefore when he perceived that he staid so long, he determined to goe seeke him: so imbarcking himselfe with two squires, he went into Germany, where he saw the Emperesse Agricole, but hearing no newes of the Knight that he sought, he travelled by land to Constantinople, minding to looke for him in all places, and to that end passing through Hungaria, he went to visit King Frisol, for the loue of his father, that had bene so great a friend unto him.

The King knowing who he was, did him great honoz: he knew likewise, when he heard him speake of that great Dog that Prince Edward led with him that he had bene there in his Court, and called himselfe the Knight of the Dog, for which cause the King was grieved that he knew him not, that he might haue done him such honoz as he deserved. But Pride desirous to see the Emperoz Palmerin, and to heare newes of Prince Edward, departed from Hungary, and within five daies after arrived in Constantinople, in his way achieving many enterprises. He being entered into the hall gave his helmet and his shield unto one of his squires, and being armed in a blacke armor richly gilt, kept forward, and for that by his outward shew he seemed to be come of some great parentage, all the Lords that were there rose up to salute him: with that, Pride kneeling down before the Emperoz, said unto him, I may now thinke myselfe to be most happy, to haue some your Grace, who for valour and greatnesse are esteemed before all others in the world, and of whom I haue heard my father tell many marvellous things.

The



The Emperour answered and said, Sir Knight, I thinke  
 verely that you are valerous, seeing you take pleasure to  
 see them that in their times haue had some sparkes of vertue  
 in them. Tell me I pray you who you are, and who you  
 come to seeke here in our Court, for peraduenture you  
 may heare newes of him. My Lord said Pride, I am sonne  
 to the Duke of Cales in England, whom you sometime  
 orecame before the towne of Paris, and made him lose the  
 tent that he had won from Cuiniane, sonne to the king of  
 France, and am come to seeke for Prince Edward our Lord  
 and prince, that long since departed out of England with  
 one squire onely, and as I came this way, I vnderstood by  
 King Filoll, that he had bin in his Court, with a merua-  
 lous faire Dog, where he obtained great honour, and cald  
 himselfe the knight of the Dog: if your Grace knowes any  
 newes of him, I pray you let me heare it.

The Emperour hearing him say so, was exceeding glad  
 thereof, and hauing taken Pride by the hand made him rise  
 vp, and embracing him, said, Sir Knight, you haue giuen  
 vs great cause to reioyce at your coming, thereby to make  
 vs know Prince Edward, of whom I must needs com-  
 plaine, that he being in our Court, conceale himselfe from  
 vs, without once telling me who he was, and I beleue, I  
 know the cause why, for that hauing fought with Primale-  
 on my sonne, he might peraduenture suppose, that I am  
 offended with him therefore, but hee is much deceiued to  
 thinke so, for I can by no meanes hate so good a knight as  
 he is. I thinke verely that for your part, your father being  
 so good a knight as he was, you cannot chuse but be the  
 like, as your outward apparance sheweth no lesse, & touch-  
 ing your demand, you may of my word stay here, for that  
 I am perswaded that Prince Edward will not be long from  
 hence, for so hee hath promised me: so causing him to sit  
 downe, he began to tell him the newes he had heard of him,  
 first how he had fought against Primaleon, and after that  
 how he had restored the Soldan Niquea to his kingdome,  
 and last after being returned to the Court, he banquished



Camilor, and having won the adventure of the enchanted myrrour, he departed from Constantinople with the gentlewoman, and how he had sent the Giant Gataru thither, with all the rest that had passed betwene them.

## CHAP. III.

How *Clodion* being sent to *Florida* with a Letter from the *Princesse Olimba*, the Dog was taken from him by the way, for which cause he went to complaine vnto the Emperour, and what *Florida* said when she heard where her friend *Julian* was.



The *Princesse Florida* understanding what her father said, and noting *Prides* words, was very glad at her heart, to heare that her friend *Julian* was so great a Prince, wherewith she was much inflamed in her minde, that it made her to blush as red as any Rose, and perceiuing that her father looked on her, she cast downe her head as halfe ashamed. Whereat the Emperour was glad, being pleased that she should loue so vertuous a knight as he was. In the meane time there happened a strange case, so that *Olimba* perceiuing that Prince *Edward* stayed long before he returned againe, determined to write a letter to the *Princesse Florida*, whereby she advertised her, that her friend *Julian* would not be long before he returned, & that it was he that caused himselfe to be called the knight of the Dog, that had restored them vnto their kingdome againe which she esteemed wholly lost, and that hee loued her so well, that he was determined to be her faithfull knight vnto the death, thinking her to be thrice happy for the same, and that for her sake while hee was not there, both she and her brother were ready to doe her all the honour and seruice they could. *Clodion* that had great desire to see *Florida*, humbly besought *Olimba*, that he might be the messenger to carry her letter, and certaine

rich



rich Jewels that she sent therewith unto her. After that Olimba desired the Soldane her brother, to give her leave to returne to the place, where she was wont to dwell with Bellager, there to attend the coming of the Knight of the Dog, and her brother. The Soldane perceiving that she was not as yet minded to marry, gave her leave to depart, and so presently went thither with Clodion, who intending to goe to Constantinople, Maiorres the great Dog was so unruly, that Clodion was constrained to take him with him, but the Princesse Olimba said, that his master would be much offended if he should be knowne by meanes of the Dog, feare you not that said Clodion for I will carry him well.

And so taking his leave of Olimba, and having past the sea, as he traualled to Constantinople, he met with three knights, all armed, who meruailing to see so faire a Dog, asked whose it was; and whether it were the Emperours: no said Clodion, you may not know whose it is: seeing then wilt not tell us, said one of the knights, thou hast sorely stolne it, and therefore I will haue it, and saying so, commanded his squire to take the Dog from him by force: which was marvell that he should be so easily taken, and not set upon them that took him, as he was wont to doe, when he was with his master, but the reason was, that he thought one of the three knights that was richly armed, to be his master Prince Edward.

Clodion therewith was exceeding angry, and said that he would complaine thereof unto the Emperour: goe said they, and doe thy worst. Wherewith they set spurs to their horses, the Dog making much of him that he thought to be his master. Clodion being not far from Constantinople, went to complaine unto the Emperour of the wrong that had bene done unto him, thinking he should finde knights enough ready to succor him. To which end, entering much grieved into the hall, at such time as the Emperour was talking unto Pride, he fell downe at his fete and said: Most high and puissant Emperour, I beseech your Maiesty  
to



to graunt me ayee, to reuenge a wrong that hath bene done vnto mee, not far from the towne, which was, that leading the goodliest Dog in my hand that euer was seene, it was taken from me, by three knights, and so that I told them that I would complaine vnto your Maiesty thereof, they made me answer: That for that cause onely they were the more desirous to take him from mee.

What knights were they said the Emperour, that shewed themselves so discourteous: I will send after them with all speede, and cause them to know how much they haue offended therein. And saying so, therewith Polendos, Abenunque, Tirendos, and diuers other good knights, that said, let vs arme our selues, and take the Squire with vs to shew vs the way. Clodion said that will I gladly doe: but they had no neede to goe, for that Pride which presently knew Clodion, and thinking that the Dog whereof he spake, should be Maiorres, was exceeding glad, verely beleuing that Prince Edward followed after, he said vnto him, friend Clodion tell me who hath done this wrong, and I will cause the Dog to be deliuered vnto you againe, or else it shall cost my life: for your parts gentlemen, you shall not neede to trouble your selues herein, for that befoze you can be armed, the thēues will be gone so far that you cannot ouertake them, and I my selfe will followe them, for I am ready armed.

Clodion knowing Pride, was very glad and said, Signor Pride, what is the cause of your repaire into these Countries: The desire I haue to see thy master and mine, said he, is the cause of my comming: tell me I pray thee said he, where he is, or whether he will be here shortly or no: I would gladly know some newes my selfe said Clodion, but stay not now saith he, for we shall haue time enough to speake of that hereafter, for I haue a good hope and confidence in your valour, that you are able to get Maiorres againe: wherewith Pride took his leaue of the Emperour, and mounting vpon his horse, went with Clodion. Who being gone, the Emperour commanded Polendos presently to



so put on armes, and followe Pride, to ayde him if neede required. But the Giant that had heard what had past among them, rose vp in a great chafe, and said, heauen for- bid that while I am in peace, any man but my selfe should be employed in Prince Edwards service: and therefore Sir Knights I pray you stay, and I will follow after him: so with all speed, after he had been shewed the way, he follow- ed after the Knight of England and Clodion, notwithstanding, Polendos, Abenunque, and Tirendos armed them- selves.

Now the Emperour marvelling at the Giants readi- nesse, went into the Emperesse chamber, and there finding Florida, related the whole story to them, wherewith Florida was so ouer loyed that she could not rest untill she had told Arraida the newes, saying: Oa my friend Arraida, how hap- py am I in that my friend Iulian is a Prince of a noble house: I see now that all whatsoever I did for him, is well done, and I am certainly perswaded, that the squire that came lately vnto the Court, came purposely to me, and therefore as soon as he returneth vnto the Court againe, let vs finde some occasion to speake with him. Madame, said Arraida, I assure your Ladyship that since I vnder- stood these newes, I am as it were ranshed, perceiuing now that your affayres cannot but fall out well, and seeing your Ladyship is perswaded, that this messenger hath some- what to say vnto you, let vs see what he will doe, and so finde the meanes to heare his message.

I would gladly speake with him said the Princesse seeing he is seruant vnto Prince Edward (for I will call him Iu- lian no more) to vnderstand more fully his estate. I would be were here at this instant, that I might be a little angry with him for so unkindly concealing his name: and with that taking the enchanted glasse in her hand, and beholding the visage of her loue therein, she said, O my Lord, why stay you so long before you come? know you not how ne- cessary and expedient your returne is vnto me? I assure my selfe, that if you knew the desire I haue to see & speake  
with



## 12 The third Booke of the History

with you, you would soone leaue all other things, to come to  
 him: and comfort mee: neuerthelesse for looe of you I will  
 beare it, all the paine I endure patiently: thus saying,  
 she was so ioyfull at her hart to see the picture of her looe,  
 that the teares fell downe from her eyes, wherewith Attaida  
 taking the glasse out of her hand, said, Madame, I maruell  
 why your Ladship should weepe, seeing that now you haue  
 more cause to reioyce than ever you had. I cannot be more  
 ioyfull then I am at this present said she, but the greaue de-  
 sire that I haue to see him that hath my heart in hold, hath  
 forcibly constrained teares to distill out of mine eyes. It  
 will not be long before hee comes, said Attaida, and then you  
 shall be contented for all your care. The Emperour all this  
 while was talking with his Lords about Prince Edward,  
 every man desiring that those false Knights that had taken  
 the Dog from Clodion, might be heard of.

### CHAP. IIII.

How *Pride* fought valiantly with the three Knights that  
 tooke the Dog from *Clodion*: and how *Gatarn* came thi-  
 ther to aide him, whereby the Dog was recovered againe,  
 and how *Clodion* spake vnto *Florida* in the garden, and  
 deliuered her a Letter.



**P** the Kingdome of *Thrace*, there was  
 a noble man, called the earle of *Acane*,  
 one of the best Knights that liued in  
 his time, that was in loue with the  
 onely sister of the King of *Thrace*, the  
 Emperours cozin, who to the end to  
 haue his valour knowne and tryed in  
 the world, hee was desirous to goe to  
 the Court of the Emperour *Palmerin* to try his force and  
 power against the Knights of *Constantinople*: and being  
 about halfe a dayes iourney from the towne, finding him-  
 selfe ill at ease, he caused three rich *Tents* to be set vp with  
 in



in a wood, to rest himselfe. And hauing staid there two daies, Gramare his brother being weary to stay so long in that place, mounted on his horse, to see if hee could finde any knight to ioust withall: and meeting Clodion by the way with the faire Dog, because the Earle his brother was a great hunter, hee tooke the Dog from him, and carryed him vnto his brothers tent, who therewith was highly pleased: but that day was some altered, for that not long after Pride and Clodion came to the place where Gramare carryed the Dog, which Clodion presently knew, by his armes & with, al he heard the Dog barke, wherewith he said to Pride, my Lord, assure your selfe that my Dog is here, for I heard him barke, but as far as I perceiue, here are diuers knights together, we did ill to come hither alone: that is all one said Pride, I care not for their number, for that traitors are neuer to be feared, & hauing rested himselfe, for that his horse was weary, hee laced on his helmet and went vnto the Tents.

Gramare seeing him, knew the squire, and smiling said to his companions, see you not this foolish squire that is come with this simple knight, thinking to get his dog again: and hauing said so, he went into his tent, and arming himselfe, mounted on horsebacke, his companion not once stirring, thinking him sufficient to make his party good with the knight: when Pride approached nere vnto the Tent, is it you (said he) speaking to one of the knights, that hath forcibly taken a Dog from this Squire: giue it him againe you were best, if you intend not to buy it too dearely. You meane your selfe, said one of them, that dares be so bold to come to make such a demand, stay but a while for him that tooke it from him, and hee will make you answere. Wherewith Gramare issued out of the Tent, & said: what is it this foolish knight would haue: a Dog said Pride, that you tooke by force from this Squire, giue it him againe, or else it shall cost you your life. The Dog said Gramare shall not be restored againe, but to the contrary, I will make you know your owne folly, for comming to aske him. With that



that they couched their Launces, and ranne each at other with such force, that with the blow Gramaraes launce flew all in peces, not once moving Pride in the saddle, he on the contrary, giving Gramarc such a blow with his launce, that that he cast him to the ground soze hurt. All the standers by being much abashed to behold that chaunce, some ranne to take up the wounded Knight, and bare him into his brothers Tent, who therewith being displeased, said he would reuenge his death, or lose his life in the quarrell: the two Knights that were armed, presently laced on their helmets, and the other armed themselves with great diligence: in the meane time some of the Carles seruants issuing out of the Tents with halberds in their hands, strake at Prides horse, and killed him, wherewith hee lighted off, and taking his sword in his hand, he laid so well about him, that in the end hauing slaine diuers of them, he made the rest to flie. Clodion in the meane time much maruelling at his great valour, but yet notwithstanding it is to be doubted that he must of force haue bene slaine, but for Garam that came in good time to helpe him, who suspecting how the matter went, and seeing them all on foot, lighted off his horse, and going nere vnto Pride said: Sir Knight, let vs stand manfully vnto it, and put these traytors to death, wherewith he began to enter in amongst them, and to make them feele his waighty blowes.

The Carle perceiving his men to flie, came out, and encouraging them, began to enter into the fight, and with all his force laid vpon Pride, to reuenge his brothers death, but Pride being in a rage, gaue him so great a blow vpon the helmet, that he stroke it off from his head, and doubling his blow, claxe his head in twaine, in such sort that before it was darke night (for it was already very late) they killed all the Carles men, except thre that fled away: and entring into the Tents to rest themselves, Maiortes sawned and made much of Clodion, and was very glad that he had gotten him againe: therewith the Gyant caused Pride to be vnarmed, that his wounds might be lookt vnto,

and



and laid him to rest vpon the Charles bed: that done, he put off his owne helmet from his head, to refresh himselfe, for otherwise he was not hurt, but when the great Dog saw him, although he was enchanted, yet he knew him, and ranne and leapt and made great ioy about him: the Giant marueiling thereat, said, thou deseruest well to be made en, for I thinke thou makest much of me, because thou knowest I loue thy matter, and although Clodion called him, yet he would neuer leaue the Gyant, but Gataru was much abashed, when he heard him called Maiortes, whereupon he instantly desired Clodion to tell him who gaue the Dog that name, he made him answere that hee knew not: for that he was called so when he was giuen to Prince Edward: I had once a brother said Gataru, that was called Maiortes, but it is a long time since I heard any newes of him. Clodion meruailed to see the Dog make so much of Gataru, being so curst vnto others.

Shortly after they found good store of provision in the Panilion to sup withall, and when a good part of the night was past, Polendos and his companions arrived in the wood, who hauing lost their way, by fortune met with one of the Charles squires weeping and complaining, whom they asked what he ayed: But when Polendos had heard what the matter was, he said, was the Carle of Acan here? and did he consent that his men should doe such a point of villany? I am sorry for it, because he was subject to my Aunt Quene Dionise, and because I loued him, for he was a good Knight, but seeing hee was the cause of his owne death, I know not what to doe therein. And causing the Squire to turne backe againe to show them the Tent, they alighted off their horses, and found the Giant and Pride at their supper, yet seemed to watch least they might be suddenly surprisid: for which cause, as soone as Gataru heard them come, he issued out in great fury, with his sword in his hand. But they making themselves knowne, and the Gyant going backe againe, Polendos put off his helmet and said, gentlemen, me thinks you haue  
had



had no doede of our helpe, and that the good Dog, that had bene lost, cost the earle and his men very deare. Gataru as soone as he knew him, put by his sword, and glad of his company, took him by the hand, and led him into the tent to see Pride, of whom he asked how he did: Pride said I am well I thanke you, and the better that I haue recovered Maiortes the Dogge againe: with that the Gyant shewed Polendos how he had found him defending himselfe valiantly against a great many men, for which cause Pride was much esteemed of every man. And after they had spoken a while together, Polendos caused a torch to be lighted, to seeke for the Carles body, and his brother Gramerc which was yet liuing, with seure other knights, causing them to be brought into one of the Tents, to heale their wounds, but to no end; for the next day in the morning they dyed, Polendos causing their bodies to be honozably buried: after that, the Carles tents being taken up, they returned againe to Constantinople, and as they went towards the towne, Clodion told Pride that he had done ill, to make Prince Edward knowne unto the Emperour in regard of his loue, wherewith he made him acquainted: he tolde him likewise that he stayed till his master came with the Princesse Olimba,

Pride said, that as soone as his wounds were healed, and that he had recovered his health, hee would goe with him to see the Princesse Olimba, in hope to finde his Lord Prince Edward there. They being come to Constantinople, the Emperour caused Pride to be lodged in the Court, and going personally to visite him, bled him very honozably, much esteeming and commending him, for that he had done to recouer the Dogge, all the knights of the Court likewise doing the same, and while hee was in cure of his wounds, dayly kept him company: the Emperour likewise making much of Gataru said, whosoever hath you on his side my friend Gataru, needes not feare, as Pride not long since hath tryed. Your Grace shall alwaies command my service said Gataru to the Emperour, and therewith began



began to tell him, how much the Dog made of him, and with what toy he leapt upon him : saying, that he once had a brother of the Dogs name, which he had not heard of a long time.

Surely said the Emperour, you make me muse at this you tell me, and it may be it is your brother, and that he was enchanted in the Isle of Malfate : but if there were any man here, that could breake or vndo such enchantments, I haue a booke wherewith such enchantments of Dogs haue bin broken, at such time as Agricole Emperesse of Almaine was deliuered out of her enchantment: I pray you cause the Dog to be brought hither, that I may see him: who being brought in, leapt and made great toy both vnto the Emperour and Gataru, whereupon said the Emperour to Gataru, this is certainly your brother, for there were diuers men enchanted, and the like happened to Trincoco Emperour of Almaine, the first time that he saw me: therewith Clodion kneeling downe, said : most puissant Emperour, your opinion is not out of reason, for that the knight that gaue the Dog vnto my master, had traualled in diuers parts of the world, and after it was giuen vnto my master, it was told him, that the Dog was a humane creature: for which cause my master loued him the better. Whereat the Grant reioyning, said that he had come thither in good time, if hee by that meanes might chance to finde his brother. Take you no care for that said the Emperour, for that before you depart from hence, you shall see wonders : I intend not to depart from hence said Gataru to the Emperour, before I see Prince Edward, for that I hope he will bring all ioyfull tydings. The Emperour asked Clodion how long it was since he saw his master, and whether he left him with the Soldane of Niquea, when he came to the Court: He said Clodion, for he went to trauell into other Countries to try his force, and when I left him he gaue me charge to come hither, for he said, he was to retorne hither againe vnto your Court, to doe you seruice.

It was not my fortune said the Emperour to keepe him long



long here : but will you said he to Clodion, stay here for him: I will stay a while ( and it please your Grace) said Clodion, and if he cometh not shortly I will goe seeke him: and therewith taking his leaue of the Emperour, he went devising with himselfe how he might finde meanes to speake with the Princesse Florida to giue her the letter that he brought her from the Princesse Olimba. Florida on the other side was in no lesse care, to know if Clodion were come thither to bring her any newes, yet knew not how to deuise the meanes to speake with him.

The next day, Clodion towards euening, went vnto the garden, to see if he could see the Princesse Florida, and by fortune it happened as it did vnto his Master, for that by chance, the gardener stood at the gate ready to come forth, and the Princesse was also then walking in the garden. With that Clodion went vnto him, and being well informed in all things, asked him if he were Iulian the gardener: I, said he, but why aske you the question said the Gardener: Why, said hee: because your sonne Iulian commendeth him vnto you, and desireth you to hold him excused, because he cannot come to see you so soone as he would stay, ing abroad both for his and your good: but he will come as soone as possible he may.

Friend said Iulian, you are heartily welcome, I am glad to heare newes of him: but tell me I pray you, how long it is since you saw him: It is not long, said Clodion, since I was with him, and I assure you, he is in good health. The Princesse that had great desire to speake with the squire, hearing what speech the gardener and hee had at the garden gate, desiring to know moze, spake vnto the gardener saying. Iulian to whom speake you, and why doe you keepe the doore open: The gardener very glad and ioyfull, went into the garden and said: Madame, and it please your Grace, heere is a yong man that bringeth me newes from Iulian my sonne, that recommends himselfe vnto mee, and hath giuen me in charge to doe his duty vnto your Grace. Florida therewith was very glad, and said, let the messenger come



come in, that we may heare some of his good newes, because said she I loue thy sonne, for thine and thy wiues sake.

Clodion entring into the garden, knéled downe before the Princesse, who asked him where he had left Iulian, and why he came not againe? Madame said he, hee hath a most earnest desire to come to doe you service, but as yet he is with-holden by a matter of importance, that causeth him to stay: but he willed me to tell Iulian his father, that he would shortly be heare with him. What doth he there where he is said the Princesse? I beleue he findes certaine wasslers there, and it may be he hopeth to win some prize by wassling, that he might bring it to his father: I think verely he hath good skill in that exercise, and yet he would neuer wassle before me: Madame, said Clodion hee told me that he had great desire to come hither, but he cannot yet come. Say not so, said Florida, for hee may chuse if he will, to travell about the countries as he doth, but I know the occasion, for he told me that he loved one I knew not, with all his heart, but if ever hee cometh hither againe, I will make him stay longer here. Your Grace shall doe well said Clodion, for I know not what he doth abroad and leaues your service. He will not doe me so much service as to stay here said the Princesse, neuerthelesse for his sake, if you want any thing, let me but know it, and you shall haue it: and you Iulian (said she to the gardener) let him lodge in your house this night, seeing he bringeth you so good newes: that will I doe Madame, with all my heart said he, and with that the gardeners wife came thither, and very earnestly asked what newes from her sonne, who having had the like answere, that was made vnto the Princesse and her husband, I will haue you said she, stay here with us this night, that we may heare moze newes of you: wherewith Clodion making answere that for their sakes he would doe so, the gardener and his wife went home to make ready supper, and the Princesse staying still with Clodion asked him in what country his Master was: He



made her answer to all things she said, in very good sort: and so walking about the garden, she spake vnto him, and said, haue you any thing els to say vnto me: Madame (said he) I came hither onely to bring you this letter: which ha- uing giuen vnto her, she willed him to stay all night with the gardener, and said that she would come againe and speake with him, and with that she went into her chamber, and when she had read the letter, she was not a little com- sorted, and made answer thereunto by writing, that she gaue her most hearty thanks, and that from thenceforth she would accept her for her sister, praying her that if the Knight of the Dog came not speedily againe, that she would write vnto her, for that shee had great neede of her helpe.

After supper, towards bed-time, Clodion went into the Garden, after whom the Princesse followed, and said vnto him: how couldest thou finde the meanes so well to speake with me, and what saist thou to me of thy master: he stayes so long there where he is, that I cannot be quiet nor at rest, for the feare I haue, least he should fall into some inconuenience: and on the other side I am in doubt, that he is gone into his owne countrie, thereby to be the meanes of my death, which I well deserue, by suffering my selfe to be overcome by his love, and to put my selfe in- to great danger. Madame said Clodion, thinke not that Prince Edward my Master, will do so great villany to you, e he would die a thousand times (if it were possible) before he would giue you the least cause of grieue in the world, he loueth you so well, and with so great an affection. And therefore Madame beleue me, that he stayeth by force, and that he cannot doe otherwise. I would he were here said the Princesse, for if he stay long before hee cometh, it is impossible for me to liue, for the grieue I sustaine for his absence, is farre greater than he thinketh, and therefore if thou see him before me, bid him come secretly hither, as he biddeth to doe: for that we must take order about our affai- res. Madame said Clodion, I will tell him as much, and I



I thinke he will first come to the Princesse Olimba, and there leave Bellagar her brother, that would needs beare him company, for since he departed from Constantinople, he would not suffer me to goe with him: and so speaking of other things, Clodion gave the Princesse the Jewels, and other presents that Olimba sent her, which she having received, returned her the like, with a letter which shee delivered unto Clodion, and therewith went into her chamber.

In the morning betimes, Clodion rose up, and taking his leave of the Gardener and his wife, gave them great thanks for the good entertainment hee had received at their hands, and so went to Pride, shewing him that hee must of force goe unto the Princesse Olimba, and that hee would returne presently againe, and therewith he departed. Olimba having received the Letter and the presents that the Princesse Florida sent her, asked Clodion if shee were so. Madame said he, I know not what to say, I marvel how my master can goe so farre from her: for in my judgement, I thinke there is not a fairer, nor a more courteous Princesse in all the world, and therewith shewed her what had past, and how he had left a knight in Constantinople, that came to seeke Prince Edward, which shee knowing, sent Clodion to fetch him, that shee might heale him of his wounds, and after cause him to stay there with her, untill Prince Edwards returne. Whereupon Clodion went backe againe to Constantinople, and as soon as Pride was able to mount upon horse-backe, he tooke his leave of the Emperour, under pretence to goe to seeke Prince Edward, and went with Clodion unto the Princesse Olimba, who entertained him honourably, and healed his wounds. The Giant Gataru was much displeased at their departure, for the love of Maiortes the great Dog, but being assured of their returne, he was content.



## CHAP. V.

How *Tarus* was crowned king of Lacedemonia, and how the Princesse *Padritie*, that loued *Prince Edward* with all her heart, was deceiued by *Bellager*, and gotten with child of a sonne, that after became a valiant Knight.



**P**rince Edward staying in Lacedemonia against his will, till the Lords and Barons of the Realme were assembled, knew not what to doe in the meane time, but lesse it were to hunt in the woods, to comfort *Tarus* with his company, that had neede thereof: which tooke great pleasure and delight in the company of so valiant a Knight, to whom hee shewed all the processe of his loue, and his disgrace, saying that it was so great a griefe vnto him, that hee should neuer be merry nor at ease during his life: and so it appeared, so that what pleasure or pastime soeuer was made, to delight or recreate his minde withall, yet could hee not be merry: and because Prince Edward still kept company with King *Tarus*, the Princesse *Padritie* could finde no meanes to discover her loue vnto him, but to ease her troubled thoughts she still desired to talke with *Bellager*, and to aske him of Prince Edwards estate, and what Country-man he was: who although he knew her meaning, yet hee could not refrain to loose her, and by often speaking vnto her, caused his heart still more and more to burne in loue towards her: and yet durst not ventur to bitter his minde, perceiuing that she loued Prince Edward with all her heart. The Barons being all assembled, *Tarus* with great solemnity & pompe, was crowned King, who perceiuing himselfe so richly and sumptuously apparelled, and placed in his princely throne with the Crowne vpon his head, was thereby so græued at the heart, to remember his faire Lady Fince, that hee said vnto himselfe, why should I seeke to be a King, seeing



she that I desired to haue aduanced to this princely degree  
 is dead, and laid in the earth: I had rather beare her com-  
 pany, then to receiue this honour without her. Wherewith  
 Prince Edward perceiuing him to change colour, and looke  
 so pale, spake softly vnto him and said, what ailes your  
 Grace: and why is your heart so much grieved: thinke  
 not I pray you vpon those things that cause nothing but  
 disquietnesse in your minde, for if you doe, I will not e-  
 steme you for a valiant knight: at which words the King  
 somewhat relaxed, began to shew the best countenance he  
 could. The next day there was a great triumph at Tilt,  
 appointed to be holden for ioy of the Kings Coronation,  
 wherein Bellager won the prize, thinking to be sene of Pa-  
 dritie: whereupon the King said to Prince Edward, who  
 all that day sate by him vnarmed: this knight your com-  
 panion hath behaved himselfe valiantly, but what would  
 you doe if you should enter into armes: I pray you doe  
 so much for my sake, as to arme your selfe to morrow, that  
 I may say, that I haue sene the best knight in the world  
 runne at Tilt before me. That is easie to be done said  
 Prince Edward, neuerthelesse your Grace shall doe me great  
 honour, not to let me to enter into the field, that you may  
 still maintaine that good conceit of me, yet to pleasure your  
 Grace, I am content to doe as you command. The Tour-  
 ney ended, the King shewed great fauour and countenance  
 vnto Bellager, and to the rest of the knights, after they  
 were disarmed. And for that the report went, that the next  
 day Prince Edward would enter into the Tourney, all the  
 bruest knights determined to be there, and to be of the  
 contrary part against him, whereat Padritie was well pleas-  
 ed, and glad to heare it, that she might see and behold his  
 valour, as thinking vpon nothing else but onely on him,  
 and although she made great account of Bellager, it was  
 nothing in respect of the lone and good will she bare vnto  
 Prince Edward.

The next day, when all the knights were armed and  
 entred into the field, Prince Edward and his company set



so brauely upon his aduersaries, being at the least 200. good knights, that in short time hee had vanquished them all: and so returning to the Court, put off his armour, where the King desiring rather to see him with his armes in hand, went and embraced him, saying: I thinke my selfe happy that ener I knew you: and should esteeme my selfe much more happy, if I might alwaies haue you with me. Prince Edward said, I am at your Graces commandement at all times, and in euery place wheresoeuer. Padric hearing the King so much commend his loue, said to her selfe, what vnfortunate chance haue I: and what shall I doe: my brother loueth this knight so well, that I can neuer finde any meanes to speake with him: but it is no maruell that I being a woman should loue him, for his valour deserueth no lesse: but I am a foole that I haue not sought the meanes as yet to shew him my minde. And for that she could not speake to him, by reason he still kept company with her brother, she determined to speake to Bellager, and the same euening there being a royall banquet prepared for all the knights, she called Bellager vnto her, and said: Sir, that country may well be accounted happy, wherein there are to be found such excellent knights as you: for what is he that liueth, that can expresse the great vertue and valour that is in you and your companion: whereat I am much abashed, but if I knew that he were not in loue with some faire Lady, I would make much more account of him: and saying so she fetcht such a sigh, that she could speake no more. But Bellager louing her well, thought if he could so deceiue her by policie, and so attaine to the thing he desired, spake vnto her and said: Madame, it is true, that Prince Edwards vertue and valour is so great, that his equall is not to be found in all the world: and I can assure you that I haue bin long in his company, and yet could neuer perceiue that he loued any Lady or gentlewoman whatsoeuer, because he is neuer at rest, but still is employed about some earnest affaires, and withall is so kinde and courteous of nature, that if he were

amozously



amozously affected, he would loue you for your beauty. Padricie glad at the heart to heare that, said: Sir, tell me not so, for I will neuer beleue that my beauty is so great, that he should loue me for the same: but I will neuer graunt you that said hee, for that I know not any gentlewoman in the world, that he ought sooner to loue then you. If hee loueth me, said she it is because his heart apparantly assur-  
reth him of the great loue and amity that I beare vnto him: for I will not conceale it from you, knowing that you are both so faithfull friends, that in shewing it to you, me thinkes I tell it to himselfe. You may beleue it Ma-  
dame said he, and I assure you this euening I will tell him, and deale in such sort with him, that he shall stay a while here for the loue of you. I should be right happy said she, if it would please him to stay: but he shall be much happier said he, to be your Knight, which to effect I will from henceforth take the charge vpon mee, and so for that time, they left off speaking together. Prince Edward in the  
meane time, perceiued that his companion loued the Prin-  
cesse, which grieved him, because he was a Moore: and yet he cared not much, thinking that the Lady would not suffer her selfe to be so easily wone. The next euening ensuing,  
Bellager went vnto the Princesse and said vnto her: Ma-  
dame, I am come to certifie your Grace, that I haue spo-  
ken with Prince Edward, and haue tolde him (as I said vn-  
to you) that he is your Knight, and said further, that I  
haue perswaded you so well, that you haue promised mee to  
loue him: I beseech you Madame, let mee not be found a  
lyer: for it is so, that he hath a great desire to speake with  
you in secret, to tell you his minde: for otherwise he can-  
not doe it, because he is continually with the King your bro-  
ther. Although it should be a shame for me (said she) yet  
I will doe it: and therefore I pray you tell him, that at  
night he may come secretly into my chamber, and there  
take his pleasure, when euery man is gone to bed.

The same night Bellager perceiuing his companion to  
be fast asleepe, rose vp softly, and went into the Princesse  
Padricies



Padricies chamber, that staid for him at the gate, without any light, that she might neither be seene or heard of any of her Gentlewomen: And being entered, he took her by the hand, and sat downe with her, and counterfainting his speech as much as he could, that he might not be knowne: he gave her great thanks for the honour and fauour that she shewed him, and after he had embraced her in his armes: She thinking it had bene Prince Edward, of whom she supposed her selfe to be beloued: presently consented vnto his desire, and suffered him to doe what he would, and with that he took the pleasure that louers so much desire one of the other, and of a maide made her a wife: and after he had passed the greatest part of the night in pleasure with her, he went into his chamber againe with a rich ring that the Princesse had giuen him, but that action could not be concealed, for befoze that Prince Edward departed from thence, he vnderstood it by certaine words cast forth by the Princesse, wherewith he was much displeased. The next day the Princesse apparrelled her selfe very richly, and entered very ioyfully into the Hall, where the King her brother sat with Prince Edward, who the same day told the King, it was time for him to depart, and that he could stay no longer: wherat the King was so grieved, that all that night he was sicke, and the next day kept his bed, and B. I. lager for his part went the next night to finde the Princesse, as he had done the night befoze, and there staid with her a long time in great pleasure and delight: and she thinking that she had Prince Edward in her armes, desired him to stay a while longer, or else she said, it was not possible for her to liue: He answered that he would doe the best he could to stay to pleasure her: and so for that time he took his leaue. The next morning he went to see her brother, where she found Prince Edward, that asked the King how he did. I cannot doe very well (said hee) seeing you are minded to depart from hence, but assure your selfe, if I had not so great affaires in hand, I would beare you company, but it shall not belong, for I will finde you out. I thanke you



your Grace ( said Prince Edward ) for the honour it pleaseth you to shew me, and that without any desert, on my behalfe, assuring you, that I would gladly stay, if it lay in my power to doe it, but I must of force depart from hence, which Padricke hearing, being very sorrowfull, she rose up, and like a woman out of her wits, tooke Prince Edward by the hand, and said vnto him, Sir, I pray you let mee speake a word or two with you, I can tell you something, which I would desire you to doe for the leue of mee, and yet my brother must not heare it: and sitting downe in a window by him, she began to speake vnto him with tears in her eyes, saying, Ha good Sir, how haue you deceiued me: Did not you this night, promise me to stay here a while, and will you now be gone on the sudden: you doe not the action of a true and faithfull Knight, seeing you haue had your pleasure of mee. Prince Edward marvelled to heare those words, and presently suspected what had fallen out, in such sort that if hee had not loved Bellager well, hee had made him repent it, but he held his peace, and not to make the deceit knowne vnto the Princesse, said, Madame, I am very sorry that I may not stay here, but I call to minde a promise that I haue made, which was to be at a certaine time appointed in another place, I must of necessity depart, and I pray you thinke not hardly of it, for I assure you that I rest yours, wheresoeuer I goe. Your departure, said she, displeaseth me much, but my loue and affection is so great towards you, that I must of force be patient, to the end that you should keepe your promise, desiring you to haue me in your remembrance, and respect not my folly: for that if I haue graunted all that you haue desired at my hands, it was done onely in regard of the great loue I beare vnto you. Madame, said hee, I know it well, and for that cause I binde my selfe to be yours while I liue, and when you shall commaund me, I will leaue all other affaires apart, to come to doe you service. With that the King called Prince Edward, who was so much offended against Bellager, that hee vnderstood not what the King said vnto him,



82 The third Booke of the History

him, but earnestly besought him to give him leave to depart, saying he could stay no longer there: for which cause the King (although against his will) appointed a Ship to be made ready for him, well furnished with every thing: Bellager being very sorry to leave the Princesse, which was in a manner halfe dead, and the King exceeding sorrowfull for their departure, calling his Lady Finee to remembrance. After their departure, the Princesse Padritie perceiving her selfe with childe, was no wayes sorrowfull to have a sonne by so brave a Knight as Prince Edward was, but when the time of her delivery drew nere, she kept it so secretly that no body knew it, but onely one of her Gentlewomen, in whom she put her trust, which delivered the childe unto her mother, who brought it up till it was eight yeares of age, and Padritie for the love of that childe, and of Prince Edward, would never marrie, but staid continually with the Quene her mother, and after erected a goodly house of Nunnes, wherein with great devotion she past the rest of her life. The childe was called Blandidon, who being of age, was by his mother, sent with a faire traine of men into England, to be made Knight by Prince Edward his father, and became so valiant and stout, that without disclosing himselfe unto him whom he supposed to be his father, did many wonderfull things, & brought divers strange adventures to an end: and in his time, there was not a better Knight almost found in all the world, except one that came out of the same countrie with him, and had borne him company a long time, and were made Knights together: After that Blandidon shewed Prince Edward that he was his sonne, which Prince Edward (not to give him any cause of griefe) would not deny, seeing him to be a valiant Knight: so for that cause he was by all men esteemed to be Prince Edwards sonne, unlesse it were of Quene Florida onely, that knew the contrary by the King her husband.

How

H  
two  
their  
certa



the of  
night  
aske p  
that it  
teares  
and sat  
displea  
know  
manife  
from c  
longe y  
cause o  
contin  
said Pri  
sure po  
line, I  
Lord, s  
your ge  
would o  
punish  
ring the  
and crea  
nance a



## CHAP. VI.

How *Prince Edward* pardoned *Bellager*, and how they two trauieling by Sea, found a Gentlewoman that desired their aide, whom they holpe, and deliuered a Knight from certaine treason that was deuised against him.



Prince Edward, being imbarked and sailing towards Constantinople, was so much offended with *Bellager*, that he knew not in what manner to speake vnto *Bellager*, hauing committed so dishonorable an action, and unworthy of a balliant Knight. On the other side, *Bellager* was so much ashamed, that all the night he durst not speake vnto him: and so determined to aske pardon at his hands, and the next morning, perceiuing that it could not be otherwise, but he must know it, with teares in his eyes he kneeled downe before *Prince Edward* and said: My Lord, I pray you thinke no more vpon the displeasure that you haue conceaued against me: for you know well, that he which is slave to loue, although he manifestly knew his owne errour, yet could not abstaine from comming into it: and therefore I pray you for the loue you beare vnto the *Princesse Florida*, not to be the cause of my death, which I can by no meanes shun, if you continue in your displeasure towards mee. I cannot chuse, said *Prince Edward*, but forgive you, neuerthelesse, I assure you, that you did mee great wrong, and that while I live, I will not loue you so well as I did. Say not so my Lord, said *Bellager*: for if I thought I should not haue your good grace and fauour, as I was wont to haue, I would doe as *Fince* did, and so would giue my selfe that punishment which my fault deserueth. *Prince Edward* fearing that he would kill himselfe, willingly forgave him: and from that time forward shewed him as good countenance as euer he did. Meane time *Prince Edward* began



to be very ioyfull, thinking to goe to see his Lady: And hauing sayled two daies, late in the evening, they perceiued a boat comming as hard as it could towards them: wherein there was a Lady richly apparellled, and two olde men, who being hard by the ship, the gentlewoman leaped lightly into the Knights ship, and therewith the two olde men, went bakke againe with their boat. The gentlewoman being entred, without speaking any word, went and laid hands vpon the Ruder, to make the ship winde another way. Prince Edward maruailing thereat, spake vnto her, and said, gentlewoman what doe you: let vs goe on our way, and trouble vs not: wherewith she made a lowe reuerence, and said, my Lord, know that your force and valour is so great, that many men want your ayde, wherefore I beseech you be not offended at that which I haue done, for that this night you should deliuer a woman and a Knight, that should be put to death by great treason. If it be so as you say, said Prince Edward, I will gladly graunt to your request: But tell me I pray you, how you knew of our comming: I knew it said she by a Lady that loueth you, and esteemeth you very much, and shee that you should deliuer, is her cozen, and for that cause she sent mee to you: And what must I doe to deliuer her said he: The Knight and the woman, said the gentlewoman, are both accused for one thing, and not far hence haue a great liuing: This Knight hath abrother, the most wicked and villainous traitour that liueth in the world, which hath wrought in such sort with a gentlewoman that is in the house of his brother, vpon promise of marriage, that by night she is to open a back-dore that is within the Castle, that he might enter and take it, and so kill all that are therein: which he would doe, if it were not for my Distresse, that by her art knoweth it, and hath discouered it.

Therefore we will be there before him, and the gate being open, we will enter, and you shall keepe the gate, to punish that wicked traitor when he cometh, and presently they arrived in good time at the said place, and without  
noise



noise went with their guide to the back gate of the Castle, which was presently opened unto them, by the gentlewoman that had devised the treason: which said, thinking that they had bene them that she expected, come and follow me, for it is time to put your enterprise in effect: and having taken Bellager by the hand, led him with her, and Prince Edward with their guide staid at the gate, the gentlewoman of the Castle led Bellager into the knights chamber that was Lord of the Castle, that slept in his bed with his wife, and having lighted a war-candle, said unto Bellager, that followed her with his sword drawn in his hand, Sir, now accomplish your desire. Bellager having compassion on them that slept, turned towards the gentlewoman and said, thou villainous woman that art worthy of death, why wilt thou have these two put to death that deserve it not, and that never did thee wrong? She perceiving that it was not he that she expected, began to cry with a loud voyce, and to say, by my Lord, see heere is a knight that would kill you, and so went crying throughout the Castle, to cause the knights men to come helpe their Lord, which she did, that the knight might be killed, before her treason were discovered. The knight that slept awakened, and seeing Bellager with his naked sword in his hand, was in feare, and presently rose up all the rest in the Castle doing the like, and taking their armes, went to assault Bellager, which got nothing by excusing himselfe, or to say, that he came thither to preserve them from a treason that was devised against them: and therefore perceiving his danger to be so great, was constrained to defend himselfe, although he had no desire to strike any of them, and so hurt foure or five knights, and killed one that assailed him very hard, but if it had not bene for the Gentlewoman that came unto him by sea, that came crying for ayde to helpe Prince Edward, which was already fighting with those that were come to take the Castle, Bellager had been but in a bad case, and said, ha my Lord, what will you doe? What? will you kill him, that comes to save your life? and  
with



with that briefly declared the treason vnto him, and how the other knight that was at the gate had already killed his brother, and was fighting with the rest of his enemies, so that as soon as Bellager was gone in with the gentlewoman, the traitour arrived there with thirty knights, who perceiuing the gate to be open, lighted off their horses, thinking to enter: but Prince Edward, stoppt their passage, saying, traitours, what come you to seeke for here at this time of the night, and with that gaue the knights brother of the Castle such a blow, that he clane his head in twaine, and therewithall he fell dead to the ground, at which time all the rest set vpon him, against whom he fought valiantly, and that was the cause that made the gentlewoman run for aide, and found Bellager in that sort like to haue bene slaine. But when the treason was knowne, they wondred thereat, and believing it, asked Bellager forgiveness, and with that went all together in great haste to aide Prince Edward, that had made a great slaughter of them, that were there, and with the aide that came vnto him, in short time put the rest to the edge of the sword, and those that fled, ranne and drowned themselves in the sea: the gentlewoman that had denised the treason, perceiuing that she could not escape death, and that her treason was discovered, leapt ouer the Castle wall, and killed her selfe. Shee that had brought the ayde vnto the Lord of the Castle, shewed him his dead brother, and then at large declared all the treason: in good truth said he, I am much bound vnto your mistress and mine, that hath aided me in so great necessity, for without her, without doubt I had bene dead: and when it was day, he caused the bodie of his brother and others, with the traitorous gentlewoman, to be carried into the Country thereabouts, that every man might see them, and know of their treason, and after caused them to be burnt, thinking it to be too small a punishment for them. Prince Edward and Bellager were hurt, for which cause the Lord of the Castle desired them to stay there till they were healed of their wounds: but the gentlewoman that brought them

them  
that b  
mou!  
hands  
celest  
before  
and b  
Lords  
may b  
you th  
both h  
ouer a  
to you  
and b  
gladly  
Lady,  
great b  
the ge  
king le  
into the  
hane re  
before  
of being  
world,  
Queene  
out of t  
she coul  
other so  
neuerth  
ther, tha  
hane a fi  
W<sup>e</sup>it  
the sato  
nied wit  
lea fide,  
their bea  
ther: the



them thither said, that she would bring them to her mistress that had great and earnest desire to see them, and that would with all possible expedition, heale them with her own hands, saying that such was her charge: the Knight perceiving it to be her pleasure, would not contradict her, but before they departed, she caused them to be disarmed, and having leached & dressed their wounds, she said: My Lords, I pray you be not offended to goe with me, that I may bring you to a Lady that hath a greater desire to see you then any other Knights in the world, and one that will both heale and cure you very well. For see I have moored over a boat to returne backe againe, if you take me not into yours, for which cause I pray you beare mee company and bring me to my mistress. Prince Edward said, he would gladly doe it, and that he had great desire to see that wise Lady, but that he could not stay long there, because he had great businesse otherwise: you shall be no longer there said the gentlewoman then it pleaseth you, and with that taking leave of Lord of the Castle and his wife, they entered into their Ship, and set saile, (although they had neede to have rested themselves) but they had no great way to make before they came to the Isle of Hercania, the Lady thereof being the greatest Magitian at that time living in the world, and it was she that gave the enchanted glasse to the Queene of Lacedemonia, therewith to deliver her sonne out of the enchantment wherein he was: and although she could have delivered her cosen out of his extremity in other sort, by giving him speedy intelligence of the treason, nevertheless she caused Prince Edward to be brought thither, that she might see him, thinking by that meanes to have a fit occasion for the same.

Being at sea, they arrived the same night very late at the said Island, and found the Lady of the Isle accompanied with divers Ladies, Gentlewomen and Pages at the sea side, and every one having a garland of flowers about their heads, made great ioy for the Knights comming thither: the Lady her self being not very olde, but a woman



of great authority and learning, at that time having a staffe of gold in her hand, whereon she leaned. Prince Edward seeing so great a company, was very glad, and presently went on land with his companion, to salute the Lady, who embracing him in her armes with great affection, said, in good truth Sir Knight, I am glad to see you, and this my Island may account it selfe happy for your arrivall therein: for I must plainly tell and let you know, that I both love and esteeme you for the great valour I know to be in you, praying the heanens that hath brought you hither at this time, and granted me the favour and grace to see you here: and meruaile not I pray you, that I am so well acquainted with your affaires, for that it is the heanens goodnesse, that giueth knowlege, wisedome, and vnderstanding vnto men: and so by the art and science wherewith he hath indowed me, I know your valour, and for that cause I cannot expresse the ioy and pleasure I haue conceiued to behold you in my presence, without feare of any danger what soeuer: you may now goe rest and take your ease, and after when it pleaseth you, you may in peace depart, and goe to the place where you so much desire to be, meane time I will tell you that she is much perplexed for the loue of you, and grieved for your absence, as having more interest in you, then you either know or conceiue, in such sort, that the griefe which she sustaineth is very much, but you shall come time enough both to ease that, and to release her of her feare: meane time I pray you rest your selfe here, and be not grieved in any wise, for all shall be well. Madame, said Prince Edward, you will not beleene how my heart reioiceth for the good newes you tell me: and therefore I esteeme my selfe happy to haue arrived in this your Island, not onely to see you, but also that I might haue some occasion to offer my service vnto you, in regard of the great ioy and pleasure I haue receiued to heare you speake of my sweet Lady and Mistresse.

You haue sufficiently requited me therein, said the Lady, in that you haue released and comforted my Cousin. But I

I n  
wer  
spee  
wa  
ly o  
of th  
etgh  
delig  
P  
talk  
mind  
day,  
selue  
wher  
Princ  
repor  
pass  
to re  
woun  
thence  
that  
that  
all  
gaine,  
stand  
cellent  
with  
raut  
her in  
for the  
ber: a  
ber, he  
ding  
ding  
to  
backe,



I now leaue speaking of those matters, for it is time you were at rest, and so entertaining Bellager with friendly speech, taking one by one hand, the other by the other, she walked with them, into the Hall, where they were presently disarmed, and being laid in two costly beds, were healed of their wounds by the Lady her selfe, where they rested eight daies in great delight, the Lady every day seeking to delight them with new manner of entertainment.

Prince Edward all that while, taking great delight to talke with the Lady, and she for her part, to please his minde, entertained him with no lesse delight. And one day, when they began to be whole, they went to sport themselves, and to haake in that pleasant and delectable Island: where great numbers of the Country people came to see Prince Edward, of whose valour they had heard so great report: and returning to the Pallace againe, after they had passed that day in great pleasure and delight, they went to rest. Prince Edward being then well healed of his wounds determined without longer aboad, to depart from thence, as desiring greatly to see his Lady, and supposing that she was with childe, he was so well pleased therewith, that with the great contentment he receiued thereat, he fell asleepe: where hauing slept a little while, as he waked againe, he perceiued a beautifull Lady richly apparelled, standing by his bed side, that played so cunningly and excellently vpon a Harpe, and sang so sweetly thereunto, that with the sweetnesse of the melody hee seemed in a manner raptured: and because hee would not trouble nor molest her in her musicke, he lay still, wondering who she might be, for that all the while he had bene there, hee had not seen her: and by reason of the light that burned in the chamber, he perceiued her to be of so great beauty, and so exceeding faire, that he seemed to be raptured in his minde, hauing cleane forgotten his Lady Florida and himselfe to

When the gentlewoman had ended her song, she slept backe, making as though she would haue gone out of the chamber:



36 The third Booke of the History

But Prince Edward putting forth his arme, tooke her by the hand, and said: Gentlewoman, let me intreat you not to be gone so soone, for I assure you, I haue taken great contentment in your exceeding beauty, and to heare your sweet and pleasant song, tell me therefore I pray you, who you are, for if it please you to commaund me any seruice, you shall finde me ready to obey you, with all my heart. The Gentlewoman thanked him, and said, that she was well assured of his good will: and therefore knowing him to be the best Knight that euer wore sword, she was come thither onely to serue and attend on him: and therewithall said, it was time for her to depart from thence, and to be gone. You shall not goe so soone said he, if I can. Will you then hold me by force said the Gentlewoman, & keepe mee here against my will: No surely said Prince Edward, my meaning is onely to beseech you not to leaue my company so soone, in regard of the great pleasure I receiue in your presence, as neuer hauing seene a beautifuller Gentlewoman then you are, nor one that can play on the Lute nor sing better then your selfe: & I am the rather delighted with your pleasant musicke, because I haue some skill therein, as well as others: Then said the Gentlewoman, as farre as I perceiue, I must of force stay with you, and so sitting downe againe, she said: Sir, seeing you can both play and sing, I beseech you for my sake, take this Lute into your hands, and play some song vpon the same. That will I doe with all my heart said the Knight, and so sitting vpright in his bed, and hauing taken the Lute in his hand, playing thereon, he sung the song hereafter following.

**L**oue doth full sore torment my heart,  
That I can take no rest:  
And yet I care not for the smart,  
So that within your brest,  
You scorne not for to fauour me,  
And I your seruant still may be.

Loue

The  
sweetly  
Lord,  
sing be  
Not so  
any th  
Madam  
to bitt  
leane m  
and ple  
said, fir  
the plea  
that I  
Mary, t  
haue pe  
is more  
with th  
sed her



Loue doth commaund me to obey,  
 Your beauty I adore,  
 And can by no meanes say you nay,  
 But still will doe it more,  
 So that you will vouchsafe to assure,  
 To me in loue still to endure.  
 Loue, leauing, will, and willingnesse,  
 Procures to me some ease,  
 And tels me that your gentlenesse  
 My grieffe will soone appease:  
 And that your nature is so kinde,  
 That I shall all contentment finde.  
 Then craue I mercy at your hand,  
 My sweet and dearest dame,  
 So sure my blisse doth onely stand,  
 In hoping of the same.  
 I die for loue, I cannot chuse,  
 Vnlesse some mercy you will vse.

The song ended, the Gentlewoman hearing him sing so  
 sweetly, took him by the hand, and said: It repents me my  
 Lord, to thinke what a fault I committed, to play and  
 sing before you, that had no skill therein, in respect of you.  
 Not so madame, said he: for that I neuer saw nor heard  
 any that had more skill therein then you: And therefore  
 Madame, said he: seeing it hath pleased you to vouchsafe  
 to visite me at this time, let me craue your fauour not to  
 leave me in this passion, otherwile I shall neuer haue ioy  
 and pleasure at my heart. If that were true that you haue  
 said, sir Knight, said she, I would not like to doe you all  
 the pleasure I could. What will you, said Prince Edward,  
 that I should doe to assure you thereof? What, said she:  
 Mary, that you will promise to stay here as long as I will  
 haue you. What will I promise you, said hee: and which  
 is more, to stay here as long as I live, if it please you: and  
 with that the Gentlewoman said, that sith he had promi-  
 sed her so much, it was in him to doe his pleasure with her,



In regard that she esteemed him above all the Knights in the world. When he began to embrace her, so that she was content to satisfie his desire: So he caused her to put off her cloathes, and taking her in his armes, drew her into his bed, where with great contentment, of a maide he made her otherwise: & in that sort held her till it was morning, that she desired to depart, lest she should be perceived. When he said, Lady, whither will you goe? If I see you no more, what shall I doe? Take you no care for that, said she, I will come every night to visite you, as long as you stay here: for that in the day time you cannot see me. I am content, said Prince Edward, and when she was gone, he was very well pleased, that he had gotten her to grant to his desire.

## CHAP. VII.

How the Ladies daughter of the Island of *Hercania* was gotten with childe by *Prince Edward*, which childe after that was King of *Scotland*, and how *Prince Edward* being come to *Constantinople*, went to see *Florida*, and how the Gardeners wife entertained him, and after that, made a great rumour in the garden, and how her husband appeased her.



**P** Prince Edward had bene well advised, he had neuer committed so great a fault against his well-beloved *Florida*, but the Magician had so much bewitched his minde that night, that he cared not for any thing whatsoever, and had hidde his sword from him, whereby he could not finde it untill she gave it him againe, for that the Lady that had laine with him, was her daughter, who knowing by her art, that of her and Prince Edward there should a Knight of great valour be borne, she made chaffe rather to bring that to passe, then to marry her



her to any other : The yong Lady called Argonide, found  
 her selfe to be with childe, and in due time brought forth a  
 sonne, called Pompid, which hauing bene nourished by  
 with great care, being at yeares, was sent into England  
 with Blandidon, which the Lady Magician sent to fetch  
 from the Lady Padritie, that they might both be made  
 knights by Prince Edward, who as willingly gaue them  
 the order of Knighthood, not knowing who they were. But  
 as bloud cannot alter, he loued Pompid with great affecti-  
 on, who was not vnlike him, and desired him to remaine in  
 his Court, which he and his companion did : but soz that  
 his valour was soone knowne in diuers places, he was in-  
 treated of diuers persons to aide and assist them, and esca-  
 ped many dangerous aduentures, as you may reade in the  
 history of Prince Edward his father.

These two knights afterward went to Constantinople,  
 where they atchieued many valiant enterprises, as they  
 had done in many other places of the world, by which  
 meanes Pompid soz his valour was esteemed throughout  
 all the world, and at last the onely daughter of the King of  
 Scotland, a most beautifull Lady, became so inamored of  
 him, that she sent one of her gentlewomen purposely to  
 seeke him, to reuenge her quarrell, and to defend her a-  
 gainst a knight that had slaine her brother : and after the  
 gentlewoman had sought him in diuers places, at the last  
 she found him in the Emperors of Almaines Court, where  
 being made to promise her a hane, she brought him into  
 Scotland, to keepe a Bridge, where he vanquished many  
 ballant knights, which the King of Scotland hearing, went  
 to see him, & desired him to goe with him vnto his Court,  
 where being in company with the Kings daughter, they  
 became extreamely amorous one of the other : there Pom-  
 pid stayed a while, soz the loue of her, and every day en-  
 tred into Jousts and Tournyes to shew her his valour.  
 And after hauing vnderstood by him who was his father,  
 she desired him to goe vnto his fathers Court, and make  
 himselfe knowne, & to intreat him to send his Ambassadors  
 D 4 to



to aske her fathers good will, that she might marie him: whereupon Pompide went into England, and made him selfe knowne vnto his father, who thereat was exceeding foyfull, and acknowledged him for his sonne: and hauing sent into Scotland, accordingly the marriage was sone agreed vpon, and the wedding kept in most royall and sumptuous manner, in such sort that Pompide by his great valour, was after that King of Scotland. Blandidon married one of Prides daughters, and besides the dignities that he held by Prince Edwards gift, after Prides death was Duke of Cales: for this cause therefore the Lady of the Island Hercania, was desirous that her daughter should lye with Prince Edward, although she knew full well what great loue he bare vnto Florida, and this Pompide before he departed from his mother, got a beautifull gentlewoman (that dwelt in his grandmothers house) with child, by whom he had a valiant knight, who after was Lord of the Island of Hercania.

Thus Prince Edward stayed there for the space of two moneths, not once remembryng nor thinking vpon the Princesse Florida, and euery day went an hunting with Bellager, and diuers other knights, euery night lying with Argonide: meane time the mariners meruailed much, that he had forgotten the great hast hee had when he departed from Lacedemonia, but they wanted nothing, for the Lady still made them good there.

Bellager likewise was in a manner out of his senses, and neuer made meanes vnto his company to depart from thence, because he found himselfe to be in so great delight. But when the Lady of the Island perceiued it was time to let the knights depart from thence, she withdrew her enchantment, and gaue Prince Edward his sword againe, who the next morning when hee awaked, knew not whether that which had past betwene him and the Lady, was true or not: and wondred much thereat, not knowing what it should meane, and therefore presently asked leaue of the Lady to depart, which she willingly



lingly granted, giuing him many gifts, and amongst the rest she gaue him a very rich greene Armour, and a faire shield, like to that which he brought out of England, and being ready to depart, she shewed him Argonide her daughter: Prince Edward remembred well, that he had seene that Lady diuers times, and as then perceiued that the Lady by her art had deceiued him, and although he was not a little grieued in his heart, yet he dissembled it and said, Madame, doe you shew vs so beautifull a thing now when we are going hence: I had rather haue seene her sooner, that I might haue done her some seruice: You haue done her seruice enough said the Lady, and therefore take you no care for that: which he vnderstanding, assured himselfe of that which before he doubted, and therewith fell into such a rage, that he could not conceale it, which the Lady perceiued well, but hauing done that she would, she cared nothing, neuerthelesse Argonide was grieued long time after, for the departure of Prince Edward, in such manner, that after he was gone, she tooke delight in no thing, but when her little sonne was bozne, she began to be somewhat better comforted.

After that Prince Edward put to sea, and vnderstood by the sailors, that he had staid there two moneths, he said, miserable wretch that I am, what haue I lingred for heere so long: will not the Lady and mistres of my heart, beleeue and be perswaded, that the little care I haue of her, hath made me stay so long: In good troth they may haue iust cause to say so: but what is he that can escape the multitude of snares that in these dates are spread abroad for men: this Lady by her art hath deceiued and beguiled me, and still entertained mee in delights: but if I had had my good sword by my side, she had not so distraught me of my senses, to make me disloyall to my Lady and Mistresse, but I am a traitor that could not looke vnto my selfe: Accursd may she be and all such as shee is: in which perplexity hee remained, untill hee was with the Lady Olimba, which was not long after.

When



When Pride sawe his Lord prince Edward, his heart reioyced, and so did prince Edwards to see him, for which cause he embraced him in his armes, and gave him great thanks for comming to seeke him, asking him what newes in England, and how the King his father, and the Queene his mother did: Pride made answer, That they were well, and in good health, and that nothing grieved them, but his departure only. I would be glad (sayd hee) that I shall reioyce their hearts agayne by my returne, which I intend to doe very soone, if I can possibly. The entertainment that Olimba and Prince Edward gave each other, was great, when the Lady hauing demaunded of him, whether hee had heard any newes from the princeesse Florida, shewed him a Letter, that shee had receiued from her, and tolde him all that she had otherwise heard, and how the Emperour vnderstande who he was, as also what had happened vnto Clodion, with the great Dogge, and how Gataru was in the Emperours Court.

Prince Edward was græued that the Emperour knew so much of his affaires, but receiued so great pleasure at his Ladies letter, that he cleane forgot all his grieue forepassed, wishing to find some meanes to dis-inchaunt Maiortes the Dog, and thought well of the great Gataru, because he had kept his promise, and that he had done so much in his behalfe, but specially, because he was of opinion, that he was brother to Maiortes,

After that, he called Clodion, and asked him newes of Iulian, and of his Lady, and how he liked her. He thinketh sayd Clodion, that she is the fairest creature liuing in the world, and tolde him that she willed him to desire him to come secretly vnto her, as he was wont to do: that will I do presently sayd he, for I thinke it long till I be on the way, but at the intreaty of the princeesse Olimba, and Pride, he stayed all that day: It was a strange thing to see what loue the Dog Maiortes made to prince Edward, wherewith he sayd: It griueneth me to see thee thus in the forme of a Dog, but I hope I shall see thee otherwise: and



and at that time remembryng that his sword had the vertue to vndoe Inchauntments, he esteemed himselfe verie brwise, that he thought no sooner thereupon, considering what ayde he had giuen therewith vnto Primaleon, to the two inchaunted Ladies, and to Tarue King of Lacedemonia: whereupon taking his right soze-legge in his hand, and laying it vpon his sword, the Dog returned into the forme of a man, as great as his brother Gataru, but farre fairer.

Prince Edward was glad of that Metamorphosis, and with that embraced him in his armes, saying, Ha my good friend, how comes it to passe that I haue had you thus long with me, and knew not what you were? Maiortes kissing his hand, thanked him for the great good he had done him: and being demaunded if he had a brother called Gataru, he sayd, I haue such a brother, and it is hee that is now in the Emperours Court. Then prince Edward shewed him what had happened betwene him and Gataru, and how hee had sent him to the Court, and further he spake of many things: Maiortes also shewed him how he had bene inchaunted in the Island of Malfade: but this ioy continued not long, for that as soone as the sword was taken out of his hand, he turned again into the forme of a Dogge, as he was before, whereby Prince Edward knew, that he had need of a stronger remedy, to dis-inchant him altogether: and to the end that his sword might not be knowne in the Court, he would not giue it him, that he might goe visite his brother, but determined to stay, till some other meanes happened to dis-inchant him, offering to lend him the sword as often as he would speake vnto Gataru: saying, that to giue it him altogether, he could not, esteeming it so much, in regard of the triall that he had made thereof. And for that the great desire hee had to see his Distresse, prouoked him much, he would deferre it no longer then that night. And hauing earnestly desired Pride to stay there a while untill hee sent him word, or came thither himselfe, he took his leaue of the princeesse Olimba and  
the



the rest, and putting on his old clothes, passed the barres of Saint George, with Zaidell his Squire, and late in the evening arrived in Constantinople, at such time as Florida was wont to walke in the garden, and going thither, when the Gardeners wife sawe him, shee was exceeding glad, and embraced him in her armes.

At the same time the princeesse Florida was very sad, knowing that her belly beganne to swell, and had no greater care then how to hide it, by which meanes, she was in feare to die with great dishonour. But when shee heard the gardeners wife make so great ioy, and heard the cause why, she could by no meanes conceale the same, but that all her Gentlewomen perceived it, and marvelled much thereat: but when she saw her friend and Lord Iulian, she was so surprized with ioy, that shee could not speake one word unto him. Prince Edward for his part, was no lesse ioyfull then she, but hee yet better concealed his extreame affection: And so comming unto her, he kneeled downe to kisse her hand, and she on the contrary was so abashed, that shee embraced him, saying, Ha Iulian, why have you stayed so long, seeing we have great neede of you? Madame, sayd he, I will confesse that I have committed a great fault, in not comming to do you service, but assure your selfe Madaine (sayd he) that I had great businesse that stayed me, beseeching you to pardon me, for I assure you that my heart was alwayes ready to doo you service, wheresoever I became. After that, Artaida and all the other Gentlewomen embraced him, saying they were very glad of his safe returne: but he could not content himselfe to behold such great beautie, and yet was much grieved to see that she was become so pale and leane, for which cause he sayde unto himselfe: Wretch that I am, why have I bene so disloyall: why have I given such occasion to my Lady, to be so much grieved, that it hath made her lose a great part of her beauty? At last, the princeesse perceiuing it, went into her chamber, making a signe vnto prince Edward to come that night vnto her: meane time

hee

hee  
his  
perce  
out  
trough  
band  
the sa  
gaine  
when  
to the  
dance  
their  
tree, F  
could  
you ca  
hath r  
secret:  
and th  
would  
hide m  
sayd p  
the hap  
led my  
the mo  
more ce  
great fa  
selfe,  
wholly  
thinke  
you ho  
we mo  
which  
therefo  
proude  
sayd she  
bold me  
sommat



hee stayed with the Gardener that was exceeding glad of his returne. But now the Gardeners wife being subtil, perceiving Florida to be so ioyfull, thought it was not w<sup>th</sup> out some occasion, in such sort that desiring to know the truth thereof, she would not disclose her minde to her husband: meane time, the princeesse ceased not to reioyce, for the safe returne of her friend Iulian, whom she went againe to see in the Garden, where she stayed for him, and when they met, for the great loue that they bare one vnto the other, teares fell from their eyes in great abundance, in such manner, as it had bene the first time of their meeting. And after that being set together vnder a tree, Florida spake vnto him, and sayd: Ha my Lord, how could you finde in your heart to stay so long from vs: Now you can hide your selfe no longer from me: for that Time hath revealed that vnto me which you held so long time secret: Now I know that your name is Prince Edward, and that you are the King of Englands sonne, where I would at this present gladly be, because I can no longer hide my shame and dishonour. I know that very well, sayd prince Edward, and for that cause, esteeme my selfe the happiest man liuing in the world: and that if I concealed my name and state from you, it was done onely to be the more bounden vnto you, and therefore to haue the more cause to loue you, seeing that you haue done mee so great fauour: and for that I can no longer conceale my selfe, I tell you plainly, that the Realme of England is wholly at your commaundement: and for the rest, I thinke it not conuenient to stay till the Emperour do aske you how, and by what meanes your belly doth swell, but we must preuent him, to the end hee may pardon you: which if hee refuse to doe, he can not hurt vs much: and therefore we will not deferre the time much longer, to prouide for our departure from hence. So must we do sayd she: and seeing that I haue committed this fault, behold me now heere, ready to do that which you onely shall commaund, intending to be yours while life endureth:  
and



and be carefull I pray you, that we may get safely away :  
for, for the rest I take no care.

Prince Edward perceiving the Princesse ready to goe  
with him, with great ioy and contentment, would often  
kisse her hand, and for a good time, staid there with her in  
great delight. All this time the Gardeners wife slept not,  
but being desirous to see if her imagination were true, stole  
sottly out of her house, and hid her selfe in the Garden a-  
mongst the trees, from whence perceiving how the Prin-  
cesse sate with Prince Edward, she was displeased exceeding-  
ly, and going to the place where these two lovers sate, fall-  
ling down on the ground, she began to make great sorrow,  
saying: O a wretch that I am, that by meanes of my co-  
uetousnesse, am cause of dishonour to the Emperour, which  
is the best Prince in the world. O Madame Florida, why  
hath you had no more regard to the honour and maiesty  
of your father? Who hath thus blinded you, and bereau-  
ned you of your senses, to suffer your selfe to be overcome  
of this Rascall? O a wretch that I am, what shall I doe?  
with what face shall I behold the Emperour and Em-  
presse, that reposed so great trust and confidence in me, and  
my husband? Alas unhappy woman that I am, what  
shall I doe, seeing I have bene so carelesse of that which  
was given me in charge? O Emperour of Constantino-  
ple, you perceiue not the treason that this villaine hath  
wrought, onely by my couetousnesse.

The Princesse perceiving her selfe to be surprized, was  
so perplexed at the Gardeners wifes wordes, that she fell  
into a swoond, wholly without senses, as if she had bene  
dead: which Prince Edward perceiving, and hearing the  
woman in such a rage, speaking as loud as she could, he  
was so much amazed, that he knew not what to doe. Ne-  
uerthelesse he being in that perplexity, embraced the Prin-  
cesse, to comfort her, and said vnto the Gardeners wife,  
thou wicked queane, thou shalt repent thy comming hither  
to worke this mischief, for I assure thee, I will kill thee,  
if thou beest not content: and therefore I aduise thee for  
thyne



thine owne profit, not to speake one word more. Ha Iulian, said the Gardeners wife, thou art the great enemy that I can haue, keepe thy gold and treasure thy selfe, for I will none of it, and thinke not to make me afraid with thy threatnings, I would thou hadst killed mee: for I will neuer cease weeping, that all the world may know it, being content to die a good death, if I may see thee come to an cruell end.

Then said Prince Edward, what shall I doe: I see my Lady and Mistresse dying, and cannot helpe her: on the other side, this accursed woman will not hold her tongue: but perceiuing her to be so obstinate, with one hand hee held the Princesse Fleridacs head, and with the other hee gaue the prailing woman such a blow that hee strooke her downe, and had proceeded to haue killed her, if the Gardener her husband had not by chance come thither: who perceiuing his wife when she went out, was jealous lest she went into the garden to dally and sport with Iulian, for which cause he rose out of his bed, and following her, said to himselfe: ha wretch that I am, for receiuing Iulian into my house, who by his beauty and comelinesse hath wonne my wifes heart: but I know, that as soone as it is day, I will send him hence. If I had bene wise I might haue thought that such a faire yong man as he is, were able to pierce the hearts of all those women that should behold him: and to proue it to be true, I perceiue that the Princesse her selfe loueth him well. Thus being gotten out of his house as softly as he could, to see what his wife did, and beholding her to be offended with Prince Edward, hee was much abashed: and at the very same time that hee came thither, Attraida likewise came thither, that was in no little feare, when she heard the Gardeners wife cry out in that manner: but when shee perceiued the Princesse to be in that pittifull estate, she was much grieved in her heart, and said: Ha wretch that I am, how iustly are we punished according to our deserts? And with that taking Fleridac by the arme, began to vse all the meanes she could to get  
life



life into her, for that as then the Knight seemed to be wholly out of his senses, and could neither speake nor doe any thing: the Gardener was very sorrowfull when he beheld the Princesse lying as if she had bene dead, and said: what may this meane that my Lady the Princesse is here at this time of the night?

Friend, said Prince Edward, I pray thee here me speake a word or two, seeing that thy wife is as I thinke out of her wits, but I deeme thee to be so wise, that thou wouldest not doe any dishonour unto the Princesse thy Mistresse. Know this, that I am a Knight of such estate, that can doe thee great good, and that I am become so inamored of this Lady, that for the great beauty and worth that I see in her, I haue disguised my selfe as thou seest: and for that of her fauour, she hath pittie on my griefe, I intend to carry her with me into England, where I am King, and to take you with me, to the end that you stay not here in danger behinde me: Nevertheless your wife came hither, and vied such speeches unto the Princesse, that by her meanes she is fallen into the state wherein you see her, but assure yourselves if the Princesse Florida dyeth, it shall cost you all your liues. Woe were me said the Gardener, if my Lady should die, and seeing that I onely haue bene cause of all this mischief, I must seeke to prouide a remedy for the same: wherewith he ran to fetch some water, which he cast in the Princesse face, who therewith recovering her senses, casting forth a great sigh, said, farewell baine world, I see that things euill done, cannot chuse but be revealed: Madame said the Gardener, vse no more of these speeches, for that all your affaires shall fall out well, and I will put my selfe into hazard to saue you.

The Princesse hearing the Gardener speake in that manner, was somewhat comforted, and said: I hope to liue to recompence thee, for thy good will: and for my part I assure thee that I could by no meanes withdraw my loue from this Knight, but that I am constrained to doe what soeuer he requireth, and wee must of force, altogether be gone

gone  
to dea  
man is  
ly hom  
haue b  
the Ga  
bring  
the dan  
I had  
displea  
be some  
ready to

How  
ture of  
rour her  
where O



da, that  
sure, but  
haue had  
with or  
bnto me  
else of ou  
ly under  
so, said  
ach: pe



gone from hence, least the Emperour should cause vs be put to death: for that I am assured, that this worthy Gentleman is of such estate, that I can not chuse but be greatly honoured by marrying of him, and you thrice happy to haue him for your Lord & Master: With all my hart said the Gardener, I would wish him to be well aduised in bringing this matter to a good end, that all we may escape the danger thereof. Feare you not that said the Knight, for I had rather die, then any of you should receiue the least displeasure in the world: and perceiving the Princesse to be somewhat pacified, they agreed among themselves to be ready to depart from thence the next morning.

## CHAP. VIII.

How Prince Edward tooke order for the secret departure of *Florida*, and how hee carried her out of the Emperour her fathers Court, and brought her safely to the place where *Olimba* kept,

**W**hen Iulian and his wife were gone into their house, the Knight took the Princesse *Florida* in his armes, and said: Madame, I was in doubt to haue lost you this night, for I assure you, I neuer found my selfe in such a case as I was in for the present time. It is very true said *Florida*, that in matters of love, there was neuer any pleasure, but it was mixed with some sorrow: for I my selfe haue had as much joy since yesterday, as one could possibly wish or desire, and after, this trouble and griefe happened vnto me. Madame, said Prince Edward, expect nothing else of our love, but all happy successe, for that it is not basely undertaken, but rather tendeth to our honour: May it be so, said she, that our honours may not in any wise be decreased: yet to tell you the truth, if I were not great with  
E childe,



childe, I would not make so great haste to be gone, for that the Emperour loueth and esteemeth you so much, that I am well assured hee would loyne me in marriage with you, vpon the first motion thereof, but for that before my departure, I should be forced to be deliuered of my child, and hauing committed such a fault, I would not for any thing in the world, see the Emperour and the Emperesse, but will rather depart: for this is certaine, I will not stay to inure their displeasure. That done, they tooke order about their departure, for all such things as were requisite, touching the same.

After that, the Princesse returned into her chamber, and Prince Edward was well pleased to haue brought his purpose to so good an end: the next day hee spake to the Gardener and told him, that he must goe to take order for their departure, and so passing the seas, he went to Olimba, to tell her of the matter, and agreed that she and her brother should goe to the place where Maruine kept, and that they should keepe themselves secretly in his house, for he would bring the Princesse Florida thither, and to that end they hired foure sailers, whom they willed to goe with their bark, and attend for them at the place where Prince Edward first met with the Princesse Olimba and her brother. When Prince Edward returning to Constantinople, was ioyfully receiued by Iulian, that had great desire to be gone from thence, so much he feared the Emperour: meane time Florida, not onely in regard of the trouble in the night, but also for the feare that she had of her sudden flight, was somewhat ill at ease, and durst not goe downe into the garden to Iulian and his wife, who was there to tell her of Prince Edwards returne, and said: How doe you Madame? I feare you are not well because you come not to walke in the garden: To whom the Princesse making answer, said, that she found her selfe not well, but what she ailed she knew not: May you be kept from any hurt said the Gardeners wife, Iulian my sonne is also come, and is not well at ease, and is in doubt that he shall be worse, where-  
with

with  
does:  
but kep  
ber, sa  
some a  
she ha  
up as  
stated  
full too  
you be  
defend  
parture  
dily be  
I be  
so I be  
hane to  
assurin  
that po  
cause th  
all their  
to take  
by the  
garden,  
darke)  
and go  
Squire  
ready,  
good bo  
toke Ac  
arrived  
Maruine  
night, w  
glad. W  
ther, an  
bapt an  
beauty.  
that his



with Florida was in great care and griefe what she should doe : and all that day came not downe into the garden, but kept her bed, and caused all her Gentlewomen to leane her, saying that she would sleepe, charging Attaida that as soon as the rest were asleepe, she should come to her, which she having done, the Princesse rose out of her bed, and being up as she was, went into the garden, where Prince Edward staid for her, who perceiuing her to be so sad and sorrowfull tooke her in his armes, and said : Madame, I pray you be not abashed in any wise, for assure your selfe, I will defend you against all the world, and as touching our departure, all things are ready, and for that cause let vs speedily be gone.

I hope said she, it may be done in a good time, for that, so I be alwaies in your companie, I am not afraid, as I haue well declared by putting my selfe in so great danger, assuring my selfe, that your valour and wisdom is such, that your affaires cannot chuse but fall out well : And because the Gardener and his wife were ready to depart with all their children, Prince Edward commanding them not to take any thing with them, he tooke the Princesse Florida by the hand, and Iulian tooke Attaida, and going out of the garden, vnseene of any man, ( by reason that it was very darke ) they staid not untill they were out of the Towne, and got to the place where Zaidell and the rest of his Squires staid for them : Prince Edward having his armes ready, presently armed himselfe, and mounting vpon a good horse, tooke the Princesse vp behinde him, and Zaidell tooke Attaida vpon his horse, and in that sort in short time arrived at the place, where Olimba, Bellager, Pride, and Maruine, with his children, had staid for them all that night, who no sooner perceiued them, but were exceeding glad. The two Princes meeting friendly, saluted each other, and although Florida had lost her colour, and was abashed and perplexed, yet Olimba wondred at her great beauty. Prince Edward for his part, was exceeding glad, that his affaires succeeded so well, after that by the aduise



52 The third Booke of the History

and counsell of them all, Maruines sonne was sent to certifie the Souldane thereof, that he might be ready, if need were to use his help. Which the Souldane understanding, caused all things to be put in a readinesse, and sent Prince Edward word, that all was ready, and at his command, and would not goe to see him, lest he should be discovered: but sent him many rich iewels, and other presents for the Princesse Florida.

CHAP. IX.

How the Gentlewomen perceiuing the departure of the Princesse *Florida*, made it knowne vnto the Emperour, who in that case behaued himselfe very wisely, and with great constancy, not suffering any of his knights to make any pursuit after her.



Vpon the morning, when Amandrie that was the Princesse Floridas bed-fellow, found hir not in bed, she rose vp in great feare, and went in to the other gentlewomens chamber, where finding neither the Princesse, nor Attaida, shee was much agrieved, and without speaking any words, went into the garden, where finding the gate open, and seeing neither the gardener nor his wife, nor any of their children, shee was certainly perswaded, that the Princesse was gone, wherewith beginning to lament, she said, O wretch that I am, how was I so bold of reason and iudgement, that I could not perceiue this thing that is fallen out, by meanes of this villaine and traitor Iulian? For that since he vled to come into this garden, the Princesse was cleane altered, and therefore it is most certaine that it is he that hath taken her away. O cursed fortune, how shall I haue the face to be so bold to present my selfe before the Emperour and Emperesse, to carry them this newes?



newes: what will they say: certainly that I was consenting to this treason, and that I agreed thereunto. Ha Iulian, how thou hast deceiued the Princesse Florida with thy faire and flattering speeches, I now well perceiue.

With that she went vnto the rest of the Gentlewomen, & said we haue slept soundly this night, that we could neither see nor heare when this mischief was wrought, know for certaine that the beauty of Iulian and his flattering speeches, whereat we so wondred, haue deceiued the Princesse Florida, and this night he hath bozen her, away together with the Gardener and his wife, that knew all his intents, and deceiued vs, telling vs that Iulian was their sonne, and yet he was nothing like vnto them, and we all this while were so foolish, that we could not perceiue it.

When the gentlewomen vnderstood those newes, they began to weepe and to rayle vpon Iulian, and were a good while before they durst be so bold to shew the Emperesse thereof, but at last they determined patiently to indure what might follow, & to shew her what had fallen out, declaring the same from point to point, whereat the Emperesse was so much grieued, that she was in a manner out of her senses, by meanes of the conceit she took thereat, which she shewed vnto the Emperour by one of her Ladies, who as he came out of the Church went talking with his Barons, and perceiuing the Lady that came vnto him to be so sorrowfull, he asked her what was the cause that moued her to come vnto him in that manner. To whom she answered, would my Lord it were not my fortune to bring your grace this sorrowfull newes: Know my Lord said she, that this night the Princesse Florida is fled away, and we know not with whom, and hath taken Iulian the Gardener and his wife with her, and that Amandrie and the rest of the gentlewomen knew nothing thereof: but onely that a little while after Primaleon departed from the Court, there came an exceeding faire yong man that dwelt with the gardener, and said he was his sonne, that went away for a certaine time, and after that came againe, and that the



Princesse loved him very well, and tooke great pleasure to conferre and talke with him, who comming thither two daies since, was exceeding well entertained of the Princes, whereupon she said she doubted that the same yong man, that called himselfe Iulians sonne had bozned her away.

The Emperour vnderstanding these sorrowfull newes, stood still a while, and spake not one word: at last Polendos, Abenunque, and the rest, of the knights that were present, offered to goe after, and to seeke her throughout all the world, that they might put them that had stolne her to some cruell death. The Emperour (that in the meane time felt himselfe much grieved in minde,) hearing their determination, said: be content my Lords, I pray you chaffer not into so great choller, it is no neede to doe as you say, for that I am certainly perswaded, that I know who it is, that hath taken away my daughter, for sure it is Prince Edward, of whom I made so great account: and by this meanes he will cause me to make an amends vnto him, of the dishonour that I once did vnto his grandfather, when in despight of him, I carryed away his daughter Agricole out of his Court: for Prince Edward being a gentle and courteous knight, in doing me this displeasure, will hereby reuenge his ancestors, for though he hath done diuers valerous actions, this is the greatest, that hee durst enterpryse to doe it himselfe alone; and on the other side, I wonder not that Florida was so much abused by his beauty, in regard she is very yong, and seeing that she hath chosen her a husband (for my intent was to giue her one) well may they speede: but it grieueth me for one thing, that I knew not their intents, but my hope is, that Prince Edward is so courteous a knight, that I am verily perswaded, that he hath not bozned away my daughter, but with full intent and purpose to marry her, which doing I shall be well pleased, although he hath much displeased mee thereby; meane time let no man speake any more vnto mee of any such thing, for such is my will and pleasure, and hauing said so, he went into the Emperresses chamber to comfort her,



her, and after he had shewed her the matter, he prayed her not to be grieved thereat, wherewith she perfectly appeased her choler, when she knew the young Princeesse was in the custody of so valliant a knight, as also to see that the Emperour took it so patiently, and which is more, made not any shew of the least dislike, nor was once offended with any of the Gentlewomen that attended on his daughter, but rather comforted them, by whom hauing vnderstood particularly of all Iulians practises in the garden, he knew manifestly by the signes that were giuen him, that it was Prince Edward, wondering much at his hardnesse.

And soz that he shewed so chearefull an outward countenance, it seemed he felt not much sorow and griefe at his heart: At that time the Dutchesse Brionelle came thither, that much blamed and discommended her daughter Attaida soz her proceedings therein: the like did the Duke Ptoleme her father: but the Emperour said vnto them, wheresoze doe you put the fault hereof in your daughter? Doe you not remember madame, what you did soz my sake? Florida did put her trust and confidence in her, ought she not to doe as she commanded her? torment yout selues no more about that which cannot be remedied, and from henceforth let vs be wiser: and doe not you (said he to the Emperesse) let our other daughter be kept in that place, but keepe her by you. Euery man marvelled at the great constancy in the Emperour, that could neuer change his minde therein: and without farther delay made a marriage between Amandrie and Abenunque, and after sent them away, accompanied with many Knights & Ladies, with diuers presents: He likewise found husbands soz the most part of the Princeesse Floridaes Gentlewomen, e- uery one according to their qualities and estates: His o- ther daughter, called Basile, being very faire, he gaue vnto the Emperesse her selfe to keepe, and from thence forward was not so pleasant and toyfull as he vled to be: but to drue that fantasie out of his head, went often abroad to hunt.



But Prince Edward arriving with Florida at the place where Olimba lay, sent an Esquire to Constantinople, to heare what newes there, and what the Emperour said, which the Squire did, and behaued himselfe so well therein, that he brought Prince Edward newes: how the giant Gataru had appeased the fury of the Knights of the Emperours Court, shewing them that the valour and courtesie of Prince Edward was so great, that they ought all to be well content that he had the Princesse Florida: and that it grieved him onely because he went not with him. Prince Edward was pleased with these newes, wondering much at the great constancie of the Emperour, by which meanes he thought that he might safely depart, without trouble or impeachment, determining to carry the Princesse Florida to be deliuered of her childe in England, and to that end prepared a good ship to saile thither, with whom Bellager would of soe goe, to beare him company into his owne Kingdome, Olimba being much grieved for his departure, but after Prince Edward and Florida had giuen her great thanks for the great courtesie she had shewed vnto them, and hauing taken their leaues of Maruine and his wife, they embarked themselves and set saile with great ioy, thereby to comfort the Princesse that seemed to be somewhat sad and grieved for that she had done.

## CHAP. X.

How *Primaleon* being grieved that *Gridonia* tooke not order to depart with him, according to her promise, was counsell'd by *Torques* what hee should doe, to get her from her owne house.



**P**rimaleon liued at his ease, as long as hee was honoured of the Quene, mother to *Gridonia*, and of all the Barons of the Kingdome, that were all desirous to haue him to be their Lord: but he was not well pleased nor contented, that hee could not



not procure Gridonia to keepe her promise with him: which was, that she would goe with him to Constantinople: for that every time that he spake vnto her thereof, she seemed to be much offended, saying that her heart serued her not to doe it, which she said, fearing least her louer should seeke to vse her at his pleasure, when she should be once out of her owne country: for although she loued him very well, yet she was so discret, and zealous of her honour, that she would not staine or defile the same, in any sort whatsoeuer: And on the other side, she was loth to breake her promise made vnto him.

The Knight knowing her intent, loued her the better, although he felt a marueilous grieve in his minde, and therefore one day talking with her, he said: Madame, I thinke that the loue which you shew mee, and all your smooth words, are but fained, for that if you loued me well, you would make no difficultie to goe with me to Constantinople, thereby to giue me the moze force and courage to banquish and overcome Primaleon: and if peraduenture you are not determined to doe it so soone, in the meane time, I pray you take some pittie of me, and of my grieve, and suffer not my heart to consume and burne to ashes, by means of the feruent and burning desire that your beauty hath kindled therein. If you had shewed me any fauour or goodwill, how little soeuer, thereby I might be content to take it patiently, and my heart would not be so much lamented, if I could but once speake with you apart, that I might kisse your delicate and faire hands, which I dare not doe in the presence of your Mother, and so many others.

Wherewith Gridonia seemed to be sad and sorrowfull, as taking pittie on her faithfull Lord, and therefore made him answere and said: Ha Sir knight of the cloven Rock, you make my heart die within my body, in regard of the doubt you conceine of the true & perfect loue that I beare vnto you: for as I heloue that you loue me faithfully, and that you would not change your loue for all the Ladies in  
the



the world, I thought likewise that you had so good a confidence in me, that I would not leave nor forsake you for any other Knight whatsoever, although he were the greatest Prince in the world, yea although I should be forced thereunto upon paine of death, or for the losse of this signorie which you have given me: and that if I keepe not my promise with you, so soone as I would, it is onely because I feare, that being alone with you, we might both commit an error: for if I were assured to goe safely with you, notwithstanding the blame that I might incurre thereby, I would not make so many delayes to goe, but looe and the meanes to commit folly, often times bereave men of iudgement, and yet I assure you neuerthelesse, that if I knew that you doubted of my looe, I should die for griefe, and therfore I pray you, from henceforth, vse no more such words, for that I am in greater perplexity and griefe then you are, and that if I abstaine from doing that which you desire, it is because I would not faile in that which I have promised you, for otherwise I should commit a great fault, and you your selfe might have cause to esteeme me the lesse: wherefore I beseech you let me enjoy your presence a while, and we will take order for our departure, meane time I pray you beleeue assuredly that I looe you vnfaignedly, for I sweare vnto you, that I am as much yours, as if I were already your wife, hoping that shortly wee shall finde contentment, and if you doe so, I shall assuredly thinke that you looe me, otherwise you will giue me cause to suspect some deceit.

Heauens forbid said the Knight, that euer I should deceiue you, and seeing it is your will and pleasure, I will willingly indure this paine and torment, and stay the time, to see if once you will remember me. After Primalcon was gone, that evening he cast himselfe vpon his bed very sorrowfull, doubting neuer to finde the meanes to haue that Lady in his power, in regard whereof, hee sighed and made great moane, which Torques perceiuing, asked him the cause, to whom hee made answer, my

good



god Lord and brother. what should I tell you? onely I must say I am the most vnfortunate man in the world, I thought that Gridonia my Lady would presently haue gone with me, according to her promise, and now I perceiue her to be obstinate, so that I thinke it vnpossible for me to win her thereunto, wherewith I am so much grieved, that I thinke verely I shall die.

I wonder much at you said Torques, that are of so great courage in all enterprises, how difficult soeuer they be, not fearing any danger to helpe and assist others, and in your owne affaires, you cannot resolue vpon any thing, as though you had neither courage nor iudgement: seeing therefore that Gridonia will not doe any thing, that is contrary to her honour, you must hazard your selfe to get it, you haue here with you some of the knights of the armes men, speake vnto some sailers, in whom you may put your trust, and hauing caused them to bring a boat to the place where we ordinarily be to hunt, will them to stay there, in some secret place, vntill you bring Gridonia thither, meantime make ready a small boat, & hide it within the Land, which you shall cover with greene boughs, that it may not be perceiued, and after you shall haue led Gridonia so often to hunt, that no man will be in doubt of the enterprise, we will set her in the boat, vnder pretence to row her a little to take her pleasure vpon the Sea, and by that means will bring her to the ship, that shall be ready, and so in despite of all the Kingdome of Appoline, we will carry her away with vs, then we may be farre from the shoare before they can follow after vs. Ha my brother, said the knight, you giue me good counsel, I am content to doe as you say, neuerthelesse I haue no will to doe it, fearing to offend her, but when I once haue her at my will, I will feare nothing, and for that Primaleon had beseeched great courtellie to certain Saplars belonging to the knight of the armes, to whom he lent their boat and all that was in it, the next day he sent Purenge, to cause two of them to come vnto him: to whom being in his chamber he said, my good friends,



friends, you know what pleasure I shewed you, above all the rest of the Knights of the armes men that fell into my hands, now if you be wise, and will sweare to be true and faithfull unto me in that which I shall tell you, assure your selves, that I will doe you so much good, that you shall neuer after live in want: my Lord said they, we desire no greater good, then onely to be able to doe you any service that we may, and therefore assure your selfe said they, that you shall not command vs to doe that which is possible for vs to doe, but we will doe it with all our hearts: then he shewed them what he would have done, according to the speech that he had had before with Torques, and furnished them with money to provide all things necessarie for them, willing them to sell the rest, that they were licensed to retorne home to their owne houses with their boates.

The Sailers sone performed their charge, and so departed from the Haven, passing along the coast, to goe to the place purposely appointed for them, where being arrived they cast anchor behind certaine trees, and after went into a little boate, and staid in a place where few or none resorted, a reasonable way from the ship, and covered the boate with branches of trees, in such sort that it could not be perceived.

## CHAP. XI.

How *Primaleon* and the rest being abroad to hunt, while *Primaleon* ranne after a wilde Boare, *Gresto* came to the place where *Gridonia* staid, and tooke her and *Zerphira*, and bare them away.



When *Primaleon* knew that the Sailers were gone from the port, he went with *Torques* and *Palantine* to hunt in the wood, marking well the coast where they found the boate hidden, whereat the Knight reioyced, hoping that his purpose would



would take good effect, wherewith Palantine, and Parente said, that they knew well enough how to ble the eares, and that they should not neede to call the mariniers to goe aboard the ship, wherin they had already secretly sent their armes: there they agreed vpon that which they had to doe, and after that returned againe vnto the towne, where being arrived, Primaleon sitting by Gridonia, told her, that he had receiued great pleasure in hunting all that day, and that he would goe againe the next day, praying her very earnestly to goe with him to see the pleasant and delcetable places of the woods: wherunto she made answer, that she would willingly goe with him.

Torques in the mean time speaking with Zerphira her Gentlewoman, aduertised her of their enterprise, which she liked well, but willed him not to put it in execution, neyther that day nor the next, but bade him be well assured and aduised before he did it. The next day they went all to the same place againe to hunt, and led the great Patagon with them, and for that the place where they hunted was very pleasant and delcetable, Gridonia took great pleasure therein, and sayd that she would goe thither every day: The next day, after they had heard prayers, they went againe to the same place where they were the day before, and hauing hunted long time, they came to the Sea side, to walke and sport themselves, and as they beheld the sea, recounting many things, one of the Huntsmen came thither in great haste, and tolde Primaleon, that Patagon had coursed the greatest and most terrible Boare, that euer was sene in the woods: which Patagon (wanting hands) could not seize vpon. Primaleon therewith desired Gridonia that he might goe to kill that Boare, saying that he would returne presently againe: and for that cause mounted vpon a horse backe, all the knights that were there following him, to see that chase, none staying with Gridonia, but the Gentlewomen and the Squires. Primaleon made great haste to finde the Boare, leading the Lion in a chaine with him, and sound  
the



the Boare drinking in a fontaine, where Patagon had  
 hunted him with dogges; and being not farre from him,  
 call his Lannce at him, with such force, that hee stroke  
 the Boare vnto the ground, wherewith the Lion and the  
 Dogges falling vpon him, killed it. All the Knights  
 lighting off their horses to see the Boare, being exceeding  
 glad, specially Primaleon, that went to carry it to the  
 Princesse Gridonia: but their ioy was presently turned  
 into great grieve and heavinesse: for that while they were  
 killing of the Boare, there happened a strange adventure  
 vnto Gridonia: for Gresto being banquished by the knight  
 of the Arme, escaped with certaine of his men, and be-  
 ing ashamed to returne home agayne vnto his house, de-  
 termined, for a time, to remaine abroad, and to rove  
 vpon the Seas, thereby to enrich himselfe, and in short  
 time got great store of treasure from diuers Marchants  
 ships, which hee found at Sea: by which meanes waxing  
 proude and arrogant, he beganne to keepe vpon the coast  
 of Appolonie, to take all those that he found at Sea, and  
 (by fortune) arrived, in Primaleons absence, at the place  
 where Gridonia stayed: who beholding so great a compa-  
 ny of Gentlewomen together, sayd vnto his compa-  
 nions. Friends, be of good courage, this adventure is ours,  
 I am perswaded that the Queene Gridonia my cousin, is  
 amongst these Gentlewomen, and if it be so, I am the  
 happiest Knight in the world: and saying so, they laced on  
 their Helmes, and with all speed putting out their boate,  
 Gresto and ten Knights with their Squires entred there-  
 in. The Gentlewomen that sawe them, thinking them  
 to be some of the Queenes subiects, were not afraide: but  
 when they were landed, as soone as Gresto sawe Grido-  
 nia, he knew her from all the rest, not onely because of  
 her great beautie, but also by her rich and costly apparell:  
 for which cause turning vnto his Companions, he com-  
 manded them to beare her into his ship, saying that hee  
 would defend them from all those that would resist them:  
 With that he drew his Sword, and the rest of his com-  
 panions



panions tooke the Quene, which her Gentlewoman Zerphira embraced, crying out as loud as she could, & for that cause, they perceiuing her to be of some great estate and account, fearing to take the one for the other, put them both forcibly into the boate: it is impossible to rehearse the cries and sighes, that was as then made by all the Gentlewomen, and the Pages that sawe the Quene carried away from them, in that sort, for which cause Gresto gaue them certaine blowes with the flat side of his sword, to make them leaue crying, and therewithall presently leapt into the boate, and hauing gotten to the ship, made all the haste they could to depart from thence. Gresto was exceeding glad to haue Gridonia in his power, by which meanes he hoped to reconer the Kingdome of Apolonie, and to haue her for his wife, for that he loued her better then any other in the world. But on the contrary, she perceiving her selfe to be taken, felt so great grieve and paine at her heart, that she was put into the Ship like a dead corpes, as certainly she had died there, if she had not been comforted by Zerphira, that was of a great courage, and somewhat acquainted with such aduersities, who taking her by the hand, perceiuing her to be in that case, said: You traileers, giue me some water, that the Princesse may not die in this manner: And what are you Sir Knight, said she, that are so bold to beare away this Lady, of so great account? Gentlewoman said Gresto, vse not these words, I am Gresto her consen, that haue endured so many losses and hinderances for her. O said she, hast thou perswaded this Knight to doe so much mischief? (for euery man thought him to be dead, and yet hee liued): I assure thee Gresto, said she, that although fortune hath fauoured thee at this time, it will not be long before she will turne her backe to thee againe, for this that thou hast done. I care not for that said Gresto, for seeing that Gridonia is mine, happen what can: with that after they had throwne water into Gridonias face, she recovered her selfe, and beholding Zerphira sitting by her, she was somewhat comforted and  
said



said : my good sister, and assured friend, where o2 whither will these men carry vs : Madame, said Zerphira, discom-  
fort not your selfe, nor be so much grieved, for I doubt not  
but in short time we shall be relieved by some knight o2  
other, that is as aduenturous as your cousin Gresto, into  
whose hands you are now fallen, and believe that he shall  
not escape without death : let me see now, how you can  
beare this aduersity, for that gentle and valerous hart is  
best tryed in trouble and misery.

When Gridonia vnderstood that she was saue into  
Grestoes hands, she was of a better courage, and said : Is  
my cousin Gresto yet alive : then I care not for this mil-  
fortune so much as I did, for that he is of mine owne blood;  
and I am perswaded he will shew me all the courtesie that  
he can : which she said to appeale him by her faire and  
pleasing words, and to perswade him to returne againe  
vnto Appolonia, which he vnderstanding, said : Certain-  
ly Madame I am your cousin, which haue indured great  
losses for your sake, and therefore it is permitted now that  
you should fall into my hands, to whom I am not min-  
ded to shew any manner of courtesie, if I be not presently  
married vnto you, and that you will sweare and promise  
of your faith that you will be my wife, binding your selfe  
wholy vnto me, before we returne againe into Appolonia,  
and if you will not doe it by faire meanes, I will enforce  
you thereunto: for now you are at my command, and I  
will by force haue the kingdome of Appolonia, in despite  
of the knight of the clouen-Rocke. Craytor said she, thou  
shalt neuer haue that fauour at my hands, that I will take  
thee for my husband, to giue thee any power o2 authoritie  
ouer me: for I will kill my selfe before I will doe it, and  
let thee see that thou hast not gotten much by taking of me:  
o2 if thou thinkest good to reuenge thy selfe by killing mee,  
I pray thee speedily deliuer mee out of this troublesome  
world, and I shall reioyce therein. I will not kill you said  
he, but to the contrary, will doe you so great seruice, that  
you shall thereby be constrained to graunt to my desire.

You



You shall not neede to pray or intreat mee, said Gridonia,  
 for I will neuer doe it: and with that fell into such cho-  
 los, that forgetting her teares, shee gave him all the inu-  
 rious words, that she could, which he indured at her hands:  
 so sayling all that day, and the next night, Gresto could  
 neuer make her to rise from that place where she first late  
 downe, for which cause, the next morning, being much dis-  
 pleased at her, he began to threaten her, and taking her by  
 the arme to lead her from thence, said vnto her: Gridonia  
 you are now in my power, and therefore thou must of  
 force, doe whatsoeuer I shall require, and I will presently  
 force thee to obey me, thereby to abate thy too great pride.  
 Gridonia hearing him speake in that manner, and percei-  
 uing that he would vse her forcibly, began to weepe and la-  
 ment, saying: O Paragon, it was an vnfortunate houre  
 for me, that euer I saw thee, being the onely cause that my  
 knight was taken from mee, in whose armes I should  
 haue died with great ease and contentment: O my Lord,  
 where stay you so long to come to succour me: I am  
 certainly perswaded, that when you shall know what  
 misfortune hath now happened vnto mee, you will be ex-  
 tremely grieved thereat, and will spare neither labour  
 nor paines to finde me out: Come then as soone as possi-  
 bly you can, for otherwise your Gridonia shall be forced:  
 but in the meane time, perswade your selfe that I will  
 rather dye then I will once faile in my looe towards  
 you.

These and such like speeches she vied, in such pittifull  
 manner, that it would haue moued the stones to take com-  
 passion on her. Zerphira likewise wept betterly, desiring  
 Gresto to let her rest in peace, saying that he should haue  
 time enough to satisfie his desire: But neither her crying,  
 nor her prayers auailed any thing with him, being so much  
 moued and stirred vp in cholor against them: but anon  
 helpe came by chance, for as Gresto thought by force to car-  
 ry her into his chamber, Prince Edward came who as wee  
 said before, was at sea with the Princesse Florida, to carry  
 her



her into England, who hauing sailed for the space of ten daies with a good winde, and after that falling contrary, was forced to take what course hee could, though it were out of the way. Grestoes Ship sailed to and fro, vpon the Seas, without making to any coast, at which time in the morning, Prince Edward, Bellager, and Florida, standing vpon the hatches, (so that Florida being not well was yet asleepe with Arraida her Gentlewoman) perceived Grestoes Ship, that went along by them: wherein they heard Gridonia and Zerphira weepe and lament, knowing thereby that some body sought to force them. Wherewith Prince Edward began to say: What meanes it, that I heare gentlewomen complaine in this sort: surely there is some knight that seeketh to wrong them, we must goe to helpe them: that is well said, said the rest: and therewith they armed themselves with all speede, commaunding the Sailors to make haste to ioyne with Grestoes Ship, which was not farre from them.

## CHAP. XII.

How Prince Edward and his companions slew Gresto and his Knights, and deliuered Gridonia and Zerphira, and how Primaleon ouertooke them.



Gresto perceiuing but three Knights in Prince Edwards Ship, made no great account of them, but putting on his helmet, caused all his companions to doe the like, and after that, made towards them with his Ship, and when Prince Edward cryed vnto him farre of, saying Knights what doe you to those gentlewomen that they make so pittifull complaint: what haue you to doe therewith said Gresto, and what neede you trouble your selfe with other mens affaires: There is no man here that will refraine to doe what he list in despite of you: You may perchance repent it said Prince Edward, so;



for answering with so great disdain, for I will know, to your shame, that which I require.

As soone as Gridonia saw the Knight, she said vnto him (being somewhat comforted, thinking that it had bene the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, not seeing him well, by reason of the great abundance of teares that covered her eyes.) Ha my Lord, why staid you so long: if you had deferred the time any longer, I had surely bene dead. Prince Edward by these words, perceiued well that those Knights led her away by force, and that shee was some Lady of great estate, for which cause, being in a great rage, and exceeding angry, he leapt into the ship, with his sword naked in his hand, and presently was seconded by his companions, wherewith he said vnto Gresto, tell mee sir Knight, why doe you cause these Gentlewomen to lament: I will make you no account thereof said hee: but assure your selfe said Prince Edward your cruelty shall cost you deare, & with that gaue him so great a blow that he made him kneele vpon the ground: but Gresto being of great courage, presently rose vp and began to defend himselfe valiantly, but he could not hold out against his aduersarie, that charged him with such rude and heauy blowes, that he could by no meanes escape, wherewith he was much grieved, perceiuing that he could haue no aide of any of his fellows, who were assailed by Bellager, and Pride, who slew all that they met. Gresto was so sore hurt, that he could hardly lift vp his sword to defend himselfe: at last Prince Edward drew him in such manner by the shield, that he threw him to the ground, and gaue him so great a blow, that he cut the buckles of his helmet in peces, and to the end that hee should take no more Ladies by force, he cut off his head: after that he went to aide his companions, who were all cut in peces, at the instance and of Gridonia and Zerphira, that entirely desired them to put them all to death, saying that they were traytors. And while they were in fight, Gridonia said vnto Zerphira, good sister, what shall wee now doe: for this is not the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke,



as I thinke, neither doe I know any of the rest: you say true, said Zerphira, it is not hee, nor any of his subjects, and therefore you must conceale your name; where with Zerphira looking into Prince Edwards ship, saw Martes the great Dog, that Clodion led in a chaine, who was very desirous to leape into the ship, to helpe his master, which she presently knew, saying: you must of force conceale your selfe, for that the Knight that hath slaine Gresto, is hee that sent mee vnto you, for I know his Squire well, and the Dog is his: you see how easily he hath banquished this traytor, if hee knew you, he would deale worse with you, then Gresto would haue done, for I know he loneth you extreamely, and in despite of all the world will carry you into his owne country.

Alas vnfortunate woman that I am, said Gridonia, what hap haue I, that I should be prisoner to him as I was to Gresto, would you haue me to be of good courage, in so many aduersities, when as I thought to haue bene rescued by the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, I am now fallen into this Knights hands: He patient said Zerphira and see what will follow: with that, before Gridonia could make answer, Prince Edward came, who hauing made diligent search about the ship, and finding no more resistants, determined to cause the gentlewomen to goe into his ship, to beare the Princesse Florida company, and let the rest depart: Gentlewomen said he, now you see, that you are delivered out of his hands that would haue forced you, me thinks that for your safety you should enter into my ship, where you shall be secured from all harmes, for assure your selues there you shall receiue no dishonour nor violence: and with that hee beheld Gridonia, that seemed vnto him to be exceeding faire, although by reason of the griefe that she had insured, shee was much altered, so thought the rest, and specially Pride, that said to himselfe, that he had neuer scene a fairer gentlewoman, vnlesse it were Florida.

Gridonia hauing heard the Knight vse these words, fell  
downe



bolone at his fate and said, my Lord I owe you great ho-  
 nour and loue, seeing you haue deliuered mee out of the  
 hands of these traytors, that sought to dishonour me : for  
 although that I am but a poore and simple gentlewoman,  
 yet I esteeme nothing more precious vnto mee, then  
 mine honour, for that I am married, and would by no  
 meanes commit such a fault against my husband, and seeing  
 it hath pleased you to take pittie on me, I am certainly  
 perswaded that you are courteous, wherefore I beseech you,  
 that seeing you haue deliuered me out of the hands of him  
 that would haue forced me, you will preserve mine honour,  
 otherwise you should lose the reputation of the good dee-  
 de you haue done for me, and so I put my selfe wholly into  
 your protection, untill I shall haue sent vnto my husband  
 to come vnto me : which if you doe, I shall be ener bound  
 to you.

Gentlewoman, said Prince Edward, if you be poore in  
 riches, you are rich in beauty : beleeue you are fallen in-  
 to his hands that will defend you from all dishonour,  
 come then boldly with mee, for I take you to be ano-  
 ther manner of woman, then you say you are : and say-  
 ing so, hee tooke her by the hand, and led her with him,  
 trembling as she went, in such sort as Prince Edward tooke  
 pittie on her : Pride tooke Zerphira by the hand, that hid her  
 face as well as she could, that Prince Edward might not  
 know her : they were no sooner entred into the other ship,  
 but Grestoes Sailers hoisted Sailes, and made away in  
 great haste, sad and in great feare for the losing of their  
 Maister.

Prince Edward receiued great pleasure in his heart, to  
 beholde Gridonia to be so faire and beautifull, and to looke  
 with so princely a countenance, but could not imagine  
 who she was, for which cause, before hee led her in to  
 Florida, hee thought good to aske her whence she was, and  
 perceiuing Zerphira to hide her selfe, hee wondered more  
 thereat, and thought it was not without cause, and  
 therefore sayde vnto her : Gentlewoman, are you this



Gentlewoman's sister : tell mee I pray you , and hide not your selfe from mee , for you haue no cause so to doe. Zerphira thinking that shee could not get much by hiding her selfe , answered and sayd, My Lord, I hide not my selfe, but wee are not sisters, but onely cousins . Prince Edward beheld her well, and was of opinion that hee had scene her some other time , but because shee was otherwise apparelled , and that shee spake in other sort then shee was wont to doe, hee did not well know her , neuerthelesse hee sayde vnto her : Gentlewoman , mee thinkes I haue scene you oftentimes before , and yet I cannot remember where , I pray you tell mee who you are . You doe not know mee Mr Knight sayd shee , although I should tell you, for I do not remember that euer I sawe you before : but it may be, sayd shee , I am like vnto some other Gentlewoman that you knew. I haue scene you often, sayd the Knight , and with that he remembred that hee had taken her at Sea, and had sent her to Gridonia : Then Clodion likewise knew her, and sayd vnto him : My Lord , know you not this Gentlewoman : it is shee that you sent to Gridonia, Dutchesse of Ormeda . Surely , thou sayst true, sayd Prince Edward, and is not the other the Lady Gridonia, that seemeth so sayre : Gentlewomen, I pray you sayd hee, hide not your selues from mee. When Gridonia and Zerphira heard him say so, they were so astonished , that they could not make any answer . And with that Primaleon came thither (who being returned from hunting) thought to die, when hee found not the Lady and Mistresse of his affections there, and when hee vnderstood what had beene done, hee let his horse bridle fall out of his hand , and if Torques had not beene there , hee had fallen doونه from his horse : And although Torques was no lesse displeased for that which had chaunced , yet comforting his friend , hee sayd : What a shame is this for you, to be thus dismayd : let vs goe after , and we shall sone releue her, for the traitors can not escape our hands.

The knights of Appolonia hauing vnderstood the news,  
ranne



ranne into the Towne to certifie the Quene thereof, so that there remained none behinde, but Primaleon and his Companions, who was so perplexed, that he thought to go into the Towne with the rest, but Palantine and Torques with-held him, saying that he might sooner imbarke himselfe in the ship that they had there ready, and so goe and ayde her: and hauing reconered her, he might carry her whither he would. My friends sayd he, how is it possible for vs to finde her? Accursed be Patagon that hath thus separated mee from my Distresse: meane time they put the boate to Sea, and entred therein with Patagon, and Gridonias Lyon, and with much rowing got to the shippe, which lay ready staying for them. But when the Sailers sawe not Gridonia, they wondered thereat, and said; Why are you so melancholy, my Lord: and wherefore haue you not brought her with you? You tolde vs, you would beare her away, and bring her into our ship. My friends said he, trouble me no more, for I am borne as I berely thinke neuer effect any thing that I desire: I shall now see howe for the loue of me you will cause this ship to saile, that we may ouertake the traitors that haue stolne her away: the sailers vnderstanding his minde, presently drew by their anchoz, and setting saile, directed their vessell the way that Rifeene said he saw them goe that had stolne Gridonia away: wherewith Primaleon and his companions armed themselves, who found himselfe so much grieved, that he thought hee had no strength to fight against the faint-heartedst Knight in the world, wherefore hee said.

Unconstant fortune, that waxeth and waineth like the Moone: thou hast for a while fauoured me, by giuing mee a cleare and bright light, and then againe vpon a sudden shew thy selfe obscure and tenebrous, by this most troublesome eclips that could be. Where is she now, that by her beautifull brightnesse illuminated my poore heart: and therewithall was so much grieved, that nothing could appease him, but night coming on, and finding not his



Lady, oftentimes began to faint : wherewith Torques was in great doubt of his life, and would gladly haue bene further from hearing him, who said: O cruell fortune, when as I thought to haue had the mistress of my heart, and to haue advanced her vnto great honour, I haue lost her : for what is he, that beholding her to be so faire, would not seeke by force to haue his pleasure of her : yet I am well assured that she will neuer consent thereunto with her owne will, and that she will sooner die: whereby Torques had much to doe to looke vnto him all that night. In the morning he slept a little, and dreamed that he found Gridonia very ioyfull, who said vnto him: grieue not your selfe my Lord, for I am preserved from dishonour, wherfore are you so sad : I pray you for my sake, be glad and reioyce.

At which words he waked: and rising on his feete he said : O wretch that I am, what a dreame haue I had : I cannot be merrie, hauing lost the light of my sorrowfull eyes, if it were my good hap to see you againe, sweet Lady, I should then reioyce, and receiue courage to reuenge my selfe of him that hath done vs so great displeasure : and hauing put his helmet on his head, being in some hope, he prepared himselfe, as if he should haue fought presently, and when day appeared, he went vpon the hatches, to see if he could espie any one that could tell him any newes. Torques and Palantine staying by him, least he should grow so desperate as to throw himselfe into the Sea. The sailers made as much haste as possibly they could: and at last as fortune would, they came to the place where Prince Edwards ship lay, at the same time as I said before, when as he spake vnto Zerphira : but when Primaleon approached nere vnto them, and knew the Gentlewoman, and with them saw the Knight which he knew by his armes, to be him that he had so long looked for, who can expresse the ioy and wrath, that at one instant possessed his heart, thinking that the same knight had taken his Lady from him: for which cause he was so much inflamed, and became



became so couragious, that he would not haue made any difficultie to assaile two hundred Knights, if hee had seene them in his aduersaries ship, perceiuing his Lady there in presence, which caused so great hardinesse in him.

## CHAP. XIII.

How *Primaleon* and *Prince Edward* fought a cruell combat at Sea, and how in the end being enchanted by the Knight of the inclosed Island, they were boren thither without any feeling or vnderstanding.



**P**rimaleon made so great haste into prince Edwards ship, that hee thought to leape into the Sea, and being gotten in, hee layd his hand vpon his Sword, and said, Sir Knight, we shall now see what good the boldenesse you haue vsed, that moued you to doe this action, will doe you, assure your selfe you are not like to escape: Prince Edward knew him presently to be the Knight of the Cloven-Rocke by the shield that he bare, for although that at other times it had bene battered, yet he knew it presently, by the art and meanes of the Knight of the inclosed Island: and for that Prince Edward knew him, it grieved him to fight with him, and that which grieved him much more, was the Princesse Florida that was there with him, for that if Primaleon had known it, there would neuer haue been peace betwene them two, wherefore perceiuing himselfe to be at that point, hee was in a marvellous agonie: neuerthelesse because it behoued him to defend himselfe, he thought if he quercame him, he would carry him with him into England, and that thereby he should obtaine great praise and glory, by which meanes waxing more couragious, and perceiuing Primaleon to come so furiously towards him, he put his hand to his sword, and taking his shield in the other hand said, I  
care.



care not for these threatening speeches, for I know well the waight of your blowes, and you likewise know the waight of mine: wherewith they began to assaile one the other so furiously, that betwene them there was a cruell battaile, that which they had at Constantinople being nothing in comparision thereof, not onely because they were growne stronger both in years and force, but also for that Primaleon fought with greater forie then euer he did, and Prince Edward to haue the honour that he had already conceiued in his minde, behaved himselfe most balliantly.

Gridonia, that was present at that terrible battaile, beholding her Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, on the one side was exceeding glad, and on the other side much displeased, and in great doubt what might fall out by such a fight, and therewith remembryng the words that the old man said to her, that he would come to comfort her, when she should be in doubt of her louers life, she was somewhat encouraged, and said to Zerphira, that embraced her in her armes: My good sister, I will part these two Knights: wherewith she said. My Lord, leaue off this fierce battaile I pray you, for you haue no reason to continue it: this is not hee that carried me away, but on the contrary he hath deliuered me out of the hands of him that held me, and hath slaine my cousin Gresto, which was he that toke me away, and therefore you ought to loue him: but Primaleon was so inflamed with rage and fury, that he vnderstood not what she said, and thrust her from him.

The two Combatants were so enraged the one at the other, that it seemed the ship would sinke vnder them: meantime Torques set vpon Pride, Bellager assailed Palantine, and Clodion let loose the Dog, thereby to aide his Master, which in great fury ran vpon Primaleon, but Gridoniaes Lyon leapt before him, and they two fought eache with the other, and because Maiorte was very strong, hee got the Lyon vnder him, and bit it very hartly but Paragon coming thither, holpe the Lyon as well as he could, biting the Dog with his sharpe teeth, in such sort, that the battaile was



was most furious, and the noise wonderfull to heare: and for that the requests of the Gentlewomen might nothing preuaile with them, they withdrew themselves to one side of the ship very sad and sorrowfull, specially Gridonia, that saw her Knight in so great danger, for that if he gaue great and mightie blowes, he receiued the like: and specially to see him that had deliuered them out of Grestoes hands, and the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke himselfe, out of this enchantment, to receiue so bad a recompence: and for that cause was in a marvellous agony, and could by no meanes agree them.

Florida likewise was much abashd, when she heard so great a noise: for that at the first battaile against Gresto she heard nothing thereof, because she was asleepe, and the battaile fought in another ship, but then she awaked in great feare at the noise of the blowes that the knights gaue without any pittie one to the other, and said: Alas, what noise is this I heare: haue the Emperours Knights neuer taken vs: If Prince Edward dieth I will die with him. Attaida likewise rose vp in great feare, which knew not where to hide her selfe, nor what to doe. The Gardeners wife that heard her cry, entred with her husband into the chamber, that were in great feare, and said vnto her: Alas madame, what shall we doe: Prince Edward is now in great trouble and danger, because he deliuered a gentlewoman and slew them that bare her away by force: for other knights are come whereof one of them (being the most ballantest Knight that euer liued) fighteth against Prince Edward, thinking that it was he that tooke away the Gentlewoman, and although he hath bene told that it is not he that tooke her away, yet he will not be perswaded by reason, so that there is the cruellest battaile betwene them that euer was scene: the Princesse hearing that, was as if she had bene dead, and which was worse, at that instant she fell in labour, and was deliuered of a sonne, that dyed presently, being borne before his time, the mother likewise thinking to die, but for the aide and helpe



helpe of Iulians wife, which had good vnderstanding to helpe her at such an instant.

The Squires in both the ships thought verily to leaue their masters. Pride who after he had seene the great beauty of Gridonia, became inamored of her, and was in minde to haue begged her of Prince Edward, if she were found to be issued of any great linage, came with that intent, and shewed himselfe so valiant, that he did great feats of armes, and fell vpon Torques without all pittie, who defended himselfe valiantly: but at last Pride gaue him so great a stroke vpon his helmet, that he claue it in twaine, and wounded him grievously in the head: Torques perceiuing himselfe in that case, lifted vp his sword, and gaue his aduersarie such a blow, that they fell both vpon the ground. Bellager that was much valianter then Palantine, ouercame him presently, and therewith pulled off his helmet, thinking to cut off his head, but for that Palantine desired him to pardon him, he saued his life.

The battaile betwene the Dog, the Lyon, and Pagon was such, that they were all hurt, in such manner, that they that saw them, thought they would neuer escape. What shall we say of Primaleon and Prince Edward but that there was neuer seene a more furious and cruell combat then was that betwene them: Prince Edward, had no shield left vpon his arme, for that his aduersarie had hewed it all in pieces, and had cut and spoyled most part of his armour, in such manner, that the blood ranne down out of his body: Primaleon because he had a better shield, which was a great aduantage, had the better meanes to defend himselfe, but when Prince Edward perceiued himselfe to be in so great danger, trusting vnto his forces, threw downe his sword, and clasped his aduersarie about the body, each closing one with the other, striving to haue the mastery, but their forces were much abated, by reason of the great paines that they had taken in fighting, as also hauing already lost a great deale of blood: at the last they fell both to the ground, each seeking to get his aduersarie vnder



under him, at which time Bellager having overcome his enemy, went to aide Prince Edward, and to helpe him to rise, which without all doubt he had done, and Primaleon had surely been slaine in the place, if at that time the Knight of the inclosed Island had not come thither, who leaping out of his barke into that where they fought, strake vpon the mast of the ship with his booke that he held in his hand, which he had no sooner done, but all those that were in the ship lay as if they had bene dead, without any feeling at all. The Knight was a good Magician, and caused two sailers that came with him, to enter into the ship, and willed them to conduct that ship to his Island, leaving the ship wherein Primaleon came: so in short time they arrived at the inclosed Island, and there the Knight that was Lord thereof, caused all that were in the ship to be taken forth, they falling nothing, because they were enchanted, and laid them in diuers faire rooms, where euery one being put apart, he healed them of their wounds.

### CHAP. XIII.

How the Queene of *Appolonia* vnderstanding what had happened to her Daughter *Gridonia* was exceeding sorrowfull.



The Knights of *Appolonia* vnderstanding the stealing away of *Gridonia*, ranne in great haste into the Towne, the gentle women likewise following them with their haire hanging about their eares, in great grieue for their Lady and mistres, and when the people perceined them to come so discomfited, and knew the sorrowfull mischance that had happened, what sorrow they made no man is able to rehearse: but all that was nothing in respect of the insupportable beautie that the Queene felt, when she once heard that her daughter was bozen away, and knew not by whom: for she presently



Presently went vnto the sea side, crying out in a most pitifull manner, all the people saking by what meanes they could to pacifie her, for that no man that heard her wofull lamentations, but it made his heart b'lede in his breast. All the Knights that were in the court armed themselves, and embarked themselves to follow her, but all in vaine, for their aide came too late, so they staid a great while at sea, without hearing any newes at all: the Quene in the meane time knew not what to doe, but asking for the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, shee said: O a fir Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, where are you? what doe you, that you come not to aide me in my great needs? accursed be thou Patagon, by whose meanes so much mischief is happened vnto me. O Gridonia my daughter, who hath bozen thee away, and in whose hands art thou fallen? and when the Gentlewomen came all with their haire about their eares, she said, O gentlewomen, where haue you left your Lady? why die you not all rather dye, then suffer her to be bozen away? O Gridonia was it to this end that I haue had so great care to bring thee tp, and now to let thee goe in this sort, trusting in the valour of the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke?

And in this sort shee staid by the sea side till it was night, that certaine auncient Knights led her forcibly vnto her Pallace, telling her that some great Prince had gotten her away, to make her his wife: that moued her to greater impatience, grieuing much that shee saw not the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke come vnto her; some said that it might be he, that had done the dede, which the Quene believing, was somewhat comforted, knowing that her daughter could take no hurt being in company with so ballant a knight: all the subjects shewed themselves to be much grieved for the losse of their Lady, so that many Knights went to see if they could finde her, but to no end. Now it is time to tell you what happened vnto the Knights and Ladies in the inclosed Island.



## CHAP. XV.

How the Knight of the inclosed Island caused *Primaleon* and *Gridonia*, to returne to their senses againe, and how he did the like vnto *Prince Edward* and the *Princesse Florida*.



The Knight of the inclosed Island had lodged *Primaleon*, (whom he esteemed aboue all the Princes in the world) in a most sumptuous palace, where he healed him of his wounds, and when he was dis-incanted, and saw himselfe in that place, hee remembered how he had found the Lady *Gridonia* in the hands of the Knight of Dogge, whom he had so long sought for, and also remembered the combat he had with him, whereof his wounds bare witnesse, that as then were not fully healed. Aye me, said he, what a wonderfull thing is this: who hath brought me hither: what is he that hath taken faire *Gridonia* from me: O that I should be so unfortunate, having a father that hath bene the valiantest Knight in the world, I am perswaded that as long as he liueth, in regard of his great excellencie, I shall neuer doe any thing that shall turne vnto mine honour. How dare I now shew my selfe before him, hauing done no act worthy commendation, since my being abroad: O fortune, why shewest thou thy selfe sauourable towards mine enemy, and so contrary to me: Ha, my Lady, wilt thou breake thy promise made vnto me, which was neuer so lone any other Knight but me: But you doe well, seeing that the Knight that holdeth you is valanter then I am, in that I could not recover you out of his hands: at which time the Knight of the inclosed Island came into the chamber, and asked him how he did, and why he was so much grieved.

I finde my selfe so euill at ease, said he, that I should not



20 The third Booke of the History

not complaine, but rather kill my selfe, seeing I haue lost the thing that I loued best in all the world. Tell me said he, if you know who brought me hither, and in what place I am: My Lord said hee, you are heere, by meanes of a knight that loneth you exceedingly well, and one that sought to save your life. Is it not a death, said Primalcon, to haue lost the mistress of my life: whereof I will make an end, seeing I am bereaued of her. Say not so my Lord said the knight, for your life is more precious then all other things in the world: take care to heale your wounds, and seeke not for that which cannot be had. Speake no more of such things I pray you said Primalcon, but be gone, and care not you for my life, or health. When I perceiue you loue a woman better then your owne life. I would giue a thousand liues for her, said Primalcon, if I had so many. You tell me a great matter said the knight, and seeing it is so, will you giue him his demaund that shall bring you to see her: Primalcon said he would doe for him what soeuer he would, if he did that: I will aske no other thing said the knight, but that you shall promise me a boone, and I will bring her, that she may heale you with her owne hands, and for that I know you will keepe your promise, I will send a Page vnto her that shall tell her the whole newes, meane time comfort your selfe and be merry in this place, where you shall want nothing.

After he was gone Primalcon began to thinke who it might be, that had parted the battaile where Gridonia staid, which he thought to be a strange thing. Gridonia and Zerphira being awaked, and perceiuing themselves to be laid in a rich bed, wondered who had brought them thither: What sister said Gridonia, who hath caused vs to come hither, and what is become of the knight of the Clouen-Rocke: if he be dead, what shall I doe: Madame said Zerphira, be not dismayed, for that he which brought vs hither, staid the combat that was betwene him and Prince Edward, and as they were talking together, there entred a faire gentle woman into the chamber, richly apparrelled, which was  
sister



sister to Purente, whose name was Cicile. This gentlewoman having opened a window, caused more light to enter into the chamber, (which was very rich and beautiful) and then they might see divers branches of trees, before the window, that were in a Garden that stood on that side.

This Gentlewoman after great reverence made to Gridonia, said: Madame it is time for you to rise, and to goe to kiss the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, that will be exceeding glad of your company. When she understood that, she embraced the gentlewoman, and said: O my good friend, is it true that the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke lieth? can you let me see him? That I tell you madame, said Cicile, is true. When shall I have meanes to recompence this pleasure, which you shew me, said Gridonia? wherewith she began in all haste to make her ready: meane time she desired the Gentlewoman to tell her who brought her thither: and she told her that her father, that loved the knight of the Clouen-Rocke exceeding well, had done it: and said that she was sister to Purente, and that it was he that comforted her when she was in great griefe for the bad newes that she had received of her lover: wherewith Gridonia rejoyced greatly. As she was in that joy, the Knight of the inclosed Island entered into the chamber, wherewith the Gentlewoman said: Madame here is my father, that comes to lead you to the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke: with that Gridonia turned towards him, who presently stooped downe to kiss her hand, and she embracing him with great affection, said: I will, if I live, one day reward you for the great good that you have done for me.

Madame, said she: I have great cause to doe you service, but let that alone till another time, and let us goe see the Knight that grieveth himselfe so much for the love of you: and with that he took her by the hand, and talking with her, led her into her lovers chamber, who seeing her, could not believe that it was she, he was possessed with such an extreame joy: and she on the other side, was



no lesse ioyfull when she saw him, and went to embrace him in her armes, both of them with teares in their eyes.

Ha sir Knight of the Clouen Roke, said shee: Are you alive: Seeing I am here with you, I feare nothing said he: I thought I should neuer haue bene so happy as to see you againe, and therefore know not what to say vnto you, I am so much ravished to see this, which me thinks is but a dreame. My Lord, said Gridonia, it is true: for it is a strange thing; but beholde here the Knight that by his Art hath saued mee, which is Lord of the Inclosed Island, and father to Purante your Squire. What, said Primaleon, is Purante sonne to the Lord of the Inclosed Island: I am much grieved that hee concealed himselfe from mee, because I desired nothing more, then to know this Knight, and to doe him some service. And for my part, sayd the Knight, I thinke my selfe happy that I may doe you any service. Now from hence forth, sayd Primaleon, I will comfort my selfe, seeing I haue that which I so much desired. And you Madame, said hee, drive all feare out of your heart, for I will surely keepe my promise, and as soone as I shall be healed, I will bring you to Constantinople, and put Primaleons head into your hand: But tell mee I pray you, said hee, what said that false Knight vnto you: whether would hee haue bozne you: who did hee name himselfe to be, and what is become of him: Heauen forsend, said the Knight, that so valourous a person as hee is, should die so soone: I tell you, said he, that you had no reason to fight with him, for that hee slew him that had taken Gridonia from you, and with that shewed how all had passed, and how that Knight was hee that had deliuered him out of the enchantment, wherein Gataru held him, and that he had slaine Gresto. I esteeme my selfe very vnfortunate said Primaleon, to haue fought with him that hath done mee so many pleasures, and I am perswaded that all fortunate Aduentures are reserved for him, I am glad that he is yet liuing. He ought to be much accounted of, said the knight, for that he is descended of Royall blood, for I know his affaires



affaires as well as himselfe : he left his owne Countrey  
for Gridoniaes sake that is here with you, and in the  
first battell that he had against you, he altered his minde  
so much, that you have no occasion to hate him, but rather  
to extoll him.

That I will, said Primaleon : for I neuer found his  
like in all the world, and therefore I would gladly see  
him. You shall see him, said the Knight of the Island, when  
time serueth. I assure you, said Primaleon, all the hatred  
that I had conceived against him, is now turned into great  
love, seeing that with his owne hands he slew Gresto, and  
for that cause, as also because he deliuered you out of dan-  
ger, I love him, said Gridonia : and I was grieved when  
I sawe you so much moued against him, and would not  
heare what I said vnto you. Madame, said he, then I could  
not heare you, and I confesse that therein I did you wrong.  
Let it suffice (said the Knight of the Island) we shall haue  
time enough hereafter, to speake of these things : meane  
time you must eate somewhat, for you haue great neede  
thereof. With that Purence, Riscene, and other Beru-  
toys, brought in the meate, and Gridonia her selfe serued  
him. Primaleon being glad, yet blamed Purence very  
much, because he tolde him not who was his father, but  
he excused himselfe, saying that he had bene forbidden to  
tell him : For that cause, said he, I pardon you : But tell  
me, what is become of Torques and Palantine, that I can  
not see them : They are sore wounded, said Purence : but  
take you no care for them, for the same Doctor that hea-  
leth you, doth the like for them, in such sort, that they shall  
sone be healed : and he spake true, for his Father looked  
vnto them, and kept them in severall lodgings, where  
they wanted nothing : he had done the like to Pride and  
Bellager, that were in an other pleasant place : he like-  
wise healed Maiortes that was sore wounded : as for Pa-  
ragon, he needed not to lay any hands vpon him, for hee  
healed himselfe well enough. After Primaleon had ea-  
ten something, they brought in meate for Gridonia, and



Zerphira, who were as well served as if they had bene in the Emperours Court.

Prince Edward and Florida were in another palace, no lesse rich and sumptuous then that in which Primaleon was, each of them being laid apart in a rich and goodly bed: and when the enchantment was off from them, Florida waked first, and because the chamber was very close, and no light came into it, she thought she had bene in the ship, in such sort that remembzring that she had lost her childe, and sawe her lover fighting against a valiant Knight, she beganne to sigh and griue, saying: Unhappy I, how am I forgotten? O my Lord Prince Edward, what is become of you? what end and successe had you of the combat? surely you are dead, because you come not to see and comfort me? Attaida what say you, what have you done with my Lord Prince Edward? which she said, with a faint and feeble voice, because she was very weake.

The Knight that was in the same lodging, awaked at the complaints and teares of his Lady, who could by no meanes haue bene enchanted, if he had not cast down his sword to wrastle with Primaleon, thinking by that meanes to overcome him: who hearing the Princesse complaine in that manner, would haue risen vp to goe vnto her, but he wanted strength, by reason of his wounds, for which cause he said, Madame, griue not your selfe: for your Prince Edward is not farre hence, he is here, but who brought you hither? for that fighting with a Knight, and lying both wrassling and strining together along vpon the hatches, trying who should winne the mastery, I know not how we ended our combat, I was sore wounded but now am indifferent well, and therefore I pray you be not grieved, seeing we are together.

My Lord said the Princesse, seeing you are alive, and that I haue not lost you, let all passe. But what Knight was it that fought so long with you? I know not said he: for there are many valiant Knights in the world. With that the Knights wife of the inclosed Island, Cicile her daughter,



daughter, and diuers other Gentlewomen, that accompa-  
nied them, entered into the chamber, and opening the win-  
dowes, the chamber was very light: The Knights wife  
went to Prince Edwards bed, and her daughter Cicile to  
the Princesse Floridas bed. The Prince being asked how  
he did, said, Madame, I am well, and am much amazed  
because I know not who brought me hither, nor who it is  
that hath healed me: My Lord, said she: he that loneth  
and honoureth you much, hath brought you hither, desiring  
that your combate might not by death be ended, for that  
the losse of two so braue Knights, would haue bene great  
damage and hurt vnto the world. Then he asked hir what  
was become of the other Knight that had fought with him.  
He is in a place said she, where he is well healed and at-  
tended on: and therefore comfort your selfe, I pray you,  
said she: for you shall soone be whole, and your affaires shall  
fall out as you desire, and be assured that which hath bene  
some what delayed, shall haue a happy issue, and such as  
you desire, and therefore be not grieved, for you are in a  
place where you shall want nothing: for the which he than-  
ked her, and said: hap what may, so I lose not my Lady.  
My Lord, said she, feare not that, you shall not lose her,  
for she was brought into the world onely for you, and be-  
cause I intend to goe for her, I will leaue you.

When Florida perceined her selfe to be in a rich palace,  
and saw those gentlewomen, she was in such perplexity  
that she spake not a word: wherewith the old Lady came  
vnto her, and vied so many perswasive reasons, that she  
tooke all doubt and feare out of her minde, and made her  
glad and ioyfull. Soone after came the Knight of the  
Island, who talking with Prince Edward, tolde him that  
Primaleon was there, and did already know the loue he  
bare Florida, and that hee would vse all the meanes  
he could to appeale him: he shewed him also, that Prima-  
leon knew of his being there, and had great desire to see  
him, and Gridonia also. My Lord said Prince Edward, I  
am of opinion that no man can doe more then hee can so  
that



that I am content whatsoeuer falleth out, yet I assure you, that that which hath happened vnto me at this time seemeth very strange, that Primaleon by my meanes, hath obtained that thing which I so much desired: I departed out of my country for the loue of Gridonia, and after that my heart was altered, by louing another of great beauty and worthinesse, and now we are altogether in one house, I know not what to say: onely I pray you, seeing you haue so much knowledge, that you will make such an agreement betwene vs, that it may be to both our honours and contentments. So I will, said the Knight, and doubt not thereof: for Pride and Bellager they are both here: but because they are both wounded, they cannot come to see you, but they shall come shortly: But it is time that you eat something. Thanks gentle sir, said Prince Edward, for the great good you haue done for me. I feele my selfe said the Knight sufficiently recompenced, hauing so good a companion in my house. With that Clodion, and diuers pages, brought somewhat to eate, for Prince Edward and the Princesse Florida, that had great neede thereof, who was sore grieved for the danger wherein she saw her lover, as also for the losse of her sonne, which she would not tell vnto Primaleon, fearing to giue him new cause of griefe, but by that meanes they were all comforted and exceeding merry.

Iulian and his wife in the morning about breake of day, found themselves to be in a garden much pleasanter, and better filled with trees, then that which they kept in Constantinople, and looking one vpon the other, were in such perplexity, that they thought verily that they had bene returned againe to Constantinople, to make amends for the treason they had committed against the Emperour: at last Iulian said vnto his wife, what strange thing hath happened vnto vs: and who hath brought vs into this place: is not this the garden where we were wont to dwell: how got wee off the Seas where we were when we saved the two gentlewomen: How are wee separated from them?



I am so troubled, said his wife, that I cannot speake: and yet the garden is not like the Emperours garden, to whom wee haue bene traitors: and saying so, they fell into a great melancholy, and with grieve they began to weepe, in such sort that the pleasant place wherein they were, seemed vnto them to be an obscure and grieuous prison, and hauing staied long in that perplexity, they saw the Knight come towards them, wherewith they were more abashed, and said: Ha my Lord, haue pittie on vs, that haue lost our Lords, and know not what is become of them: Be comforted, said the Knight, you haue not lost them, come goe with me, that I may let you see them, for I put you in this place, because you are very expert in dressing of a garden: but because you cannot be at ease and in quiet untill you haue scene them, let vs goe, but here shall be your habitation as long as you stay here, that you may haue some worke to doe.

The gardener and his wife, thanked him much, and so went with him, marveling to see so goodly things, and being entred into the palace, Prince Edward and Florida received them ioyfully, asking them what had become of them. Madame, said Iulian. I know not what to say, I wonder so much at that which hath happened, knowing not who hath brought me hither. Wee wondered likewise thereat, said Florida, but it seemeth the knowledge of the knight that hath done vs so inestimable a pleasure, is exceeding great, wherewith Iulian reioyced, saying: I would be that hath brought vs into this place, would suffer vs to depart as well againe. Feare you not that, said the knight: for you shall goe into a place, where you shall be well rewarded for the service that you haue done for this Lord. After that he caused them to goe into the garden againe, where they wanted nothing that was necessary for their conditions.



## CHAP. XVI.

How the Knight of the inclosed Island told *Primaleon* that *Prince Edward* was there, and what had happened vnto *Florida*: praying him to pardon them: after that peace being made betweene them, they agreed what they would doe.



*Rimaleon* seeing that he had recovered his Lady, and beholding her daily in his presence, for that she healed his wounds, in short time became whole: *Gridonia* every night lying in the place where she lay the first night, and all day stayed with her lower, and had no griefe but onely to thinke vpon the great sorrow the *Queene* her mother would make for her sake: *Primaleon* telling her that fortune had suffered her to be taken away in that manner, because of the promise that she had made vnto him. You say true my Lord, said she, and I am very glad thereof, for that by this meanes I shall not be accused of any lightnesse; Nay, farther said he, the griefe which the *Queene* sustaineth will be changed into great joy, when she shall heare of the reuenge that I shall take of *Primaleon*. *Gridonia* wished it might be so, and so every day they were together with great contentment: but to giue no discontentment to his lone, he durst not aske after the Knight that had slaine *Gresto*.

At the last *Primaleon* being indifferent well recovered of his wounds, in absence of his Lady, said vnto the knight of the inclosed Island, my Lord, tell me what Knight it was that fought with me, and what is his name, & why he lieth and concealeth himselfe, for that he would neuer make himselfe knowne vnto me, when hee deliuered mee out of the Inchantment: Seeing you will needes know it, said the Knight, I will tell you: he is sonne to the King of England, and is called *Prince Edward*, and of so great valour,



valour, that his like is hardly to be found in the world,  
 who being in England and hearing of the great beauty of  
 Gridonia, was wonderfully inflamed with love toward  
 her, and left England to goe into Ormeda, but before he  
 got thither, he had a great desire to goe to Constantinople  
 to fight with you, where seeing the Princesse Florida your  
 sister, he became so inamored of her, that he wholly forgot  
 Gridonia: which done, he did many strange and wonder-  
 full feats of armes, and restored the Soldane of Niquea  
 unto his country againe, vanquished Camilot in the Em-  
 perours Court, and won an enchanted glasse, by which  
 meanes he deliuered the King of Lacedemonia out of his  
 doleous enchantment, and all for the loue of your sister  
 Florida.

You haue tolde me of great and strange things, said  
 Primaleon, and I wonder much that he should leaue to loue  
 Gridonia for my sister, but I am certainly perswaded that  
 if he had seene her, hee would not haue changed her for  
 any other. He hath changed her, said the Knight, because  
 it was ordained it should be so, that you should haue Gri-  
 donia, and he haue Florida. If you say true, said Prima-  
 leon, I assure you I shall be the gladdest man in the world,  
 that he may haue my sister Florida for his wife: and  
 therefore if he will returne backe againe with me to Con-  
 stantinople, I will make such meanes with the Emperour,  
 that he shall willingly giue her unto him. You haue reason  
 to doe so, said the Knight of the Island, but doe you re-  
 member the gift that you promised mee? I cannot forget  
 it, said Primaleon. Know then said the Knight, that the gift  
 that I require at your hands, is, that you will pardon  
 Prince Edward and your sister Florida, that haue married  
 one the other without your fathers consent, assuring you,  
 that that which she did for him, was not done by her will,  
 for that she became so inflamed with the beauty and va-  
 lour of Prince Edward, by the meanes and art of a certaine  
 Squire, that made a sop, wherein she hauing once drunke,  
 she was constrained to loue him extreamely, and to doe  
 whatsoeuer



whatsoever he would, although that without the same, the vertue of the Prince is so great, that there needeth no enchantment to induce her to loue him.

After that he shewed Primaleon what had past between them, and that the Princesse Florida finding her selfe to be with childe, they departed secretly from Constantinople, to goe into England, for that Prince Edward doubting that the Emperour hated him, because of the combat he fought against his sonne, he thought that he would neuer giue her vnto him, although he should haue asked her of him. And lastly shewed him that they were all there in his house, concluding thus: Now my Lord I shall see, said he, what you will doe for the loue of me, for my desire is, not onely that you shall pardon him, but shall cause him to obtaine his pardon of the Emperour, which he shall send him (together with his blessing) into England, and with such honour as appertaineth vnto two such excellent personages, but first I will haue you to agree and make peace together here in my Island, that I may thereby esteeme my selfe to be most happy.

Sir Knight, said Primaleon, this is a thing that deserueth great punishment, not onely by Prince Edwards death, but by the ruine and destruction of the Realme of England, neuerthelesse for the loue of you, I will gladly yeld vnto a peace, not once remembzing any thing that is past, saying that that which is done cannot be vndone, I pardon both Prince Edward and my sister, and giue you my word to deale in such sort with the Emperour, that hee shall pardon them, but I will by no meanes haue it known that she is my sister, vntill we be in Constantinople, and therefore let vs tell Gridonia that she is some great Lady that hath married Prince Edward, because he loued her secretly, and that we will not leaue him, vntill he be in his owne country: I will likewise haue you to goe with me to Constantinople, that my father may see you, and that for your sake he may not be offended with vs, and therefore I pray you make it knowne vnto Prince Edward, and my  
sister



sister, and tell them that as sone as I can rise, I will come to see them, if they cannot come to me: wherewith the knight fell on his knees befoze Primaleon, and kist his hand, and presently went to certifie Prince Edward, desiring him to take it in good part. My Lord, said he, I should thinke my selfe very vngratesfull, if I denied your request, and I thinke my selfe much bound vnto Primaleon, because he is so sone perswaded to pardon me. I would not willingly reterne vnto Constantinople, neuerthelesse to beare him company, and to be at his wedding. I am well content to goe.

Florida at that time beganne to rise out of her bed, and Prince Edward vnderstanding what mischance she had with her childe was much grieved thereat. At which time the knight taking her by the hand, led her vnto her louers bed, befoze she knew any thing of that which had past, where Prince Edward began to kisse and embrace her, and said vnto her, now Madame, I will see what courage is in you, and whether it be true that you loue me, for that the loue which is great, maketh all things seeme easie and light, and I will trie how for the loue of me, you will beare this shame, and to that end you must know that the knight against whom I fought, was Primaleon your brother, and it seemeth that hee was sent purposely that our affaires might haue such effect as we desired: He knowes all that hath past betwene you and mee, and hath pardoned vs, for the loue of this knight, and will haue vs to goe with him into Constantinople, where he will vse such meanes with the Emperour your father, that he shall likewise pardon vs.

Ha, said Florida, is my brother Primaleon here? Must I then of force reterne againe to Constantinople? I perceiue so great things come to passe for the sinne I haue committed, whereof he will haue me to endure the shame befoze the Emperour my father, but seeing it is so, I am ready to obey you, so you forsake me not: for I will inforce my selfe to swallow downe this shame, seeing I am  
worthy



worthy thereof: with that Prince Edward with teares in his eyes embraced her often times, and said, Madame, you doe me so great a pleasure that I know not how I shall requite it, but I hope that after so many great troubles and aduersities, we shall haue a happy and peaceable life, whereby we may forget all our sorowes past. And at that instant the Knight of the inclosed Island and Prince Edward, shewed her what had past betwene Primaleon and Gridonia, whereat she was much abashd, and began to be somewhat comforted, to see that she onely was not in fault, and so they determined not to goe see Primaleon while Gridonia was with him.

At the last, Primaleon rising as well as hee could, they went all thre to see him, but Florida went with the greatest shame that could be, but the great loue that shee bare vnto her brother, and the fervent desire shee had to see him, put her in some courage: and comming to her brothers presence, they being not able to speake one vnto the other, they stood a good while embraced one in the others armes, with teares in their eyes: at last Primaleon perceiving her to come so abashd, taking pittie on her, he said: Sister, you haue chosen so good a husband, and placed your heart vpon so good a Knight, that it should be hardly done of me, if I should not pardon you, and therefore I will haue no more words thereof, because it would be but an increasing of your grieve and sorow: I thinke my selfe happy to haue Prince Edward for my brother, knowing his vertue to be such, that all the hatred that I haue heretofore borne vnto him, shall be changed into true loue and amity, and I will by such meanes the Emperour shall pardon you: and for this cause, as soone as we shall be healed, we will depart from hence, that our desires may take effect, desiring you that Gridonia may by no meanes know that I am your brother, untill we be in Constantinople.

I will doe it willingly said the Princesse, but my heart is so surprised with joy, that I am bold to present my selfe before you, and if I be worthy of any fauour, my Lord  
Prince



Prince Edward is the cause thereof, whom I beseech you to love better then my selfe, which in truth you may well doe, because he loveth you well, and is very desirous to doe you any service.

For my part, said Primaleon, I will henceforth love him above any other man in the world: and having said so, he stretched forth his armes, and embraced him with great affection, because he stood very nere him, and to shew the greater amity, he kissed his face, in signe of peace, after the manner of the Grecians, asking him how hee felt his wounds. What great hurt severer I had, said Prince Edward, I should not feele it now, but shall rather be sone healed, I feele so great ioy to have received pardon, and to see you, which above all things I still desired. Speake no more thereof said Primaleon, for I thinke my selfe happy to have found you, and am grieved that you told me not of these things in the Island of Cantare, for if you had, they should have bene done otherwise. Thus they talked of many things, with as great pleasure and delight, as if they had bene in Constantinople.

After that Prince Edward and Florida were gone out of the chamber, Gridonia came to see her lover, to whom he said, Madame, I now know all the proceedings of the Knight that delivered you out of the hands of Gresto: hee is called Prince Edward, and is sonne to the King of England, who by his great valour hath gotten an exceeding faire gentlewoman, which he hath here with him, and is already married unto her, and hee and I have made peace together, and wee are become brethren and friends, by meanes of this Knight of the Island, if I be able to rise out of my bed, to morrow we will goe see them: for it is told me, that the gentlewoman is so faire, that her like is not to be found in all the world, unless it be you: for I thinke she is not comparable unto you. Prince Edward hath promised me to goe with me to Constantinople, he is a good and perfect valiant Knight, if I had bene vanquished of him he had revenged himselfe on me, and would have bozen you



you into Appolonia to your mother. My Lord, said she, I pray you speake not of any such thing, for before you should haue died, I my selfe would haue died: Otherwise I neuer heard of any thing that pleased mee better then this peace which you say you haue made with that knight, and touching the gentlewoman that he had with him, I beleue, that considering the excellencie of her loue, she is such a one, that neither my selfe nor any other whatsoeuer, may compare with her, beseeching you that we may goe to see them, and to doe them that honour which is requisite: for that heretofore I durst not speake of that knight for the loue of you. That day was past ouer in pleasure and delight, Primaleon instantly desiring the knight of the Island, to tell all them that knew him, not to speake one word of the Emperour, lest Gridonia should know him to be Primaleon.

And at that time, all of them began to mend, the Lyon and the great dog were healed, and Paragon likewise: And when the other knights vnderstood those things, they were exceeding glad, and Torques that knew the Princesse Florida said, that she was wise and well aduised, to haue chosen so noble and excellent a knight to be her husband: but Iulian and his wife were in great feare when they heard Primaleon was there, and earnestly desired Prince Edward not to let them returne againe into Constantinople, but rather to send them into England, which he did, and without shewing them vnto Primaleon, he sent them with one of Prides Squires, and imbarked them in the ship that brought them thither, and gaue them letters vnto the King his father, to the end to send him all things necessarie to Constantinople, certifying him by the same of all his affaires. Next day Primaleon rose out of his bed, and after that he had broken his fast, he went to the place where Prince Edward and Florida stayed, richly apparrelled, as hauing many rich iewels about them, that were sent him by the Soldane of Nequca. The Princesse sat there by her loue in a rich seate all imbroidered with gold,



golde, who bearing of their comming, rose vp and went to meete them at the entry of the hall. Primaleon and Prince Edward, amiablely embraced each other, Gridonia and Florida entertained one the other with so great courtesie, they did in a manner touch the ground with their knees, and after taking hands, went and sat downe, much abashed to behold each other, for that either of them were of opinion of each other, that there could not be two fairer creatures found in all the world, which was very true: for it had bene impossible to finde two other like them in all the world. Florida shewed her selfe to be moze humble and shamefull, which made her seeme the fairer, by meanes of a ruddy colour that mounted into her face: at last Gridonia said vnto her. Madame I thinke my selfe happy to see you, for that escaping so great a danger, I thought not to haue met with so good fortune, by which meanes my heart shall now be more at ease, by going into Constantinople with you, although the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke is so vertuous and courteous a Knight, that hee would not doe any thing that might turne me to blame and dishonour, meane time I am yours, ready to doe you all the service I can. I will serue you rather said Florida, for it becommeth me better then you to doe it, and I may thinke my selfe happy to haue met with you, for that beholding you, may say I haue seene the fairest creature in the world, and although I know not the knight of the Clouen Rocke, I account him neuerthelesse to be a wise and well aduised Knight, to haue gotten such a mistresse. Primaleon that talked with Prince Edward, heard what they said, and smiling said vnto them: Gentlewomen, I pray you leaue off such speeches, for that such a question were impossible to be resolued, to tell which of you esteemeth and praiseth each other with greatest reason, and which of you may say, the hath the best Knight: for that if Prince Edward and I make no question thereof, you may well cease it, for that at better leasure, we may well dispute vpon that in other sort then we did twise before: but we haue bene both so well



well entertained, that me are content to haue peace together. You say true said Prince Edward, for your vertue is so great, that I should be ouer-solish, willingly to take my death: The Knight of this Island, as you know, came in good time to separate vs asunder, and for my good, if he will confesse the truth. It would be somewhat tedious to shew it, said the Knight, and therefore I pray you let vs speake no more thereof, for all the world knoweth full well the valour of you both, and the soneraigne beauty of those whom you loue so well. Prince Edward being abashd to see the great beauty of Gridonia, found it to be like vnto her picture, which he had scene painted in his fathers pallace, and remembryng the alteration of his loue, he was somewhat troubled, not that Gridonia seemed to be fairer then his Lady, or that he repented himselfe for that he loved Florida with great extremity, but he desired not to haue scene that Gentlewoman, and if fortune had fauoured him, he would rather haue bene farre thence, and in safety in his owne Kingdome: but because he was of a great courage, he concealed that thought, and shewing a good countenance, he turned towards Zerphira, and asked her how her affaires prospered since he had scene her: My Lord said she, they haue alwayes proceeded well, and though you sent me to a place where I haue bene honoured, I will neuer cease to complaine of you, for that of a Lady and mistresse, you haue made me a seruant.

It griueneth me said the Knight, but if you consider the great things which daily cometh to passe in the world, you haue cause to comfort your selfe much more then I, because you are vpon the point to retarne vnto your estates and honours, and I remaine alwayes bounden vnto Gridonia, for the honour which she hath done to you, and am from henceforth ready to serue and honour you. Zerphira gaue him great thanks for that courtesie, saying that there was no lesse to be expected at the hands of so braue a knight. With that Primaleon breaking off their speach, said, My Dame, before long time be past, you shall see much more pleasure,



pleasure, then you haue receiued trouble and griefe, as I haue oftentimes said vnto you, and so they past that day in great pleasure. The other two knights that beganne to mend, entertained one the other in friendly manner, and if the gentlewomen were faire, the knights were neither weake nor pale, for that they had bene all well healed and entertained. Bellager receiued great pleasure to see Primaleon and Torques that loued each other well, after they first saw one the other in the Island of Cantarc, and at that time shewed each other who they were. Bellager, likewise knew who Zerphira was, and wondred that so great a Lady had incurred such disgrace. With that he and Torques went vnto her, and offered her his seruice, assuring her of his good will, that being in Constantinople, her affaires should fall out so well, that she should haue cause to content her selfe, Zerphira was exceeding glad to haue found a knight of her law, and gaue him great thankses for his courtesie.

After that, every one retired into their chambers, where Gridonia said vnto her loue, that she was abashed at the great beauty of that gentlewoman, and that with good cause Prince Edward had chosen her for his loue: you say true said Primaleon, but with more reason should he loue her for another occasion, then for her beauty, and that is, because she hath taken pittie on his griefe, and hath made him a recompence for the same: Whereas I haue set my heart in such a place, whereas no pittie nor compassion of my angusthes can haue release, in such manner that you are now harder vnto mee then euer you were, notwithstanding that you know the great affection that I beare vnto you. Ha my Lord said Gridonia, say not so, for you will burst my heart with griefe, and make me thinke that your promises are not true, you ought to haue certaine, and more then perfect knowledge, of the great loue I beare vnto you, for that to follow you, I haue left both my mother, and my Kingdome, esteeming not to lose them for the loue of you, Prince Edward hath great reason to loue that



that gentlewoman more then all other things in the world, she hath done some thing for him, having had the meanes to doe it, whereas I being vnfortunate, am not at my libertie, and therefore because that I seeke to keepe the promise that I made vnto you, you ought to loue mee the more. Primaleon noting well her words, from thence forward was very careful not to say any thing vnto her that might displease her, and indured his amorous passions as well as he could. After that day they visited one the other diuers times, and liued pleasantly together, and for that cause Gridonia and Zerphira loued one the other with great amity. Prince Edward still eschewed Gridonias company, that he might by no meanes speake vnto her, being still ashamed of the promise that he had sent vnto her by Zerphira, but to the contrary she shewed him the best countenance and affection that she could.

When the knights were fully healed, they went with their Ladies to walke in the Island, which was very pleasant, where they led a ioyfull life, for that the knight of the Island ceased not to entertaine them with all the pleasantest deuises and inuentions that he could: who seeing Primaleon and Prince Edward in case to beare armes, and that it was time for them to depart, one day he toke them aside, to aske their aide and assistance touching his owne affaires, and said vnto them, my Lords, it is needlesse to tell you, how great loue and affection I beare vnto you, nor yet how much I delight to doe you any service I can, because you know it sufficiently, and I am well assured, that in regard of the great vertues that are in you, I shall likewise finde you alwaies ready to doe me pleasure: and therefore I beseech you to shew me the fauour, to aide me against a knight, that by force keepeth an Island from me, which is much greater and better then his, and lyeth about three dayes journey from hence, and if it please you to assist me, I will shew you how the case standeth: I desire your aides herein, knowing well that there is none but you two in the world that can helpe mee in this necessity,



necessity, and with that he left speaking. The two knights  
for a while stood still and said nothing, one expecting when  
the other would speake, at last Prince Edward knowing the  
great courtesie of his companion, said vnto him, my Lord,  
I pray you make answer vnto the knight of the inclosed  
Island, and for my part, I will doe as you shall thinke  
good: With that Primaleon turning vnto the knight that  
demanded their aide, said vnto him, My good friend,  
you haue done so much for vs, that we should be the most  
vngratefull persons in the world, if we did not acknowledge  
it, and therefore I tell you, that we are ready to aide you,  
for I know well, that you are so wise and prudent, that  
you will see-sée what is necessary to be done, and beleue  
mee that Prince Edward here present, will aide you to his  
power: you may be well assured thereof, said Prince Ed-  
ward to the knight, who giuing them humble thanks  
said, I knew well my Lords that I should not faile of  
your aides, the which I beseech you with speede to effect, for  
that if you make a voyage to Constantinople, you cannot  
come so soone againe to helpe mee, we haue forces enough,  
when my subiects shall be toynd with you, meane time  
wee will leaue Gridonia and Florida with sufficient guard  
here in the Island to take their pleasures, for I trust, that  
we shall soone returne victorious: and to let you know  
what moueth me to aske your aide, you shall vnderstand,  
that my father was a valiant knight, and Lord of the  
Island of Ordan, which is one of the best & richest Islands  
in this Country, who after that, by his great valour, won  
this Island, who hauing two sonnes, I being the yong-  
est, when he died left the Isle Ordan to my elder brother,  
and this vnto me, that haue alwaies bene more addicted  
to my booke then to armes, cleane contrary to my brother  
that was a good knight, and married a faire Gentlewo-  
man, that he loued with all his heart, but liued not with  
her above one yeare, and dying without children left her  
the Island, vpon condition that she should not marry a-  
gaine, which she obserued not, for that within foure mo-



100 The third Eooke of the History

netbes after, she married a Knight of the Kingdome of Lacedemonia, the valiantest and hardiest Knight that was in his time living in that country, which I understanding, sent vnto him to desire him to restore my Island vnto me, as being my patrimony from my father, and iustly belonged vnto me: but his answere was both proud and peremptorie and said, that if I once made any more motion thereof vnto him, he would not onely take that also from mee that I held, but put me to a cruell death.

At this time they haue two sonnes, the fiercest and valiantest Knights that euer were seene, ipecially the eldest: for which cause, I sent one againe vnto them and offered them, that seeing they held my Island by force, if they would marry their eldest sonne with one of my daughters, I would be content they should enioy it peaceably: but they made me no answer, but onely with threatenings, wherefore my Lords, you see now whether I haue right or not. You haue so much said Prince Edward, that I doubt not but you shall haue helpe, but tell mee if it please you, is it farre hence to Lacedemonia? he said the Knight: I will then said Prince Edward, write to the King to send vs some aide, that we may goe thither with such forces, that our enemies shall not haue the hearts to defend themselves against vs: For which cause he wrote a letter, vnto King Tarue, whereby he shewed him, that hee was in that Island about certaine affaires to be done for the Knight that was Lord thereof, desiring him to send him some aide, recommending himselfe to the Quene his mother, and to Padritie, and hauing sealed it vp, hee sent a Knight with all haste to beare the letter vnto the King: The King hauing receiued the letter, was exceeding glad, and presently returned the messenger to certesse Prince Edward that he would with all speede come in person to aide him. Padritie was glad to heare those newes, & desired her brother to take her with him, who made her answere that hee would willingly doe it, if hee could. Bellager would gladly haue gone with the letter to Lacedemonia, but hee durst



could not tell Prince Edward his minde, and by that messenger many presents were sent vnto Padritie: meane time the Knight of the inclosed Island tooke order for all things necessary for that enterprise, but when Gridonia and Florida knew it, they were very sorrowfull, and if it had bene possible they would haue hindered the same, but the Knight of the Island, did preuaile so much with them by his perswasions, that they staid there quietly, without feare of any danger whatsoeuer.

## CHAP. XVII.

How the Emperour *Palmerin*, promising a gift vnto a Knight, departed from Constantinople, with *Polendos* his sonne, and hauing deliuered *Belcar*, and diuers others out of an obscure and filthy prison, hee arriued in the Island of Ordane.



After Prince Edward had taken Florida and bozen her away from Constantinople, although the Emperour was of an exceeding great courage, yet he could not so well hide his griepe, but that euery man perceined it, for that besides the dishonour which he seemed to haue receiued, he was grieved because he knew, nor heard no newes of Primaleon, and thinking that the heauens would reuerse his affaires, he went oftentimes to hunt, to put away the griepe and melancholy that he had in his minde, *Polendos* still bearing him company: and one day as he had hunted long time, and gotten good store of sport, hee lighted off his horse to rest himselfe vnder a tree, and while he was there, there came an old Knight with three squires, who seeing so great a company, asked if the Emperour *Palmerin* was there: why aske you said some of the hunters: to salute him and to kisse his hand, said he, and being shewed where he late, the Knight went vnto him, and said.



Right noble and worthy Emperour, I would gladly know whether your great and large dominions, haue not abated the valour of your heart, which was wont to be so couragious, so that willingly they that possesse great Countries and Kingdomes, fearing to lose them, haue not the courage to expose themselves to any danger, as they doe that desire to win praise and honour, and make themselves knowne by their vertues. Friend, said the Emperour, you cannot know that which you demand, if you trie me not: and finding that I haue not the courage to doe that which you shall aske at my hands, you may then report and tell it throughout all the world, that the Emperour Palmerin is not the man that he was wont to be. Now I see well (puissant Emperour) said the Knight, that you are most worthy of the place you hold, and ha-ving said so, he fell downe at his feet, and kissing his hand, said: seeing I am well assured of that which I desire to know, I beseech you goe with me, where I shall leade you, so I haue great neede of your aide, and none but you can helpe me.

Let vs goe, said the Emperour, whither you will, and if you haue neede of any of my Knights, speake, or else will you that I alone shall goe with you? Your grace onely is more worth then all the rest of the world besides, said the Knight, yet take one Knight to beare you company. Will you not, said the Emperour, that I goe and take my leaue of the Emperesse, and take order for my affaires before I depart? Yes my Lord, said he, so we depart this day from Constantinople, I haue a good vessel not farre hence, which is ready prepared to receiue vs in. The Emperour being returned to Constantinople, took the Knight by the hand, and went into the hall to see if the enchanted bird had made any signes of treason and hearing it sing so sweetly, reioyced thereat, knowing thereby his voyage should be without any danger, and after that went with the Knight into the Emperesse chamber, to whom he said: Madame, I must tell you that I must needs goe  
with



with this knight to a place where he hath great neede of my ayde : I will soone retorne againe , desiring you not to be grieved thereat , but to behaue your selfe wisely in the gouernement of the Empire , untill my retorne : the Duke of Estoches and Tolomee shall stay here with you, for I will take no body with me but Polendos my sonne.

The Emperesse thereat was much troubled, and sayd : If it must needs be so, goe not alone, but take some of the good knights of your Court with you. It needs not, said the Emperour, for that going in this sort alone on this enterprise, I shall not be knowne: from thence he went into the Hall, where he found all his Barons and Gentlemen, much grieved for his departure, and said vnto them, Why are you so sad : these countenances belong onely to knights of little courage : Is not Death as ready for me here, as in an other place : Be not grieved I pray you, that I go abroad: and you Duke Estoches and Tolomee, obey the Emperesse, as you haue alwayes done, for I leaue her, and you to aide her, in my place : and so riding along with the knight through the City, they went to the Sea side, where they imbarcked themselves, and presently set saile, and put to Sea, and sayled along, hauing so good a winde, that the next day about euening, they perceiued before them a strong Castle, situated vpon a high Roke, in the middle of the Sea, and vnder it there was a little place inclosed with high walles.

The Emperour desiring to know what Castle it was, asked certayne Fisher-men that passed by him, which told him that it was called the Castle Sarauell, that belonged to a faire and stout Lady named Garnadace, who as then was become a most cruell traitor : for that she hath with her (said they) one that is her cousin, and about fortie or fiftie knights, all ready and addicted to do mischief, which keepe at Sea, and doe great hurt, taking as many knights as they can, which the Lady causeth to be put into a sinking prison : & if by fortune any knight do chance to arine there, she vnder colour to honour him, offereth him her house



104 The third Booke of the History

house at his command, and after, being dis-armed, she causeth him to be put in that prison, by which means, in the space of six moneths, there hath no strange knight come thither, but hath bin taken, and she makes no account of any man: and this day said they, she hath taken one that shewed himselfe to be a valiant knight, so that before he was taken, he slew tenne of her knights, causing them to buy his imprisonment deare: and therefore was with you (said they) to make haste to get away from this Port, lest you fall into her hands. Good fortune (said the Emperour) preserve vs from falling into such extremitie, and yet we will not be afraid to goe forward on our journey, and so caused the Saylers to strike saile, and cast anchor. And when they were come to the Castle, being both armed to fight, they demanded of two men that they found there, if there came not a knight thither with a white Armour, because the Fisher-men had tolde them so: The Watch at the Gate (which alwayes had a thousand eyes ready at their tongues end, to deceiue the world withall) said, My Lords, the knight that you aske for, is within the Castle, with the Ladie thereof, which sheweth him very great honour, and the like will shew vnto you, if you goe in. We are very desirous to goe in, quoth Polendos, and so went along into the Castle, where they were no sooner entred, but the Gates were shut after them, and the Guard that had brought them in, went vnto the Gentlewoman of the Castle and sayd vnto her: Madame, these two knights came to seeke a knight that is armed all in white, tell them newes of him, if it please you. They are very welcome sayd Garnadace, the knight they enquire for is gone in, to put off his Armour: and if these two will doe the like, they shall stay here this night, and be well entertained.

The Emperour thanked her, and said, Madame, we haue occasion to goe else-where, and minde not to stay: therefore we pray you cause him to come hither vnto vs, and if it be he that we demand, then peradventure we will stay



Day héere all night. I will shew you him answered the La-  
 die, in great despight, perceiuing they would not put off  
 their Armour, and with that she went in where her  
 Knights were, and took fiftene of them, whom she com-  
 manded to compell those that were entred, to dis-arme  
 themselves. to see who they were: who presently came  
 loozly vnto them, and sayde: Lay downe your Armes,  
 and yelde your selues prisoners, or else you are but dead  
 men. But the Emperour made answere, and said, We  
 be not to yelde our Armes so lightly to those that aske  
 them. Wherewith they beganne to assaile him, but the  
 Emperour, that neuer had his equall for valour, defended  
 himselfe so balliantly, that he slaine one of their heads, and  
 cut off anothers arme: Polendos likewise seconding him  
 with no lesse boldnesse, made a terrible slaughter a-  
 mongst them, in such manner, that in a short time they  
 had slaine the most part of them, the rest fled into the to-  
 wers of the Castle to save themselves.

The Ladie thereat abashed, called for her cousin to  
 come to ayde her, that knew not what to doe, because  
 hee had bene hurt in the hand by the Knight in the white  
 Armour: Nevertheless, hee armed himselfe and the rest  
 with him, but they had not the leasure to performe it, for  
 that the Emperour following the Lady, entered into the  
 place where they were, and beganne to assaile them with  
 such force, that most of them fled. The Ladies cousin of  
 the Castle perceiuing that, fell downe at his feet, and se-  
 fired him to save his life, because hee was hurt, and could  
 not defend himselfe. Wherewith the Emperour said vn-  
 to him: If thou wilt not die, sweare vnto mee, to doe as  
 I shall will thee, and with that hee sware. As for them  
 that fled, they fell into Polendos hands, that did put them  
 cruelly to death, and with that finding no more resistance  
 within the Castle, they went downe to the Gate, and  
 took the Porter, with diuers other seruants of the house,  
 and locked them all into a Chamber, and after that went  
 to finde out the Lady of the Castle, who was in the Hall  
 amongst



amongest her Gentlewomen, in great grieve and feare.

Traitor, quoth Polendos, shew vs the Knights thou holdest prisoners in this Castle, if thou wilt save thy life. I care not if I die, said she, seeing my despight and anger costeth me so deare. With that one of the Gentlewomen rose vp and said, Come go with mee, and I will shew you them: so taking a key, she opened a darke depe Chamber, whereinto they caused the Knights to descend by a Ladder, which they drew vp againe. When Polendos saw that stinking and darke place, he was abashed, and said: Certainly, this Lady is extreame cruell, to cause poore Knights to descend into so filthy a place: and with that, caused a Ladder and a Light to be brought him, and looking downe into it, saw fiftene Knights therein, among which he knew Belcar, which was he that had the white Armes, and had bene taken that day: so that hee hauing intelligence that Primaleon was gone from the Court, he went from Durasse with foure Squires, and as hee returned agayne to goe to Constantinople, he was assailed in that place by foure Knights, belonging to that Lady: and because he had hurt many of them, they put him into that prison: there also was Darnash, sonne to Tolende, and brother to Attaida, and the Earle Sarc cousin to Franceline, a valiant Knight, who going to Constantinople, to serue in the Emperours Court, for the loue of Polendos, by treason had bene put into that place. Polendos knew three Knights more, and tooke great pittie on them all: and for that cause bad them come vp by the Ladder that was put downe vnto them, saying, that the Traitors that put them therein, were all dead. Whereat with great admiration they all said: What Knight may this be that hath deliuered vs in this manner?

As soone as Belcar was out, Polendos embracing him, said, Seigneur Belcar, what ill fortune brought you hither? It is not long since I came hither, said Belcar: but who are you my Lord (said he) that haue so well ayded vs? Wherewith Polendos tolde them who hee was, which made



made them all reioyce : and then all the rest came by, humbly saluting Polendos, and giuing him thanks for the great good hee had done vnto them : In the meane time the Emperour satte downe by the Lady of the Castle, and said vnto her, I neuer heard of a crueller woman then you are, why doe you in this manner imprison strange knights : I will not tell you the cause why I doe it said the wretched Lady: but I will know it said the Emperour in despight of you. Then Polendos told Belcar and the rest, that the Emperour was there, willing them not to tell those of the house, whereat they marvelled, thinking it no strange matter that so many knights as were in that Castle had bene slaine and overcome, seeing it had bene done by two such excellent knights. When the Emperour saw Belcar and Darnasin, he made much of them and said, my heart gaue me there was some knight in this prison, that I loue and esteeme. Belcar saluting him said, my Lord (making as though hee knew him to be the Emperour) I am not displeased at this hard aduenture, seeing I haue found you, to whom I will doe all humble service : That I beleue said the Emperour, and now seeing I haue found that which I sought, let vs goe hence speedily. And as they searched in every place for the knights armes, they found Belcars, and the rest of the knights Squires, that were shut vp in an other place, who were likewise deliuered.

Then the Emperour caused Garnadaces cousin to come befoze him, to whom hee said, I leaue this Castle to you, which you shall sweare to keepe, vntill I giue you farther Commission : For the Lady of the Castle, said hee, I will take her with mee, and will giue her a husband, whereby shee shall be more honoured then ever shee was befoze : the knight giuing him thanks, the Lady his cousin was led into the ship, with the rest of the knights that had bene deliuered out of prison, whereat the knight that conducted the Emperour, was exceeding glad of their returne, and being night they set saile, when the Emperour  
asked



108 The third Booke of the History

asked Belcar what fortune had brought him thither, which he declared: the Earle of Sare did the like, to whom the Emperour, when he knew him, did great honour: The Ladies constrain that staid in the Castle, and all the country was glad that the Lady was in that sort taken from thence, because of her great cruelty and iniustice. The Emperour often asked Garnaadace why she took Knights prisoners in that sort, but he could by no meanes cause her to tell him: At last upon a Sunday, they arrived in the Island of Ordane, whereof the Knight was Lord that led the Emperour thither to be aided by him, which Knight had a Lady to his wife, which was coulen to the great Magician that was Lady of the Island of Mercania, that had deceived Prince Edward with her daughter, as it hath bene said before. She by her art had knowledge that the knight of the inclosed Island had Prince Edward and Primaleon, and diuers other Knights with him, that intended to assaile the Island of Ordane, and knowing that by the aid of those Knights he would soone win it, to her great grieve, she sent word to the Knight by one of her Squires, that they would sorely take the Island from him, if he were not defended by the Emperour Palmerin himselfe in person, advising him what he should doe therein.

Whereupon the Knight went to Constantinople, and by the meanes aforesaid, got the Emperour to goe with him to his Island, where being arrived, the Knight shewed the contention he had with the Knight of the inclosed Island, whereof his wife was the cause, to whom the said Island was left by her first husband, omitting nothing but onely the condition, by the which the Island had bene left unto her, neither would he tell him that the Knight that pretended right to that Island, was the Knight of the inclosed Island, for that after the Knight of the inclosed Island had sent the shield with the deulle of the worke vnto Primaleon, and that the Emperour vnderstood by him what he desired to know, touching the booke which Polendos had found in the Island of Delphos, he was mindesoll thereof,



hereof, and desired much to requite the service hee had done for him: The Knight of the Island of Ordane therefore, would not tell the Emperour of any thing, but that the Knight his enemy was very puissant, and had the King of Lacedemonia to aide him, with diuers other Knights: and for that cause he implored his aide. If you haue right on your side, said the Emperour, I will neuer leave you, untill you haue ended your quarrell. The Knight kissing his hand, the next day desired him to goe view the Island, to see if it were necessary for him to diuide his men or else to hold them altogether, and after the Emperour had seene the most parts of the Island, the Emperour tolde him that it was no neede for him to diuide his men, but onely to set a good watch, for the enemy, if he were wise would come to the haueu where hee took land, as being the easiest place, where he might land.

### CHAP. XVIII.

How the King of Lacedemonia arriued in the inclosed Island, and of the battaile that was fought against the Knight of the Island of Ordane.



The King of Lacedemonia hauing receiued Prince Edwards letter, rayled a great army of 2500. Knights, and went thither with in person to the inclosed Island, with great desire to see Prince Edward, who with Primaleon and all the other Knights that were healed, went to meete him, and to receive him honourably. The King seeing Prince Edward, presently went on land with ten other of his principall Knights, and embracing him, said: My Lord, I reioyce that I may doe you some service. I thanke you said Prince Edward: and for this Knight that you see heere, it is Primaleon, sonne to the Great Emperour of Constantinople, which I tell you, because I can hide nothing from you. The



The King mused thereat, and turning to Primaleon, humbly saluted him, Primaleon doing the like vnto him, as he that knew how to honour those that deserved it: After that Prince Edward let the King into the Castle, where being vnarmed, he said he would goe visite the Princesse Gridonia and Florida, but because they were lodged in severall places, he said he would first see the Princesse Florida, for the loue of her Lord Prince Edward, but Prince Edward would not haue it so, and so he went first to salute Gridonia, that receined him honorably, to whom Primaleon said, Madame, here is the King of Lacedemonia, that is come to succour vs. I am glad of the comming of so noble a King, said she, but it grieueth me that you must goe from hence. We will come againe shortly said Primaleon: and therewith after some salutations past betwene, the King taking leaue of Gridonia, said he would goe see the Lady Florida, and when he saw her, he was abashed and said: I am King of Lacedemonia, seruant to Prince Edward, and hold my Kingdome of him: The Princesse therewith made great reuerence vnto him, giuing him thanks both for his comming thither for the loue of her husband, and for the speeches he vsed. After that they sate downe and spake of diuers things, and as they were talking, the Knight of the Island sent to seeke the King, to desire him to come to supper, where the two Knights bare him company.

The next day Primaleon that was much grieved, that he could not haue his Lady at his pleasure, solicited the Knight of the Island to depart, seeing the King of Lacedemonia was come, and that euery thing was ready prepared for them. The King of Lacedemonia offered the command ouer all his army vnto Prince Edward, but Prince Edward refused it, giuing charge of one ship to Pride, and of another to Bellager, and then spake to the Knight of the inclosed Island in this sort: Sir Knight, this Dogge which I haue with me, is inchanced, and is a valiant Knight, which I till now forgot to tell you, let me see if  
your



your art can helpe him, and deliver him out of his enchantment. Whereupon the Knight did many things to cause him to returne into humane shape againe, but he could not, and therefore said: my Lord, this Dog cannot be disenchanted, but onely by meanes of a Booke that disenchanted the rest that were in the Island of Malfaite, and untill that we be in Constantinople he cannot receive his right shape of a man, meane tyme give him your sword in his hand, and that will helpe him, and I will give you another with a good armour, and also to Primaleon, for I will have you both beare like armes. Prince Edward said he would doe as he thought good, and at that time he took the dogge, and led him before the King and Primaleon, that knew nothing thereof, and tolde them that he would shew them a strange thing, & so took his sword & put it into Maiortes right paw, & presently he received his first forme.

When Primaleon and the king beheld it, they were abashed, Primaleon saying: ha Prince Edward, why kept you this great secret so long concealed? This is a good knight to aide you. You say true, said he, and he is brother to the Giant Gararu, that stales for you in Constantinople, and was enchanted in the Island of Malfaite, where the Emperour Trinee, and the Emperesse Agricole mine Aunt, were likewise enchanted: What, said Primaleon, hath he bene so long in the forme of a Dogge: surely you may say you have the best sword, in the world if you cure him.

Then Prince Edward said to Maiortes, I give you this sword to beare in your hand untill we shall be in Constantinople, where you shall be wholly disenchanted: for the knight of this Island hath given me an armour & sword which a Giant did use, who sometime held this Island. So all things being ready, they prepared themselves to goe aboard their ship. After their departure Gridonia and Florida comforted each other, and eat and slept together, recounting to each other their amorous passions, but Florida being crafty, made Gridonia believe that she was daughter to the king of Argos, and that Prince Edward had done that in  
her



112 The third Booke of the History

her fathers Court, that he had done in Constantinople. Gridonia knowing what Prince Edward had done for the love of Florida, marvelled how so good a knight as he was, could saue himselfe to be the sonne of a Cardener.

The knights being embarked with their army of 3800. knights and footmen, had so good a winde, that upon monday in the morning two houres before day, they approached nere unto the Island of Ordane, where they were espyed by the Sentinels, which presently sent word thereof unto the Castle. Whereupon the Emperour with the rest of his knights, came forth and placed themselves in good order to defend the Island, sending Belcar, Darnasin, and the Earle of Sarc, with 2000. knights, to the sea side, to keepe them from landing, and placed diuers archers upon the top of the hill whereon the Castle stood, to keepe them from coming nearer, and he himselfe with 600. knights, and Polendos that stood ready to aide Belcar if neede were. The two sonnes of the knight of the Island of Ordane, being ballant, went with Belcar, who with all his men stood in a place hard by the sea side.

The ship went as nere unto the land as they could, and hauing launched diuers boates, Primaleon was the first that went out of the ship, & after him diuers other knights: and although they upon the land ceased not to shote, yet they still approached with their boates. Belcar and the Earle of Sarc fighting ballantly to let the enemies from landing. Gorman that was the knights of the Island of Ordane sonne, behaved himselfe so well, that hee was for euer after esteemed for a braue knight, but it was nothing in regard of the valour of Primaleon, whose acts made them wonder thereat: by which meanes in despite of all his enemies he landed, fighting so furiously, that he made them retire, whereby the rest had the better meanes to follow him.

Belcar seeing that, animating his men, charged the enemy on all sides. Primaleon perceiving that hee onely was the



the shield of all the rest, gave him so great a blow upon the head, that he made him knéele on the ground, but Belcar rose up presently and gave him a good exchange, in such sort, that if the battaile betwene them had continued long, there had bene great hurt done. With that Prince Edward with the King of Lacedemonia, landed with all their men, at whose coming many lost their lives, whereby they of Ordane were so repulled, that notwithstanding Belcars force, and the rest of his knights, they were constrained to leave the plaine, and to retire unto the Castle hill, where they of the Island fortified themselves, and yet had not bene able to defend themselves if the Emperour and Polendos had not come to relieve them, wounding at the valour of their enemies.

The Emperour willing a cousin of the knights of the Island of Ordane, to stand ready with 500. knights to aide them if neede were, taking those onely with him that he had redeemed out of prison, to whom having given charge that they shoulde not leave him, but still keepe about him, he set forward with the like courage that he alwaies used in so great enterprizes, and entering amongst the enemies, began to lay upon them valiantly, whereby with the aide of Polendos he won the field againe which they before had lost, and by that meanes, he encouraged his men, and made them boldly goe forward, so that what force soever Primaleon and Prince Edward could use, they could not stay their men from retiring to the sea side, they fled so fast from the Emperours and Polendos blowes.

Pride, that was not yet landed, perceiving those on his side, by little and little to retire, went to aide them with new forces, whereby the battaile began to be more furious, the Emperour shewing so great valour, that it seemed that his yeares had not diminished his strength and valour, being such a terrour to his enemies, that no man durst withstand him, whereat Primaleon and Prince Edward were in such a rage, being not able to stay their men, that they had almost lost all courage. The Emperour fighting  
I here



## 114 The third Booke of the History

here and there, at the last drew neare unto Primalcon, and Polendos perceiuing that hee made a great slaughter of their men, went to assaile him, and each gaue one the other cruell blowes. The Emperour being hard by Torques, gaue him two such blowes, that he laid him at his feete, and caused him to be taken prisoner, who was carried into the Castle, what resistance soener the aduersaries made to relieue him.

Primalcon vnderstanding that Torques was taken prisoner, was in such a rage, that he gaue Polendos such a terrible blow vpon the head, that he made him fall flat vpon the ground with both his hands: But the Emperour perceiuing him come, met him, and gaue him such a blow vpon the arme, that he hurt him: who perceiuing that he could not helpe himselfe with that arme, and seeing the danger he was in to stay there, determined to retire: but yet would not depart till hee had giuen him his exchange that hurt him, at whom he gaue three such exceeding great blowes, that without the great please that came thither, which put them asunder, great mischief had bene done thereby, because the Emperour might easily haue reuenged himselfe. But Maiortes that was newly on land with his men, did exceeding ballantly, and drave the enemy before him, as if they had bene sheepe: for which cause Primalcon seeing that ayde to be come, retired out of the battaile, to binde vp his wounds: At which time the five hundred men, that stood ready with the counsaile of the Lord of the Island of Ordane, entred furiously into the battaile; and Belcar that had retired to breathe himselfe, entred againe, wherewith Prince Edward perceiuing Primalcon to goe out of the battaile sore hurt, in great choller began to say: Surely, if I can finde him that hurt you, hee shall not brag much thereof. He that hurt me, said Primalcon, is easie to be knowne from all the rest, and me thinkes hee is the best knight that euer I sawe.

With that Prince Edward entred and fought ballantly, and meeting with the Earle of Sarc, richly armed, gaue him



him so many cruell blowes, that he fell to the ground, although he defended himselfe valiantly: Prince Edward leaving him there, put himselfe into greater danger, to ayde those that needed: Maiortes scattered his enemies in such sort, that he made them retire vnto the hill vnder the Castle: The Emperour perceiuing that it was time to prevent the mischief that Maiortes did vnto his souldiers, he set vpon him, and by fortune strooke him vpon one of his ancles, in such sort, that he was forced to bend his knee, which the Emperour perceiuing, doubled his blow, thinking to kill him, but he was presently assailed by some knights, that relieved the Gyant, whereby he found himselfe in great danger, if Polendos that neuer left him, had not aided him: in which place the valiant knight was well reuenged of the hurt receiued by Primaleon: for that as then he killed ten knights at the least, and hurt diuers others, whereby the Emperour was well eased, and had leisure to retire and breathe and refresh himselfe. Bellager met with the two sonnes of the knight of the Island of Ordane, and gaue so great a blow to the yongest, that he claue his shield, and hurt him grievously in the head, in such manner that he was constrained to fall downe. Gorman thinking his brother to be dead, charged his enemies in such sort, that he had killed him, but that Pride came thither and ayded him: and in that place the battaille began to be most furious, and each part fought so couragiously, that it could not be perceived which side had the advantage.

Prince Edward met with Belcar, and although they knew each others force, and were both wearied, yet they assailed each other, and in the end Belcar was so sore hurt, that he was left halfe dead vpon the ground. Polendos perceiuing that, drew nere, and gaue Prince Edward such a blow that wounded him sore: the Archers that stood in the Castle, still shot at Primaleon and his troopes, so that it was impossible for him to get the hill. Before the battaille ended, King Tarue that neuer left his friend Prince Edward, whom he perceived to be wounded, with great surp



ran at Polendos, and gaue him so great a blow vpon one of his shoulders, that he gaue him his hire for hurting Prince Edward. Polendos grieved at that blow, strooke at the King, and gaue him two such blowes, that he strooke him to the ground: which Prince Edward perceiving, assailed Polendos, & gaue him so great a blow vpon the helmet, that with the force thereof he claued it in sunder, and therewith hurt him, and the blow was so exceeding great that the buckles of his helmet brake in sunder, and therewith he was bare headed: and the Emperour that was not farre from thence, beholding what danger his sonne was in, strooke at Prince Edward with such force vpon the helmet, that he made him bend his knee: but he rose suddenly againe and reuenged himselfe on the Emperour, who at that time receiued two grievous wounds, and had found himselfe in extreame danger, if he had not had good armes. At which time the darkenesse of the night ended the battaile, each part resting weary, and sore wounded, on all sides. The Emperour though thus wounded, had great care to know what was become of Polendos, and when he knew that they had led him into the Castle, he was satisfied. The Emperour went presently to see how Polendos, Belcar, and the Carle of Sare did, and after was disarmed by the Knight of the Islands wife and his daughters, and his wounds dressed by a most expert Surgeon.

## CHAP. XIX.

How the Emperour hauing knowne by *Torques* that the chiefe Knights that conducted his enemies, were *Primalcon* and an other strange Knight of great valour, wondred thereat, and so sent a messenger vnto his sonne.



He Emperour wondred much at the great valour of his aduersaries, and said within himselfe, that he had neuer seene moze valiant Knights: and as he was thinking thereon, he remembered the Knight



knight that he had taken prisoner, and sent Escartion his  
 Page to see what wounds he had, and as soon as the Page  
 saw him, he knew him presently, and was so abashed that  
 he could not speake, and went and shewed the Emperour  
 that the prisoners name was Torques, sonne to the King  
 of Romate: which the Emperour hearing, was much a-  
 bashd, and said he would not beleue it till he saw him, and  
 therefore sent presently for him: the Page returning, said  
 to Torques, My Lord doe you not know me? I pray you  
 goe with me to speake with the Emperour, because I told  
 him that you were here. Torques presently knew Escar-  
 tion, and wondering thereat said, what? is the Emperour  
 here? Yea said the Page, come with mee and you shall  
 see him, it was he that tooke you prisoner. When the Em-  
 perour saw him hee was glad, and said, what Torques,  
 what strange aduenture is this, that I finde you here in  
 this place after so long time that you departed out of our  
 Court? tell mee I pray you, what haue you done euer  
 since, and how came you hither? My Lord said he, and it  
 pleaseth your grace, I haue many things to tell you touch-  
 ing your demand, and am so much abashed to see you here,  
 that I can hardly beleue that I see you. The Emperour  
 embracing him with great affection, asked him what  
 knights those were that were his enemies, at whose va-  
 lours he much wondered. The chiefe of them said, hee is  
 Primaleon your sonne, I am glad he hath escaped this day  
 out of your hands. What said the Emperour, is this true?  
 is my sonne Primaleon here? Yea said he, with the knight  
 of the inclosed Island, to maintaine his right that he clay-  
 meth in this Island. The Emperour was so glad and ama-  
 sed thereat, that hee pauled a pretty while before hee could  
 make answer: and after lifting vp his hands vnto heauen,  
 he said, Good Lord, how great are thy wonderfull works,  
 how shall I euer be able to yeeld thee sufficient thanks, for  
 the great grace and saueur thou shewest mee, in restoring  
 my sonne vnto mee againe? But tell me, said hee to Tor-  
 ques, what Armes beareth hee? because I saw a knight



with white Armes that fought ballantly. It may be, said Torques, that it was he: neuertheless there was another in the batell, that bare the like Arms, and there is no great difference betwixt them, for they are both ballant knights: and being demanded his name, he said he was a strange knight, but very ballant, and you see not know him, said he, although I shewed you his name: for he would not tell him that it was prince Edward, because Primaleon had told him all that had passed. Truly, said the Emperour, I was twice troubled by him, and at the last time, night parted vs, as we were fighting hard one with the other: but I cannot be quiet till I know how my sonne doth. I will go thither (said Torques) if you please: you are too sore hurt (said the Emperour) and therefore you shall not goe at this time: Escartion shall goe thither with a Torch in his hand, in signe of peace: for I am assured that Primaleon will be glad to see him if he be liuing. Then he commanded Escartion his Page, to goe to the banen to Primaleon, to tell him of the Emperours being there, and that he was in the battaile, but Torques willed him not to aske for Primaleon, but for the knight of the Clouen-Rocke lest he should be knowne by his name. The knight of the Island sent two other pages with him, with each a torch in his hand, to goe without danger.

The Emperour asked Torques then how he found his sonne Primaleon: which Torques told him, declaring all the action, as it hath bene said before, forgetting not to tell of the great loue that Primaleon bare to Gridonia, for whose sake he had stayed so long from Constantinople, and how he had promised her to give her his owne head, which he had vowed he would doe, and how he had restored her to her Duchie of Ormeda, and to the Kingdome of Appolonia, where she was troubled by Gresto, and lastly, how he had left her in the inclosed Island, with promise to carry her to Constantinople, where he would fight with Primaleon. I will haue you tell me all this once againe said the Emperour, for I take great pleasure to heare it:  
and



and with that Torques rehearsed it againe from point to point, not forgetting any thing, and how that for the loue of that Quene, many knights went to Constantinople to seeke for Primaleon, and to fight with him, in hope to haue her to their wiues. The Emperour wondred much thereat, and said, certainly Primaleon hath sealed his loue in a dangerous place, and she hath great reason to be his mortall enemye, because I caused Duke Nardide her father to be slaine, and King Frisole, and I killed her vnckle, and Primaleon himselfe slew Perequin her cousin, for this cause she hath just cause to hate him, neuerthelesse she shall doe well to cease that hatred conceived against vs, and by my consent to haue Primaleon to her husband, and I will loue her with all my heart, seeing my sonne beareth her so great an affection, and that she is of great beautie and honour.

## CHAP. XX.

How *Primaleon* went to see the Emperour his father, that pardoned *Prince Edward* and *Flerida*, and with double alliance, pacified the two Knights, of the inclosed Island and the Island of Ordane.



Prince Edward and all the knights that held with the knight of the inclosed Island, were in a great rage, that they could not win the battaille, seeing they had right on their side, but above all the rest, Primaleon was almost out of his wits, and foamed for anger: for which cause he determined the next day, either to win the field, and to drine the enemye into his Castle, or else he said it should cost him his life: and vnderstanding of Prince Edwards retrait, he went to see him, asking how he did, Prince Edward made answer that he was sore hurt, for that in the end of the battaille he met with a knight, that bare Vermilion armes,



120 The third Booke of the History

that was an exceeding valiant Knight, but he could not conceiue who it should be. I care not what he is said Primaleon, for I shall neuer be at quiet, untill I be reuenged on him, that hath done me two such displeasures, one because he tooke Torques prisoner, the other that he gaue me a blow vpon the arme, as I thought to relieue him, in such manner, as I was constrained to retire out of the battaile, but said Prince Edward, if you had not gone out of the battaile, wee had gotten the hill. And although they were in a manner all hurt, neuerthelesse they determined the next day to begin the battaile againe.

After that, all their wounds were dyest, and all things necessary provided for them by the Knight of the inclosed Island, that came thither for no other purpose. Maiortes was likewise healed before the sword was taken out of his hand, and after for their security, they placed certaine of their Knights that had not fought all that day, at the sea, making great fires on both sides. Escartion past through the middle of the watch that lay before the Castle, to whom he said that he went to the enemies fleet, about business for the Emperour: the enemies watch maruailing to see those pages come at that time of the night, stayed them to know what they would haue, and vnderstanding by Escartion, that he came to sprake with the Knight of the Clouen-Rocks, from Torques that was prisoner in the Castle, foure of them led him to Primaleons ship, whom Escartion presently knew, kneeling down before him he said, I reioyce my Lord, that I finde you alive, for now I hope to returne with good newes vnto my Lord the Emperour, that is in great grieve for your sake. What say you, said Primaleon: ha wretch that I am, had I then the heart and courage to list by my sword against him, certainly I shall neuer be merry when I thinke thereon, but if I committed a fault herein, it was done of ignorance, and now I wonder not that my strength began to faile before him, and not onely mine, but all the rest of the Knights that were against him: for that it is ordained that



that he should be victorious in all his enterprises, wherof I may boast.

Then Primaleon asked the page if Polendos was there, the page said yea, with that Primaleon knew not how to finde the meanes to goe see the Emperour: Escartion perceiuing him to be in doubt thereof, told him that he should doe well to goe presently thither, if he were able, and that he should make the Emperour exceeding glad. I will goe said Primaleon, and turning to the Knight of the inclosed Island, he willed him not to thinke any thing therein, saying that he should haue no wrong, bidding him goe to Prince Edward to certefie him what was happened, and to tell him that he would make the Emperour acquainted with his affaires: and presently he went with Palanrine, that was not much hurt, and three other Knights of the inclosed Island, that had not as yet bene on land, and being gone, the Knight of the inclosed Island went to Prince Edwards ship: to whom he said, my Lord, I bring you strange newes, which is, that the Knight with the Hermion armours, that this day behaued himselfe so ballantly, is the Emperour of Constantinople, and he in the blacke armour, is Polendos his sonne, which were brought hither by the Knight of the Isle of Ordane, to aide him.

Prince Edward wondred much at his speech and said, it is not without cause, that my Lord the Emperour is so much renowned throughout all the world: for that at these yeares he hath made his valour knowne more then euer he did, and I am much abashed to thinke how it was possible for vs to escape his hands, and were neither taken nor slaine. I am glad to know he is here, for it may be, he will giue me leave to goe directly vnto mine owne country, without going any farther out of the way: Primaleon hath done well to goe presently vnto him, and I thinke long till I see him, that I might kisse his maiesties hand. The King of Lacedemonia and all the rest were much abashed to heare of the Emperours being there. Primaleon as I said before, went towards the Castle without any  
armes,



armes, with so small a company, and at such a time, that every man wondered thereat, and coming before the Emperour his father, he was so much surprised with joy and gladnesse, that he could not speake, but falling on his knees, humbly kiss his hand: the Emperour for his part feeling so great contentment, the teares fell from his eyes, although he sought as much as he could to hide the joy he conceived, saying sonne, how exceedingly doe I reioyce to see you: now there can happen nothing unto me that can make sorrowfull. My Lord said Primaleon, what should I say, and alledge to excuse my selfe of the fault I have committed: nevertheless I beseech you, according to your great generosity of heart, to pardon your children, first my selfe for having bene disobedient unto you, and then my sister Florida for having done you some dishonour, although she better deserueth pardon then my selfe, for she hath married the best Knight in the world, for you know Prince Edward better then I: Florida is in the inclosed Island, and Prince Edward is here with me, whom I found at sea by a strange adventure, and with that shewed him what had past, and how he had chosen himselfe a wife: at which time the Emperour felt two severall passions in his minde, both griefe and gladnesse: griefe to understand of Prince Edward and Floridas action: and joy, to know that they had not as yet gotten into England: and for that cause made a most courteous answer, saying, Sonne, in so great joy and gladnes which I receive at this present, to see you, there is no cause why I should thinke upon griefes past, or seeke for revenge, but we must by all meanes possible endeavour our selves to gratifie that Knight, acquitting you in his behalfe, of the promise that you have made unto him: for your fault, it is but small, for if you departed from Constantinople without my knowledge, it was to shew your valour throughout the whole world, and for Gridonia, she is so vertuous that I am content you should marry her. If I pardon your sister that hath committed a great fault, it shall be done in regard of the great valour that



that is in Prince Edward, whom I esteeme to be one of the  
best Knights in the world: and me thinkes he had great  
reason to reuenge his ancestors, for that every man seeketh  
his aduantage when he may, for which and in considera-  
tion also that he deliuered you out of the strange inchant-  
ment, I pardon him with all my heart; and Florida also  
for his sake, being glad that we shall all returne together  
to Constantinople, that we may send them into England  
with such honour as belongeth vnto them, and so from  
henceforth let me heare no more thereof. Then the Empe-  
rour asked him how he did: I am well said Primaleon,  
seeing I escaped your hands: whereat the Emperour be-  
gan to smile, and said, was it with you that I fought late  
towards evening? So my Lord said Primaleon, it was  
with Prince Edward, that wore the like armes that I did:  
It was a wonder said the Emperour, that either hee or I  
lost not our liues at that time: Surely, said Primaleon, it is  
much better as it is. The Emperour willed him to stay  
there with him all night without returning to his army,  
which he did, and so went to see the other Knights that  
were there, and first spake vnto the Knight of the Island of  
Ordane, that promised to doe whatsoever it should please  
the Emperour.

After that he went to see Torques, and hauing asked  
him how he did, he went to visite Polendos and Belcar,  
that had already heard all that had past, whereat they re-  
ioyced, and much more when they saw Primaleon, who  
hauing seene them all, went againe into the Emperours  
chamber, where he had a rich bed prepared for him, and pre-  
sently lay downe, as hauing great neede of rest. But the  
Emperour and hee slept not much that night, because hee  
shewed him at large all that had happened vnto him, and  
how after he found Prince Edward, what a cruell bat-  
taille they fought together, in such manner, that without  
the aide of the Knight of the inclosed Island, hee had bene  
slaine, or else both of them together. The Emperour reioy-  
ced saying, he found himselfe to be much beholding vnto  
the



the Knight of the inclosed Island, for that he had done. The next day Primaleon would not keepe his bed, but went to Prince Edward, who seeing Primaleon come downe the hill, ranne to embrace him, saying, tell me my Lord I pray you if it be true that the Emperour is here in this Island, for I can hardly beleue it. He that brought me the newes, said Primaleon, would not deceiue me, and therefore beleue for a truth the Emperour is here in this Island, and hath already bene informed of your affaires, and pardoneth you. I hope said Prince Edward, that I shall be able to doe him greater service then I gaue him cause of offence, therefore I will goe to kisse his hand.

When Primaleon said vnto the Knight of the inclosed Island, you must goe speake with the Emperour, for he is very desirous to see you, that he may set an agreement betwene you and the Knight of the Island of Ordane, wherfore cause every man to retorne into their ships, for you shall neede to make no more warre: So will I said the Knight, for I am well assured, that there can nothing but good happen vnto me from the Emperour: then Primaleon tooke Prince Edward and Pride with him to the Castle, for the King of Lacedemonia & Bellager were so sore wounded, that they could not arise out of their beds. The people wondered much to see these Knights together, and said, that it was great fortune to see the Father and the sonne meete in that sort.

When they came to the Castle, the Knight of the Island met them, and Primaleon that brought the Knight of the inclosed Island with him, debated the cause so well betwene them, that he made them become friends, and so went both before the Emperour, that walked in a rich hall, thinking vpon many things: to whom Primaleon said, here my Lord, here is the Knight that is ashamed to show himselfe before your maiesty. Whereunto the Emperour with a ioyfull countenance made answers and said, he neede not doubt of any thing, for that I both loue and esteeme him much: saying so, he stretcheth forth his armes to



to embrace him. Then Prince Edward knéled downe and  
kissed his hand, saying, my Lord Primaleon, you say true,  
for I am so ashamed of my fault, that I know not what to  
doe, but if I had knowne my Lord your fathers ex-  
ceeding confesse, I had neuer committed it: and therefore  
I submit my selfe to your power, said he vnto the Empe-  
rour, as ready to receiue such punishment as you shall think  
good, for I know and confesse that I haue well deserved  
it, and if I finde any fauour, I pray you let it be in pardoe-  
ning your daughter, and impute all the fault vnto me,  
whereof I onely will beare the burthen, and let not my La-  
dy Florida be reproached therewith.

Sonne, said the Emperour taking him vp, long since, I  
put your fault vnder my feete, I pardon my daughter  
Florida for the loue of you, and will pray the Emperesse to  
doe the like, forgetting all things past, and to receiue her  
with as much affection as she would doe, if this thing had  
neuer bene done: and as Prince Edward said, that he repu-  
ted himselfe happy, let these things be no more spoken of,  
said the Emperour, I am exceeding glad to see you in so  
good health, for I had not thought you could so soon haue  
risen out of your bed, seeing you toke so great paines yester-  
day in the battaile. I rose said Prince Edward to see Prima-  
leon, for in truth I had great néede to rest my selfe, and  
I had great good fortune that I escaped out of your hands:  
I should rather say so, said the Emperour, for I know  
not how I saved my selfe from you, but goe and see Po-  
lentos, whom you brought into a weake case. I am excee-  
ding sorry therefore said Prince Edward, assuring you never-  
theless, that I was much abashed at his great valour.

Then the Knight of the inclosed Island spake, and said:  
I shall neuer be glad at my heart, because I am the onely  
meanes that all you were in great danger, and therefore  
my Lord said he (knéling at the Emperours feete) I pray  
you pardon me, offering to kisse his hand, but he would  
not suffer him, but lifting him vp, set him downe by him,  
with the Knight of the Island of Ordane, desiring to know  
the



## 124 The third Booke of the History

the reason of their contention, touching that Island : and hauing heard both, he perceined well that the knight of the Isle of Ordane had deceiued him, hiding the truth of the matter from him : & knowing that the knight of the inclosed Island had the right of the cause on his side, he prayed them both for his sake, to be allied together, and that the knight of the inclosed Island would giue his eldest daughter in marriage to Gorman, eldest sonne to the knight of the Island of Ordane, and that the Island might be theirs, saying, he would take Gormans brother with him, and aduance him otherwise : willing Primaleon to make Puren-te knight, that he might marrie with one of the daughters of the knight of the Island of Ordane, which he liked best : and touching the renewes of the Island of Ordane, it was agreed that the third part thereof should be giuen to the knight of the inclosed Island during his life : and that Cicile, sister to Puren-te, should goe with Gridonia to be preferred according to her degree. Then he wished them both to accept of those conditions of peace, for that if any of them seemed to to be grieved thereat, hee would giue them their demand : with that they both kneeled downe, saying, that they agreed vnto all that it pleased his Maestie to set downe betwene them. Then the Emperour willed the knight of the inclosed Island to fetch his daughter, for that he would not depart from thence before the marriage were consummated, saying till Polendos, Melcar, and the rest were healed.

The knight of the inclosed Island, glad of these newes, presently departed thence : meane time Primaleon led Prince Edward into his chamber, and said vnto him : Brother, here is our brother Polendos, of whom I may say, that if you surpasse him in any thing, you may well brag and glory therein, for that hee is the best knight in the world. So I esteem him, said Prince Edward, and cannot be perswaded that I surpasse him in any thing : for that I neuer had any controuersie with him : neuertheless if I haue offened him in any thing, I rest at his command.



command. Polendos gaue him thanks for that great courtesie, saying: Hee that forgetteth much, may forgive a little. Prince Edward understood what he meant, but would no further answer, and so embraced him with great amitie.

When the Emperour knew that the King of Lacedemonia, and Bellager brother to the Soldane of Niquea, were in that state: he willed that they should be well healed and attended on: and hearing how Prince Edward had miraculously delivered that King, he made great account of him in his minde, and said, that hee had bene excellent in all things: And after that, hearing that the King and Bellager were coming, he went vnto the Castle gate to meete them, and receiuing them honourably, accompanied them into the pallace. Prince Edward likewise caused Maiortes to come to the Castle: and when the Emperour understood his state, hee wondred thereat, and tooke great pleasure to see him, and to speake vnto him, and to tell him newes of Gataru his brother: And for that hee sawe him claspe that sword so fast in his hand, he bad him be patient, saying that they would soon be in Constantinople, where he had a booke, by vertue whereof hee should be wholly released of his enchantment: whereat the Giant reioyced. The Knight of the inclosed Island, soon arrived in his Island, because it was not farre from thence, but when the Ladies saw him come alone, they were in great feare, but he said vnto them: The peace, my Ladies, is made betwene the Knight of the Island of Ordane and me: and I come to fetch my daughter, to giue her in marriage to Gorman his sonne: The Knight of the Clouen-Rocke and Prince Edward, are well, and will be here shortly, saying but till I returne againe, that the marriage may be celebrated before their departure. He would tell nothing else before them all, but after he shewed to Florida what had saue out: who being much abashed thereat, said: Wretch that I am! I cannot chuse but be miserably ashamed, yet I am content, seeing I shall not be reproached of.



of my folly, I reioyce much that the peace is made so well, I onely now desire that this anger were past.

Then the Knight made haste to depart, and to that end embarked himselfe with his daughter, richly apparelled, and well accompanied with Ladies and Gentlewomen (for his wife could not goe thither because she was to attend upon Gridonia and the Princeesse) and being arrived in the Island of Ordane, Primaleon with all the other Knights, went downe to the haven to meete them: and Prince Edward with Primaleon led the Gentlewoman into the Castle, where being entred, she kist the Emperours hand, who did her great honour, and promised her great gifts, for as then he had not any thing to give her, and presently the marriage was celebrated: and although she was not very faire, yet Gorman was content, seeing the Emperour would have it so, as also because she was vertuous. Primaleon made Parente Knight, which done, Gormans pongest sister was given him for his wife, her name was Finee, which the Emperour took to be the fairest of them. In regard of these marriages, and alliances, a great feast was holden, which being ended the Emperour determined to goe to Constantinople, and took shipping and departed with Polendos, Belcar, and the Earle of Sarc, Darnasin, and other worthy Knights, as Garnadace, and Alar pongest sonne to the Lord of the Island of Ordane, and in short time arrived at Constantinople, and the same day that they arrived, the inchaunted bird made exceeding great joy, by which meanes the Emperesse knew that she should heare some good newes, and looking out at the window towards the sea side, shee saw a ship coming, and sent presently to know what they were, but before the messenger got thither, the Emperour landed, with all the rest of his traine, which made her exceeding joyfull, who went into the great hall to receive him, saying to the Knights that were in the Court: Gentlemen, here comes the Emperour: wherewith they went all out to meete him. The Emperesse meeting him, humbly saluted him, and said:



said : Iupiter my Lord , where haue you staied so long ?  
Marnell not sayd hee , for I haue found great matters in  
the place from whence I come . Your sonne Primaleon  
was there , and prince Edward your sonne in lawe , and  
will both be here shortly . Quoth the Emperesse, you bring  
good newes : but why brought you not them along with  
you, lest they should goe else-where ? They will not said  
hee : For hee that made poor sonne keepe so long from  
home, is now in his power ; but let vs sit downe, and I  
will tell you strange things . With that they went into  
the Hall, where while the Emperour put off his Armes,  
the Emperesse receiued Polendos and Belcar , with great  
courtesie . And being all vnarmed , the Emperour tolde  
the Emperesse all the enterprises of her sonne Primaleon,  
and of Prince Edward . The Emperesse was exceedingly  
glad that Florida was returned againe, that she might be  
sent into England . Presently after that, they beganne to  
make preparation for the coming of Gridonia and Florida :  
And the next day the Emperour sent Messengers to  
all his Barons , bidding them to come to the Court in  
rich array . Hee likewise sent word to the King of Hun-  
garia , and to the Emperour of Trince , that wondered  
thereat, intending to send Verno his sonne vnto the feast,  
that the Emperour might make him knight . Duke Le-  
desin likewise prepared himselfe to goe with Verno, to see  
Zerfira his sister, that had bene much grieued for her mis-  
fortune . As soone as Polendos was in Constantinople,  
he caused the Carle of Sarc to goe to fetch his wife Fran-  
celine; and Belcar sent for Alderine his wife.



## CHAP. XXI.

How *Primalcon* and *Prince Edward*, being arrived in the Inclosed Island, were ioyfully receiued, and welcomed by their Ladies : and how *Attaida* was married to *Pride*, which done, they departed to goe to *Constantinople*.



The Emperour being departed from the Island of Ordane, *Primalcon*, *prince Edward*, and all the rest, determined to returne to the inclosed Island, the King of *Lacedemonia* taking so great pleasure in their company, that he said he would goe with them to *Constantinople*, to behold the great magnificence of the feast. *Primalcon* desiring him, that when he was arrived in the inclosed Island, he would intreate *Grinonia* to goe with him to *Lacedemonia*, that he might honour her in his owne Countrey : which he did, that *Grinonia* should thinke that she received that honour in *Lacedemonia*, that should be shewed her in *Constantinople*. The King promised so to doe, and having given his forces leave to goe into their owne Countrey, he sent for all the best knights of his Realme, and caused all things convenient for such a feast to be brought unto him. And when they arrived in the inclosed Island, who can rehearse with what pleasure and joy they were receiued by their Ladies : Every one retiring to their assigned lodgings. *Flerida* asked her lover what entertainment the Emperour gave him. I never held mee bad done any thing that deserved blame, but thinke it rather much to be commended, and if you beare the like opinion, it will be an easie matter for you to appeare before your Father and Mother : and I am well assured, that they will neuer speake of any thing past.

Your advice liketh mee exceeding well, said *Flerida* : and therefore



therefore I will be of a good courage, seeing it can be no otherwile.

Attaida that heard them thus talking, began to weep, and said: Alas poore soule, what shall I doe: how shall I shew my selfe before the Emperesse, that did me so great honour, and I requite her with treason? Gentlewoman said Prince Edward, Say not so: for you were bound to doe as Florida commaunded you, they shall see you so much honoured as you may boldly appeare before them without any shame: for if you will, I will give you to Pride for his wife, who is a valiant knight, as you have scene, and your Father knoweth him well: therefore, seeing you returne with so honourable a husband, they will soone pardon you. The Gentlewoman was exceedingly glad to heare him use those speeches; but she was so bashfull, that she could not speake a word. Prince Edward finding she was content, presently spake unto Pride, and made that match betwene them, to the great contentment of both parties, to whom Prince Edward promised great riches, and tolde Primaleon thereof, who was well pleased therewith, because he loved the Gentlewoman well: and so they were married in that Island, with great ioy. But Gridonia beganne to wax melancholy, saying: Sir knight of the Clowen-Rocke, why say wee so long? You thinke not what displeasure my Mother will take that she can heare no newes of me: Thinke not Madam, said Primaleon, that I remember it not: for I thinke of nothing more, then to keepe my promise with you, and to returne presently unto your Mother, to give some contentment both to you and me: and therefore wee will presently depart from hence. I pray you doe so, quoth she, for I trust that you shall easily vanquish Primaleon, not onely by meanes of your great valour, but also, because I have right on my side. So she passed that day ioyfully, shewing her selfe very merry; and when they were ready to depart, there arrived a hundred and fiftie knights of king Tarucs, that came to attend on him,



132 The third Eooke of the History

who at that time made Gridonia believe, that they should goe first to see his towne of Lacedemonia. Primaleon having intreated him to say so.

The knight of the inclosed Island was so ill, that hee could not goe with them, but promised to follow them when hee found himselfe better at ease, which Prince Edward earnestly intreated him to doe for Maiortes sake. All things being ready, Gridonia and Zerfira entred into a good ship well appoynted: Zerfira being exceeding glad to goe to see the Emperour of Constantinople, and with him Cicile, sister to Purenre, and Fenee his wife, whom Primaleon tooke with them to do some good. In the same ship went Florida, and Arraida, with Primaleon, Prince Edward, and the rest of the knights, their companions: and in the other ship, the Kings knights, with their servants: and so having taken their leaves of the Lady of the Isle, giving her thanks for the honour they had received at her hands, they departed.

CHAP. XXII.

How as they were at Sea, there came a great Bird that carried away *Risden* the Dwarfe, and left him in an Island, whereat *Primaleon* was much grieved, and saide hee would goe finde him out, and what strange and hard Adventures hee had in that voyage.



At the knights went armed, lest they should be assailed at Sea, and so layed in great pleasure all that day, and the next night. The next day, as Primaleon walked with the King upon the hatches, they saw the greatest and most deformed Bird flying in the ayre, that ever was seene, which came right vnto them, and beat so fearefully with her wings, that with the winde shee made, shee seemed to shake the ship, bearing



bearing betwene her clawes a great barrell full of water, which being right over the ship, shee let fall, and burst it, and with that shee lighted downe, and with her clawes seized upon Risdene the dwarfe, and hauing fast holde of him, fled away to the place from whence she came: the dwarfe feeling himselfe bozne away in that sort, cryed out as loude as he could: whereat Primaleon was much grieued, not knowing what to doe, and thought to haue leapt to follow him. But Prince Edward held him, saying; that it was better to goe thither with the ship, and that it was not possible but that the Bird would rest in some place: so which cause they wound their sailes about, and made after the Bird with their ship, which flew so softly that they neuer lost the sight of her, still hearing the voice of the dwarfe, with whom the bird sometimes descended close to the water, as if she would haue drowned him in the Sea, and sodainely againe, shee bare him vp aloft into the aire, which put Primaleon in a great doubt.

Gridonia and Florida came out of their Cabin upon the Hatches to see that strange sight. But that which grieued them most, was, that the water that came out of the vessel that the Bird let fall, stoncke so horribly, that the filthy sauer had spoiled all the fresh water that they had aboard, and all their other provision of viuals, in such manner, that when they went to supper, they found the meate and drinke, both in their owne and the rest of the ships, to be as bitter as gaule, by which means they passed that day, and the next night in great griefe.

The next day they found themselves to be hard by that Island, where they saw the Bird let the dwarfe fall, hard by the Sea side, and after that flew vp so high into the aire, that the Knight presently lost the sight thereof. The dwarfe felt himselfe sore with the fall, and yet was glad he had escaped out of the Birds clawes, and that hee was on land, being in great feare to be drowned, as long as he was bozne in that manner over the Sea: and rising vp, he began in great haste to runne away, and to hide



himselfe among certaine trees, lest the Bird should come againe and seize vpon him.

Primalcon seeing the dwarfe on land, presently caused a boate to be launched forth, that he might goe into the Island, desiring Prince Edward to stay with the Ladies: And being on land, he laced on his Helmet, and mounting vpon a good horse that he had brought with him, with his Lance in his hand, rode the same way where he saw the dwarfe run, and tooke no body with him, thinking to come againe presently: where he sought round about in euery place, calling the dwarfe by his name, that he might come out when he heard his maisters voyce, if hee were hid in any place: but all in vaine, Risdene was farre from thence. Primalcon being entred somewhat within the Island, tooke great pleasure to beholde it, being most pleasant and delightfull: and riding forward, he came to a Fountaine most artificially made, inclosed with foure Asper pillars, cunningly graven, in each of them hauing a Lions head gaping, from whence there issued most cleare and Cristalline water, that fell into the Fountaine: and hard by it, there stood a rich and sumptuous bed, with a baile ouer it, cunningly wrought of silke and gold. Primalcon beholding so many faire and goodly things, as hee thought, he saw a man lying in the bed: for which cause he alighted to aske him in what Countrey hee was, and whether he had scene his dwarfe goe by. And going nere vnto the bed, he saw it was the ill-favouredst old woman that euer was scene, and yet shee had a most fine costly smocke vpon her backe: the old woman seeing him when he began to pull the clothes off from the bed, awaked, and lifting vp her head, said: In an euill houre came you hither, sir Knight, that durst be so bold to vncouer mee: but who brought you hither?

Madame, said Primalcon, it was contrary fortune that drew mee this way, and if I haue displeased you, quoth he, I pray you pardon me, and tell me, if it please you, what place this is, and whether you chaunce not to see a dwarfe passe



passe this way, which I goe to seeke: You haue shewed me  
 so great discourtesie, said the old woman, that I should do  
 an euill dede to make answer to any thing that you de-  
 maund, although I know it: I know well enough where  
 your dwarfe is: but because you haue put mee out of a  
 sound sleepe, I will not tell you. Madame, sayd hee, I  
 pray you tell mee: for, be the place neuer so dangerous  
 where hee is, I will goe and fetch him. You come very  
 boldly hither, quoth she: but I tell you that you haue  
 neede both of strength and courage. I will want neyther  
 of both, said he, to deliuer him: and there is nothing that  
 you shall require at my hands, but I will do it, if you tell  
 me where he is. Seeing you say so, replied the olde wo-  
 man, I will haue thee to put off thy Armes, and thy cloths,  
 and come and lie with me. Madame, said hee, this place  
 is not for me, for I want the best thing of all, where-  
 with to doe that dede, and that is my Lady and Mistresse.  
 A mischief, said the old woman, seeing you will none of  
 me, I will none of you. And saying so, she rose vp, and  
 put on a petticoate imbrodered with golde, and stood vp  
 right vpon her seate, so that Primaleon could not abstaine  
 from laughing: whereat the old woman being offended,  
 said: Doe you mocke me? Although you would intreate  
 me neuer so much, you shall know no other thing of mee.  
 I pray you said Primaleon, delay me not so long, but tell  
 me that I aske you, and I am ready to make you amends  
 for the fault I haue committed. Although I should tell  
 you where the dwarfe that you aske for, is, you are ne-  
 ver the better, said she, if I goe not with you, to shew you  
 him: so he intreated her earnestly to goe. She said, then  
 goe with mee, for this once I am content to satisfie your  
 minde; but you must take mee vp behinde you, for I am  
 so weake that I cannot goe so far on foot.

Primaleon being glad, mounted on his horse, and set  
 her vp behinde him: And as they rode, hee asked her in  
 what Country he was: But when he spake of that, she  
 would not answer him one word. At the last they came



### 136 The third Booke of the History

unto a place, that lay hard by a fine pleasant field, where, in there was many pavilions erected, and before the entry of one of them, there stood divers Knights; and hee thinking that his dwarf was there, went towards them, to know if it were so. But going neere, the Knights parted themselves on either side of him, who with them had divers Gentlewomen in the Tents, amongst the which there was two that were the principallest of all the rest: the one reasonable faire and richly apparrelled; the other, not so faire, but tall of stature, well proportioned, and well to be knowne above all the rest, having a crowne of gold upon her head, all garnished with pretious stones, that shewed as bright as the Sunne, her gowne being embroidered with the like stones: whereat Primaleon wondered, but said nothing: and having staid a while in that manner, one of the Knights that had no armour, but onely a rich Sword, said unto him: Why stay you here to gaze on them that you have nothing to do withall? Look you on the faire young Gentlewoman that you carry behinde you, and let the rest alone. And having said so, he began to laugh, and so did all the rest that were there.

Primaleon seeing himselfe mocked in that sort, fell into a fury, and therewith drew out his Sword, and said: I will make you with a mischiefeseele, said he, what folly you commit to laugh at him that you know not? They seeing him in such a choller, went all into the Gentlewomen's pavillion; and hee that had the rich Sword, stayed at the doore thereof, and said: Stay there (sir Knight) for I will spoile your horse if you come forward. Where with the Gentlewomen began to cry out: and for that cause Primaleon would not enter into the tent, as also because the old woman prayed him to let them alone, saying, that they were fooles, and that hee should not find the thing he sought for there. And with that turning backe againe to passe on their way, the Knight came forth againe, and began to come after Primaleon, who thereupon had gone unto them, but that the old woman would not suffer him:



him : and riding on, they met with two armed Knights, who beholding the old woman sitting behinde Primaleon, began to laugh vnto themselves, one of them saying : See you not what a beautifull gentlewoman this Knight hath with him : Let vs take her from him by force, for we must not leaue her behinde vs, and let vs carry her vnto the Princesse Campore our mistresse, that will take great pleasure to beholde her. And saying so, he tooke the butte end of his Launce, and thrust the olde woman downe from the horse : wherewith the old woman began to crie out as loud as shee could, saying, that she was accursed to goe with a Knight that was not able to defend her, and therewith she rose vp quickly, and began to run thither, from whence the Knights came, saying that she would goe no more with a Knight that had so euill fortune.

These two Knights let the old woman run, and spurred their horses as fast as they could towards the Tents : wherewith Primaleon was abashed, and knew not whether it were best to follow after the Knights, or after the olde woman : at the last, he resolved to goe after her, hoping to finde his dwarf, reseruing the reuenge of the injury receiued by the Knights, till his returne againe. And with that hee began to gallop after the old woman, as fast as hee could, but he could neuer ouer-take her : but at last hee saue her goe into a faire Castle that stood befoze him, where she was no sooner entred, but the gates were shut. And when hee came thither, neither the olde woman, nor any other would come to open the gate, and yet he knocked as loud as hee could. Wherewith halfe desperate, he began to ride about the Castle, to see if hee could finde any other entry ; and (by chance) espied the old woman looking out at a window, and going as neare the Castell wall as he could, he saide : Madame, how could you run so fast that I could neuer ouer-take you : Seeing that to follow you, I did not take to reuenge my selfe of those that mocked vs in the way : but if I finde them as I goe backe againe, I will make them repent their action.

Cet



Get thee hence, base villaine, said the old woman, thou art an vnfortunate cowardly Knight, and hast a heart like a Hare. You say true said he, that I am vnfortunate, but I am no coward, I will not leaue to doe any thing for you that I promised, tell me therefore, I pray you where I may finde my dwarfe. Surely said the old woman, I will neuer doe any thing for thy sake, but onely shew him that, thereby to doe thee the greater despight, and saying so, she hung the dwarfe by the haire out at a window, and said, here is thy dwarfe, but thou shalt neuer haue him: for I will reuenge my selfe on him.

When the Dwarfe saw the Knight his master, he began to weepe and complaine of the mischiefe that they did vnto him: Wherewith Primaleon fell into a rage, and began to vse rayling words against the old woman, saying. O thou old Queene, I thinke verily thou art some infernall spirit, for if thou wert a woman, thou wouldest not doe as thou doest, but if I once lay hands on thee, I will doe that to thee that I neuer meant to doe to any woman. I will see what thou canst doe false Knight, said she: and with that she said vnto her Knights, goe and take him, for I will be reuenged on him, for his great pride: which she had no sooner spoken, but they opened the Castle-gate, and presently there issued about 20. Knights, all well armed, that with great threatinings ran at Primaleon: but he who was of a haughty courage was not amazed thereat, but with his Lance couched in his rest, made towards them: but before he laid hand vpon his sword, he laid flie of them vpon the ground, and after that fought so valiantly, that his aduersaries durst not approach nere vnto him. But let vs leaue him fighting, and speake a little what became of Prince Edward that stayed at sea with the Princesse and Gentlewomen.



## CHAP. XXIII.

How *Prince Edward* determined to goe seeke *Primaleon*, with the *Princesse*, and how they comming to the fountaine of the *Pillars*, great honour was done vnto them.



The *Princesse Florida* seeing her brother goe alone, was much grieved, because she loved him exceeding well: which *Prince Edward* perceiuing, comforted her and *Gridonia*, saying, that they neede not be afrado: yet not being still able to indure to see his Lady so much grieved, he sayd vnto the King and the rest of the knights: Methinkes my Lord, and Gentlemen all, that wee cannot accomplish our voyage as wee would, for although it is no small matter to be seperated one from another in this manner, a worse thing is, that I see, we want victuals, by the misfortune happened vnto vs: and therefore me thinkes it is great danger for vs to stay here, I thinke it best for vs to goe all on land, that I may goe to seeke for the knight of the Cloven-Rocke, and in the meane time you shall search about the Island, to get some meate for these Ladies: and if you can finde sufficient to furnish all your ships, you shall not doe amisse: also goe as peaceably as we can, without quarrelling with those of the Island, and part shall stay to guard the Ladies, and I thinke that you, *Signeur Torques*, *Pride* and *Maiortes*, shall doe well to stay by them, whilst the rest goe to make prouision for vs all: so I doubt not, but I shall soone returne againe with the knight of the Cloven-Rocke.

Every man liking well of his aduise, they all went on land, leauing good guard with their ships. *Prince Edward* that meant not to goe farre, left his companions, and went well armed, and mounted vpon a good horse, first recommending his Lady *Florida* to *Pride* and *Maiortes*.

Curry



140 The third Booke of the History

Euery man was grieved to see Prince Edward goe from them, but aboue all the rest, Florida took it heauily. The King, with the others that stayed behinde at the sea side, determined to goe all together somewhat further into the Island, to finde some place where they might refresh themselves, and so walked along till they came to the fountaine with the Jasper pillars, where in the same place where the rich bed stood, vnder a sumptuous Canopy of gold, there stood two tables on both sides of the fountaine, and behinde them a cupbord richly furnished, with plate of silver and gold, and about them ten gentlewomen, two of them bearing napkins on their shoulders, imbroidered with gold, ready to serue. They two went to Gridonia, and Florida, and after reuerence done vnto them, said: Ladies, you are right hartily welcome, for wee see that you haue great need of ease and refreshing: Gridonia thanked them for their great courtesies, and knew not what to say, she was so abashed, for she feared that there was some deceit or villany therein. The gentlewomen made answer, that they needed not to feare any thing, and taking them by the hands set them downe at the lower Table, and turning vnto the Knights said: My Lords and gentlemen all, you may sit downe at the other table, and for the rest they shal want no place. Gentlewomen said the King, we haue great reason to be ruled by you at this time, and saying so, hee and all the chiefe Knights sat downe, and presently the tables were filled with all kinde of dainty meates, whereon they fed and satisfied themselves, and that which was most to be wondred at, the wine issued out of the pillars at other places then there where the water came forth, so that they wanted nothing, but were as well serued as if they had bene in the Emperours house. The eight gentlewomen waited on the Tables, and the two that bare each of them a golden wand in their hands, commanded the rest what they should doe: after they had eaten what they would, the gentlewomen caused the tables to be taken away, and all the rest of the things, but no man could see who took them



them away, and then there stayed but one gentle-woman  
 alone with them, the other nine going away they knew  
 not how, whereat they wondered. And with that Grido-  
 nia said to her that staid there, Gentle-woman, I pray  
 you, what is become of your companions? I am grieved  
 that they are gone in this sort, for I would gladly have gi-  
 ven them thanks for the great service they did unto us.  
 Madame, quoth she, you must not be grieved, for you  
 shall not goe so soone from hence. You say true, quoth  
 Gridonia, for we must stay for two knights that are here  
 in the Island, can you tell mee no newes of them, or of a  
 dwarse, which is the cause that we are here at this pre-  
 sent time? No, said the gentle woman, but be well as-  
 sured, they shall receive no hurt here, and perswade your  
 selves that they will soone returne againe: in the meane  
 time (my Ladies) be merry, for you shall want nothing,  
 nor yet your Sallers, and those that stay in your ship, for  
 they are provided of all things necessary: which was true,  
 for that as soone as those Lords and Ladies were gone on  
 land, all the provision of victuals that was so stinking, be-  
 came as sweet and as good as ever it was: and the stench  
 which could not be endured, departed, wherewith the  
 Sallers were well pleased. The Princes earnestly desi-  
 red the gentle-woman to tell them in what Island they  
 were: which made answer, That shee had no Commis-  
 sion to tell them any thing, but only, to give them all things  
 necessary. When the King and the rest of the knights un-  
 derstood that, they determined not to goe any further, but  
 to stay there till the two knights came backe againe, and  
 therefore passed that day pleasantly: And if they had a  
 good dinner, their supper was better, and after they had  
 supped, beds were made ready both for the knights and  
 the Ladies, but the knights would not put off their Arms;  
 but caused a watch of twenty knights to be kept, although  
 they had no neede, for no man offered to doe them any  
 wrong.



## CHAP. XXIII.

How *Prince Edward* found *Primaleon* fighting with the Knights, that were forced to flie as soone as hee came thither: and how they got the dwarfe, and so returned to their Ladies againe.



**P**rince Edward being mounted vpon his horse, tooke the same way that *Primaleon* held, and had not ridden farre, but he went out of the way, so that hee neither saw the fountaine nor the tents where the knights and the gentle-women were, and rode a good while without meeting any bodie, of whom he might aske any newes, wondering how so faire and pleasant a Countrey should be so dis-inhabited. At last, looking about him on all sides, he perceined the Castle where the old woman entred, whereof being glad, he was in good hope to heare some newes of that which he desired, and ran thither in great haste; and when hee was almost at it, hee heard the great blowes given in the combat betwene *Primaleon* and the Knights of the Castle. Wherewith he set spurres to his horse, and when he arrived at the place where they fought, he knew his brother, marrelling at his valour: and drawing his sword, went to helpe him, saying, My Lord, I am come to aide you, let none of them escape: And saying so, he laid about him in such sort, that at his arrivall, as soone as the Adversaries saw him, they turned their backs and fled towards the Castle: and because they found the gate open, they ranne hastily in, and Prince Edward after them: And with that the gate was so soone shut againe, that *Primaleon* staid without, weary with the great blowes that he had received, being much displeased that Prince Edward was gone alone into the Castle, cursing his fortune that he got not in with him.

Meane time he sawe a Bull comming towards him, the greatest



greatest and fiercest that ever was seene, that lowed in such  
sozt, that he would hane feared a hardie man.

Primalcon with his launce in his hand ran at him, and  
stroke him on the head, but he cared not for it, but rather  
became more furious, so he killed the horse under him:  
wherewith Primalcon leaped off, and drew his sword, but  
hee prevailed nothing by striking upon him, but found  
himselfe in great danger. The Knight that entred into  
the Castle, neuer stated, untill they were within the pal-  
lace, where Prince Edward could not get in, nor yet could  
see the gate where to goe out againe: And finding him-  
selfe in that perplexitie, he remembered his good sword,  
and swore hee would never leave it till hee came to Con-  
stantinople. At last, perceiuing a Ladder, he went vp, and  
entred into a great palace, but he found no body therein,  
and looking out at a window, he sawe the dwarfe tyed by  
the haire, with a little chaine of yron, and saw Primalcon  
fighting with the Bull, wherewith hee was much amazed,  
saying: What may this meane? and with that hee put  
forth his hand to helpe Rildene, and as soone as he tou-  
ched him, he was unbound, and fell to the ground before  
Prince Edward could lay hold on him, and fell downe vp-  
on the Bulls hoznes, which at the same time stood right  
underneath: by which meanes he left fighting with Pri-  
malcon, and ranne away with the dwarfe as fast as hee  
could. Wherewith Primalcon much grieved, said, what shall  
I doe, seeing I haue no horse to runne after him: yet I  
will follow after, and haue him, or I will die for it.  
And with that, armed and weary as hee was, he ranne  
after: But who can expresse the grieve that Prince Ed-  
ward had: who going downe againe by the Ladder,  
when he was below, he found the Castle gates open, and  
seeing no body, he mounted againe vpon his horse, fol-  
lowing Primalcon; and hauing ouer taken him, he sayd,  
How doe you, my Lord? I thinke you are grievously  
wounded, and that you haue more needs to rest then to  
travell.



144 The third Booke of the History

I were better if I were dead, quoth hee, for as yet I have done nothing worthy of account, saying I could not deliver this unhappy Rildene: and saying that you are on horse backe, spurte on I pray you, and you shall soone over-take the Bull that hath borne away the dwarfe: I am sure he will be recovered by you, for that all good enterprises are reserved for you. Say not so I pray you, replied Prince Edward, for where you faile, it is impossible for me to obtaine any praise. Nevertheless, I will not suffer you thus to goe on foot to deliver the dwarfe: and having said so, he lighted off his horse, and prayed him to get up, but he would not doe it: for which cause he let his horse goe, that he might beare company with Primaleon, and so came to a River, that went crosse through the Island, where they found the Bull swimming over, and was not much sene above the water, the dwarfe cryed as longe as he could for help. Wherewith the Knights were partly glad to have found him againe, and sorrowfull to lose him in that sort.

Primaleon, with the great desire he had to get him againe, thought to swimme after him, but Prince Edward would not suffer him, but drew him backe. Now knowing not what to doe, they cryed to the dwarfe, and bade him leape into the water, and swimme to land, but he durst not. At last (by good fortune) they spied a little boat come towards them, with a gentlewoman in it, who going nere to the Bull, tooke Rildene and put him in her boate, and presently the Bull was no more sene, and the gentle-woman straight turned backe againe. The Knights being very glad that the dwarfe had escaped that danger, earnestly desired the gentle-woman to come to land, but she would not once so much as turne her head about to looke upon them. And in that sort she went on with her boate, the Knights following her along by the River side, untill it was night. The desire they had to recover the dwarfe, was so great, that they felt no paine, nor once remembred that they had not eaten any meate in two dayes.



sayes. But it being darke night, and hauing lost the sight  
 of the boate, they were in a great melancholy, and wan-  
 dering they knew not where, they espied a great light be-  
 fore them in the middle of a wood, wherunto they went,  
 hoping to finde some body there that could tell them some  
 news. When they came thither, where the light was, they  
 found diuers men apparrelled like shepheards, that were  
 making ready supper: wherof being glad, they saluted  
 them courteously, and Prince Edward said vnto them: We  
 are glad that we haue found you here, for we are strange  
 knights, that are come hither by a most wonderfull ad-  
 venture, and know not in what place we are, wherfore  
 we pray you tell vs what Countrey this is, and giue vs  
 some thing to eat, for we are very hungry.

You are but hardly bestead in your demaund, said the  
 shepheards, for we should be right foles to giue you that  
 which we neede our selues. In this Countrey we teach  
 wit to such foles as you are, and therefore returne againe  
 to the place from whence you came, for you get nothing  
 here. So quoth Primaleon, shall I not be reuenged on  
 these villaines? and saying so, hee drew his sword and  
 ran at them, which had their halberts and staves in their  
 hands to defend themselves, and yet went and bid them  
 all amongst the trees. The knights let them goe, and  
 wondering at all that which had hapned vnto them, sup-  
 at their pleasures with that which they found there, and  
 after they had supped, being heauy because they were wea-  
 ry, they laide themselves downe to sleepe amongst the  
 trees: and so soone as Primaleon was asleepe, hee had a  
 pleasant vision, which was, that hee thought he was in  
 Constantinople with Gridonia, and that they were both  
 placed in rich seates, each of them hauing Crownes of  
 gold vpon their heads, and accompanied with a multitude  
 of people that made great ioy to beholde them: and hee  
 thought that Gridonia (being exceeding glad) saide vnto  
 him, my deare Lord Primaleon, I thought I could neuer  
 haue found in my heart to pardon you, but now I haue no



malice againſt you : Such, and the like things which he ſaw in his dreame, made him very glad when he awaked.

Prince Edward dreamed that he ſaw a faire gentlewoman that ſaid unto him, Riſe my Lord, and goe with me, for this place is not for you : and taking him by the hand, led him into a pallace, and laid him in a rich bed, ſaying: My Lord, although it be to the griefe of your Lady Florida, I will ſtay here all this night with you, that you may ioy in that which you haue begot on mee: and he thought that being laid in the bed, ſhe took him by the arme, and with much ioy ſaid unto him: This is not the firſt time I haue had this pleaſure with you, for I tell you that I haue had you many times in mine armes, and becauſe I doe well know, that when you ſhall be out of theſe Countreies, I ſhould neuer ſee you moze, I haue cauſed you to come hither, that you may know that I haue a ſonne by you.

Prince Edward wondered thereat, and thought that it was the ſame gentle-woman by whom he had bin beſore deceiued: and although he remembred his faire Lady Florida, he ceaſed not neuertheleſſe to take his pleaſure of her, being glad to ſee her with child. This dreame made him beleeue, that Pompeide was his ſonne, becauſe it ſounded in the Iſland of Hercania; for that the Lady of the Iſland had made him come into that place, that her daughter might ſee him beſore he returned into England: and that he might bring that noble Lady with her, which Primalcon had ſene in the pavilion.

That which Prince Edward thought to be a dreame, was found to be true, for that he had his pleaſure all that night with the mother of Pompeide, who gaue him a rich Ring, and deſired him to weare it for her ſake, and ſayd, that ſhe had another like unto it, and that by it he ſhould know him that brought him the ſame, to be his ſonne. And in the morning when he awaked, he found the Ring upon his finger, which made him wonder, and ſtedfaſtly beleeue that all which he had dreamed, was true; and then he knew that



that hee was in the Island of Hecania; for the knowledge of that wise Magitian was so great, that she had deprived him of his senses, and yet made him see and seele those things: and when it was day light, he awaked, and found Risdene lying at his feet, apparelled in a rich cloake, whereat being exceeding ioyfull, he awaked Primaleon, that slept still, saying vnto him: Behold, my Lord, what paines we tooke to reconer Risdene, and now hee is here with vs: wherewith the Dwarfie awaked in great feare, and beganne to weepe for ioy, to finde himselfe there with his maister.

Presently after, they determined to returne vnto their ships, and by good fortune found two good horses tied to a tree, with a little hackney, they mounted on them, and went back againe the same way they came the day before. Prince Edward, although he made no shew thereof, rode on much abashed at that which had hapned, knowing wel, by means of the King he had vpon his finger, that he had offended against his Lady Florida, and therefore was ashamed to appeare before her. As they were talking of many things, and Prince Edward saying, hee knew well in what Island they were, at last, they came to the Fountaine where all their company staid. But no man can expresse the great ioy they all had, when they beheld themselves together, specially Gridonia and Florida, to whom the staying of their knights seemed tedious.

#### CHAP. XXV.

Of the great feast that the Lady of the Island made to the Lords, to whom she sent the Princesse *Campore*, that by them she might be ayded and restored to her fathers kingdom, that had bene vsurped by her enemies.



The gentlewomen that used to serue the Ladies at the Fountaine, came presently thither, and having prepared the Tables, as they used to doe, filled them with diuers kindes of dainty meats, with greater honour then they did before, in regard



## 148 The third Booke of the History

of those two Knights that were newly come thither, that late come with the King, and wondered to see those Ladies so diligent to serve them, and such rich furniture there ready prepared. And because that banquet was sumptuouser then the rest, there was musick of divers Instruments heard play before them, but no shew from whence it came, yet with so great melody, as they thought themselves to be in Paradise. After they had dined, they all late downe by the Fountaine, to recreate themselves: and as they were talking of the strange things that they had seene, they saw two gentlewomen come forth of the Fountaine, the one having a Lute, the other a Harpe in their hands, that played so sweetly, that every man was ravished with admiration to heare them: After them there followed five more, richly apparrelled with garlands of flowers about their heads, and holding each other by the hand, danced most branelly, which yielded great contentment to all the company. Which done, they went and made great reverence to Prince Edward, and then returned againe to the place from whence they came: wherewith Primaleon said, My Lord, me thinkes this hath bene onely for your sake, because they made no account of all the rest. They haue done me this honour, quoth Prince Edward, because they know me, for I haue bene here before, and would be very glad to see the Lady of the Island, for she is a very wise Lady. And with that they espied the Bull that had bozne away the Dwarf, that came roaring in a most strange manner, whereat all the gentlewomen were abashed. Wherewith Primaleon and Prince Edward started up and went towards him, with their swords drawn in their hands; but he cared not much for them, but ran round about the field, many knights following him, all well appointed, that began to make diuers strange sports with the Bull: wherein the gentlewomen took great pleasure, and so most part of that day, they saw many strange things to delight them withall, which was all done by the Magician that was Lady of the Island.

When



When their sports were ended, Prince Edward that had no great desire to stay longer there, commanded every man to withdraw themselves into their ships. And as they were ready to depart, there came three gentlewomen unto them, with certaine knights to beare them company, whereof two lighted downe, and the third stayed still upon his horse, that came onely to see Florida, and would not light, not onely because she was with childe, but also for that Prince Edward knew her. One of the other two was princeesse Campore, that Primalcon had seen so gallant and richly apparrelled in the Tent as he rode: and the other was cousin to the Lady of the Island, being a wise gentle-woman. And with them was the knight that stood at the entry of the Tent with the rich sword, who also lighted off his horse.

When Gridonia sawe Campore so richly apparrelled, she rose up to receive and salute her, supposing that she was some great Lady. Florida and Zerfira did the like, and friendly set her amongst them. The princeesse Campore, that could not speak their language, only made reverence, and said nothing: but the other that lighted with her, said: My Lords, and honourable Ladies all, the Lady of the Island desireth you to hold her excused, if you have not bene so honorably entertained as you should be: and you Sir Knight of the Clowen Rocco, thinke it not strange, (as she willed mee to tell you) that she troubled you a little, it was done onely to trie your great valour and hardinesse, and she counts her selfe most happy, to have seen the two chiefeest knights of the world. She complaineth not of Prince Edward, to whom if she have done any service, she is well satisfied and contented: but she complaineth of you, in that having promised her to doe whatsoever she would require, after that you made no account of her: and therefore it is her meaning, that you shall make amends for that fault, by defending this princeesse, which she sendeth unto you, and for whose sake, she hath principally sent mee hither, to recommend her unto you, be-



cause shee is a great Ladie and ought to be succoured by good Knights.

Gentlewoman, said Primalcon, your mistresse did me great displeasure, and yet I will doe for her all whatsoeuer she shall commaund me. But tell me I pray you, said he, who this gentlewoman is, and wherein she hath neede of vs. My Lord; said she, shee is daughter to the King of Pharaz, that had war with the King of Arruben, which is now one of the best Knights liuing amongst the Moores. The father of this Ladie, was slaine in a battell that continued thre daies together, and with him two of his sonnes, which were valiant Knights. King Arrubcu proude and insolent of that victorie, after that went and seized on her fathers kingdome, whereupon the Quene, mother to this prince, perceiving her hard fortune, and being exceeding sorrowfull, determined to send her daughter to Oloric, Soldan of Babylon, to require aide of him, as being her kinsman: and being at Sea with two hundred Knights, Fortune was so contrarie vnto her, that shee staid two moneths at Sea, sailing from one place to another, and at last arrived in this Island, by reason the winde was so great that her ship was cast on shoare, and here broken in peces, and she with this Knight which is her kinsman, saved themselves by the boate, and came to land, in a manner, halfe dead, whom my Lady knowing who she was, receiued courteously, and comforting her, said, that the tempest had cast her vpon her Island for her good, because she should fall into the hands of certaine valiant Knights, that vied to maintaine gentlewomens honours; which she spake in respect of you, my good Lords, knowing, that hauing her in your protection, you will not faile to aide her. And you Maiortes said shee, reioyce and be glad, and thinke your selfe a happy Knight, for this aduenture is reserved for you: for that by your valour, and the aide of these good Knights, you shall reuenge this gentlewoman, and reconer her fathers kingdome for you and her: for this good aduenture shall happen vnto you,  
by



by him that you hold and account to be your lord and master. This is the fortune of this gentlewoman, aide her I pray you, seeing that all those that have made of succour, and have required it at your hands, have obtained the same of you.

CHAP. XXVI.

How the Princesse *Campore* hauing accepted *Maiortes* for her Knight, they embarked themselves, and arriued in *Constantinople*.



**P**rimaleon wondred at those things things that had bene shewed him of the princesse, and Maiortes being glad that it should be his fortune to haue such a Ladie to his wife, fel downe at Prince Edwards and Primaleons feet, and said, Certainly, my Lords, my intent was not to leaue my Lord Prince Edwards service so soone, but seeing Fortune hath sent me such an aduenture, I should doe badly if I should not renenge this princesse, if she will promise me to take mee for her husband. Campore, that had bene informed by the Lady of the Island, of that which should happen vnto her, went vnto Maiortes, and said: I account my selfe happy, that I am to haue you for my Lord and Husband: wherefore I bow vnto you, that I will haue no other husband, but you, if you will take the charge of mine affaires vpon you: for the which, Maiortes gaue her humble thanks, and kissing her hand, he embraced her in his armes.

Then Prince Edward and Primaleon, kissed the Princesse, and after that, Gridonia and Florida did the like, in signe of amity, and specially Zerfira that vnderstoode her well, made great account of her, and calling her misfortunes to minde, wished such aide as the princesse Campore



152 The third Booke of the History

had bled, to whom ( at that time ) she recounted all her troubles : whereat the princeſſe wondered much . Bellager at the ſame time ſpoke vnto her , becauſe ſhe was his couſin by the mothers ſide , and tolde her many things , that cauſed her to reioyce . Torques alſo failed not to comfort her , and to offer his aide and ſeruiſe , in ſuch ſort that ſhee reputed her ſelfe happy to happen into the company of ſo noble knights . And when they were ready to depart , the princeſſe Campore often times kiſſed the gentlewoman that brought her thither , praying her to recommend her moſt humbly vnto the Lady , that had done her ſo great pleaſure : Wherewith the gentlewoman taking her leaue of them all , went away , recommending them to the ſea , and the gentlewoman that had not ſtirred off her houle , ſaid : Lady Florida , how happy be you : in that you deſerue to be beloued of ſo courteous a knight as Prince Edward , and hauing ſaid ſo , they turned their houlſes about , and rode away , accompanied with their knights .

Prince Edward wondered to heare thoſe words , becauſe he knew the gentlewoman , and could not diſſemble the matter ſo well , but that Florida perceived his ſhamefaſtneſſe , which made her doubt ſomewhat , but ſaid nothing as then : He ſawes that the Gentlewoman was big with childe , which made him afterwarde beleue , that Pompeide was his ſonne : And Florida , that knew it had bene done by force of Inchantment , and not by any fault in her husband , eaſily pardoned the treſpaſſe . The gentlewoman being gone , they walked towards their ſhips , and preſently entred into them , though it was night , and with a good winde , ſoone arrived ſafely at the port of Conſtantinople : wherewith King Tarue ſhewing great ſignes of ioy and gladneſſe , ſaid to Gridonia and Florida , Ladies , I may now thinke my ſelfe happy , to ſee you arrived hère at the towne of Lacedemonia , where enery man ſhall be at your command . My Lord , ſaid Primalcon , we are well aſſured of the loue and amity that you beare vnto vs , and therefore it is needleſſe to ſpeake any more thereof ,  
we



We are happy to come to see your great and high estate; but let us not stay long here, for I cannot be at rest until I have accomplished my promise that I made unto my Lady Gridonia.

It is not possible, said the King, that you should depart so soon from hence, wherefore speak no more unto me thereof, for you shall come time enough thither; in the meane time I will goe into the Towne, beseeching you to stay here a while, till I come presently againe. Which he spake, to make shew that he went to prepare all things ready for them, that he might receive them with all the honour he could. Prince Edward tooke Primaleon aside, and said unto him, that he would have him goe into the Towne likewise, to present himselfe unto the Emperour and the Emperesse before they came; but hee would not: but desired him to take Torques with him, and that they should be well advised, not to speake of him in any wise, but should make as though they knew him not. Where- with the King went on shore, accompanied with Torques, and diuers other knights, and ioyfully rode into the towne.

# CHAP. XXVII.

How the King of *Lacedemonia* and *Torques* certified the Emperour of the arriual of the Knights and the Ladies, and what ioy was made in the towne before they entred.



The same day that their fleet arrived at the port of Constantinople, the enchanted Bird made great ioy, by which meanes the Emperour knew that he should heare some good newes: and supposing that the Bird foretold the coming of his sonnes, hee willed the Emperesse to prepare her selfe: for that he thought his sonnes were near Constantinople: and



and presently thereupon, the King of Lacedemonia and Torques, that were knowne, entered into the Towne, whereof Messengers came presently to aduertise the Emperour, that receiued them with great honour, saying: My good friends, what newes doe you bring me of Prince Edward and Primaleon? Good my Lord, quoth they, they are in the haven, and I am come besoze to aduertise you, that we haue made Gridonia belæue, that this is the Towne of Lacedemonia. Primaleon desireth you that his comming may be concealed, vntill conuenient time shall be to discover it. Euery man knowes, quoth the Emperour, what he hath to doe, thanks to the Heauens that they are here, let them come in good time. I belæue that Gridonia wil omit her anger, if she be not a fole, & without vnderstanding, considering the good that the Fates doe for her: And saying so, hee tooke him by the hand, and led him into the Emperesse Chamber, that already had heard thereof, and was ready to receiue him, as ioyfull a woman as euer shee was. The Emperour once againe tolde her all that the King had said, and why he came besoze: wherewith she did great honour to the King, thanking him for the great paines he had taken, and deferred the entry of their children till the next morning, because it was late.

When Gararu vnderstoode of their arrivall, he went presently vnto the Emperour, to salute him, being exceeding glad, not so much for the comming of Primaleon, by which meanes hee should retarne againe into his owne Countrey, as for the loue of Maiortes his brother: And when he vnderstood what had happened vnto him, touching Campore, his ioy redoubled, and he determined to aide his brother in that enterprize. The Quæene sent two rich suites of apparrell, all garnished with pretious stones, vnto Primaleon and Prince Edward, with all other things necessary for their honourable entry into the Towne, and sent the like vnto the two princeesses, all of one fashion and stuffe, the value whereof could hardly be esteemed. The  
Emperour



Emperour likewise caused rich attire to be sent unto the Moorish princesses, specially to Zertira, that he loved as his daughter, for her mothers sake : all which were sent as if they came from King Tarue . Gridonia wondered when she sawe so great riches , and in her minde made great account of the King : in the meane time, the ioy was so great , and the fires so many that were made in the towne, that it seemed as if it had bene on a fire. For which cause , late in the evening , Gridonia went upon the Watches, to see the Towne : and when she had beheld it to be so great and so faire , and heard the ioy that they made therein, she marvelled thereat . What thinke you of this towne, said Primaleon? Behold (Madame) what honour the King doth unto vs : yet truly, quoth she, if I could haue shunned our comming hither , I would willingly haue done it : for I had rather be in Constantino-ple, to make an end of our affaires . My Lord quoth she, if I were certaine that you should haue the victorie of Primaleon, I should be of your mind : but fearing to see you in some great danger , I dare not desire to see that houre. Truly this towne seems to me to be a most noble towne, and we are much bounden to King Tarue , for the great honour he doth unto vs : notwithstanding I intreate you as earnestly as I may , that wee may soone depart from hence , albeit the King be unwilling thereunto . I will doe as it pleaseth you, quoth Primaleon, for our departure is of greater importance to mee then unto you , to giue that contentment and ease unto my heart, that it desireth: and so speaking of many things , they passed the time in that sort untill it was time to goe to rest. The princess Florida (for her part) was so shamefast to shew her selfe to the Emperour and Empresse , that if it had not bene for the comfort that she receiued from her lover, she had happily dyed before morning.



156 The third Booke of the History

CHAP. XXVIII.

How the next day, the Knights and Ladies entered into *Constantinople*, and what honor was there done vnto them.



The next day Primaleon caused Gridonia to be made ready in her rich Robes, that had bene sent out of the towne, where with she seemed so faire, that all men were amazed to behold her: by which meanes, her lover thought in himselfe, that he might boldly present himselfe before the Emperour and the Emperesse, having placed his heart vpon that most beautifull Queene, and being vnable to refraine from speaking, hee said: Madame, nothing grieueth me so much, as the little means and abilitie that I haue, for I would I were Emperour of Constantinople, that I might make you Emperesse: So would I also quoth he, having first slaine him that is to be hereafter Emperour: and certainly, if I were wise, I should not apparrell my selfe in this sort, for that such apparrell becommeth mee not, nor yet is it fit for me at this present, being so farre from my mother, but I doe it onely for the lone of you. I thanke you, sayd he: But I dreame this night, that I was in great danger, for which cause (for that man knoweth not what may happen vnto him) I will ride armed. If it be so, quoth Gridonia, it is better not to goe on shooe: that will I not doe, answered he, for that would seeme an acte of cowardise and of a faint-hearted Knight. And having said so, he put on a rich Armour, but no Helmet, and gaue his shield to Rildene. Prince Edward and Florida were apparrelled in the rich Robes that the Emperesse had sent them.

The Emperesse sent two geldings to the Hauen for Gridonia and Florida, with wonderfull rich trappings, and sent two others richly furnished for the other Moorish princes



princes, forgetting none of the rest, to whom she sent all things necessary. The Knights and Ladies being come out of their ships, they tooke horse, and rode on in good order: and with that the Emperour came to the gate, accompanied with all the Kings and great Princes, and so great a traine, as was wonderfull; the Emperour rode in the middle with King Trace, and the King of Tarue his cousin: and when they were at the gate, they saluted the princes in most loving manner, that as then would not be their duties unto the Emperour, as they would have done, by reason of Gridonia, but made as though they knew not one the other.

Florida was so ashamed when she saw her father, that she thought she should fall downe from off her horse: for, as then they were all horsed, which the Emperour perceived very well, and had such compassion on her in his heart, that the teares came into his eyes. Faire Gridonia marked it not, because she was abashed at the great number of goodly Knights that were there, and said within herselfe; surely, in all the world there is not a greater nor more puissant King then Tarue. When the Emperour beheld her, he was exceeding well pleased, and could not blame his sonne for loving her: for which cause he rode on the one side of her, and the King of Trace on the other side, and so rode into the towne. Great Patagon went before Gridonia, leading the Lion in a chaine: and when Gridonia sawe the Emperour ride beside her, she was of opinion that she never had seene any Knight that deserved more honour then he, and could not refraine to say unto him: My Lord, I pray you tell me who you are, lest in not knowing you, I may chauce to commit an error. Madame, quoth he, you cannot faile therein: for wee are all kinsmen and friends unto the King, whose uncle I am. Florida rode betweene King Tarue, and the King of Esperte, that was no lesse admired for her great beauty then Gridonia. Before her went Primalcon and Prince Edward. Bellager that had a great desire to doe some service to Zer-  
fra,



fira, tooke the reines of her horse in his hand, and Polendos, to honour her, rode beside her, Torques and the great Gataru led the princesse Campore, because Gataru was come thither to salute her, and Maiortes went before her, who shewed himselfe to be very gallant, and well disposed, and yet was at least forty yeares olde. Tirendos and Darnasin rode on either side of Attaida, & in that manner they entred into Constantinople, with so great a noise of Trumpets and other Instruments, that the aire sounded therewith. When they were lighted at the Court gates, therethey found the Emperesse, with the Quene, and all their traine of great Ladies: and if Gridonia was abashed to see such a number of Knights, she was much more astonished to behold so many Ladies & gentlewomen so richly attired: and above all, the beautie of the Emperesse and of Franceline made her most to wonder. The Dutchesse of Paice, who was a Lady of good yeares, went to receive her, saying, Madame, you are right heartily welcome. Gridonia thinking her to be the Quene, mother to king Tarue, did great reverence unto her, and then to the Emperesse that seemed to be the Lady commander of all the rest that were there, who embraced and kissed her with great loue, but it was a wonder to see how she could abstaine from toy, when she sawe Primaleon and Florida her children, who for that time kissed not her hand: and Florida holding downe her countenance, onely made reverence unto her. The Emperesse tooke her in the one hand, and Gridonia in the other, and so went into the Hall, that was all hangd and covered with cloth of golde. Gridonia beholding so faire and sumptuous things knew not what to doe: and when they were all entred, the Emperour sat downe in a rich throne, the King of Tarue on the one side, and Prince Edward on the other, and after them all the other Kings and great Princes, according to their estates and qualities. The Emperesse sat in her seate with all the other Ladies and Gentlewomen, Gridonia and Florida sitting on each side by her.



## CHAP. XXIX.

How *Primaleon* shewed *Gridonia*, who he was, and laid his head in her hand, with a Sword, bidding her doe what she would, but in the end she pardoned him.



When they were all set, they stayed a good while without speaking any word, *Gridonia* still looking about her, and seeing the Emperor sit in so rich a throne, she was much abashed, not knowing what to thinke, by the meanes whereof, sometimes she blushed, and then againe became pale, because she saw that every man beheld her. *Primaleon* perceiuing her to be in that alteration, would deferre the time no longer: soz which cause he rose vp, and willed the *Dwarfe* to giue him his sword, and laying it vpon his necke, presented himselfe vnto *Gridonia* saying: I tolde you in the morning, that this night I dreamt, that I found my selfe to be in great danger, and that therefore I would ride armed, now I tell you that I finde my selfe to be in the greatest danger of all, if you please not to aide me with your grace and fauour. I promised you oftentimes (*Madame*) to giue you the head of *Primaleon* the sonne of the Emperor of Constantinople, now you must know that I am *Primaleon*, and that he whom you see sitting in that stately throne, is the Emperor my father: and shee that holdeth you by the hand, is the Emperesse my mother, and that towne wherein you are, is Constantinople: Now is the time for you to shew, whether the lone you haue shewed me hitherto, be false or true, I am armed as you see, and haue no man to fight withall, nor none against whom I should defend my selfe, but to withstand the anger and malice that you haue conceived against me, and there is nothing else to be done *Madame*, but to yeld my Armes to you, soz that my heart is your prisoner already, and my forces wholly vanquished by the  
bright



160 The third Booke of the History

bright shining beames of your faire eyes : and hauing so said , he kneeled downe to the Emperour, and said : My Lord, I must heere (in your presence) and before all these noble and magnificent princes, keepe my promise made to Gridonia, which was, to put my head into her hands, to doe as it pleaseth her therewith : if peradventure she take not pittie on me, and that she will be so cruell, as to strike it from my shoulders, I pray you not to be offended with her, but pardon her therfore, and send her honourably againe into her owne kingdome, as she deserueth.

At which words, teares fell downe out of the Emperours eyes , and of all the whole company , and no man spake a word, every man being abashed at the great loue he bare vnto Gridonia : and when he had so, he tooke his sword from his necke , and cast it at his Ladies feet , and laying his head in her lap , said : Madame, heere is the sword and head of Primaleon, doe with them what it pleaseth you, for I submit my selfe to your will and desire, if it please you not to pardon me , I forgive you my death , doe what your heart desireth : for I will shew you faire play, and lie quietly, now shew your loue or despight against him that loueth and honoureth you so much.

As soone as Gridonia heard him say that he was Primaleon, the poore Lady became like a dead woman, and hearkening well to the rest of the words that he spake, she was in such an agony, that her body trembled and shaked like a leafe , wherewith the Emperesse tooke great pittie. After Primaleon had made an end of his speech, Gridonia paused a great while before she could utter one word, so great was the paine she felt at her heart , in such manner, that knowing neyther what to doe nor what to say , weeping and lifting vp her eyes to Heauen, she said: O heauens, what strange things are these : haue you permitted that I should be receiued with so great ioy and honour into Constantinople , where all mine Ancestours blood hath bene most cruelly shed , and none is there now left to take reuenge therof : Is it your pleasures I should liue like



like a poore and miserable Gentlewoman, to be deceiued in this manner, and by force to receiue him for my Lord that I held and accounted to be the deadliest enemy that I had, for hauing killed my father: What thou caused me to come hither to be wife vnto him that slew Perrequin de duras my cosyn, when my heart desired nothing more then to take cruell reuenge: O wretch that I am, how can I pardon the death of so many good knights: I know not what counsell to take, and haue no body here, of whom I might aske it. Is not the Quene my mother here, to enforme and shew me what I should doe: truly no, for she is too farre hence, if she knew my misfortune and disgrace, she would die for grieve. Shall I aske counsell of these good knights and great Princes: it were in vaine, because they are all mine enemies, and therefore their counsell would turne to my hurt: What shall I doe then: O how unhappy I am, for that I thinking to be reuenged by the hands of him whom my heart loved so well, finde all his words to be full of falshood and deceit, so that if I will reuenge my Parents deaths, I must become exceeding cruell, and kill him that holdeth my heart prisoner, and doing so, should kill my selfe likewise, and thereby leaue an example of me to all posterity, to be called the most cruell gentlewoman that euer liued in the world: and yet in reason I ought to doe it, and neither pardon him nor my selfe. Ha sir knight of the Clouen-Rocke, why haue you submitted me to the iudgement of so many persons, that will say, if I pardon you, that I did it in regard of your great signorie & estate, and that if I reuenge my selfe on you (as reason requireth) I shall lose the name of pittifull: To the end therefore that I may content every man, therewith nothing to be done, but to die my selfe alone, and rid the world of the most unfortunate Lady that euer was. I must therefore dispatch and make no more delay: and hauing said so, in a great choller she tooke Primaleons sword in her hand, and said, this is the great profit and ioy that I will reape by loosing mine enemy. Primaleon seeing her take the sword, stirred not



not his head from the place where he had laid it, staying to see what she would doe.

The Emperesse that sat hard by her, beholding this tragedy, embraced her and said, good daughter appease your wrath, and seeke not to leese both body and soule together: for if your father died a cruell death, it was his own fault, seeking to doe that which neuer any man had the courage to attempt, and so deserved a thousand deaths. if it had bene possible to haue made him to indure so many: as for the death of Perrequin, it is most certaine that without any cause he came to seeke Primaleon, and it was euidently scene by so many combats fought betwene them, what reason my sonne Primaleon had to kill him, wherefore my deere friend said she, beare the minde of a gentlewoman, & not of a fierce tyrant, remember the great loue that Primaleon beareth vnto you, and what paine he hath indured for the loue of you, which if you will consider of, you shall well perceiue that he hath made sufficient recompence for his fault committed. Take pittie therefore both on him and your selfe: for after things rashly done, repentance insueth, as also that neglecting your loue, you shall leese him for euer. The princeesse Zerfira likewise rose vp, and taking her by the hand, vled so many words vnto her, that with the shame she conceiued for that she intended to doe, her heart fainted, & she looked as if she had bin dead. The Emperesse and Florida beholding her in that case, were exceeding sorrowfull: but when Primaleon, that still lay with his head in her lap, perceiued her to faint, he rose vp in great hast, and soe griened in mind, embraced her in his armes. The Emperour and all that were present knew not what to doe, and the Emperesse crying to the gentlewomen that were about her to fetch her some water, Florida that loued her above all the rest, was the first that rose vp to helpe her; and at that instant there hapned a most strange and wonderfull thing, for that as then there fell a little raine of so sweet and odoriferous water vpon Primaleon and Gridonia, that it comforted the spirits of all those that were in the hall,



hall, which Mozabelin the great Magician, at such time  
 as he came to aide the Emperour, knowing what should  
 happen, and to make his Art manifest to the world, left  
 there by enchantment hanging in a little cloud, from  
 whence in that great extremity, distilled that water like a  
 small raine, which every man apparantly saw. As soone as  
 Gridonia felt that liquoz upon her face, she recovered her  
 senses, and the water was of so great force and vertue,  
 that therewith she was appeased, taking pittie and com-  
 passion upon Primaleon, that she beheld to be in great paine  
 and griefe, for which cause laying all hatred vnder her  
 feete, and to the contrary, lone increasing in her, she said,  
 why did you not suffer me my Lord Primaleon, to rest my  
 selfe from all my miseries; but what say I: the lone that  
 I beare vnto you is so great, that I cannot chuse but sub-  
 mit my selfe wholly vnto you, for I am certainly perswa-  
 ded that the fates hath decreed it so, and your good fortune,  
 which is such, that I thinke there is nothing in the world  
 that can surmount or banquish you, and therefore I par-  
 don you with all my heart, giuing you leane from hence-  
 forth to doe with me what it pleaseth you, for from hence-  
 forth I remaine yours for ever, as I haue told you often-  
 times before. When Primaleon heard her say so, he was  
 exceeding ioyfull and said, Madame, now I esteeme my selfe  
 the happiest man that euer was, seeing I haue found fa-  
 uour at your hands, and seeing that you say you are mine,  
 I am yours likewise while life endureth: and therewith  
 he desired the Emperour, that without further delay, he  
 would command the Archbishop to esponse them present-  
 ly, and so Madame I pray you said he, assure your selfe, that  
 I will liue and die your faithfull friend and husband, while  
 life is lent vs together.



## CHAP. XXX.

How *Primalcon* and *Gridonia* was sodainly married together, and of the ioy that was made in *Constantinople*, and how it was agreed that *Prince Edward* and *Florida* should be married.



The Emperour seeing the peace made betwene *Gridonia* and his sonne, was exceeding glad, and rising vp said, I know not in what sort I should render thanks vnto the Fates for the good issue of these affaires: and therefore my Lord Archbishop said he, I pray you marry them together, that our ioy may be compleat; and therewith the Archbishop rose vp to marry them, and therewith there was heard diuers melodious voyces singing, & many pleasant instruments playing, that filled all the place with great delight: which being somewhat appeased, *Gridonia* kneeling before the Emperour, desired him to giue her his hand that she might kisse it, as his daughter: Wherewith he embraced and kissed her with singular affection. After she had kissed the Emperours hand, she went vnto the Emperesse to doe as much, but the Emperesse kist her mouth, and with that *Florida* rose vp and said vnto her: Madame, now I will embrace you in another sort, for I am *Primalcons* sister, that till this time haue concealed my selfe from you. Oh me said *Gridonia*, how secret and labrill haue you all bene to hide your selues from me? Is it therefore that I loued you so much? After that came the Quene of *Trace*, the Emperours sister, *Franceline*, and all the rest of the Ladies to salute *Gridonia*, and to honour her. And at that present *Primalcon* and *Florida* kist the Emperour and the Emperesse hands, and also *Prince Edward*, though it were by force. Then the Emperour willed *Primalcon* to put off his armour, and when *Riscene* would haue taken his shield,



Shield, he perceived that the Rocks which was wont to be clouen, was ioyned together; whereat being abasht, he said: behold my Lord, how the message that the Knight of the Inclosed Island sent you touching this Shield, proves true, by the ioyning againe of this Rocks that was clouen. Primaleon perceiuing that the Swarte said true, reioyced, and wondering thereat, said, that he would for ever keepe that Shield, that had bene the cause that hee had gotten Gridonia. After they had supped, being most sumptuously serued, euery man withdrew himselfe to his rest, in such places as were richly prepared and appointed for them. Gridonia went with Florida into the chamber where shee was wont to keepe, because it was ready furnished, and the two other Princes had conuenient lodgings, and diuers Gentlewomen appointed to attend on them. The Emperesse accompanied Gridonia and Florida into their chamber, and was so wise, that neither then, nor at any other time after that, she neuer vsed any speeches to her daughter, touching that she had done, but rather shewed her greater loue and kindnesse then before: wherewith Princesse Florida was exceeding glad. After that, the Emperour being in his Chamber with the Emperesse, determined the next day to marry Prince Edward and Florida together, that the feast and ioy might be the greater.

# CHAP. XXXI.

How *Gridonia* complained of *Florida*, because she had so long concealed her selfe to be Sister vnto the Knight of the Clouen Rocks.



When Gridonia and Florida were alone in the chamber, Gridonia said: Madame, I finde it very strange that you so long time concealed your selfe from mee, and neuer would



tell me that you were sister to the knight of the Clouen-  
 Roche (for me thinkes I must still call him so) and saying  
 that Fortune hath brought me hither, I desire nothing  
 more then to forget the enmity that I bare unto you all.  
 Care not for that said Florida, for you will soone forget it,  
 and esteeme your selfe happy that you came hither to so  
 good an end. I thought to haue gone into England, and  
 neuer haue sene my father and mother any more, neuer the-  
 lesse it hath so happened that I am come hither againe  
 with much griefe, and no lesse paine then you felt, to heare  
 that the knight of the Clouen Roche was Primaleon: and  
 yet I did willingly beare that griefe for the loue of my  
 Lord Prince Edward, and will endure much more then that  
 for his sake, if need required. Thinke then what you ought  
 to doe, hauing gotten so valiant a knight as Primaleon,  
 which hath not his equall in all the world: for as for the  
 death of your father and Perrequin, euery man knowes  
 that they themselves were the causes thereof, as the Em-  
 peresse told you: but let vs speake no more thereof, so that  
 the amends hath bene much greater then the error. I  
 will follow your counsell, said Gridonia, and enforce my  
 selfe to forget all, being too happy to haue my Lord Prima-  
 leon for my husband: and falling into other speeches they  
 were so long in such discourse, that it was almost day be-  
 fore they went to bed.

The next morning they apparrelled themselves as rich-  
 ly as they did the day before, for that the feast continued  
 eight dayes after: and Primaleon and Prince Edward  
 went with the Emperour to Church, where they heard  
 Prayers with great solemnity: and thither came the  
 Giant Gataru, that said vnto Prince Edward: My Lord,  
 euery man knoweth, that you haue not onely banquished  
 my pride, but also my bad customes; for that I neuer  
 knew what belonged to shame or honour, vntill such  
 time as I saue you: and finding you to be the most ver-  
 tuous and courteous Knight that euer I beheld, I began  
 to accuse my selfe, and to say, that my much pride and arro-  
 gancy



gancy had vanquished and overcome me, acknowledging my selfe accursed for that which I had done unto you, and with a good will confessing my fault, am content to endure what punishment it shall please you to inflict upon me. My Lord Gataru, quoth Prince Edward, it is not a small thing when knights acknowledge their faults, and they are to be praised when they begin to amend: and (for your part) it is no marvell if you lived without the knowledge or feeling of the vertues that are in other knights, because you dwell in an Island so farre separated from the conuersation of all men. I thanke you for performing your promise, and I thinke my heart told me that you were Maiortes brother, whom I loue so well: My Lord Primaleon is so courteous, that he will gladly pardon you, and I will intreate him so to doe for my sake. I will do more for you then that, my Lord Prince Edward, replied Primaleon: I pardon Gataru with all my heart, and set him at liberty, from henceforth accounting him for my good friend: and with that Gataru kneeled downe to kisse his hand, but Primaleon would not suffer him. Prince Edward thanked him for his great courtesie. The Emperour thought it good to aide Maiortes in his enterprise that he was to take in hand for the princeesse Campore, being grieved that the Knight of the Inclosed Island was not yet come to dis-inchant him. Maiortes for that cause kissed his hand, with thanks for the great honour that hee had shewed him.

That being done, forthwith Primaleon tooke Prince Edward by the hand, and led him into Fleridaes chamber, because hee had not had the leasure to speake at pleasure with Gridonia since he had bene married. And after they had friendly saluted each other, Primaleon said to Gridonia: Madame, I pray you grant me one gift, that I may be perfectly glad, and eased at my heart. And what gift would you haue, said Gridonia? I will tell you, said he: It pleased you yesterday, in presence of the Emperour and many great Lords to pardon me: now I would haue



168 The third Booke of the History

you to forgive me the deceit and subtilty I used in concealing the truth of mine estate from you.

CHAP. XXXII.

How *Prince Edward* was suddenly married to *Florida*, and how the Knight of the Inclosed Island, miraculously appeared in the Hall.



Ridonia seeing her lover so humble, was exceeding ioyful in her heart, and turning to the princeesse Florida, with a cherefull and smiling countenance said: I pray you tell me what knight this is that asketh of me this gift, for if it be the knight of the Clowen Roke, I know him not: For I imagine that knight to beare such a minde, that hee would not hide any thing from me, neither give me any cause of griefe, nor bring me to the place where my heart endured so great paine and torment: What then shall I say of him, but that I verily thinke it is Primaleon? he had so little pity and compassion of me, that I hardly escaped death: how then may I pardon his fained and counterfeited speeches, and had performed promise? Truly I know not how I shall endure to change and alter the love I beare to the knight of the clowen Roke, to give it to Primaleon. Primaleon, that heard her use those speeches, was much abashed, and feared lest they were spoke in good earnest. For which cause hee said unto her: Madame, I pray you suffer mee not to perish with griefe: for I thinke the tongue betreth that which the heart concealeth. Gridonia hearing him say so, was much grieved, and fetching a sigh, cast her armes about his necke, saying: No man can resist that that must be. I pardon you my Lord, for all the displeasure that ever you did to mee: wherewith hee was exceeding ioyfull, to see that all the anger was converted into great love, which continued betwene them while they lived:  
And



And moze assuredly to know Gridoniaes loue, hee prayed his sister to shew him the enchanted Glasse that Prince Edward had giuen her: who taking it out of a case where it lay, gaue it Primaleon in his hand: and withall, taking out the Garland of Hatmond, put it vpon her head, saying: When this Garland was woun, I could not haue aided you in any sort, touching your loue, for that mine heart was maruellously moued with a great affliction towards him that won it. Cruelly sister, quoth Primaleon, you haue good cause to say so, and I blame you not for any thing that euer you did therein, so great is the valour of the knight my brother. Prince Edward was exceeding glad, when hee heard his Lady say so, remembryng the pleasant time they had passed together. Primaleon hauing the Glasse in his hand, beheld his Lady Gridonia therein, that shewed a cherefull countenance, whereby hee knew that shee loued him, and for that cause embraced and kissed her often times, and in that manner they communed together; now one, then another looking in the Glasse.

When dinner time drew nere, they were sent for to come into the Hall, where they sate downe every man in his order, as they did the day before: and after dinner beganne the Reuels, at which time the Emperour called his daughter Florida and Prince Edward, and said vnto them: Seeing we are now heere assembled in great ioy, I will presently haue you espoused together, that my heart may be wholly satisfied and contented, and the feast compleat. At which words the Archbishop rose out of his seate, and sodainely espoused them together: by the meanes whereof, the ioy was so great, that all men thought vpon nothing else, but vpon pleasure and delight. And at night, after supper, as every man debba the sports and pastimes that were made in the hall, suddenly there appeared before them, two wilde men, as big as Gvants, with each of them a shield on his arme, and a great club in his hand, which began so furious a combat, that every man was abashed thereat,



thereat, specially the Ladies which had so great feare, that they had thought to flee out of the hall, if the knights had not staide them. The Emperour, Primalcon, and Prince Edward wondered what it might meane, and therfore stirred not, but took great pleasure to behold them: the two wilde men fought long together, shewing by the handling of their armes, that they had good skill in the science of defence, which was wonderfull to behold: at last one of them gaue so great a blow with his club vpon the other, that he strooke him to the ground, and he was no sooner down, but he became the greatest and most furious serpent that euer was scene. Wherewith euery man was abashd, and many fled out of the Hall, the Gentlewomen clasping their armes about the neckes of them that they loued best; and Vilisarde daughter to Polendos, and Franceline, that was there, with Basilia the Emperours daughter, was in such a feare, that she ran into king Tarues armes, that had beheld her once befoze, iudging her to be exceeding faire, and somewhat to resemble Finée. When he saw her come running vnto him in that manner, he receiued her ioyfully betwene his armes, saying: Feare not Madame, for I will defend you against all the world, and promise you, fixing you come in this sort vnto me, to be your knight for euer. The Emperour that sat nere to them, was glad to heare those words, and said: Marke well the promise that you make vnto this childe, for you must keepe it. What will I doe (said he) and loue her while I liue, if it pleaseth you, and her father. What say you (said the Emperour:) Can you aske me any thing, that I would not willingly grant you: The King thanked him, and said: It is needlesse at this time, to speake any more of that matter: But the young Lady would not goe out of the Kings armes, that held her a good while betwene them. Meane time, the Wilde man and the Serpent fought a most fierce combat, which made a great noyse and rumour to rise in the Hall, amongst the knights that were there, and knew not what to thinke thereof. And as they all beheld the Combat,

sodainely



sodainely the Serpnt banished away, and there was nothing scene, but a Knight apparelled in a rich Cloake, that went towards the Emperour, and kneeling downe befoze him, offered to kisse his hand: but the Emperour that presently knew him to be the Knight of the inclosed Island, rose vp ioyfully to receiue him, and said: You are hartly welcome, I am glad to see you in health. My Lord (said he) I am your humble seruant, and therefore I was by great reason bound to doe something at so great a Feast. At the sight of this Knight, every man began to be quiet and appealed; all men being glad of his comming, specially Maiortes, for the good that he and all his friends hoped to receiue at his hands, which was to be wholly deliuered out of the long enchantment wherein he had liued.

# CHAP. XXXIII.

How *Maiortes* was disinchantred by the Knight of the Inclosed Island, and how diuers *Englishmen* were sent to *Constantinople* from the King of *England*, which were met and receiued by *Primaleon*, *Prince Edward*, and a great number of honourable Knights.



The Emperour caused the Knight of the inclosed Island to be lodged in the Pallace, to honour him the more (for he loued and esteemed him much) and then went to his Chamber, and every man likewise vnto his: Maiortes desired Prince Edward the next day, to sollicite the Knight of the inclosed Island to disinchant him: which he did, and hauing receiued the Booke of the Emperour, gaue it vnto him, wherewith Maiortes lest the Sword, and presently returned into the shape of a Dogge, as he was befoze. When the Knight reading in booke, knew how to disinchant him; and presently Maiortes receiued the shape of a man againe, feeling himselfe



himselfe to be in better disposition then hee was before, when he had the Sword; and for that cause, gaue to the Knight many thanks for the great good that he had done vnto him.

Prince Edward tooke his good Sword, and gaue another rich Sword vnto the Giant: and causing a rich Armour to be made for him, tolde him that he should be furnished of all things necessary for his voyage. Wherewith he kissed his hand, and (as Fortune would) the same day, there arrived at the port of Constantinople, the Duke of Calles, the Duke of Norgales, the Duke of Horelois, and diuers other Barons, and principall Knights of England, sent by the King to conduct his sonne and Florida: for that Iulian the Cardiner departing with his wife and children from the inclosed Island, had so faire a winde, that not long after they arrived in England: where the King hauing receiued Letters from his sonne by him, was exceeding glad, and so was the Quene, and all the Barons of the realme: and much more when they knew his valiant actes, and how he had secretly taken Florida out of the Emperours Court, which pleased the King better then all the other things that he had done, by that meanes being reuenged of the Emperour: and for that as then the Duke of Calles was at the Court, the King appointed him to goe vnto Constantinople, for that it was conuenient for him as then, to shew his magnificence: which the Duke thanked him for, accounting it to be a great fauour shewed vnto him: And presently, all that were appointed to goe with him, prepared themselves. The King did great honour to Iulian, and aduanced him so much, that from that time ever after, hee had no need to digge nor labour in the earth: and so the Duke tooke shipping from England with sundry rich presents for Florida, and with a prosperous winde arrived at Constantinople; at whose arrivall, the Emperour was glad, thinking verily, Vernon sonne to the Emperour Trinde (whom hee daily looked for) had bene come; for whose sake they had deferred



deferred the marriage of Primaleon. But when the Emperour knew that it was the Duke of Cales, he commanded that they should goe out to meete him, and that they should haue lodging appoynted for them. Primaleon seeing that Prince Edward would goe, went with him, and with them diuers great Lords: and coming to the haven, the English Knights being already on land, the three Dukes kissed Prince Edwards hand, who receiued them with a most singular affection; Primaleon doing the like, knowing well, that the Duke of Cales was a man of great account. After that Perides kissed his hand, and shewed him Duke Tolonde, that slept forth to salute him: and for that the duke of Cales had already vnderstoode of the marriage of his sonne, he was well pleased therewith, and reioyced for the same, with the father of his daughter in law. Prince Edward thanked the duke for the paines hee had taken in that voyage; who made him answere, that he would doe much more for him then that. And because they should rest themselves a while, after their long travell at Sea, they would not (as then) bring them before the Emperour, but left them in their lodgings. The dutchesse Bryonelle had already prepared a lodging in her house for the duke of Cales; where Primaleon and Prince Edward left him, and went with their traine vnto the Court.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

How Primaleon at Gridoniaes request, sent a Messenger to the Queene of Appolonie her mother: and how Maiortes and the Princes Campore had leaue to depart.



Who can expresse the ioy and pleasure that Flerida had, when she heard the newes of the arrivall of the English Lords: supposing that as then she should not be reproched for that which shee had done, wondering at the great number of



of rich presents that the King had sent her. The Emperour also was glad thereof, that all the Barons and Princes of Greece might know that his daughter was well and honourably married, and that hee had good reason to forgive her.

The next day, hee appoynted and commaunded, that a great Feast should be made, for the entertainement of the duke; who being come to the Court with all his traine, was honourably received and welcomed by the Emperour, that rose out of his Throne to salute him, saying that hee was glad of his comming. My Lord, quoth the Duke, I have better reason to be glad to see you in so great honour, peace and amitie with your neighbours; and I may account my selfe happy, that it hath pleased the Heavens, that I should come to Constantinople, to see you before I die. And now I must kisse the Emperesse and my Lady Fleridacs hands, and see if my Lord Prince Edward had any iust cause, to suffer and indure so much labour and travell as he hath done for the love of her; but going to the Lady, and viewing her well, he marvelled much at her rare beauty. The Emperesse received him very respectfully, as knowing right well how to entertaine and honour such great persons. The duke bowed his knee before Flerida, and desired that hee might kisse her hand: But shee caused him to rise up, and received him with great honour. Now (said he) my heart is at ease, and well content, to see that it hath pleased Fortune to give my Lord Prince Edward a fit and convenient wife for him. Prince Edward (for his part) was glad to heare the Duke use those words. And whilst the rest of the Lords kissed Fleridacs hand, Attaida went to kisse the duke her father in lawes hand, which joyed much to see her, and was well pleased and contented with the marriage. After that, the Emperour caused the duke to sit downe by him, demanding of him, how the King of England did? The duke making answer with great reverence unto the Emperours demands, delivered the Kings Letters unto him.



Gridonia beholding this great pompe, thought her selfe happy to haue marryed with Primaleon: for which cause (to content and satisfie her minde) she desired Primaleon to write to the Quene her mother, what had passed, that she might be eased of the grieve she had for her absence: and therefore he appoynted Palantine (because she knew him) to go vnto her, willing him to certifie all the knights of the Dutchy of Ormeda, that he had marryed Gridonia: and to that end, wrote vnto Gibber instantly, desiring him to come with the Quene vnto the Court of Constantino-ple, for that instead of Gridonia he would giue him ano-ther Lady: wherewith he should please and content him- selfe: and gaue great presents vnto Palantine, to procure him to goe that voyage, and willed him to haste away with all the speed he could. Gridonia wrote a Letter to the Quene her mother, so full of comfortable speeches, and perswasive reasons, that no man could haue chosen but to let teares fall out of his eyes, to heare it read. The pynesse Campore desiring also to recouer her Kingdome, earnestly prayed Maiortes not to stay any longer in Con-stantinople. Maiortes, that till then, had put her off with faire words, staying till the knights of the inclosed I-land came thither, made answer, that he would presently depart from thence; and speaking with Prince Edward, besought him to giue them leaue to be gone: which he willingly graunted, and gaue them two of the best ships that came out of England, with three hundred of the sixe hundred knights that were sent vnto him. And when the Emperour and Primaleon vnderstood that Maiortes was ready to depart with the pynesse Campore, they gaue him other sixe hundred knights, and certaine ships well appoynted, to ayde him in that enterprise. Bellager per-ceiving that every man ayded him, desired Prince Edward to giue him leaue to goe for his sister Olimba, to the intent he might bring her to the Court, which Prince Edward graunted him. Thus Bellager having taken his leaue of the Emperour, and the rest of the Princes, went vnto the  
hauen



176 The third Booke of the History

hauen to imbarke himsele, Prince Edward bearing him company thither, lamented much to leaue him. And when the Knight of the inclosed Island saue him depart, he said: Bellager, fare thou well, I assure thee that in this voyage thou shalt much increase thine honour and renowne, although now thou depart with great griefe and discontentment.

CHAP. XXXV.

How Bellager arriued at Niquea, and found the Soldan his brother dead, and how he brought his sister to Constantinople: and what passed betweene her, Flerida, and the rest of the Ladies in the Garden, at Constantinople.



Bellager not vnderstanding his meaning, answered, and sayd: Sir Knight, I vnderstand you not; But I assure you, that I am ready to indure whatsoeuer it shall please the Heauens to send me: and so being imbarked, sayled to Niquea, where his brother and sister were wont to remaine. But by the way he vnderstoode, that the Soldan was dead, whereat he grieved, and made haste to be there, finding then, that the words of the Knight of the inclosed Island were true: so a kinsman of one of the Knights that were slayne by prince Edward in the last Soldans Tent (as is before declared) hated the new Soldan so much, as he neuer ceased to seeke and inuent all the meanes he could, to procure his death: and at last (for money) procured one of the Gentlemen of his Chamber to poyson him; and so within two houres after the Soldan had eaten the poyson, he dyd: Whereupon there grew great strife and contention amongst the Knights of that Countrey, because the Soldan left no issue to succede him; and they knew not what was become of Bellager. But the princeesse Olimba being very

wise,



wise, although as then she was very much grieved, pacified them, and with good words desired them to stay a while, saying, that his brother would soone returne againe; wherein they all obeyed her, because she was a wise and a vertuous Princeesse.

Bellager for that cause, made great haste to be at Niquea, with a great traine, being well knowne in the Country: at whose comming the Emperesse was exceeding glad, and all the Knights of the Court reioyced thereat. At his arrivall, his sister received him with great affection: and having lamented the death of their brother, Bellager swore neuer to cease, till he had found out the author of that treason, that he might be revenged on him. And because he was well beloued of every man, and holden to be a very good Knight, he was presently elected Soldan, without any contradiction: And being installed in the same, caused all those that were committed to prison vpon suspicion of the Soldans death, to be racked, by which meanes, the Gentleman to the Chamber, having confessed the truth, the Soldan caused him to be put to a cruell death: but the rest that were consenting thereunto, fled and saved themselves. Bellager presently sent newes thereof vnto Prince Edward, assuring him that he would with all speede be at Constantinople.

Prince Edward was glad to heare of his friends good fortune, and yet grieved to vnderstand of his Brothers death. As soone as the Emperour knew it, he determined (if he could) to marry him with the Princeesse Zerfira, and told Prince Edward thereof, that promised to vs all the meanes he could to procure the same, and he returned the messenger that brought him the newes, to tell him that he would desire him to come with all speed vnto the Court: wherein he had no great neede to intreat him, because his affection was so great towards Prince Edward, that he could not refraine from thence. And having taken order for the affayres of his Countrey, he caused certaine Ships with five hundred Knights, to be prepared, which he sent



to Constantinople: where the Emperour to doe him moze honour, went to meet him, and with Primalcon and all the rest of the Kings and Princes, received him at the gate. Prince Edward that loued the Princesse Olimba well, received her with a thousand welcomes, thanking her hartly for her paines taken to come thither, who after rode into the cite, Prince Edward on the one side of her, and Torques on the other, much abashed to heare her speake so wisely vnto Prince Edward: for which cause, and for that he had heard Prince Edward speake of her, he became exceeding amorous, and thought in himselfe, that he should be happy to haue her for his wife.

And being in the Towne, they left the Soldan in his lodging, Prince Edward taking Olimba with him, that she might accompany Florida, that much desired to see her. Torques at her lighting off her horse, fayled not to be ready, wherefore she gaue him great thanks. Prince Edward perceiuing it, leading Olimba by the hand, said vnto Torques, How like you this Gentlewoman, my Lord? She likes me so well (said he) that I esteeme him happy that shall haue her for his Lady and Mistresse: and for mine owne part (said he) I should neuer be weary to serue her, if she would accept me for her Knight. I will speake vnto her to that purpose (said Prince Edward) for I know she will doe something for my sake, so you will be as good as your word. That I will (said he) and doe all whatsoeuer you shall command me. The Princesse that was wise, and vnderstood their speech, remembred what the great Magician that brought her vp had said vnto her, and was exceeding glad at her heart, so that she could not reframe to aske Prince Edward what Knight that was: Madame (said he) the Knight is called Torques, and is sonne to the King of Rumat and of Grisque, and heire apparant vnto the same, after his fathers death. She said, such a Knight is worthy moze honour then I haue now shewed; but I hope he will pardon me for not knowing him. Prince Edward was glad to heare that the Princesse liked the Knight so.



so well. Florida and Gridonia went to meet her, and with great courtesie led her into the Emperesse, that received her honourably: And after all the Ladies had saluted her, Florida led her into her Chamber, to speake with her about their affaires, and that night she lay with her and Gridonia.

The next day in the morning, they apparelled themselves exceeding richly, to welcome the Soldan: and when they were ready, Olimba said to Florida, Madame, I pray you shew me the Garden that Prince Edward kept, and the trees that he planted; for they are strange things to see, and you should make great account of such Trees as had bene kept and handled by such a Gardener. Florida laughing, said: Madame, I assure you that I loved and esteemed him as much when he was called Iulian, and carried the little Hooke, or cutting knife in his hand, as I doe at this present time, now he is called Prince Edward of England: But let us goe, and I will shew you the place. What (said Gridonia) haue I bene so busie, that I had not the leasure to see this Garden? Florida with a cheerefull countenance led them thither, and being set by the Fountaine, told them saying. Mosthy Ladies, this is the place where I first saw my friend Iulian. Madame (said Olimba) the Garden is very pleasant, and the walks exceeding delightfull, as it was needfull to be so for him that suffered and indured so many amorous passions. This Garden may be called happy, and the Trees that he planted with his owne hands hopesfull, and stayed there, speaking of diuers things, with so great pleasure and contentment, that Gridonia said, she would be there every day. But before they went out, Primaleon and Prince Edward came thither; for he loved Gridonia so well, that he could not be one houre out of her company, if he might. Prince Edward taking great pleasure to thinke vpon the sweet delights, and pleasant life that he had had in that place: after that, they went into the Hall, where the Soldan was already entred; to whom the Emperesse and all the Ladies



180 The third Booke of the History

did great honour, shewing him that they were exceeding glad of the great estate and dignitie wherunto he had attained. And he that before he was made Soldan, was a moorous of the Princesse Zerfira, determined at that time to marry her; and for that cause, shewed her his full intent and meaning: wherewith she was well pleased, and exceeding glad. On the other side, the Emperour stayed onely for the coming of Vernon, sonne to the Emperour Trince, and Frysol King of Hungaria with his wife, to celebrate the marriage of Primaleon.

CHAP. XXXVI.

How *Maiortes* and *Gataru* his brother departed with the Princesse *Campore*, to goe to the kingdome of *Paras*, which the King of *Artuben* held by force, with the taking of the said Kingdome by *Maiortes*.



**M**aiortes hauing sufficient aid, took his leaue of Prince Edward, and after that, of the Emperour and Primaleon, and therewith *Gataru* said to Primaleon: My Lord, you haue shewed me so many courtesies, that I am bounden and beholding vnto you all my life long, assuring you, that to make you know the desire that I haue to doe you seruice, I will honourably nourish and bring vp that which you haue ingendred and begotten, and will tell you nothing else at this present, but onely that you haue paid and well contented me for the seruice that I haue done for you; and the Hand of Cantare may esteeme it selfe happy, that there is some part of you left in it. Primaleon that knew not what he meant, wondred at his words, and said; He would gladly vnderstand his meaning better, for he knew not what he meant. You shall know that (said *Gataru*) when time serueth: and hauing said so, he departed with *Maiortes* and the Princesse



celle Campore, imbarked themselves all in one Ship: but they had not bene long at Sea, but the winde fell contrary, which was for their great good: for that as then they were nere unto the Island of Ilque, which was Maiortes owne countrey, wherof his Brother was Lord (so that as then their father was dead) that had two sonnes who sixe moneths before were made Knights, that were as hardy and baliant Knights as ever any of their kindred had bene; and finding themselves to be so nere unto the Island, they determined to goe see their brother. Those of the Island (seeing that Fiets) were in feare to be invaded and overcome; for which cause, the Gyant Brandion, brother to Maiortes, came all armed, with his sonnes, to the sea side. Maiortes and Gararu went on land without Armes, and asked for Brandion: to whom his two sonnes came and asked them, what they would haue with him? I would gladly see him (said Maiortes) for he is my Brother, and I loue him well. Thanks to the fates (said the young Knights) for your happy arriuall: are not you (said they) Gararu Lord of the Island of Cantarc? He that comes with me (said he) is Lord of that Ile, and I am Maiortes his brother. Brandion comming thither, and hearing that, was exceeding ioyfull, and putting off his Helmet, ranne with open armes to embrace them, saying: Brethren, this is a happy day for me to see you, for I know you well to be my brethren. Brandions sonnes also put off their helmets, and went with great ioy to receiue their Uncles, asking them why they went with so great a force? Maiortes shewed them the occasion: wherof they wondered. and desired them to stay awhile to rest themselves in that Island, which they did, and caused the Prince Campore to land, who was much honoured by the Gyant and his sonnes.

And after they had stayed there foure dayes. they put to sea againe, with a great company of the Knights of the Island, that Brandion gaue them, conducted by Palnerdan his youngest sonne, keeping the cloack by him,



because he felt himselfe to be very old, and gave the Princesse many presents before she departed: and so sayling with a good winde, in short time they arrived at the Kingdome of Paras, where King Artubenthen kept. Having taken the Towne of Paras by force, and slaine divers of the chiefe Townes-men, keeping the Quene prisoner, and by that meanes named himselfe, King of Paras: having a brother called Bassar, that was a good Knight, who not contenting himselfe with that which he had won, sought by his pride to get more, and so went from his brother; by which meanes he found himselfe to be weake of forces when Maiortes arrived there, because his brother had led the greatest part of his men with him: Maiortes arrived at a Towne that lay upon the sea, and assailed it both by sea and land, which within two houres after he toke, and put all his enemies to the sword. The Townes-men were glad of the Princesse comming with so many good Knights, and shewed her all that the King had done, where he was, and in what estate he then stood. Maiortes hearing that, determined to besiege him within the Towne of Paras; and leaving garrison in the place that he had taken, marched forward, all the Townes and Castles that he found in the way, yielding unto him. The Moores being much abashed at the force and valour of his men, and the English-men (that were hardy and well advised in armes) behaved themselves valiantly, and were the cause that Maiortes won great honour in that enterprise.

The King understanding of their comming put a great Garrison into the Towne of Paras, and fortified it as well as he could, and presently sent to his brother, to come with all speede to aide him, which he did, and brought a great power with him. Maiortes arrived at Paras, besieged it, and every day skirmished with the enemy, untill he heard of the comming of Bassar, whereupon Maiortes caused his men to assemble together, and determined to give him battaile, although he had not the fourth part of the forces that his enemies had: and having given charge to Palur-



dan his cousin, with 200 English-men, to stay to guard the  
Princesse Campore, he and Gataru his brother marched  
to meete the enemy: and upon a Thursday in the mor-  
ning, discovering each other, not long after they began a  
fierce and cruell battaile, for Ballar was strong of forces:  
but at the last, Maiortes meeting with him, they ranne so  
furiously together with their Lances, that Maiortes ran  
him cleane through the body, and strooke him dead to the  
ground, which made the rest of the enemies flye, who  
being pursued by Maiortes, made great slaughter of them  
untill night. And while Maiortes won that Battaille, Pa-  
lurdan won the Towne of Paras, by such meanes as you  
shall heare.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

How the King being slaine, and the towne of *Paras* ta-  
ken, the Queene was deliuered out of prison: and  
how *Maiortes* and the *Princesse Campore* was mar-  
ried.



The King knowing of his brothers com-  
ming, and hearing the noise of the fight,  
thought to issue forth to assaile and spoyle  
the Campe that lay by the towne, and to  
take the *Princesse Campore* prisoner; but  
it fell not out as he imagined, for that the  
Giant *Palurdan* was strong and well provided of English  
knights, who seeing the King a good way off from the  
Towne, ranne upon him, and some of them suddenly  
tooke a tower that stood at the gate of the towne; wherein  
they fought right valiantly. They of the towne that hated  
the King, perceiving that, revolted, and beganne to aide  
the English-men, and by that meanes Maiortes over-  
came the enemy in the field; so his cousin toke the towne:  
which Maiortes and Gataru understanding, made no  
more pursue after those that fled, but went to assist  
Palurdan



## 184 The third Booke of the History

Palurdan, and left none of the Kings souldiers, but slew them all.

The towne being taken, they found the Quene (mother to Campore) in prison with her yonger daughter, not knowing who had done her that good to deliver her, and to set her at libertie. With that Maiortes caused the princeesse Campore to present her selfe to her mother, that thought to die with joy, when she beheld her: then the princeesse shewed her what had happened unto her since her departure, and how she had promised that knight to marrie him. Daughter (quoth the Quene) you shall keepe your promise made to this knight, that so valiantly hath behaved himselfe. In the meane time, the giant Gataru staid in the field, to take the spoyle of his enemies, and the very next day after went into the towne, where he received great honour.

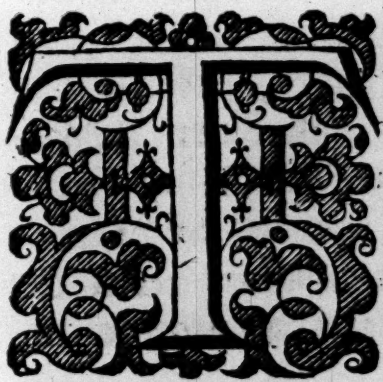
The Quene gave great presents unto Millian an English knight, that had slaine Artuben; and Maiortes gave him many more, when he returned into England. And when all things were pacified, Maiortes married the princeesse Campore, and was made King: Palurdan was married to Campores sister, and swore (before he lay with her) to winne the Realme of Arruben; which he performed, by the meanes and ayde of his uncle Maiortes. Gataru seeing his brother peaceably seated in his kingdome, returned to his Island of Cantare, and the Grecian knights, and those that belonged to the Soldan, returned into their own Countries. Maiortes governed his subjects so well, that he was well beloved of them all: and by the assistance of Palurdan his cousin, conquered and won so many Countries; that when he dyed, he was one of the chiefest princes amongst the Moores, and had two sons by Campore; the eldest being a most valiant knight, who was called Duarden, the great Dog, which surname proceeded from Maiortes, and was alwayes holden among his successors, and yet (to this day) continueth amongst them. And because the princeesse was a Moore, and Maiortes a Pagan, they



they that descended of them, are hithill this day called Pagans. Duarden greatly encreased the kingdome, and won many Countries, to whom his father gave that name, for the loue of Prince Edward, whom every yeare hee honoured with great gifts and presents which hee sent him into England.

## CHAP. XXXVIII.

How the Emperour Trynee sent Vernon his sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople Court : and how hee was receiued and entertained, and the marriage of King Tarne with Vilisarde.



The Emperour Trynee sent his sonne Vernon by Sea to Constantinople, accompanied with a great traine, and Duke Ledefin, accompanied with many Knights, boze Vernon company : and being imbarqued, at last they arriued in Constantinople, where they were honourably receiued of all men, with great ioy and gladnesse. Prince Edward knew not the duke, but when Primalcon had shewed him who he was, hee kindly embraced him, saying vnto Primalcon : My Lord, is this Prince Edward, of whom (while I liue) I shall alwayes haue cause to complaine : It is he (saide Primalcon) and if hee haue offended you, it was against his will; for you know that every man seeks to winne honour when he may : but your sister hath gotten much more then she lost, as you shall shortly see : for, if Fortune hath bereft her of a good husband, she will ere long send to her a better. Vernon kissed the Emperours hand, and then did the like to the Emperesse, who held him long embraced in her armes, with teares in her eyes : being as glad to see him, as if hee had bene her owne sonne, and had a great desire to see the Emperour her brother, whom



186 The third Booke of the History

whom Vernon much resembled. After that, Gridonia and Florida set him betwene them; and he wondered much at their rare beauties.

The princeesse Zerfira tooke exceeding joy to see Ledefin her brother, and to speake with him. The Emperour demanded of Vernon how the Emperour his father, and the Empresse his mother did, and understanding that they were well, and in good health, he caused him to be lodged in the pallace. The joy was great for the coming of that young Prince; and therupon the marriage had bene presently celebrated, but that Gridonia desired the Emperour and Primaleon to stay a while, to see if the Queene her mother would come. In the meane time, the Emperour found the meanes that King Tarue espoused Vilisarde, daughter to Polendos, who gave great thanks to the Emperour, and to Prince Edward, because they were the meanes thereof, in such sort, that from thenceforth he forgot the hatred that he bore him. King Tarue was well content to stay till she was greater, and caused her to be carefully brought up; so that having her in his custodie, he forgot Fincc, and was after farre more joyfull then he used to be.

Prince Edward used such meanes, that the Princeesse Olimba espoused Torques, to whom the Soldan gave many great gifts: and after he procured the marriage betwixt the Soldan and Zerfira. And although those marriages were made after the Moorish manner, yet the feast was great. Ledefin was well contented with his sisters marriage, and she was much more pleased with the same, for that Bellager was a valiant knight, and had rather that he should have her, then the King of India, that dwelt so farre: and for that cause she was well pleased and contented with Prince Edward, to whom from that time forward she bore as great love as she did unto her owne brother.



## CHAP. XXXIX.

How *Palantine* went to the place where *Gibber* was, and after went to the *Queene of Appolonie*, that was much grieued that her Daughter had married with *Primaleon*, but in the end being comforted & perswaded by her Barons; she went to see her Daughter in *Constantinople*.



**P**alantine departing from Constantinople to certifie the *Queene of Appolonie* of her Daughters affayres, had so prosperous a voyage, as in short time he arined in the *Duchie of Ormeda*, where they were sorrowfull and very much grieued for the losse of *Gridonia*: for which cause *Gibber* was almost out of his wits, and thought to goe home againe into his own Island. When *Palantine* arriued there, he deliuered the Letter vnto him, saying: My Lord *Primaleon*, sonne to the Emperour of Constantinople, commendeth himselfe to you, and certifieth you, that *Gridonia* is with him in Constantinople; and that with her owne good will and consent he hath taken her to be his wife, she hauing pardoned him with all her heart, and that he esteemeth and accounteth as much of you as of any Knight in the world, and therefore desireth you to come, with the *Queene of Appollonie*, to see him in Constantinople: lending you word, that instead of *Gridonia* he will giue you another Lady in marriage. What (said *Gibber*, being much abasht) these are strange newes: If that with mine owne eyes I see not that *Gridonia* is agreed and made friends with *Primaleon*, I will neuer beleue it. But why sendeth he for me to be at his wedding, seeing he knoweth me not, and that I haue alwayes bene his mortall enemye? My Lord (said *Palantine*) know that *Primaleon* loveth you well, and you haue seene and spoken with him diuers times, when he caused



## 188 The third Booke of the History

caused him-selfe to be called, the Knight of the Clouen Roche. I haue heard him often times say, that you were the cause to procure him to haue Gridonia, because you spake first of her vnto him: and therefore, to withdraue the anger and hatred that shee had conceived against him, hee hath made her Lady of him selfe, and of all that hee hath: but he could not obtaine her so lightly as you suppose: and with that shewed him from point to point what had hapned.

I assure you, quoth Gibber, I wonder thereat more then euer I did at any other thing, and I know not what to say, but well may they prosper: for mee seemeth that Gridonia hath sped as shee deserved. I complayne of the knight of the Clouen Roche, that hee concealed himselfe so long from mee, and would neuer make mee acquainted with his affaires: But I shall see what amends hee will make mee, and how Gridonia liketh of him. And with that hee caused all the chiefe Knights of the Dutchy of Ormeda to assemble together; vnto whom he declared these newes, and tolde them, that hee would goe into Appolonie, and from thence goe with the Quene to Constantinople, to see Gridonia: and so left a trusty Piere of the Dutchie, to command in his place, and went with Palantine, who arriving in Appolonie, they found the Quene exceeding sorrowfull for the losse of her daughter: to whom she sayd, What is the cause of your coming hither? And you Palantine, what newes doe you bring me from the knight of the Clouen Roche? Can you tell mee no tidings of Gridonia my daughter? Madame (answered Gibber) wee bring you strange newes, which you must arme your selfe with patience to heare. Is my daughter Gridonia alive (said the Quene?) Yea Madam (answered Palantine) and is aduanced to the greatest and highest dignity that euer any gentlewoman had. I come purposely from the knight of the Clouen Roche, to shew you that Gresse your cousin, had forcibly taken your daughter Gridonia, and that hee was slaine by Prince Edward, Prince of England; and that



that so your daughter was delivered out of his hands, and how that after Prince Edward had her, he chanced to meete with the Knight of the Clouen-Rocke, who thinking that he had forcibly taken her away, they two had a cruell combat together: and so shewed all that had passed, as he had declared it to Gibber.

When the Quene heard these newes, she sayd: Oh Heavens, how cometh it to passe that you consented thereto? Is that the way to be reuenged for the death of Nardide my husband? Is my daughter then aduanced to honour, in the place where hee was cut in peeces? Oh wretch that I am! how was I so much blinded, that hauing him in my power, of whom I desired to be reuenged, I could not know him? He said plainly enough that hee was Primaleon; and notwithstanding (daughter Gridonia) you willed mee not to beleue it. Certainly, if I had not borne you in mine owne body, and that I am most-certaine that you are Duke Nardides daughter, I should be in some doubt thereof, seeing you haue so lightly forgiven your fathers death, which you should not haue done for any thing in the world. But what sayd I? The Emperour and his sonnes fortunes are so great, that they obtaine whatsoeuer they desire. Who would ever haue thought that Primaleon had bene of so great courage, to put himselfe into the middle of his enemies? I know not what to say, nor doe, in this case. How can I now goe into Constantinople, but I must die with grieve, when I remember the Dukes death? And on the other side, how can I restraîne from going to see my daughter, and to know from her owne mouth, the certainty of this matter? These newes are worse to me then death; and I know not why the Heavens suffer mee to liue, except it be onely to torment me more from day to day.

Madam (said Gibber) you must now shew the generosity of your heart more then before: and seeing it hath pleased the Heavens that these things should happen thus, you must content your selfe: for although I am hee that hath  
receiued



received great wrong thereby, by means of the love that I beare unto my Lady your daughter, yet I cannot abstaine to tell you true, that there is no fault but it ought to be pardoned, to haue Primaleon to be your sonne, being the most accomplished knight in the whole world. Madame (said the Earle of Masarin) Gibber saith truth: and mee thinkes you should not be so peruerse, as to take things in such sort, that you should not consider what good may happen by such an alliance: So they perswaded her so well at that time, that she forgot part of her griefe, and by Gibbers aduise and his, determined to goe to see her daughter: and leaving the Earle to governe in her absence, imbarqued her selfe, and departed with Rianda her sister, who was a right beautifull Lady (as hath before bene declared) whom Primaleon intended to giue to Gibber, that spake daily unto her being in the ship, and was in loue with her, seeing he had no further hope to obtaine Gridonia. Palantine would not stay any longer for the Quene, but presently departed from thence, to certifie Primaleon and Gridonia, that she was comming to the marriage.

## CHAP. XL.

How *Garnadace* hauing seene *Marinte*, complayned to the Emperour of the wrong that he had done vnto her, and how they were marryed together: and how within foure dayes after *Primaleons* marriage, the Quene of *Polonie* arriued in *Constantinople*.



At before Palantine arriued in Constantinople, the Emperour would haue Primaleon to be married with Gridonia, because there were many knights in the Court, that would gladly retorne home againe vnto their owne houses. And the day



day before the marriage, Vernon desired the Emperour  
 to make him knight, which hee gladly performed, and  
 with as much ioy, as when Primalcon was made knight  
 by King Florendos: King Frisoll of Hungaria, and the  
 duke of Calce put on his Arms, and that night he watched,  
 accompanied with Primalcon, Prince Edward, and diuers  
 other knights, and in the morning the Emperour came  
 into the Chappell with all the Kings, and gaue vnto him  
 the Order of knight-hood, craning of the Heauens that  
 hee might proue as good a King as his father had bene:  
 after he was harnessed, and went into the Hall amongst  
 the knights: At which time, Garnadace (by chance) spied  
 Marnite, brother to Tiredos, who returned but the day  
 before from seeking for Primalcon: and as soone as shee  
 saw him, she came and fell downe at the Emperours feet,  
 saying: My Lord, this knight came by chance in a Ship  
 vnto my Castle, as I stood to take my pleasure at the sea  
 side, to whom (because he was a stranger) I shewed great  
 kindnesse, as long as he stayed there; meane time he made  
 shew, that he loued me with all his heart, abusing me with  
 faire words, and won my heart so to him, that I could not  
 refraine to loue him, and to be deceived by his fained spee-  
 ches, promising neuer to haue other Lady but me, and ne-  
 uer to forsake me: and thinking that he had bene as good a  
 knight as he seemed outwardly to be, I beloued him,  
 and yelded to all that he required at my hands: but at the  
 end of ten dayes, he asked me leaue to goe seeke a certaine  
 knight, and promised mee to returne againe within three  
 moneths after, although he found him not: Whereunto I  
 consented (though it was against my will) and stayed lo-  
 king for him those three months, and two months more,  
 and neuer could set eye on him againe: which displeased  
 mee so much, that I established that rigorous custome in  
 my Castle (which you brake) to be reuenged of as many  
 knights as passed that way, and to see if by that meanes  
 I could recouer him againe: Now therfore that I see him,  
 I pray you take compassion on mee, and demaund of  
 him,



192 The third Booke of the History

him, wherefore hee deceined and betrayed mee in that manner. The Emperour then demanded of the Knight, if it were true. My Lord (replied he) she hath said true. Marinte (sayd the Emperour) you haue done euill therein; you must needs make amends for this fault, by taking her to be your wife, seeing you haue made her such a promise, that ether Knights (by your example) may not be so bolde, to deceine any Ladie in that sort. She is a noble Lady, although she be not of like degré with you; but I will supply that default, and therefore refuse not to doe as I would haue you: otherwise I will not esteeme you for one of my good friends. I had rather die (answered Marinte) then lose your Maesties good will, and would rather take one of much lesse birth and estate then Garnadace is, then to incurre your displeasure. The Emperour thanked him, and caused them presently to be espoused, which was done, for which the Lady oftentimes kissed his hand.

This marriage pleased not the Duke Estoche, nor Tirendos her sonne: but they must beare it patiently, for the Emperours sake, who bled the matter so well betwene them, as they were all content. The Dutchesse, mother to Marinte, tooke her daughter in law with her: and the Emperour caused her Castle and her Land to be restozed vnto her againe, which he had left in the hands of her cousin. The next day Primaleon and Gridonia went to Church together, and were solemnely married in the Emperours Chappell; and after that, were brought into the Hall, where the tables being couered, euery man sate downe according to his degré. The same night, Gridonia was led by three Quæns (two of them sisters to the Emperour, and the third, one of his Aunts) into a chamber, wherein was a rich and sumptuous Bed; and being vnclothed by these Quæns, was layd therein: and after that came Primaleon, who made himselfe vnready, & went to bed; the Quæns going out of the chamber, shut the dore: and when Primaleon sawe himselfe in that manner with his



his friend faire Gridonia, he took her by the arme with the greatest ioy that could be, and said : Madame, it is long time since I desired to haue you thus at my pleasure. My Lord (said she) I thinke my selfe happy, and thanke the fates for granting that I should be beloued of you : and so being exceeding delighted, they accomplished their amorous desires, and she of a most beautifull Maide, was made an exceeding faire Wife. The Emperesse to honour Prince Edward, and to let him know that she had pardoned him, led Florida into a goodly faire Chamber prepared for her, and there left her with Prince Edward ; who was no lesse glad and ioyfull to see themselves together in that place, then Primaleon and Gridonia were, that had neuer bene together before, in that manner.

The next morning, the three Quænes went to helpe Gridonia to make her ready, and the Emperesse made ready her Daughter: and when they were all apparelled they went to heare prayers in the great Church of Constantinople, where the presse of people was so great that came to see them, that they could scarce goe in the Streets, and it was some before they came to the Court againe, they were so long beholding the goodly things that were set vp in the Streets to honour them. The fourth day after, about euening, as all were in the Hall in great pleasure and delight, the Quæne of Appolonie arrived in the Court, when no man looked for her.

# CHAP. XLI.

How the Queene of Appolonie entring into the Pallace, vnderstood how her Daughter had wrought, and pardoned Primaleon, and what Gibber and the Duke of Normandy said.



He Quæne of Appolonie being at sea, with her sister, and others, in short time arrived before Constantinople: and whereas she thought to enter



194 The third Booke of the History

enter the Haven, she espied a great Ship that made towards her, wherein was the Duke of Normandie, called Drapos, one of the best Knights in the world, a man of a goodly proportion of body, and well made, with yellow curled hayre, and a sweet countenance, whose great valour was knowne throughout all France and Germanie: this Duke being very young, & having heard of the great beautie of Gridonia, for whose sake, divers Knights put themselves in great dangers, after the Prince of Fouille his consen had bin vanquished and overcome, he had a great desire to goe see her, thinking thereby to win great honour, if he could doe better then others had done: and for that cause departed from his house with a hundred chosen Knights: but by the way hearing that Gridonia had bene forcibly borne away, he was much grieved, and swore he would never rest till he heard newes of her: so he sayled by and downe the Seas a long time after, and found no Ship but he took it, to know who was in it, and from whence it came: and when he heard no newes of Gridonia, he let them all goe without asking them any thing: and sayling in that manner, made towards Constantinople to heare some newes of Primaleon: and being nere thereunto, he espied the Quenes Ship, whereunto (for the cause aforesaid) he went, and entring all armed with divers of his Knights, he found Gibber without armes, that made no resistance against him, of whom he asked who he was, and whither he went: Gibber that was of a haucie courage, was grieved so soone to tell him that which he demanded, and said: Knight, if I were armed as you are, I would not tell you that you desire to know. The Duke in a great rage and choller, made answer, and said, that hee would know it in despite of him.

The Quene that heard the noyse and contention betwene those armed knight's and Gibber, came out of her Cabbin, and as a woman that had no care of her selfe, said unto the Duke: Knight, what desire you to know: and who



who seek you : When the Duke beheld her, all apparelled in blacke, he wondred : and leauing Gibber (that he held by the collar, to make him by force to tell him that which he desired to know) he turned toward the Quene, and said : Madame, I would know who you are, and whether you goe : I will tell you (said the Quene) I am the vnfortunate Quene of Appolony, Dutchesse of Ormeda, that goe to Constantinople with great griefe, to see my Daughter Gridonia, which (they say) is married to Primaleon the Emperours sonne, and I goe to know if it be true or not. What, (said the Duke) what strange newes is this to me, that Gridonia hath pardoned Primaleon ? Madame, I assure you (said he) I am gladder that I haue found you, then if I were made Lord of all the world, so that it is long time since I left mine owne Countrey, to goe to see you and your faire Daughter, that I might reuenge your quarrell : wherefore if you be not content, and if that this marriage hath bene made by force, I will cause you to haue satisfaction, and in your cause will challenge Primaleon. Who are you (said she) that will expose your selfe to so great a danger : The Duke told her who he was, and what great desire he had vnto Gridonia, as I shewed you before. The Quene that had already heard of the great valour of the Duke, thanked him with all her heart, for the paines that he had taken for the loue of her Daughter, and said : I am going to know the truth of the matter, and if it please you to beare me company, I shall be very glad thereof, that if my daughter should be discontented, you may desie Primaleon, for I hope that the fates will aide you : and so they sailed together, and being arrived at the Haven, the Quene without making her coming knowne, went to land with the Duke, that had nothing but his sword, because he would not shew himselfe armed.

And being on land, the Duke took the Quene by the arme Gibber and Rianda went with them into the towne, that was so full of people, that they could hardly passe through



through the Strates; but that great loy, was more occasion of griefe vnto the Quene, that suspected what it meant: euery one that saw her come in that manner apparelled in blacke, blamed her openly, because at so solemne a Feast of the marriages of Primaleon and Prince Edward, she shewed her selfe in mournefull wise. **O** wretch that I am (said she to the Duke) heare you not these woeful newes: They are grieved to see you (said the Duke,) but let vs goe and know the truth, (said he) for that if your Daughter hath bene constrained thereunto, it is not her fault: And so they went both much grieved, vnto the Emperours Court. Gridonia then being set hard by the Emperesse, with whom Primaleon (sitting vpon her gowne) was talking. And when she saw the Quene come into the Hall, she presently knew that it was her Mother, and being in a manner, out of her wits for loy, she said: **My Lord Primaleon, doe you not see the Quene my Mother?** Primaleon that presently knew her, was abasht, to see her come so vnerpected, thinking that she would not haue come so soone (Palantine being arrived at Constantinople but the day before) he therefore rose vp in great haste, and tooke Gridonia by the hand, that was amazed to see her Mother, and went together to receiue and welcome her.

The Quene was in such a case that she could not sustain her selfe vp without the Dukes ayde: yet with that, she embraced her Daughter, & weeping, said: **Ha Daughter, how light and pleasant are you?** Is it true, that with your good will you haue pardoned the death of your Father, and haue willingly married with Primaleon your mortall enemye? Is this the reward and recompence that those valerous Princes and Knights that are dead for your sake, shall receiue at your hands? I cannot beleue (good Daughter) but that you haue bene forced and constrained thereunto, for I am certaine that you are Daughter to the Duke Nardide, to whom I neuer committed fault in all my life. Gridonia hearing her say so, was in a  
great



great perplexitie, and said. Madame, I pray you for the love you beare unto me, ble not these speeches; for you know well, that I loved the knight of the Clouen-Rocke so intirely, that although he was found to be Primaleon, I could not alter my mind, nor leaue to love him, which made me with all my heart freely, and not by force, to pardon him: for he is so courteous and so kinde, that I neuer received the least grieve or discontentment from him: and therefore I beseech you most humbly, to pardon him your selfe; for I cannot deny, but must needs confesse, that I finde my selfe to be the happiest woman in the world, to haue him for my husband, being well assured that ere it be long, you will say as much, by hauing such a sonne: Remember what he hath done for vs, to recover that which we had lost, and you will easily pardon him.

The Quene beholding Primaleon, felt her selfe overcome with the pittifull words of her Daughter, and looking on her, said. Daughter, for the love I beare unto you there is nothing that I will not gladly doe: and saying so, stretched out her armes unto Primaleon, saying: Seeing your good fortune is such (sonne Primaleon) I will forget all malice, and hold you for my sonne, instead of an enemy that you were unto me: for it is reason that I should pardon you, hauing had you in my power and knew you not: and saying so, she embraced him with great affection, and he kissed her hand, & said: Madam, now I may esteeme my selfe to be happy, seeing you haue pardoned me, and that I see you here in this Court. The Emperour perceiving them to be made friends, was exceeding glad, and so were all the rest; and comming to speake unto the Quene, he said. Madame, you haue done a good deeds to pardon him that was not culpable of that which was imputed unto him: and now, if it please you, I will account you as my sister, and beseech you to pardon me, and thinke not that I am culpable of the death of Duke Nardide, for that he came of himselfe to seeke it, and would



haue slaine me. And when the Quene said, that he should speake no more thereof, he said: you say well, and there with embraced her lovingly. The Emperesse and the rest of the great Ladies taking her amongst them, did her great honour: Meane time Primaleon embraced Gibber, shewing him as great friendship as he could, and said vnto him: Seeing it hath pleased fortune to giue mee that which I deserued not, I will not forget you; for I see her that the heauens hath ordained for you, and with whom you ought to content your selfe. I cannot be better pleased (said he) if it please the heauens to doe me that fauour. I will doe my indeauour therein (said Primaleon.) Now I haue great occasion (my Lord, said Gibber) to pardon you, seeing that you meane to recompence the wrong you haue done vnto me, as I desire. I esteeme my selfe happy (said Primaleon) to haue the meanes to doe any thing that liketh you, and hauing said so, he welcommed Rianda, and all the Gentlewomen that he knew, which all kissed Gridonias hand. Primaleon wondered that he knew not the Duke of Normandie, and knowing not what he should be, said vnto him. Sir Knight, I know you not, for I neuer saw you in the Quene of Appolonies Court; wherefore I pray you tell me who you are, that I may honour you as your state requireth.

The Duke that was so much abashed at the beauty of Gridonia, as also that the peace had bene so easily made betwene them, whereat he raged in his minde, made him answere, and said: It is needlesse that you should know who I am, seeing I cannot now effect that which my heart desired to doe aboue all other things in the world. And what desired you so much (said Primaleon?) My desire was (said he) to fight with you, to reuenge Gridonia, but by hard fortune I am come too late, for I perceiue Gridonia to be content, and is made friends with you, whereat I am displeased; which I tell you plainly, that you may esteeme and account me for your enemy, and that you should not trouble your selfe to doe any honour vnto me,



me, for I make no account thereof. Primaleon was not in any sort moved at his words, but smiling, said unto him. Knight, by the faith that you owe unto your King, and by the thing that you love above all things in the world, tell me who you are: wherewith he freely told him. Which done, Primaleon made answer, and said. I wonder not now (said he) that you have a desire and will to serve this Lady, in regard of that which I have heretofore heard touching your valour: but you must know, that Gridonia was borne onely for me, which am bound to love her better then any other knight in the world: and seeing you are come hither, it were not good that you should returne without doing some honourable act: but to desire me for that which I have lawfully gotten, it were no reason, neverthelesse, to the end that you may satisfie your minde, and for that you should not thinke, that if you had fought with me, you should have overcome me, I will doe you some pleasure, which is (for your sake) to be in a Tourney, and that shall be made to morrow, where neverthelesse I thought not to have bene, there we will meet together, and will not depart, before one of us hath vanquished the other: and by this meanes if you overcome me, you shall satisfie your minde; and if you be overcome, you shall get no more then they, that have had the like folly in their bzaines: which I doe, for that in such Feasts as this is, it is not meet that men should speake of any valiance, but that every one should shew his force and valour in the Tourney: if it please you to accept hereof, I pray you stay here with these good knights, and with my Lady the Queene, in whose company you came.

The Duke wondered at Primaleons great courtesie, and glad of his offer, said My Lord, I should doe ill, if I obeyed you not herein, seeing you make me so gracious an offer; I am therefore content to rest my selfe here, untill the Tourney, so you be one. I promise you (said he) by the love I beare to Gridonia, not to faile therein: and to the end



200 The third Booke of the History

that you shall know me, I will finde you out. Then Primaleon led him and Gibber to the Emperour, and said vnto him: My Lord, here is Gibber, one that I loue and honour much, because I haue often heard of his good and knightly conuersation, and therefore I pray you bid him welcome; which the Emperour did. Primaleon led the Duke to sit betwixne Vernon and Prince Edward, desiring them to honour him, whereunto they willingly assented. But when the Duke vnderstode who they were, hee bled marvellous great reuerence towards them, wondering much, in his minde, to beholde so many and so worthy knights there. The Emperour did earnestly behold him, and was very glad to know him, in regard of the great valour and courage that was in him. Gibber was much abashed to behold the magnificence of the Emperour; and esteemed himselfe nothing in respect of Primaleon, saying that Gridonia had done wisely, to toyne her selfe in marriage with so great a Prince.

CHAP. XLII.

How Primaleon and the Duke of Normandie fought in the Tourney, and how Primaleon ouercame him, and went out of the Tourney, to cause the Duke to be healed of his wounds, by which meanes the aduerse part woone the victory.



At the instance and intreaty of Primaleon, the Quene of Appolonie left off her mourning wades, and put on a rich suite of apparrell, and then the Quene of Hungary, and she knew each other, and spake together of the death of King Tarishe, and of Ordin, and Pontale his cousins, and of the successe of their affaires: and after they had spoken long together, they went into the Hall, where the Quene seeing her daughter set in so stately a seate, was marvellous ioyfull.



fall, and put all griefe from her heart: the same Evening  
 they supped together (as they used to doe) Primaleon set-  
 ting the duke of Normandie by him, with whom he spake  
 of many things: but the duke thought of nothing, but on  
 that which he had to doe the next day. When time came  
 that they should goe to bed, every man withdrew himselfe,  
 the Quene being led into Floridaes chamber, whither all  
 the princesses and gentlewomen bare her company, and be-  
 sed sundry speeches vnto her, to make her merry; but all  
 that was nothing in regard of the pleasure she felt, to be-  
 holde her daughter, whom she loued so well, and that cau-  
 sed her easily to forget her griefes fore-past. Primaleon  
 caused Gibber to be lodged in the Court, for the loue that  
 he bare vnto him. The duke of Normandie wondered at  
 the great honour that Primaleon did vnto him, seeing hee  
 had spoken vnto him in so great choller, and therefore hee  
 wist not whether it came from him of courtesie, or that he  
 did it to winne his loue, as desiring not to fight with him,  
 which he easily perswaded himselfe vnto, he was so proud  
 and arrogant in heart, whereby he had the greater desire  
 to fight, to winne honour, and also to haue Gridonia for  
 his wife, if he chanced to kill his aduersarie: And so soone  
 as it was day, he sent to fetch his Armes, and all other  
 things necessary for the Combat. Primaleon sending him  
 word, that he would desire him to stay till he came him-  
 selfe to conduct him into the Tourney, that they might  
 the better know one the other. When the duke heard that,  
 he waxed the prouder, imagining verily that Primaleon  
 feared him, and that he used all those means to diminish  
 his choller: and therefore he willed the messenger to tell  
 him, that he thanked him heartily for the great honour that  
 he shewed vnto him, and that he sorrowed that he could not  
 abstaine from accomplishing his desire. The Quene of  
 Appolonie being well aware of what had passed betwene  
 them, sent Gibber to the duke that he should refrain from  
 fighting with her sonne in law; and that his Combat was  
 to no end, but to the contrary, might turne to his great de-  
 spite:



202      The third Booke of the History

spite : whereunto he made answer, and sayd : Gibber, goe and tell the Quene, that I am a Knight, and not a Woman, as she is ; and that I will hold my word, without any feare of death. Gibber returning to the Quene, shewed her onely that the Duke would meete with Primaleon in the Tourney.

When the time drew neare, the Emperour and the Emperesse went to beholde the Tourney, and used such meanes that they got the Quene of Appolonie to goe along with them : but they went not that way where the Moore was enchanted in the yron Cage, lest she should call the death of the Duke her husband to remembrance. There was a great number of Knights that were to enter into the Tourney, which were divided equally : and for that Primaleon would be one, Prince Edward also would accompany him ; but he was forced to holde the contrary part against him, because it was the Emperours pleasure ; and so they went both together out of the Pallace, and passed along by the Dukes chamber, who stayed for them, whom they led betwene them, to honour him the more. When they were in the field, Primaleon said unto him, Duke, you shall know me well by my Armes, and when you will, you may finde me out : But I tell you plaine, I will vse no courtesie to you ; but if I can, I will abate your pride, and cause you to acknowledge your great follie. And having said so, hee laced on his Helmet, and went to those that were on his Side : the Duke being much moved at those words. Vernon was with Prince Edward, to whom the Emperour gave a favour in the behalfe of Basile his daughter, that he might weare it in the Tourney, for the love of her ; which he did, intending to give her unto him for his wife : Prince Edward intreated him not to leave his company, lest he might get some hurt, because he was but young. But there was no cause of feare, for he behaved himselfe so valiantly in the Tourney, as he wanne great honour and renowne, and was the first that beganne to runne, and gaue a greed Knight of the Court



Court so great a blow, that he pierced his shield, and  
 threw him to the ground; and before he brake his lance,  
 cast downe two more. Prince Edward took great pleasure  
 to see him so valiant, and stood still till he sawe him take  
 his sword in hand, and then began to enter, and to lay on  
 them that met him. The Duke being in a great choller,  
 followed him, and having a desire to doe some mischief,  
 layd about him without all mercy, thereby shewing his  
 great valour and force, by which he had bene victorious,  
 if it had not bene for Primaleon, Belcar and Polendos,  
 that were on the other side: for that Prince Edward (be-  
 ing before the Emperour) did shew what he could doe,  
 being most wonderfull force and valour. Primaleon on  
 the other side, giving such blowes to them he met with,  
 that no man durst attend his blowes, nor yet assaile him:  
 At which time, the Duke of Normandy taking a great lance  
 out of one of his Pages hands, went to finde out Prima-  
 leon: who seeing him come, looked to himselfe, and met  
 him, saying: Duke, it is now time to effect your will:  
 therefore I say, that lawfully and by good right Gridonia  
 is mine, and that you are not worthy to serve her: And  
 saying so, he couched his lance: the Duke (without ma-  
 king any other answer, did the like: so they met together, in  
 such furious manner that their lances flew in pieces in-  
 to the ayre, and both of them were stuned, but the  
 Duke had the worst hurt: and sitting firmly in their saddles,  
 they laid their hands on their swords, and began to charge  
 one the other with most furious and terrible blowes, and  
 in such manner, that Primaleon neuer found Knight (bu-  
 lesse it were Prince Edward) to be stiffer and hardier then  
 the Duke, whereby he was constrained (as being need-  
 ful for him) to use all his force and valour. All the Knights  
 knew Primaleons minde, and therefore no man kept for-  
 ward to part them. But who can expresse the marvellous  
 griefe Gridonia felt within her heart: and I thinke she  
 had died with feare, if her deare friend and husband had  
 not come to releve her, by giving so great a blow upon the  
 Duke



## 204 The third Booke of the History

dukes helmet, that the buckles thereof brake in pées, and the helmet fell on the horses necke : who feeling him selfe hurt, made so many windings and turnings, that he cast the duke vpon the ground, with such a force that he lay a good while and could not stirre, as if he had bene dead : wherewith Primaleon (albeit weary with fighting) lighted off his horse, and setting the poynt of his sword to his throte, sayd : Duke of Normandie, confesse presently, that you deserue not to serue Gridonia, and that shee is mine, if you will saue your life. The Duke, although (as then) hee had no great cause of feare of death, with griefe and perplexity answered and said : Primaleon, I say hee is my wife, that will fight with thee about this quarrell, and that my folly hath brought mee into this case : wherfore, seeing the Fates will haue it so, I freely confesse that there is no man worthy to enjoy Gridonia but you. I demand no more of you (replied Primaleon) and for this I freely pardon you, and wish you to comfort your selfe, and to think that now you haue been banquished, the wrong that you had on your side is the onely meanes : and so causing him to be borne out of the Tourney, he sent him into the towne, and mounting vpon his horse, rode after him to his lodging to see him dressed, and after that, went to put off his Armes, but came no more into the Tourney.

The Emperour, the Emperesse, Gridonia, and all the rest, were very glad of the happy successe of the Combate : and further the Quene of Appolonie sayd : Surely I wot right well, that it was a great fault in mee, to conet Primaleons death. Gridonia was glad at her very heart, to heare those words uttered, although the greatest pleasure that shee receiued (as then) was to see her Lord and Husband gone out of the Tourney, without any danger. And although Polendos and Belcar, behaved themselves right ballantly, and were on Primaleons side, yet could not they beare away the victory, after Primaleon was once gone : whereof balliant Prince Edward was the cause, who seeing himselfe befoze the Emperour, imployed all his best forces



forces to shew his magnanimittie and prowesse. Pride, that was a good Knight, likewise shewed that he was the Duke of Calles Sonne. There was likewise tenne other English Knights of good account in the Tourney, that behaved themselves balliantly: whose valours the Emperour much commended, and the rest wondred to behold it. Vernon and Ledefin made knowne their valours: by which meanes the Tourney was well maintained on both sides, till in the end Prince Edward caused the adverse parties to cease, and his side remained solely victorious.

CHAP. XLIII.

How *Primaleon* alwaies visited the Duke of *Normandie*, to whom (being healed) he gaue him King *Frisols* Daughter in marriage, and after that, he returned with his Wife into his owne Countrey.



The Emperour returning to the Pallace, met *Primaleon*, that came ioyfully to beare him company, his wounds being already dyed: and with that Prince Edward came with the honour of victorie, whom *Primaleon* embracing, said: I did well to leave the place in good time, for I had never gotten out of the Tourney so good chape. Say not so my Lord (said Prince Edward) for, that they on my side have wonne, it was because you were absent, for otherwise, I, and they both, had bene overthrowne. Sonne (said the Emperour) you have taken great paines this day; but without it, it is impossible to winne commendations. The honour that I have gotten is small, and the labour great (said Prince Edward.) *Primaleon* to shew his great courtesie, every day went to see the Duke of *Normandie*, and caused him to be carefully and well looked vnto: which made the Duke to repent the pride that he had shewed, and besought him to



206 The third Booke of the History

to pardon him, swearing (while he liued) neuer to attempt any thing against him, and said, that he would be his humble and faithfull seruant. And as soone as he was healed of his wounds, he went to see the Emperour, that seemed to shew him but a hard countenance: for which cause, that he might be more bound vnto him, he tooke one of his Consens in marriage, the Daughter of King Frisol, which was a very young, but beautifull Lady, that came thither with the Quene her Mother, and was the first that departed from Constantinople, taking his wife with him, having first receiued great gifts & presents from the Emperour, and of King Frisol, as also of Primaleon, by which meanes he returned well pleased and contented into Normandie, where he was receiued by his friends and subjects with great ioy and gladnesse, and there celebrated his Marriage feast.

The first Sonne that he had by her, he called Frisol, which was one of the valiantest Knights liuing in his time: who having receiued the order of Knight-hood, came into the Emperours Court, where he did diuers valiant acts, and was a great friend to Pomperde, Prince Edwards sonne, although they had fought a cruell battaille together, by meanes of a Gentlewoman that was Daughter to Peruedin Duke of Paras, that in the end married with Frisoll, as it is declared in the following Historie. After the Marriages of Primaleon and Prince Edward, the greatest part of the chiefe Princes departed from Constantinople, and tooke their leaues of the Emperour, the Empresse, and all the rest of the Lords and Princes, that were sorry for their departures.



CHAP. XLIII.

How Prince Edward being returned into England with his faire Lady Florida, was receiued of the King his Father, and the Queene his Mother.



After all they that came to the Feast, were departed from Constantinople, Prince Edward desired leaue of the Emperour to returne into England; which the Emperour granted him, although against his will, and before his departure, gave him many great gifts, as also to the Duke of Calcs, and all the other English-men. Florida was much grieved to leaue the pleasant company of Gridonia, and Primaleon to lose Prince Edward; King Tarue was no lesse grieved, but the Emperour grieved not much, knowing that his daughter could not be better married: with them, he sent diuers of his good knights, and a great number of Gentlewomen, to beare them company: and with them likewise there returned diuers French knights, that Armede had sent to that Feast, because he could not goe thither himselfe. This troupe being departed from Constantinop'le, had the winde contrary, so that the French-men were compelled to goe into England with Prince Edward, who did great things in the voyage. At the last, when they were come vpon the River Thames, the King that still expected their coming, and that meant to receiue them honourably, went to meete them, being exceeding glad of his Sonnes coming.

The Princesse Florida being landed, was led by the Duke of Calcs, and Prince Edward that went before, had no sooner seene his Father, but he fell downe on his knees, and kist his hand: the King embracing him in his armes, said: Sonne, thanks to the heauens, for the saueur shewed me at this time, to see you againe, for I was much grieved.



208 The third Booke of the History

griued for your absence, and had no other comfort during the same, but to heare speaking of your valiant actions; you are therefore heartily welcome, wishing this long and happy daies with thy wife; and then he went to salute Florida, to whom he did as great honour as he could, and she kiss both his and the Quenes hand, that wept for joy that she felt in her heart, to see her sonne returne againe with so great honour. After that, all the Barons and Gentlemen of the Realme came to doe their humble duties vnto Prince Edward and the Lady Florida: and after they had all saluted them, the King tooke Florida by the hand, and led her into the Pallace, Prince Edward bearing the Quene his Mother company. And as they were all in the Hall in great pleasure and delight, Iulian their Gardener and his wife came richly apparilled, to kisse Prince Edwards and the Princesse Floridas hands, that were glad to see them; Prince Edward saying: Iulian my good friend, how like you this Countrey? Well my Lord (said he) for I live here with lesse labour, then I did in Constantinople: I wish all your attempts may prove fortunate, for the good that I haue receiued from your magnificence & liberalitie, in recompence of the small seruice I did you. Hold your peace (said Prince Edward) for you did me great seruice, and I cannot doe so much for you. Then Iulian said, that he esteemed himselfe happy, that his small seruice had bene so acceptable vnto him, and kiss his hand once againe: Arraida did the like vnto them both.

The King esteemed the action of his Sonne in this case to be very great, as having by that means gotten the Princesse, in reuenge of his Ancestors, and therefore said vnto him: Sonne, how glad should I haue bene to haue seen you become a Gardener, when you named your selfe Iulian? for I thinke the paine you indured, was but small, to see so excellent a beauty as your Lady Floridas still before your eyes. Those words pleased Prince Edward well, but Florida was ashamed, which made her beauty  
10



so increate, that Truendos, sonne to the duke of Ortan (that went not to Constantinople with the rest) being then in the Hall, and looking earnestly on Florida, by misfortune was so inflamed with the love of her, in his heart, that although he indeavoured himselfe to expell that fantasie out of his minde, he could by no meanes doe it, so that after he received such a wound thereby, that he was in a manner senselesse, whereas of custome hee used to be ioyous and pleasant: but through that mortall wound, he lost his accustomed ioy, as hopelesse of any reliefe.

All that day was spent in mirth and ioy, but hee was so tormented in his minde, as he could doe nothing else but behold Floridaes beautie; which conceit procured such an alteration in him, that every man marvelled thereat: and when Prince Edward (that made great account of him) sawe him in that state, he spake unto him, and said: Truendos, what is the matter with you, that you are so sad and heavy? I would gladly know the cause, and ease you if I could. At these words hee was ashamed, and doubted lest Prince Edward had perceined his intent, and what molested his heart so much: and therfore making the best countenance that he could, he answered, and sayd: I am certaine (my Lord) that if you could, you would ease me: but no man can ease my griefe. It is long since I have bene thus evill disposed, which is the reason that I went not to Constantinople with the rest. Prince Edward said, that he was very sorry for him, and desired him (for his sake) to force himselfe to be merry againe, and to comfort himselfe. So I will (replied Truendos) and by that meanes he felt some ease of his paine, because he did not then looke upon Florida. But when every man was gone, as he went away, he bliswed her in such sort, and bare the impression of her rare beauty so deeply fixed in his minde, that the whole night he was in extreme paine and griefe, blaming his hard fortune and disgrace, that had induced him to conceive such a thing within his heart. And among divers discourtes he had made unto himselfe, he thought



it expedient for him to leaue and forsake the Court, that he might see Florida no more, & by that meanes release himselfe of griefe, but he could not resolue thereon; for hee was no sooner by, but he went to the Court: and as hee went, was diuers times perswaded by the way, to turne backe againe, saying to himselfe: I am a very foole, that I goe not with all speed farre away from her, that will be the cause of my death: and presently againe he changed his minde. And being prouoked and urged forward by the prouocations of loue, he sayd to himselfe: but what say I: it is better to die beholding her, then to liue farre from her, & so he went forward. And going to the Chappell with the king, Prince Edward askt how he did. Somewhat better then I did (said he) neuerthelesse I know not whether my griefe will increase or diminish: and saying so, he fetcht a sigh, and became (as it were) distraught of his senses: by meanes whereof Prince Edward knew well, that the force of Loue had reduced him to that point, and smiling, sayd vnto him: Truendos, I am in doubt I know your disease: I promise you, now doe I loue and esteeme you better, for that good Knights ought to trie and proue the griefes and anguishes of loue, because without prouing and feeling the rigour, and cruell torments of Cupid, a Knight can neuer attaine to honour and renoune: I would be glad to know your Distresse, that I might moue and solícite her to loue you. My Lord (quoth hee) your conceit is farre from my thought, for it is not that which troubleth me; I feele my selfe sicke, as long since I haue told you. I am well content (said Prince Edward) that you conceale your proceedings, for so ought hee to doe that loueth faithfully. After prayers, the Quene came into the Hall, with the Princesse Florida, that shined as faire as the bright morning Starre, and by more aduenture Truendos sawe her, wherewith his minde was so much perplexed and troubled, as that he lost both force & feeling. Prince Edward, who loued his wife exceeding well, tolde her of many things, and shewed her all his Knights, naming



naming them one after the other, and much commending Truendos vnto her, desiring her to shew him a good and pleasant countenance, and to honour him; wherewith she looked on him: which Truendos perceiuing, said vnto himselfe (his heart within him trembling like a leafe) Oh heauens! what piercing eyes are there? What countenance is this that I beholde? it may be that she hath perceined my grieffe, and taketh compassion on mee, but I am not so fortunate. And all that day he remayned in such an extasie as he will not where he was. After dinner, Prince Edward tooke him by the hand, and going to sit hard by Florida, she said: Madam, behold here the best knight in all England, and for that cause, I promise you, I doe affect him very much; and I intreate you also (for my sake) to loue him. What will I with all my heart (replied she.) Truendos that heard her say so, was very glad, and humbly kissed her hand: wherewith afterward he was so well content and pleased, as if she had had the emperie of all the world giuen him.

## CHAP. XLV.

How at the Tourney that was made for ioy of *Prince Edwards* comming, *Truendos* was victorious, and how being returned vnto the Court, hee died sodainely for the loue of *Florida*.



As they were talking of those that should the next day enter into the Tourney, Florida demaunded of Truendos, if hee would be there? Yea Madame (quoth she) and for the loue of my Lord Prince Edward, I will doe the best that I can, hauing no greater desire then to doe him humble service. Well then (quoth she) we shall see how you will behaue your selfe, for Prince Edward hath said much in commendation of you. Madam (replied he) the great loue he beareth vnto me, hath caused him



## 212 The third Booke of the History

him to doe it; for I know well there is but small valour in me: And saying so, his voice and body trembled in such manner, that Prince Edward wondred thereat, and could not imagine the cause thereof. This speech that Truendos had with the Princesse Florida, inflamed him much more then before, whereby his passions, teares and sighs that issued were such, that returning vnto his lodging, he was constrained to discover it to a Knight that formerly had bene nourished and brought vp with him, and bene made Knights both together, where though they loved like brethren. Aluede (for so he was called) knowing it, wondred thereat, and therefore Truendos said vnto him: Be not abashed to heare it, I pray you, for my forces are weake, and the Princesse Florida's beauty very great, so that whosoever beholdeth her, loseth all reason and iudgement: wherefore if my chaunce be such, that I must die for the loue of her, I am well contented therewith: I know well that I shall die shortly, and that I can not much longer endure the mortall griefe and paine that my poore heart now sustayneth. But I pray you (my good and trusty brother and friend) in regarde of the amitie and friendship that we haue alwayes borne one vnto the other, that after I am dead, you will be the meanes to let Florida know, that shee was the onely cause thereof: and doing so, my soule will ioyfully depart out of my body; for I care not if all the world know my misfortune when I haue ended my dayes. Aluede was very sorrowfull, to see his friend so grievously tormented, and whatsoener hee sayd, he neuer ceased all the night-long to weep, complaine, and sigh, vsing such pittifull and lamentable speeches, that it grieved him that heard him. In the morning hee rose out of his bed exceeding ioyfull, because that day hee was to enter into the Tourney, saying, that hee ought not to complayne of his bad fortune, seeing that Florida her selfe had commaunded him to doe it, as being not able to with a greater good and benefite vnto himselfe, then to doe her humble seruice.

When



When the time of going to the Tourney drew nere,  
 the King, the Quene, and Florida stood in a place to be-  
 hold them; many good Knights entred into the field,  
 where they beganne a furious Combate. The Græcians  
 that came to accompany Florida, and the French-men,  
 wondering thereat, said: That the flower of Chivalry  
 was to be found in England. In this Tourney there was  
 a great number of Knights, but not one that surpassed  
 Truendos in valour, for he behaved himselfe so valiantly  
 before her whom he loved so extremely, that he bare a-  
 way the honour of the Tourney. After they had done,  
 he went unto his lodging to put off his Armour, and  
 clothed himselfe in a very rich suite of apparrell, so goe to  
 the Court, accompanied with many good Knights, where  
 the King did him very much honour. But he was aba-  
 shed, because (in his conceit) he had done too little, and  
 durst not be so bolde as to beholde Florida, but had so much  
 feare of her looke, as his heart beganne to faint. Prince  
 Edward desirous to honour him, tooke him by the hand,  
 and led him in to supper with him, and caused him to  
 sit downe by him, where, at his ease, he might contem-  
 plate and beholde Florida, who sat right over against  
 him, which every day (to his thinking) increased in beau-  
 tie, because she lived at her ease, pleasure, and content-  
 ment. Truendos seeing her sit before him, could eate no  
 meate, as being in an extasie, and (as it were) out of his  
 senses, and therefore she said to him: Truendos, I thinke  
 you had neede to eate some meate, considering the great  
 paines you haue taken this day. Madam (said he) say not  
 so, I pray you, for I haue done no great matter, and for  
 that cause I am so ashamed, as I wot not what to doe, see-  
 ing my Lord Prince Edward doth so much grace me, with-  
 out any desert of mine, the Heavens grant I die not be-  
 fore I performe some better seruice. You shall not die  
 yet, (quoth Florida) the heavens wil not wrong the world,  
 so soon, so deprive it of so worthy a knight. Madam, quoth he,  
 I thinke my life is but short, I feele so much griefe at my  
 heart:



heart : And saying so , he cast forth a great sigh , that it seemed his heart would burst and rend in sunder , changing his colour so , as Florida wondering thereat , looked downwards , and held her peace , as ignorant what it meant : and from that time , Truendos was so penitue , that the cloth being taken away , and prince Edward going to conferre with other knights about that which had passed that day in the Tourney , he went and sat in a corner of the Hall , where he might well behold the beauty that drew his soule out of his body , and there stayed a long time , musing on many things , and especially of his extreame paine , that caused him to die : by the means whereof his anguish and paine beganne to increase so , as at the last , he swooned in beholding the princesse Floridas beauty , and fell on the ground without any feeling , uttering these or the like words. **O** Fortune , how envious and cruell art thou to me : The knights that sat hard by him , seeing him fall , ranne to recover him , and finding him halfe dead , cast water in his face , but all in vaine , for griefe had so closed his heart that he dyed in that place : Prince Edward himselfe holding his head , and every man wondering to see him die in that manner , knew not what to say , nor doe , because they knew not the cause of his death ; nor never had knowne , but by Aluede , who seeing him dead , was so grieved , that being (in a manner) out of his senses , he spake out aloud , and sayd : **O** Truendos , the flower of knight-hood in this world ! why hath Fortune bin so cruell unto thee , & an enemy unto those that loved thee so well : It was thy hard and bad fortune that ever Florida set foote in England , for that her beauty hath bene thy bane , her beauty , I say , hath bereft thee of this life. I am content that all the world shall understand the cause of thy death for two reasons ; one to satisfie thy minde , because thou desiredst me to doe it , that Florida might know that she had bene thy murderer ; the other , to the end that prince Edward may cause me to be put to death for uttering of it : for I am very well contented to beare thy company . **O** miserable



miserable wretch! wherefore couldest thou not refraine from thy disordinate affections, knowing that thou soughtest to betray thy Lord and Master: But cruell Love, that depriveth his subjects both of sense and reason, brought thee into such subjection, as he hath made thee die for love. Oh Lady Florida! why have you betrayed Truendos of life? And you my Lord (sayd he to prince Edward) put mee to death (if it so please you) for speaking thus much: for I see that I cannot live long, now I have lost my best companion and friend: and saying so, he stroke himselfe upon the breast in such fury, that all men miled thereat.

Prince Edward wondred at these things; so did Florida: who being all abashed, and astonied, in great choller, said: Cruelly, if Truendos had such a cogitation, hee was much deceived: for, for all the goods in the world, I would never have betrayed my Lord Prince Edward; and therefore you ought not to mourne for his death, for that in deserving it the Heavens have sent it him, before Prince Edward gave it him; and with greater dishonour. And you Aluede, (sayd she) deserve grievous punishment for the great folly that you have committed. Madame (quoth he) I desire nothing more: for he is not a perfect friend, that participateth not with the paines and griefes of his friend. I would gladly with prince Edward were so minded, to put mee to death: but I am not so fortunate, as so soon after to beare him company in the other world; for then thereby mine heart should receive much ease and contentment. Stay there (sayd Prince Edward) you have spoken too much, in making the cause of Truendos death knowne in this sort; and therefore I command you presently to depart out of the Court, and let mee never see your face more, because of the over-great boldnesse you have now shewed: and seeing that you desire to die, you shall not be put to death. As for Truendos, I willingly forgive him, because he desired rather that he might die, then betray me; nor am I abashed that he named Florida, for that her beauty is so great, that surely he is without a heart that loveth



## 216 The third Booke of the History

treth her not. But carry his body hence, for it pittieeth me to see him dead.

These last words of Prince Edward, were well liked of by every man, and Truendos was carried away to be buried, much lamented of every man for his unfortunate end. Prince Edward to honour him at his death, as he did in his life time, caused a rich Sepulchre to be erected for him, whereon he caused to be fairely engraven, How that Florida, daughter to the Emperour of Constantinople, was the cause of his death. After that, the Græcian knights returned, well pleased and contented by the King, and Prince Edward stayed in England with his wife, and lived a long time with her in great pleasure and delight, loving one the other with great affection, and had many children; but none of them ever attained to the valour that was in Pompeie. Not long after the King dyed, and Prince Edward was crowned King of England, many Kings of England after him bearing that name, because of his great renowne. This King, during his life, alwayes maintained the honour of Knight-hood, and was very beautifull and liberall to many men: for his greatnesse did not in any sort diminish his vertues, but made him more glorious and magnificent.

### CHAP. XLVI.

How the Soldan *Bellager* and *Zerfira* returned vnto *Niquea*, and how *Torques* and *Olimba* went vnto the Kingdome of *Rumate*, and of their entertainment, and how *Vernon* married *Bassile*, and returned into *Germany*.



The Emperour, and all the rest, were very sorry when prince Edward departed from Constantinople; and Primaleon in a long time after, could not be merry: the griefe that the Soldan *Bellager* and *Zerfira* conceived



reined thereat, was great, so that they returned presently to Niquea, where their wedding was celebrated with great pompe. The Soldan had a sonne by Zerfira his wife, called Caloner, the valiantest knight that liued in his time amongst the Moores: and because hee was brought vp in the Emperour Primaleons Court, hee was much tormented with the loue of one of the Emperours daughters, with whose loue hee was so inflamed, as hee would gladly haue bene a Christian, if she would haue loued him: but she was of so stout a stomacke, that whatsoener hee did in honour of her, she would not once bouchsafe him a kinde looke (which Lady was after that, Quene of Hungaria) but hee loued her so well, that long after hee liued unmarried, and would neuer more returne to Constantinople againe.

When the Soldan was gone, Torques asked the Emperour leave to returne into his owne Countrey; which was graunted him both by the Emperour and Primaleon, who gaue him ships to imbarke himselfe therein, with diuers knights to accompany him, and so departed with the princeesse Olimba, and had so fayre winde and weather, as in a short time they arrived in the kingdome of Rumat. where they found King Toman, who was maruellous glad of their comming, because while Torques was out of his kingdome, he was in great perill to lose him; or else, that for the loue of the Emperour and his sonne, hee would become a Christian: and seeing him returne with so great honour, and so goodly a Lady to his wife, hee received him with the greatest ioy that could be imagined: and liked well of the princeesse Olimba, she finding her selfe better content, to see that she had gotten so brave a knight to her husband: so that in short time there came diuers princes to honour them at their wedding, who were glad to haue such a Lady to be their Quene.

After the Feast was ended, Torques sent Duke Ledefins and Zerfira's letters to the Soldan of Persia their father (the messenger, telling the Soldan all that had passed:) he knew



knew well that Ledefin was become a Christian; but he had heard no newes of Zerfira, and thought verily that she had bene drowned in the Sea, and was exceeding glad when he heard she was so honourably married, and gaue many thanks to the Emperour, for that which he had done for his children: and in all the haste that convenient, ly might be, dispatched Embassadors vnto him, with diuers rich presents, and did the like to the Soldan Bellager: but he was as much displeased, to heare that Ledefin had bene baptized, as hee was possessed with ioy to vnderstand that Zerfira was so highly married; and for that cause he sent him nothing, nor would he acknowledge him for his sonne. He also sent great gifts to Torques, of whom he made great account, because he had heard much good of him.

King Toman sent the Soldan of Niquea's Knights, that came with Torques, backe againe, and gaue them many rich presents: and sent the Emperour many strange things out of his Countrey. Torques liued in great pleasure, and had many children by Olimba, that came to be renowned Knights, and did many great feats of Armes. Primaleon liued very solitarily, after the departure of so many good Knights, and if it had not bene that hee loved Gridonia exceeding well, he would not haue liued in that sort alone, but would rather haue gone to seeke strange adventures abroad in the world; and therefore he would not suffer Vernon to returne sodainely into Germany, who while hee was in the Emperours Court, married Basile, for whose sake, and because he was a knight of great account, the Emperour made diuers Feasts and Tournyes. Vernon loved Basile his wife so well, that there was no enterprize whatsoeuer but he would undertake it for the loue of her: and vntill that Basile was come to full yeares, hee would not returne againe into Germany. At which time, the Emperour sent him home with great honour, such as belonged vnto him. The Emperour Trinee his father receiving him with great ioy and gladnesse, because hee loved him



him well, for he was become a balliant knight : and after the death of Trince his father, he was made Emperour, because hee was wel-beloned, as also in regarde of diuers good parts and qualities that were in him : and by means thereof all the Emperour Palurdines daughters were well and honourably married : even so was Polendos daughter, that was married to King Tarue, who after Prince Edwards departure, would stay no longer in the Emperours Court, but presently returned with his wife into his owne Countrey ; to whom the Emperour (at his departure) gave great gifts and presents : and arriving in Lacedemonia, was honourably received by the Quene his mother, and his sister Padrite ; who with great care brought up the young Quene, untill such time as she waxed great : And the King loved her so well, because of her rare beauty, as he quite forgot Trince. And when the wedding was ready to be celebrated, King Polendos, with diuers great Barons of the Emperours Court, went thither, where they held a royall feast. King Tarue after that, had issue two daughters ; the eldest whereof was so faire and beautifull, that (in her time), there was not her equall to be found throughout the whole world : & for the loue of her, many balliant knights resorted to her fathers Court, and thereby much increased and augmented his honour and estate.

## CHAP. XLVII.

How *Gibber* married *Rianda*, and was made gouernour of the Dutchy of *Ormeda*, and how *Primaleons* foure sons were valiant knights, whereof the youngest was called *Plator*, that did many valiant feates of Armes, for the loue of *Sibelle*, daughter to the King of *Lacedemonia*.

**A**ll the great Princes being departed from the Court of Constantinople, Primaleon remembered *Gibber*, and wrought such meanes that hee married him with *Rianda* : and at theyr  
wed,



220 The third Booke of the History

wedding, there was a great feast holden, wherewith Gibber was well pleased. The Quene of Appolonie loued her Daughter so well that she would not leaue her, but desired Primaleon to lend a Knight, in his behalfe, that with the Carle might gouerne the Kingdome. Primaleon by Gridonia had foure Sonnes, that were all good Knights. The first was Emperour of Constantinople after his Father: the second was King of Appolonie: the third Duke of Dymede: the fourth King of Lacedemonia, so that by his great valour and knightly prowesse, he married Sibelle, daughter to King Tarue, that was an exceeding faire and beautifull Lady. This yongest Sonne to Primaleon, was called Plator, and was as good a Knight as ever his grandfather Palmerin was, who hauing attained to the age of 18. yeres, was made Knight, and departed secretly from the Emperour his fathers Court, with one Squire onely, and first went into Lacedemonia, to see Sibelle, of whose beauty he had heard so great a report: where he found that Tifant, King of Argos, had ordained a Tourney, for the loue of Sibelle, which he desired to marry, but because he was an ill-fauoured and proud Knight, he cared not for him. Plator knowing that, was exceeding glad, and determining not to make himselfe knowne, lodged among the rest of the Knights: and many Tents being set vp by diuers strange Knights, that were come thither to the feast, he would not enter into the Towne, before he had bene there sixe daies, which was S. Iohn Baptists day, for that as then the Tourney was to be holden. At which time the King, with the Quene, and their faire Daughter, so richly apparrelled that euery man wondred at her, came into the field: and for that they passed hard by Plator, he might behold her at his pleasure, that seemed vnto him, to be the beautifullest Lady in the world, with whose loue he was from that time so inflamed, that it continued in him during his life.

The Tourney beginning, he put on a most rich white armour, and entred into the field, where he met a Knight  
with



with so great a force, that he threw him to the ground sore wounded, and before he brake his Lance, he cast downe five knights more, doing so valorously in armes, that the King and all the company wondered thereat, and could not imagine who he was, because they had not scene him before: and to conclude, there entered not a good knight into the field, but he was overthrowne by Plator. Tisant that rode in great pride about the field, perceiving that knight onely to doe great wrong, as he thought, unto his knights, took a Lance in his hand and ran to meet him: which Plator perceiving, did the like, and sent him to the ground in a bad case, and at last, by his valour and force, won the honour of the Tourney, and seeing that all was done, he returned unto his pavilion: for that a knight of Lacedemonia perceiving him to be so faire and courteous a knight, had entertained him into his Tent.

The King that desired to know him, mounted on his horse, and went in all haste to finde him out as he put off his armes and beholding him, thought that he saw the Emperour Palmerin, because he resembled him much. The King desired him to tell him who he was, and prayed him to goe with him unto his Pallace, saying, that it was not fit so good a knight as he, should be so badly lodged. Plator that knew the King, made him humble obeysance, and said: My Lord, I am not so fortunate a knight, that I should deserve the honour that you shew unto me, to come in this manner to finde me out: I pray you pardon me, if at this time I make not my selfe knowne unto you: and seeing it is your pleasure that I should goe with you, I am well content to doe it. When they were in the Court, the King caused him to sit downe by him, and said: truly Sir knight, conceale your selfe as much as you will, but I am certainly perswaded that you are descended of the famous Emperour Palmerin, for you resemble him much. My Lord, said he, say not so, for I am not so fortunate to descend from so great and ballant a knight.

Every man beheld Plator, as wondering that he bring so young,



young, was so extreame valerous : but his heart and his eyes was onely fixed on Sibelle, which made no account of him : and being abasht at her great beauty, he purposed in his heart neuer to loue nor serue any other then she, which how he kept. The next day they returned not to the Tourney againe, because Tisane, and many other good Knights were soe heat in their bodies, by running the day before, that they had much need to rest themselves: But the King made great ioy for the loue of Plator, and prayed the Quene to know of him, if he were not Primalcons sonne, and for that cause she talked with him of many things, to know the truth thereof, but he behaved himselfe in such sort, as he spake to her, that he would neither confesse it, nor yet deny it. The King told the Quen, that if he could know the truth thereof, he would gladly giue him his daughter, for his wife : and the Quene by reason he was her cosin, her blood constrained her to loue and esteeme him much : wherfore one day percelaing him to beholde her Daughter very earnestly, being hard by her, she said : Daughter, how like you this Knight? I thinke verily he is our kinsman, and for that cause conceales his name, as many of his ancestors before him haue done, as we may iudge by his great valour and beauty : the King and I are certainly perswaded that he is the Emperour Primalcons sonne.

Sibelle that till then tooke no regard of him, hearing the Quene vse those speeches, cast her eyes on him, and he seemed to her, to be the sweetest and most comeliest Knight that euer she had seene in all her life, and therewith she said : What say you Madame? if he were our kinsman, why should he conceale himselfe from vs? I will constrain him to tell the truth, and by some meanes or other, will know if he be our kinsman. Doe so, said the Quene, and neuer leaue him till he haue told you that which we desire to know.



## CHAP. XLVIII.

How there came an old Knight with a great aduenture of a Sword: into the King of Lacedemonia's Court, which no man but *Plator* could bring vn- to an end.



As the Quene stood speaking with her Daughter, there entred a Knight into the Hall, with haire as white as snow, and a long gray beard, which hung downe vnto his girdle, apparrelled in a suite of scarlet, and vpon it a sword, the richest and fairest that euer was seene, who going vnto the King, kneeling on his knees, said: May it please your grace to knowe that I haue bene in many Princes Courts, to finde a Knight that could take this sword from about my necke, and yet I could neuer finde any that could doe it, that I might aske him a gift: and knowing that at this time there are many good Knights assembled in your Court, I am come to see if there be any one amongst them that can deliuer me from so great a burthen: and therefore my Lord, I pray you first begin this aduenture, and then all the rest will try it. Knight, said the King, I esteeme not my selfe to be the man that can accomplish it, seeing so many others haue failed therein, neuerthelesse I will make a triall, to satisfie your minde, that my Knights may try their fortunes therein, and that if they all cannot doe it, one shall not mocke the other: but me thinkes it is no great matter to take the sword from your necke, and saying so, rose vp to make triall thereof, but he was not able to take it from thence, wherewith he sat downe againe, and said, there needeth greater force in this respect then I supposed, and therefore let them that will trie this aduenture; and because there were many good Knights there at that time that desired to win praise and renowne in the presence of Sibelle,



## 224 The third Booke of the History

Sibelle, they made triall thereof, but all in vaine. When the Quene said to Plator, sir Knight, what doe you? why doe not you trie this aduenture as well as the rest? doe it I pray you for my sake. Madame said he, I will doe it at your command, but not that I thinke that I shall doe it more then the rest: and with that he went vnto the knight, and tooke it easily from his necke, and said: truly this sword is rich, and if it be as good, the Knight that shall beare it is happy. Sir Knight, said the old man, it is as good as it is rich, and seeing you haue taken it off from my necke, it shall be yours, so that you will promise me a gift that I shall aske you. I promise it said he, so I be able to accomplish it. You can easily doe it said he, and so made him put off his owne sword, and put on the rich sword, by the which he should obtaine great honour and renowne. The King and the Quene were glad that that aduenture had bene ended in their court, but that ioy continued not long: so that the old man said to Plator, that he must presently goe with him to the Town of Paris, where he would tell him what he should doe, touching his promise: where with Plator presently went to put on his armour, and Sibelle that had seene him accomplish that aduenture, esteemed much of him in her heart, and was sore grieved that he would so soone depart from thence; and therefore said vnto her mother: Madame, I will speake with this knight before his departure, to know who he is, and for what cause the with diuers gentlewomen attending on her, went into his Chamber, where she found him already armed, and said vnto him: Sir Knight, what hard fortune is this that you leave vs so soone? we are grieved thereat: and because I neuer yet asked any thing of any knight liuing in the world, I will aske you one thing, and thereby trie if your courtesie be such to grant me the same; that is, that you will retourne hither againe as soone as possibly you can, and that before your departure it will please you to tell mee your name. Madame, said the Knight, I would gladly doe more for you then that: know therefore said he, that I am Plator,



Plator, sonne to Primaleon, Emperour of Constantinople, that came hither onely to serue & honour you: and therefore be well assured that I am your knight, and that neuer any other Lady then you, shall be mistresse of my heart, and for that cause, although I would stay long there where I now goe, I cannot: for that my heart shall neuer be at rest untill it returneth againe vnto you; meane time I pray you haue me in remembrance, and forget me not: for I assure you, if that at my returne I finde you not as I leane you, I shall not liue one houre after.

When she vnderstand his speeches, she blisht exceedingly; but on the other side she receiued great pleasure to know that he was Primaleons sonne, for which cause she said: Sir knight, I shall be so much beholden vnto you, in doing that which I require at your hands, that I know not how I shall euer requite it; and seeing we are of a kindred, reason requireth that I should loue you with great affection, and the gods forbid that I should be the cause of your death: for you may be assured that I will neuer change my purpose touching you. Plator thanked her humbly, and would haue kist her hand, but she took him by the hand, and led him into the hall, where the King sat, to whom she made knowne who he was: wherewith the King and the Quene embraced him with great affection, disliking that he made himselfe no sooner knowne vnto them. And presently after he took his leane of them, and went with the old knight. Sibelle was much grieved, and from that time began to loue him with all her heart, and he her: so that while he was in France, & other places where he went, he was neuer seene to be merry, but alwaies heavy and full of griefe, which proceeded from the great and seruent loue that he bare vnto Sibelle.



## CHAP. IXL.

How it was knowne who the old Knight was, that bare the rich and good Sword about his necke, and why he came to that Court.



At such time as Armede and Politie raigned in France, in the towne of Paris, there was an excellent and rich workeman, that had not his like in all the world, whose name was Rimbo: some being of opinion that he was sonne to the King of France, father to Armede, who being married, yet loued and kept the mother of this Rimbo, which was a most faire and beautifull woman. Rimbo by a faire gentlewoman that he had to his wife, had but one daughter, which was the fairest, comeliest, and most gracious young maiore in France, which made all the countrey thereabouts while she was little to goe to see her: her father that had no more then she, loued her exceeding well, and for that cause brought her vp in many good qualittes, as to sing, and play vpon diuers instruments, wherein she was most excellent: and because she was of a lively spirit and good vnderstanding, she learned her fathers Art, and made such fine and cunning workes, that every man wondred thereat. This Gentlewoman being called Richart, became so faire, that being twelue yeares of age, there was no man that saw her but was presently in loue with her. The Quene oftentimes desired her father to let her attend at the Court: but because he loued her so exceeding well, he would neuer suffer her to be there, and two of the Kings sonnes sought to honour her by all the meanes they could, but she was so vertuous that she cared not for their seruice, nor for that of diuers other Princes that were in loue with her; and told them all that she would neuer loue any man but he that should be her husband: amongst the rest that were so farre inflamed with



with her loue; one was Garin, Sonne to the King of France, which was so much tormented in his minde, that if it had not bene for shame, he would haue married her, and when her father let him come into his house to speake with her, he esteemed himselfe most happy, repating that fauour to be the greatest good that could be done vnto him. Richart alwaies sat downe busied at her worke, and neuer left it, neither for Garin nor any other knight whatsoeuer that came vnto her, and was so much esteemed and accounted of, that there was continually Joutes and Turneyes made before her fathers doore, and when she looked out at the window with her father, every one had more minde and desire to behold her, then to looke after the Turneyes.

And as those feasts continued in King Armes Court, the Duke of Britaine came thither about some businesse that he had to doe with the King: this Dukes name was Marriage, being a faire young knight, and not married. And for that cause being well accompanied, went to Rimbos house, and prayed him that he might see his daughter, which he did. Richart being aduertised that he was a great Prince, entertained him honourably: but the Duke beholding so great a beauty, felt his heart pierced with the loue of her, and thought verily that he should haue died presently, and therewith said: Lady, what an vnseemely thing is this, that such delicate hands as yours are, should labour so vpon hard wood, seeing you deserue rather to be a great Lady, as you shall be, if I haue but continuance of life. She made no great account of those words uttered by the Duke; thinking that his meaning was not to take her for his wife: the Duke standing by her, and beholding a shield that she had made, wherein she had cut the history, how the King made suite vnto her Grandmother, in which she made, that it might be knowne that she descended from royall blood, which shield was so artificially carued, that every man wondered thereat. The Duke took it vp in his hand, and asked the Gentlewoman if she had



228 The third Booke of the History

made it; and vnderstanding that it was her owne worke-  
manship, said, Madame, I pray you giue it me, that I may  
say that I haue so fine a peece of worke of your making;  
my Lord said she, the shield is of so small a value, that I  
am ashamed to giue it you, neuerthelesse seeing it pleaseth  
you to accept thereof, I pray you send for it, and I will giue  
it you with all my heart. The Duke thanked her, and said,  
I will not change this gift for the whole Empire of all the  
world: and seeing you haue giuen it me with so good a will,  
I promise you to set it in such a place that all the world  
shall know that your great beauty hath moued and pro-  
uoked me to vse such boldnesse.

And as soone as he was gone from Richarts house, he  
caused a pillar to be erected, right befoze the Kings Palace,  
and not farre from Rimbois house, whereon he placed that  
shield, and made knowne in euery place that he would de-  
fend the same against all Knights whatsoeuer, and that  
whosoener touched it must fight a combat with him.  
Which done, he came all armed to the place to defend the  
same, which being vnderstood by many Knights, diuerse  
came thither to fight with him, and by the space of three  
months, the Duke did many valiant feates of armes for the  
same, and still was victorious: by which means, the ru-  
mor thereof went cleane throughout all France, and eue-  
ry man spake of his great valour and hardinesse; and eue-  
ry day he sent diuers great presents vnto Richart, but she  
would not receiue them, and when he went to see her, she  
shewed him great amity and friendship, praying him not to  
take so much and so great paines for her sake: but he made  
answer that he tooke great pleasure and contentment there-  
in, seeing thereby he did her some service. Garin tooke great  
griefe thereat, and would gladly haue procured the Duke  
some displeasure, if by any meanes he could: those great  
and valorous feates of armes done by the Duke, bring-  
ing hard ot in Britaine, made all men reioyce, but onely a no-  
ble Lady the Duke loved wel, befoze he knew Richart, who  
tooke such great griefe thereat that it almost kille her; and  
by



by all the meanes she could, sought to withdraw the dukes minde from louing Richart: and to that end hauing a kinsman a great Magician, she sent to him, desiring him to tell her what meanes might be found to make the Duke to leaue louing of that Gentlewoman; the knight by his Art wist that no man could overcome the Duke, but onely Plator, sonne to Primaleon, who also should overcome Richart, and be extremely beloued of her. This Lady hauing a good rich Shield that had borne her husbands, which he had won from a Moore, as he trauelled many Countries, the Magician enchanted it in such manner about the necke of a yong Gentleman, that no man could take it from thence, but onely Plator; and to the end that said Gentleman should seeme moze honourable vnto the King, the Magician had made him shew as if he had bene a very ancient man.

## CHAP. L.

How *Plator* arriuing in *Paris*, ouercame the Duke of *Britaine*, and tooke the shield from him, and he going to seeke *Richart*, she fell in loue with him, and at the last went to *Lacedemonia*.



**P**lato, hauing taken his leaue of the King and the Queene, was unwilling to leaue the company of Sibelle, yet went with the olde knight, and as he went, performed many valiant feates of armes, which at this time shall not be recited; and being at Paris, he found that the Duke had not fought with any knight in six dayes before. The olde man that conducted him, brought him to the place where the pillar with the Shield vpon it stood, and said vnto him: Sir knight, the thing that I craue of you is, to haue that Shield that hangeth vpon the pillar: let mee see if you dare be so bold as to take it downe, and deliuer it vnto me, for I tell you that



that a right valiant knight keepe and defende the same. Friend (quoth Plator) if there be no greater danger to be feared then this, I will soone giue it you, and let the knight come to defend it when he will. And with that he did not as others had used to doe, which was onely to touch it with the end of their lances, but tooke it from the place where it hung, and gaue it to the olde man, who presently bare it away. Then mounted Plator on his horse againe, and saw the Duke that in choller came towards him with his lance in his rest: wherewith Plator that kept himselfe vpon his guard, put his lance in his rest, and ranne at him with such force, that he threw him to the ground, and sodainly descended off his horse to fall vpon him: But the Duke rising vp as well as he could, and hauing embraced his shield, beganne to strike at Plator with such great force, that euery man wondered thereat: In which Combate they continued so long, that the King with all his traine came forth to beholde them: The Duke was grievously wounded, by the meanes wherof he became so feeble and weake, that at the last he fell downe to the ground, as halfe dead. Wherewith Plator that knew him not, stept to him, to cut off his head, but the King intreated him to saue his life. Plator turned himselfe about, and demanded who it was that spake so much in his behalfe, wherewith Garin glad to see the Duke in that case, told him it was the King: I will willingly doe it (quoth Plator,) seeing the King commands it, desiring him to excuse him, because he knew him not. Then Garin requested him to goe with him, which he did willingly, and procured his wounds to be dressed. The King commanded the Duke to be borne away, who could not recover his senses againe, untill he came into his Chamber, and by the report of the Surgeons, he was in marvellous great danger of his life.

Garin caused Plator to be cured of his wounds, and was as carefull of him, as if he had bene his owne brother; and when he was layd, he desired him to tell him who



who he was, which he did, whereat Garin was very glad, and presently went to certifie the King and the Queene thereof, who were both well pleased therewith, and caused him to come to the Court, Garin never leaving him, but still telling him of the great beauty of Richard.

When Plator heard thereof, he wondered that the Duke would put himselfe into so great danger, for a Gentlewoman of so meane condition, and could not beleue that she was so fayre as his Sibelle. When he was thoroughly cured, Garin brought him to the sight of Richard, who was much grieved in her minde, because the Duke had bene overthorne, to whom Garin sayd: Madame, this is the knight that vanquished the Duke, who hath taken thus much paines for you, and for that he had no reason to love, therefore all his services are ended with shame and dishonour, albeit the valour of this knight be so great, that the Duke needs not thinke it strange to have bene overcome by him. You say true (replied Richard) that neither the Duke nor any other knight hath any reason to love me, because they lose their labour, as also for that I am not worthy to be beloved of any such. But in the meane time Plator saue her to be one of the fayrest and most comeliest Gentlewomen that ever he saw: and if it had not bene for the love he bare unto Sibelle, I know not what he would have done.

Richard, that till then had alwayes bene mistress of her selfe, for that the presents and services of most brave Knights could neuer tempt her, suddenly found her selfe overcome with the love of Plator, to whom (afterwards) she bare so great affection, as she took great pleasure to behold him, and for that cause, when she saw him not, the poore gentlewoman lived in much griefe and paine.

Garin that perceived her to take great delight to talke with Plator, went day by day with him to see her: by the meanes whereof, she was so inamoured on him, as she left her daily worke to conferre and talke with him, and oftentimes would take by her Warpe into her hand, and

playing



## 232 The third Booke of the History

playing thereon, sung most sweetly thereunto; and yet did she bebaue her selfe wisely in her loue, not once making it knowne, staying till the Knight first made some motion thereof: But Plator had no such thought in him to speake to her of any such matter, not onely for the loue of his cousin Garin, but also for the amity that he bare vnto Sibelle.

While he stayed in Paris, he had all the pastime in the world, the King doing him great honour: he spent the most part of his time in the company of Richart, who receiued to her selfe an exceeding great deale of pleasure and comfort by his presence. But remembering many times his promise made to Sibelle, to returne vnto her as soon as conveniently he could, he asked leaue of Garin, because he meant to depart. And for that the same day they understood that Prince Edward now King of England) made a great Feast, where many strange Knights would be assembled, and that Pompide had proclaimed a Tourney that should continue twenty dayes together. Garin, because he would not so soon lose Plators company, earnestly desired him to goe with him to that Feast, wherunto he yielded: it being ended, he took his leaue of the King and the Quene, and then went into England. But who can expresse the griefe of minde that Richart indured, when Plator went to take his leaue of her: for she could not so closely hide and dissemble her griefe, but every man perceived it, and said vnto him: That it had bene good for her, if he had neuer set foot in Paris, seeing he went away so soon againe.

When Plator was in England, he behaved himselfe right balliantly, he won the honour of many Tourneys, and brought diuers great adventures to an end, and amongst the rest, deliuered a Gentlewoman that was enchanted in a Castle, and there kept by the greatest and strongest Lyon that euer was seene, which he slew, and released the Gentlewoman, breaking the Enchantment: and to make short, performed so many balliant and worthy deeds.



deedes of prowesse, that his fame and renowne shortly was spread farre and neare. The King of England requested him to tell him who he was; who tolde him, at the which he much reioyced, keeping him there for certaine dayes in great pleasure and delight.

Garin after that returned into France, and Plator, before he went to Lacedemonia, travelled in many places, doing so many valiant and renowned acts, that he obscured the noble acts both of his father and grandfather. And when he returned to Lacedemonia, the King was exceedingly glad, and specially Sibelle, who in all the time of his absence, would never marry, although she had diuers times bene earnestly requested thereunto: wherefore by and through the meanes and consent of Primaleon this marriage was made, and the wedding holden with great magnificence.

The same day that Plator and Sibelle were espoused, Richart and her father came to Lacedemonia, for that after Plators departure from Paris, she was become so sad and sorrowful, as she thought verily she should have died: But when she sawe Garin come out of England, and not him, her griefe was incessant: wherefore, Rimbo her father perceiuing her to be so much altered and changed, intreated her to tell him the cause of her griefe, although he doubted by the signes that she often-times cast out of her tender breast, and by the pittifull songs that she sung to her Lute when she late alone, that she was tormented with some passion of loue. At the last, after earnest request made vnto her, by her old father, she tolde him all her amorous passion, saying, that if she were in a place where she might but see Plator, she would account her selfe happy, and liue in great contentment, without desiring greater good in the world, then onely his presence, which was sufficient to heale, and restore her to her accustomed liberty.



## CHAP. LI.

How *Richart* and *Rimbos* her father, first, went to *Constantinople*, and from thence to *Lacedemonia*, to finde *Plator*, and what happened after that.



**R**imbos, that loved his daughter better then himselfe, durst not reprove her, fearing to procure more griefe vnto her, onely said vnto her, that she had not bene well aduised, that she vttered not her minde to *Plator*, that would not haue bene so hard-hearted, as not to haue loved her againe; and that seeing it was so, he said that he would goe to finde him out, and intreate him to come and see her. When she heard him say so, she said: Father, how much am I bounden vnto you, that in stead of punishing mee rigorously for the dishonour that I haue done vnto you, you are not only pleased to pardon me, but also to comfort me in my griefe? If you go to finde him out, I must needs goe with you, or else, when you come againe, you are not like to finde me alive. *Rimbos*, fearing lest his daughter should die in that manner, determined with himselfe to fulfill her minde, and therfore departed from *Paris*, no man knowing thereof (for that the Duke of *Brittaine* was gone with great shame home againe into his owne Countrey, to loue her that had bene the cause of his dishonour) and went to *Constantinople*, thinking to finde *Plator* there, but he could not, but sawe the Emperour *Palmerin* who was very old: and being in the great Hall in *Constantinople*, *Richart* tooke a Harpe, and her Father a Lute, and played thereon, wherevnto they sung so sweetly, that the Emperour tooke great delight to heare them, and caused them to be richly rewarded.



Primaleon, that gouerned the Empire, asking them of what Countrey they were, vnderstood that they were of the towne of Paris, from whence they came onely to see his sonne, & said, truly you haue taken great paines, and because the gentlewoman went with her face concred, he prayed her to vnicouer it, and when he saw her to be so faire, he wondered thereat, and prayed her to stay there with Gridonia: but his requests were in vaine, for after her father had receiued news from Quene Politie his sister, and her children, they departed to goe to Lacedemonia, and made such haste, that they arriued there the same day that Plator and Sibelle were espoused together. The desire that Richart had to see Plator was so great, that she prayed her father presently, without staying to go to the Court to see the wedding: which they did, and when they came there, they found the King, and all the rest of the Lords sitting still, because that day they had made great ioy, and seene diuers sports: and when she saw Sibelle to be so exceeding faire, and her husband no lesse gallant, her heart began to shake and beate within her, to thinke that she was in loue with him that loued another with all his heart, and for a while was much abashed; but after thinking in her selfe, that they well deserved one the other, she took courage, saying: Foele that I am! what a thought had I in minde: If I loue Plator, is it for any other thing but onely for the great vertue that is in him: for sure I am, that so brave a knight would neuer haue had me for his wife: and now I will desire nothing else for reward of my great and sincere affection, but onely that he may know that I haue left all that I haue to come to see and serue him, without euer altering the amity which I beare vnto him during my life, thinking thereon, and to that end hauing already composed a song for the purpose, to expresse her loue and passion, she drew out her Harpe, and her father taking his Lute in his hand, began to play and sing so sweetly, and that with so great melody, that all that were there present, were much abashed thereat.

Plator



236 The third Booke of the History

Plator, that heard them play often times before, knew them presently, because the Song that they sang was in French: and therefore said: What strange newes are these? I am much deceived if this be not the faire Richart of Paris, and rising up to behold her better, he knew her, and said: Well gentlewoman, how now! how comes it to passe, that you are here in this Countrey? I may thinke my selfe happy that you haue taken the paines to honour my wedding. But tell me I pray you (said he) if you be not Richart. Wherewith, being (in a manner) halfe out of her senses, shee sayd: My Lord, I am Richart, who intreateth you not to wonder at my comming into this Countrey, for Loue constraineth many a man to doe much more then this, and bleth most commonly, not to make men beare like afflictions: and hauing vnderstood of your marriage, I thought good to take this paines to doe you seruice, because I loue and honour you more then any other Knight in the world. And know you for a truth, that I had rather be your servant, then to be the Queene of France: and saying so, shee put off her baile: and Plator much abashed thereat, took her by the hand, and leading her before the King, he sayd: My Lord, behold here the Gentlewoman for whose sake so many ballant actes were done in France, and I doe account it for one of the strange aduentures in the world, to see her here. The King wondring much thereat, and finding her to be of an extream beauty, sayd: Truly this is a strange case; but I beleene that you are the onely cause of her comming hither. I will not deny a truth (quoth Richart) although my Lady Sibelle doth beare it, but I freely confesse that I am come out of mine owne Countrey for nothing else but for the loue of Plator, and would that all the world should know that I loue him with a sincere amity, and that my desire is onely that I may alwayes see and serue him, in such sort; that I would spend all the rest of my life in the seruice of you two, so you be both content. Friend, sayd Sibelle, assure your selfe, that I shall neuer dislike of you



for louing my Lord Plator, but rather will loue and com-  
mend you the more, so that if you thinke good to stay here,  
I will cause you to be honoured according to your deserts,  
being certaine that neither you nor hee will betray me,  
seeing you haue bene so bold to make your loue knowne  
before this audience.

Richard therewith kissed her hand, and sware, during  
her life neuer to doe her any wrong: and vpon that condi-  
tion Sibelle entertained her for her waiting gentlewoman,  
and was much commended for her courtesie shewed there-  
in: and so Richard, and her Father stayed in the Court,  
alwayes seruing them loyally. And certaine yeares after  
the Earle of Balin, who was a very good Knight, craned  
her in marriage, but she would neuer breake her promise.  
King Tarue also (being old) and his Quene dead, gladly  
would haue married her, but he could neuer cause her alter  
her minde, but she still remembered her promise: for which  
cause Plator loued her exceeding well, and did her great ho-  
nour, whereby she had the commaund of the Kings house:  
And when Tarue was dead, Plator reigned in his place,  
who was the puissantest King that ever reigned in Lace-  
demonia, because hee conquered many Countries, and had  
great resort vnto his Court: He was the greatest and best  
sonne Primaleon had, and which hee most commended.  
This King Plator made great warre against the Moores,  
by meanes of the King of India, who hearing that Zerfira  
daughter to the Soldan of Persia, that had bene promised  
in marriage to him, was married to Bellager, Soldan of  
Niquia, put to Sea with a great army, and accompa-  
nied with diuers Knights and Princes that ayded him,  
went towards Niquia, to destroy the Soldan; which he  
had surely done, if Primaleon had not ayded him: and  
Vernon being in the Emperours Court went with him,  
where hee did great seates of armes, and with his owne  
hands, slew one of the best Knights that came amongst the  
Moores, called Rosocin, and Primaleon himselfe had a  
great combate against the King of India, and at the last  
killed



238 The third Booke of the History

killed him : in whose place his brother was created king, being a much better knight then hee, who after that came with a great power against the City of Constantinople, when Primaleon was Emperour : which his sonne Plator understanding, went with a great army, to ayde him, and giving a furious assault to the King of India, overthrow his army, and made such a slaughter of his men, as he alone saved himselfe in one of his suites. Plator pursued him, and in that voyage performed many strange adventures, so that having obtained great riches for him and his, hee returned to Constantinople with great honour. Primaleon being exceeding glad at his returne, kept him there a long time with him, where Bellager the Soldan came to see him, and gave him many rich presents.

CHAP. LII.

How the Emperour *Palmerin* dyed by a strange adventure: and of diuers things that happened at his death.



The Emperour *Palmerin*, and the Emperesse *Polinarde* liued so long, that they saw Primaleon haue foure sonnes, which hee made knights; but aboue them all hee loued Plator, because he was bozne to atchieue many strange adventures. In the Emperours time, Plator married with *Sibelle*: And although *Palmerin* was very olde, yet (for that Primaleon gouerned the Empire) he went oftentimes to hunt in the woods, and passed his aged dayes peaceably with his subjects, because he had alwayes vsed them well. And as he was abroad to hunt, he stayed out till it was euening, and having killed his game, he found himselfe to be weary: for which cause he lighted hard by a Fountaine, to rest himselfe, where he heard a great noyse of diuers wofull boyes, and seemed as if those sorrowfull voyces began to increase



crease more and more, and to draw nether unto him : wherewith he demanded of his men, if they heard nothing : and when they made answer, they heard it not, he was much abashed, and therewith he sawe a Gentlewoman come crying unto him, who sayd : O my Lord Palmerin, helpe me I pray you, (according to your accustomed clemency, which is, to aide all distressed Gentlewomen that haue neede of you) against him that would kill me : with that he sawe a Knight greater then a Giant, with a blacke armour, and a naked Sword in his hand, following her, and made as though he would strike her : Shee running to the Fountaine, fell downe at the Emperours feete, who being of a great courage, both in his youth and age, presently rose upon his feet, and lifting up a staffe which he held in his hand, sayd : Stand backe, Sir Knight, and thinke not to doe any wrong unto this Lady, otherwise you are but dead.

The Knight that respected neither Emperours nor Kings, strooke the Emperour with his sword, saying : Seeing you will defend this Gentlewoman against me, receive this reward for her, and saying so, he vanished suddenly away : and with that the Gentlewoman went from thence in great haste, saying : O wretch that I am ! it were better that I died, then the chiefest Emperour in the world should die. After the Emperour had bene stricken, hee felt all his body to tremble, and found himselfe to be so weakke, that being unable to stand upon his feete, he was forced to sit downe upon the ground, and knew well that his latter day was neare. Wherfore resolving cherefully for death, he caused himselfe to be taken up, all his men being so much grieved, that they made the townes men maruel what it meant. So soone as the Emperour entred into the great Hall, the enchanted Bird cast forth a dolorous crie, and therewith he remembering that Mozabelin tolde him, that the same should be one of the signes of his death, he presumed that his first conceit was true, so that being laid in his bed, he called for the Emperesse, who at



240 The third Booke of the History

those newes, was exceeding sorrowfull, and kissing her oftentimes, sayd : Know Madaine, I must now leave your company, for that God calleth me vnto him, wherof I am certaine, and therefore am glad, and doe reioyce, for it is now high tyme that I goe to render an account of my life vnto the Lord, of whom I haue receiued so many fauours. When the Emperesse heard him say so; she was much troubled in her minde, and tooke him by the hand and sayd : I am not perswaded that God will deprive me of your company, but that I shall goe with you: therefore in the meane time (my Lord) I pray you take no care for me, for I shall soone follow you. After that he spake vnto Primaleon, and told him how he should gouerne his subjects in peace, and hauing taken order for all things, and stablished his affayres, his sicknesse increasing, at the end of three daies he dyed.

The Emperesse much lamented his death, knowing well that she should not stay long after him, and so fell it out. Primaleon, Gridonia, and all the Princes of the Empire, wept bitterly for his death, and after that buried him with great honour: As soone as he was dead, the enchanted Bird dyed likewise, casting forth so lamentable a cry, that it put all the Court into a great feare, and the yron Cage that hung in the Court, wherein the olde Enchaunted Moore stode, brake, and the olde Moore came forth, and was carried into the ayre with a most horrible noise. All these things happened at the death of this great Emperour, that neuer was seene before, at the end of any other prince.

So leaving them to their  
happinesse, thus  
I end.

FINIS.



C 20367  
12928

SL

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE  
**HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY**

---

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION